

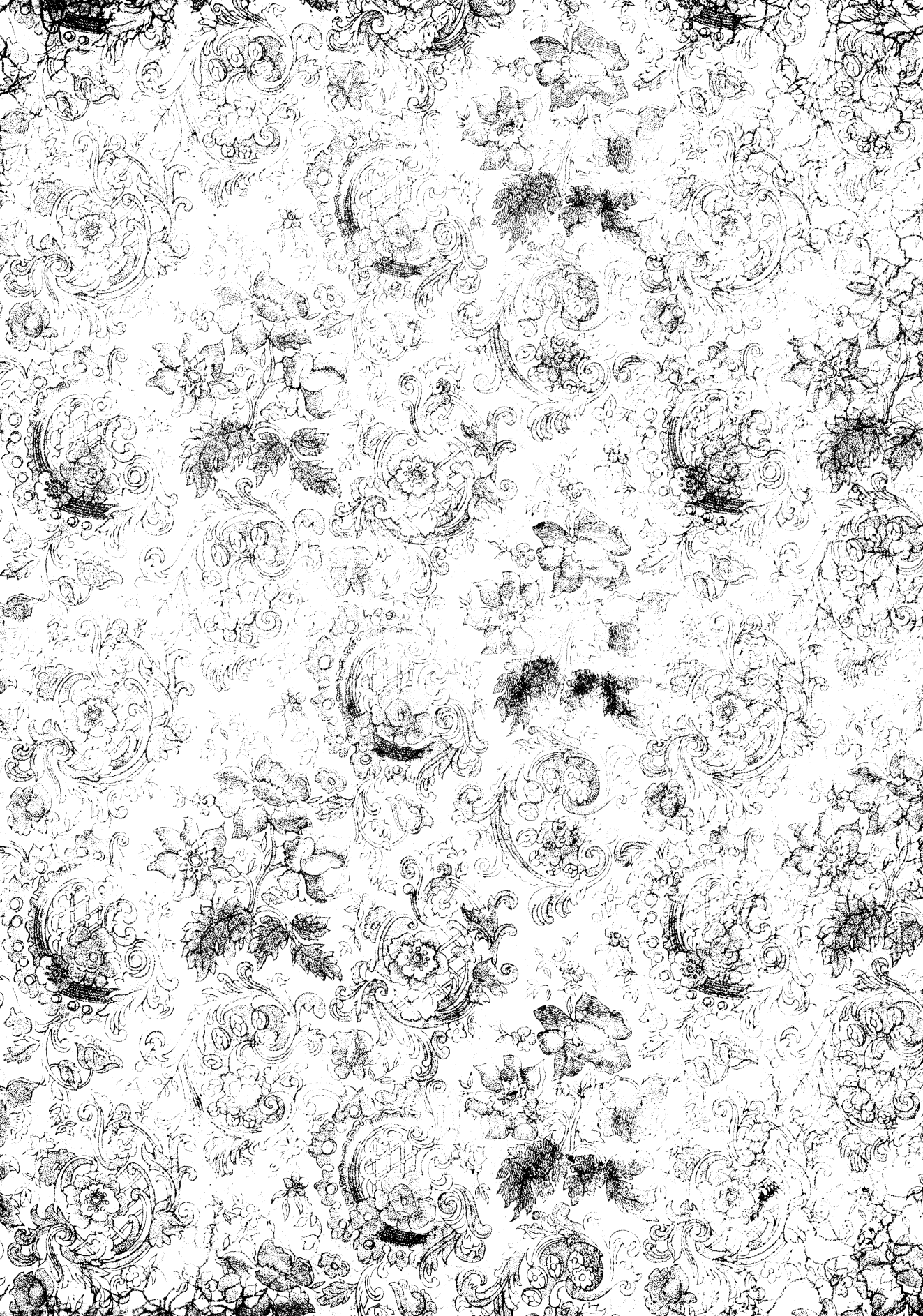
HISTORY  
OF  
VAN BUREN  
COUNTY

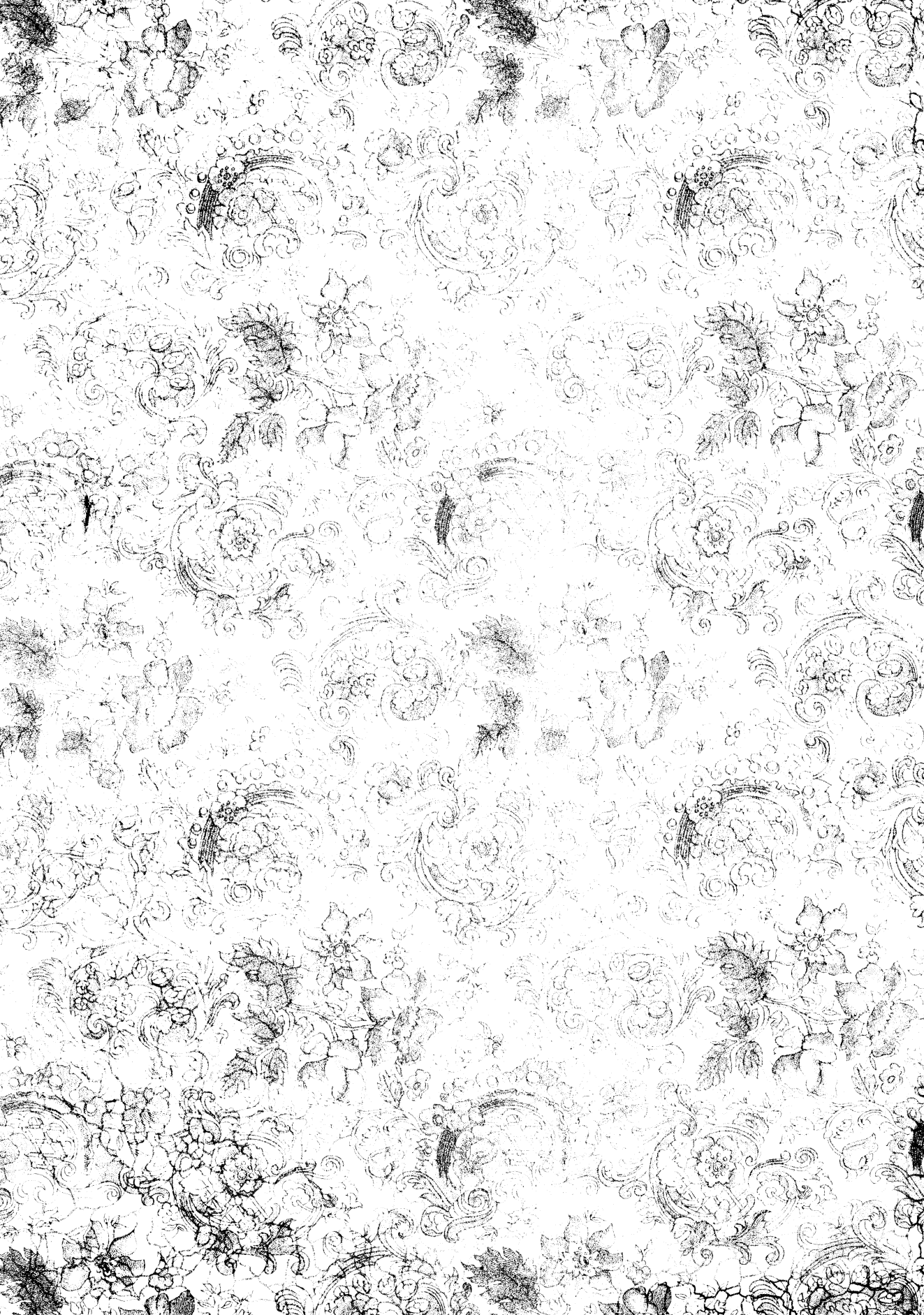
MICHIGAN

VOL. 1.

EB  
2  
V217  
R883

ROWLAND





















*W. H. Landis,*

A HISTORY  
OF  
VAN BUREN COUNTY  
MICHIGAN

A Narrative Account of its Historical  
Progress, its People, and its  
Principal Interests.

---

BY  
CAPTAIN O. W. ROWLAND

---

VOLUME I

---

*ILLUSTRATED*

---

PUBLISHERS  
THE LEWIS PUBLISHING COMPANY  
CHICAGO AND NEW YORK

1912



# PREFACE

---

More than eighty years have elapsed since the first settlements were made within the limits of Van Buren county. None of those earliest pioneers are left to tell the story, which at this late day rests in tradition, in letters that chance to have been preserved, in ancient public documents that have been placed on the records of the county, and in former publications that have been issued. And while many facts set forth are within the personal knowledge of the author of this "History of Van Buren County," he has drawn liberally from all available and authentic sources. He has freely used the information contained in a history of the county published a generation ago, has corresponded with and interviewed many of his friends and older residents of the county in various localities, and has endeavored in all practicable ways to gather the most authentic matters in reference to the county of which he has been a resident for the past fifty-five years. His familiarity with the public records of the county enabled him to obtain many facts pertaining especially to the earliest records of the county that he might not otherwise have been able to set forth.

The period which has been spent in the pleasant task involved in the preparation of this work has been all too limited, although even if the period covered by the author's labors had been longer, the history, doubtless, would still have been incomplete and faulty. This is the nature of everything human, especially the writing of history. Yet the author believes that the work, as a whole, is correct, and knows that his labors, and those of his associates, have been conscientiously performed.

Many things have been omitted that might have been recorded if time and space had permitted. As it is, by the courtesy of the publishers, the compiler has been permitted to quite largely exceed the original plan of the work. In style of illustration, printing and binding, also, all pains have been taken to make the work attractive to its patrons.

To all those friends who have come to his assistance, the author here extends his grateful acknowledgments. Space will not permit special mention of each to be made, but to his able assistants, Hon. Charles J. Monroe, Hon. Jason Woodman, Dr. George H. Cornish, Hon. C. H. Engle and Hon. Thomas J. Cavanaugh, he tenders his sincere thanks for the invaluable advice and assistance they have rendered in the preparation of the work, which the author trusts may prove of interest to its readers, of value to the citizens of the county, instructive to the rising generation, helpful in commemoration of the early pioneers, and preservative of historical matters that ought not to be forgotten.

ORAN W. ROWLAND.



# Contents

## CHAPTER I

### ABORIGINAL HISTORY

FIRST CHURCH BUILT BY INDIANS—CHIEF POKAGON'S ADDRESS—  
POKAGON'S LAST WIGWAM—JULIA POKAGON'S ADDRESS—OLD  
WAPSEY—DO INDIANS CRY, LAUGH OR JOKE?—ALGONQUIN LE-  
GEND OF MAN'S CREATION—LEGEND OF PAW PAW AND THE PAW  
PAW VALLEY—ALGONQUIN LEGENDS OF SOUTH HAVEN—AFTER  
ME-ME-OG (SQUABS) IN VAN BUREN COUNTY—THE "BUCK  
PONY" RIDE—"NEVER CARRY A REVOLVER, BOYS"—SAW-KAW'S  
LOVE STORY—ME-ME-OG, THE WILD PIGEONS.....1-52

## CHAPTER II

### FOREIGN AND AMERICAN GOVERNMENT

FRENCH PERIOD (1634-1764)—ENGLISH PERIOD (1760-1796)—  
TERRITORIAL (AMERICAN) PERIOD—MICHIGAN AS A STATE—  
POPULATION OF THE STATE (1810-1910)—POPULATION OF THE  
COUNTY (1840-1910)—PROPERTY VALUATION OF STATE AND  
COUNTY (1851-1911) .....53-76

## CHAPTER III

### CIVIL AND EARLY HISTORY

FIRST MICHIGAN COUNTY—VAN BUREN COUNTY CREATED—CIVIL  
AND JUDICIAL ORGANIZATION—TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION—PIONEER  
PICTURES—VAN BUREN COUNTY PIONEER ASSOCIATION—EDWIN  
BARNUM'S POEM—OSLERISM REVIEWED .....77-97

## CONTENTS

## CHAPTER IV

## ROADS AND RAILROADS

NOTED INDIAN TRAILS—FIRST MICHIGAN WHITE MAN'S ROAD—  
TERRITORIAL AND STATE ROADS—THE OLD STAGE ROUTES—  
PLANK ROADS—THE PAW PAW RIVER—RAILROADS—THE MICHIGAN  
CENTRAL—KALAMAZOO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD—THE  
PAW PAW RAILROAD—TOLEDO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD  
(FRUIT BELT LINE)—THE PERE MARQUETTE RAILWAY... 98-114

## CHAPTER V

## EDUCATIONAL HISTORY

ACT OF 1827 MODIFIED—HARASSED SCHOOL INSPECTORS—THE  
TEACHERS' QUALIFICATIONS—MRS. ALLEN RICE'S REMINISCENCES  
—THE OLD AND THE NEW ..... 115-127

## CHAPTER VI

## THE COUNTY SEAT

LAWRENCE AS THE COUNTY SEAT—PAW PAW DISPLACES LAWRENCE  
—PROPOSED COUNTY BUILDINGS—OLD COURT HOUSE COM-  
PLETED—SOUTH HAVEN BIDS FOR COUNTY SEAT—POPULAR VOTE  
FOR PAW PAW—NEW COUNTY BUILDINGS—COURT HOUSE CORNER-  
STONE LAID—COST OF PRESENT COUNTY BUILDINGS ..... 129-158

## CHAPTER VII

## BENCH AND BAR

STATE SUPREME AND CIRCUIT COURTS—COUNTY COURTS—FIRST  
CIRCUIT JUDGE—SUCCESSORS OF JUDGE RANSOM—JUDGE FLA-  
VIUS J. LITTLEJOHN—THIRTY-SIXTH CIRCUIT CREATED—PROBATE  
JUDGES—VAN BUREN COUNTY BAR ..... 159-167



## CHAPTER VIII

## POLITICS OF THE COUNTY

GENERAL ELECTIONS—THE PARTIES IN THE COUNTY—COUNTY OFFICERS—MEMBERS OF THE STATE LEGISLATURE—CHAIRMEN OF THE BOARD OF SUPERVISORS—OTHER IMPORTANT OFFICIALS FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY—CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTIONS—PROPOSED CONSTITUTIONAL AMENDMENTS—VAN BUREN COUNTY AND THE LIQUOR TRAFFIC .....	168-182
---	---------

## CHAPTER IX

## CIVIL WAR INFANTRY

SIXTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—TWELFTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—THIRTEENTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—STONE RIVER—SEVENTEENTH MICHIGAN AT SOUTH MOUNTAIN—NINETEENTH MICHIGAN—TWENTY-FOURTH REGIMENT—TWENTY-FIFTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—TWENTY-EIGHTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR .....	183-231
--	---------

## CHAPTER X

## CIVIL WAR CAVALRY

FIRST MICHIGAN—THIRD CAVALRY—JUSTICE TO CAVALRY REGIMENTS—FOURTH MICHIGAN CAVALRY—CAPTURE OF JEFFERSON DAVIS—NINTH MICHIGAN—CAPTURE OF MORGAN—FIRST AND LAST .....	232-273
--	---------

## CHAPTER XI

## OTHER COMMANDS

FIRST MICHIGAN ENGINEERS AND MECHANICS—FIRST REGIMENT MICHIGAN LIGHT ARTILLERY—VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN OTHER MICHIGAN REGIMENTS—BIRGE'S WESTERN SHARPSHOOTERS—COMPANY C, SEVENTIETH NEW YORK INFANTRY—OTHER COMPANIES OR REGIMENTS .....	274-310
---	---------

## CONTENTS

## CHAPTER XII

## GEOLOGY OF COUNTY

THE CAMBRIAN—ORDOVICIAN—THE SILURIAN AGE—DEVONIAN— LOWER CARBONIFEROUS—THE PLEISTOCENE (LAST CHAPTER). .....	311-317
--	---------

## CHAPTER XIII

## AGRICULTURE AND HORTICULTURE

WESTERN VAN BUREN—LAKE MICHIGAN, A BENEFACITOR—FRUIT RAISING AT SOUTH HAVEN—FRUIT BELT WIDENS—COOPERATION THROUGH SOCIETIES—"MASTER L. H. BAILEY"—A. S. DYCKMAN AND T. T. LYON—CROPS OF THE COUNTY—SEMI-AGRICULTURAL IN- DUSTRIES—AGRICULTURE IN EASTERN VAN BUREN—"OAK OPEN- INGS" FIRST CULTIVATED—PIONEER FARM IMPLEMENTS—AFTER THE CIVIL WAR—LIVE STOCK—GOLDEN ERA (1865-90)—THE LEAN YEARS OF THE NINETIES—DEVELOPMENT OF THE GRAPE IN- DUSTRY .....	319-331
---	---------

## CHAPTER XIV

## TALES OF THE OLDEN DAY

DECATUR WAR SCARE—SNOW NOT TURNED TO OIL—FIGHT WITH A WOLF PACK—WOLF BOUNTIES—WOODS FULL OF "PAINTERS" —MRS. RICE'S REMINISCENCES—NARROW ESCAPE OF EDWIN MEARS—INDIAN MOUNDS IN LAWRENCE TOWNSHIP—JOSEPH WOODMAN LOCATES AT PAW PAW (1835)—STORIES BY MRS. NANCY (HICKS) BOWEN—"GOOD TIMES" OF THE OLDEN DAY. .....	332-341
---	---------

## CHAPTER XV

## FINANCIAL AND OTHER INSTITUTIONS

FIRST NATIONAL BANK, PAW PAW—THE PAW PAW SAVINGS BANK— FIRST NATIONAL BANK, SOUTH HAVEN—THE CITIZENS STATE BANK, AND FIRST STATE BANK, SOUTH HAVEN—BANKS OF DECA- TUR—HARTFORD BANKS—WEST MICHIGAN SAVINGS BANK, BAN- GOR—THE PEOPLES BANK OF BLOOMINGDALE—AT GOBLEVILLE;
---

COVERT, LAWRENCE AND LAWTON—SOUTH HAVEN LOAN AND TRUST COMPANY—VAN BUREN COUNTY FARMERS MUTUAL FIRE INSURANCE COMPANY—TELEGRAPH AND TELEPHONE LINES. . . . 342-353

## CHAPTER XVI

## THE PRESS

“PAW PAW FREE PRESS”—“PAW PAW FREE PRESS AND COURIER”—“THE TRUE NORTHERNER”—“DECATUR REPUBLICAN”—“THE LAWTON LEADER”—“HARTFORD DAY SPRING”—“THE BANGOR ADVANCE”—EARLY LAWRENCE NEWSPAPERS—“LAWRENCE TIMES”—“BLOOMINGDALE LEADER”—“GOBLEVILLE NEWS”—SOUTH HAVEN NEWSPAPERS . . . . . 354-368

## CHAPTER XVII

## MEDICINE AND SURGERY

MEDICAL SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH—PREVENTIVE MEDICINE—SURGERY—THE COUNTRY PHYSICIAN AND THE TRAINED NURSE—EARLY PHYSICIANS OF VAN BUREN COUNTY—PAW PAW PHYSICIANS—BANGOR—GOBLEVILLE—HARTFORD—COVERT—LAWRENCE—LAWTON—THE PROFESSION IN SOUTH HAVEN—SOUTH HAVEN CITY HOSPITAL—DECATUR—THE VETERINARY SCHOOL . . . . . 369-392

## CHAPTER XVIII

## TOWNSHIP OF ALMENA

GENERAL DESCRIPTION—PIONEER SETTLERS AND INSTITUTIONS—BUSY PERIOD (1836-42)—SETTLEMENT IN THE NORTHERN SECTIONS—CHURCHES—SCHOOLS, SUPERVISORS, ETC. . . . . 393-400

## CHAPTER XIX

## TOWNSHIP OF ANTWERP

GENERAL DESCRIPTION—RAILROADS, PROPERTY AND POPULATION—EARLY SETTLEMENT—SETTLERS OF 1836-8—SETTLERS IN SOUTHERN ANTWERP TOWNSHIP—POST OFFICES, ROADS AND HOTELS—

## CONTENTS

PIONEER MILLS—TOWNSHIP ELECTIONS AND OFFICIALS—EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS—GLEN SPRINGS TROUT HATCHERY—VILLAGE OF LAWTON—VILLAGE OF MATTAWAN—RETROSPECT . . . . . 401-423

## CHAPTER XX

## TOWNSHIP OF ARLINGTON

FIRST ELECTION—FIRST SETTLER ARRIVES—MAJOR HEATH, FIRST SUPERVISOR—THE DANGEROUS BRIGGS BROTHERS—OTHER NEW YORK MEN—THE HOGMIRE FAMILY—RUGGED WORK OF THE PIONEERS—M. H. HOGMIRE ON PIONEER TIMES—NEW TIMES BETTER THAN OLD . . . . . 424-436

## CHAPTER XXI

## TOWNSHIP OF BANGOR

NATURAL FEATURES—EARLY SETTLERS—PIONEER TAX PAYERS—CIVIL AND EDUCATIONAL—SKETCH BY HON. JOHN S. CROSS—IN THE CIVIL WAR—PROGRESS AND PROSPERITY—VILLAGE OF BANGOR—VILLAGE OF DEERFIELD . . . . . 437-447

## CHAPTER XXII

## TOWNSHIP OF BLOOMINGDALE

FIRST SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS—TAXES AND TOWNSHIP GOVERNMENT—POPULATION AND EDUCATION—VILLAGE OF BLOOMINGDALE—MR. HAVEN'S SKETCH OF THE VILLAGE—CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES—VILLAGE OF GOBLEVILLE . . . . . 448-463

## CHAPTER XXIII

## TOWNSHIP OF COLUMBIA

PHYSICAL FEATURES AND RAILROADS—SITE OF BREEDSVILLE SETTLED—PROPERTY HOLDERS AND TAXES (1839)—SETTLERS PRIOR TO 1845—CIVIL AND POLITICAL—PRESENT VILLAGE OF BREEDSVILLE—BERLAMONT—COLUMBIA—GRAND JUNCTION . . . . . 464-473

CHAPTER XXIV

TOWNSHIP OF COVERT

THE ORIGINAL TOWNSHIP—PHYSICAL FEATURES—EARLIEST SETTLERS—ROADS AND SCHOOLS—STATISTICAL AND POLITICAL—THE VILLAGE OF COVERT .....474-481

CHAPTER XXV

TOWNSHIP OF DECATUR

FIRST WHITE SETTLER OF THE COUNTY—FIRST NATIVE WHITE CHILD—FIRST GOSPEL SERMON AND PIONEER SCHOOL—A. B. COPLEY ON EARLY DAYS—VARIOUS PIONEERS—CIVIL AND POLITICAL—STATISTICS—VILLAGE OF DECATUR—RETROSPECT...482-494

CHAPTER XXVI

TOWNSHIP OF GENEVA

ROADS AND PHYSICAL FEATURES—POLITICAL AND EDUCATIONAL—PIONEERS OF THE TOWNSHIP—VILLAGE OF LACOTA—VILLAGE OF KIBBIE—GENERAL TOWNSHIP PROGRESS .....495-501

CHAPTER XXVII

TOWNSHIP OF HAMILTON

CIVIC AND POLITICAL MATTERS—PHYSICAL FEATURES—TAXPAYERS AND TAXES OF 1839—FIRST BUILDING AND FIRST PERMANENT SETTLER—ALSO SETTLED PRIOR TO 1844—ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE PIONEERS AND THEIR TIMES—SCHOOLS, THEN AND NOW—THE HAMILTON TOWNSHIP FAIR .....502-512

CHAPTER XXVIII

TOWNSHIP OF HARTFORD

FIRST THINGS AND EVENTS—ALLEN'S PAPER TOWN—FIRST ACTUAL SETTLERS—TERRITORIAL AND OFFICIAL—"WHEN THE

WORLD GOES WRONG WITH ME''—THE VILLAGE OF HARTFORD— EDUCATIONAL AND PROFESSIONAL—CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES— BUSINESS AND INDUSTRIES .....	513-532
--	---------

## CHAPTER XXIX

## TOWNSHIP OF KEELER

LAKES AND RESORTS—CIVIL ORGANIZATION—FIRST SETTLERS OF TOWNSHIP—WOLCOTT H. KEELER—SETTLERS OF 1836-44—TAX- PAYERS, PROPERTY AND SCHOOLS—KEELER AND OTHER TOWNS— GENERAL VIEW .....	533-542
---	---------

## CHAPTER XXX

## TOWNSHIP OF LAWRENCE

STREAMS AND LAKES—EARLY PIONEERS AND SETTLEMENTS—THE BRANCH FAMILY—JUDGE JAY R. MONROE—FIRST MARRIAGE, BIRTH AND DEATH—ROADS AND MAILS—FLAT-BOAT TRAFFIC— PAPER TOWN OF VAN BUREN—CIVIL, EDUCATIONAL AND POLIT- ICAL—LOOKING BACKWARD—VILLAGE OF LAWRENCE—CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES—BUSINESS AND GENERAL FEATURES .....	543-563
---	---------

## CHAPTER XXXI

## TOWNSHIP OF PAW PAW

ORIGINAL TOWNSHIP OF LA FAYETTE—BECOMES PAW PAW TOWN- SHIP—LAKES—THE HARDY PIONEERS—"MR. AND MRS." PE-PE- YAH—DAVID WOODMAN'S PIONEER PICTURES—THE PAW PAW IRREVOCABLY CROOKED—STATISTICAL, POLITICAL, HORTICULTURAL —VILLAGE OF PAW PAW .....	564-590
--	---------

## CHAPTER XXXII

## TOWNSHIP OF PINE GROVE.

TOWNSHIP ORGANIZED—SHINGLES AS LEGAL TENDERS—MARITAL AND LEGAL—KALAMAZOO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD—GENERAL PROGRESS—GOBLEVILLE—PINE GROVE—KENDALL—MENTHA. .....	591-597
---	---------

CHAPTER XXXIII

TOWNSHIP OF PORTER

FIRST SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS—THE KINNEY SETTLEMENT—  
THE ADAMS FAMILY—TOWNSHIP NAMED AND ORGANIZED—EDUCA-  
TIONAL AND POLITICAL—A RETROSPECT .....598-602

CHAPTER XXXIV

TOWNSHIP OF SOUTH HAVEN

EARLY ELECTIONS AND OFFICIALS—PROPERTY AND POPULATION—  
JAY R. MONROE, FIRST WHITE SETTLER—CLARK AND DANIEL  
PIERCE—A. S. DYCKMAN'S STORY—PIONEER STEAM SAWMILLS—  
FIRST INSTITUTIONS AND PIONEERS—VILLAGE (NOW CITY) OF  
SOUTH HAVEN—THE SUMMER RESORT BUSINESS—SCHOOLS,  
CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES—MUNICIPAL AND BUSINESS MATTERS—  
POMOLOGICAL SOCIETY AND BOARD OF TRADE .....603-619

CHAPTER XXXV

TOWNSHIP OF WAVERLY

PHYSICAL FEATURES—TOWNSHIP NAMED—THE MYERS FAMILY—  
FIRST WEDDING BETWEEN PIONEERS—COVEY HILL—JOHN SCOTT  
—OTHER EARLY SETTLERS—FROM THE OFFICIAL RECORDS—VIL-  
LAGE OF GLENDALE .....620-627





## INDEX

- Abbe, Jesse, 410  
Abbott, Elisha, 468  
Abell, Charles E., 943  
Abrams, Albert H., 1154  
Abrams, James E., 759  
Ackley, D. C., 467  
Ackley, Levi, 468  
Ackley, William, 567  
Adams, Frank A., 470  
Adams, Franklin B., 112, 412, 602  
Adams, Homer, 432  
Adams, Horace H., 600  
Adams, Norman H., 468, 470  
Adams, Oscar, 634  
Adriance, William H., 625  
Agard, John, 567  
Agriculture and horticulture—Lake Michigan  
a benefactor, 319; fruit raising at South  
Haven, 320; fruit-belt widens, 321; coopera-  
tion through societies, 322; "Master L. H.  
Bailey," 323; A. S. Dyckman and T. T.  
Lyon, 324; crops of the county, 324; semi-  
agricultural industries, 325; agriculture in  
eastern Van Buren, 325; "Oak openings"  
first cultivated, 326; pioneer farm imple-  
ments, 327; after the Civil war, 327; live  
stock, 328; golden era (1865-90), 328; the  
lean years of the nineties, 329; development  
of the grape industry, 329  
Albright, Henry H., 986  
Alexander, Daniel, 484  
Alexander, William, 483, 488  
Allen, D. B., 480  
Allen, Daniel M., 791  
Allen, Daniel W., 1106  
Allen, Howard S., 468  
Allen, John, 515, 544, 553, 558  
Allen, Joseph C., 778  
Allen, Reuben E., 625  
Allerton, Charles B., 729  
Almena township—Mention, 83; general de-  
scription, 393; pioneer settlers and institu-  
tions, 394; busy period (1836-42), 396; set-  
tlement in the northern sections, 397;  
churches, 398; schools, supervisors, etc., 399  
Alpena (Hamilton) township, 83, 503  
Anderson, A. Throop, 468  
Anderson, Charles E., 521  
Anderson, Charles J., 908  
Anderson, David, 166, 468, 471  
Anderson, Doctor H., 468, 471  
Anderson, Edgar A., 527  
Andrews, Josiah, 89, 94  
Anderson, Julian H., 527, 829  
Anderson, LeGrand, 485  
Anderson, Marion O., 527  
Anderson, William, 527, 602  
Andrews, John, 526, 556, 605  
Andrews, Josiah, 134, 239, 380  
Andrews, William H., 613  
Annable, Edward R., 396  
Annable, Fernando C. C., 395, 400, 621  
Antwerp township—Mention, 80, 81; general  
description, 401; railroads, property and  
population, 402; early settlement, 403; set-  
tlers of 1836-8, 406; settlers in southern  
Antwerp township, 409; postoffices, roads  
and hotels, 410; pioneer mills, 411; township  
elections and officials, 411; educational sta-  
tistics, 412; Glen Springs trout hatchery,  
413; village of Lawton, 413; village of Mat-  
tawan, 419; retrospect, 422  
Appleton, Ephraim S., 764  
Arlington township—Mention, 84; first elec-  
tion, 424; drainage, timber and products,  
425; first settler arrives, 426; Major Heath,  
first supervisor, 426; the dangerous Briggs  
brothers, 428; other New York men, 429;  
the Hogmire family, 430; rugged work of the  
pioneers, 431; official records, 432; M. H.  
Hogmire on pioneer times, 433; new times  
better than the old, 435  
Armstrong, E., 625  
Arnold, G. W., 983  
Ashbrook, Charles W., 892  
Austin, Charles, 683  
Austin, Jonah, 623  
Austin, Samuel J., 1005  
Avery, Charles B., 178  
Avery, Charles R., 710  
Avery, Mrs. H. M., 615  
Avery, R., 575  
Avery Beach, 616  
Babbitt, J. M., 467  
Baggerly, Chester P., 855  
Bailey, Ed. M., 715  
Bailey, John, 844  
Bailey, Liberty H., 320, 1145  
Bailey, Prof. Liberty H., 1148  
Baker, Andrew, 1155  
Baker, C. I., 391  
Baker, Fred H., 535  
Baker, John R., 105, 535, 560, 571  
Balch, Luther C., 625  
Balfour, Herbert F., 989

- Balfour, Vannie, 989  
 Ball, Abraham, 570  
 Ball, Jesse, 605  
 Bangor, 114  
 Bangor, Lyman S., 253  
 Bangor township—Mention, 85; natural features, 437; early settlers, 438; pioneer taxpayers, 439; civil and educational, 440; sketch by Hon. John S. Cross, 441; in the Civil war, 443; progress and prosperity, 443; village of Bangor, 444; village of Deerfield, 447  
 Bangs, Joshua, 134, 404, 412, 595  
 Bangs, Nathaniel H., 1133  
 Bangs, Theophilus, 405, 412  
 Bank of Covert, 351  
 Banks (see Financial and other institutions)  
 Banks, Fred W., 1144  
 Banks, Jacob F., 1011  
 Banks, Nancy B., 1012  
 Baptist church, Bloomingdale, 457  
 Baptist church, Lawton, 418  
 Barber, Jonas, 394, 398  
 Barber, L. A., 454  
 Barber, M. A., 365  
 Bark and quill work, 3  
 Barker, George H., 474, 849  
 Barker, Harvey, 600, 601, 602  
 Barker, Irwin M., 1097  
 Barker, John, 602, 1096  
 Barker, Wesley T., 1124  
 Barner, Silas N., 734  
 Barnes, Adelia (Mrs. Allen Rice), 440  
 Barnes, Anson U., 556  
 Barnes, Ella, 611, 616  
 Barnes, Joseph B., 135, 575  
 Barnes, Uriel T., 335, 548  
 Barney, Aaron, 507  
 Barnum, Edwin, 89, 90, 568, 575  
 Barnum, Henry, 399, 400  
 Barnum, Humphrey P., 80, 135, 516, 549, 552, 553, 556  
 Barrington, David, 594  
 Barrett, Enoch L., 566, 567  
 Barrows, John, 466  
 Bartholomew, George, 490, 539  
 Barton, Anne S., 809  
 Barton, Jesse S., 807  
 Bartley, Robert, 475  
 Basket making, 30  
 Bass, William W., 556  
 Bates, Israel P., 94, 731  
 Baxter, J. H., 351  
 Beach, Adam, 716  
 Beach, Ray W., 1069  
 Beach, William, 1068  
 Beals, Alpheus, 1082  
 Beebe, Eri, 488  
 Beers, Joseph D., 489  
 Bell, Rezin, 623, 624, 625  
 Bellows, C. F. R., 360  
 Bench and Bar—Circuit courts, 159; county courts, 161; first circuit judge, 161; successors of Judge Ransom, 162; Judge Flavius J. Littlejohn, 163; thirty-sixth circuit created, 165; probate judges, 165; Van Buren county bar, 166  
 Benedict, Amos C., 136, 137, 556  
 Benevolent Eastern Star Lodge No. 46, Hartford, 530  
 Bennett, George, 488  
 Bennett, William, 693  
 Bentley, George A., 135, 503, 504  
 Benton, Burr, 1140  
 Berlamont, 110, 471  
 Bidwell, H. E., 323  
 Bierce, James M., 430  
 Bierce, Norman, 336  
 Bigelow, Calvin J., 431  
 Bigelow, Rufus, 431  
 Bigelow, Samuel, 431  
 Bilsborrow, Cora W., 784  
 Bilsborrow, Edward F., 783  
 Bingham, John, 411  
 Bingham, John K., 411  
 Birge's Western Sharpshooters, 294  
 Bishop, Arch W., 461  
 Bitely, Nathan H., 330, 412  
 Bixby, M. H., 344  
 Blackinton, Albert B., 1129  
 Blackman, E. A., 356, 360  
 Blackman, Samuel H., 178, 358  
 Blair, Austin, 73  
 Blaisdell, William, 1016  
 Blakeman, M. J., 625  
 Blashfield, Timothy E., 890  
 Bleecker, L. B., 358  
 Bliss, J. J., 420  
 Bloomingdale, 110, 453  
 Bloomingdale creamery, 459  
 Bloomingdale township—Mention, 84; first settlements and settlers, 449; taxes and township government, 451; population and education, 452; village of Bloomingdale, 453; Mr. Haven's sketch of the village, 454; churches and societies, 456; village of Gobleville, 459  
 "Bloomington Leader," 365  
 Boardman, Silas R., 344, 611  
 Bockius, Fannie, 420  
 Bonfoey, Horace, 394, 395  
 Booth, William A., 613  
 Borden, I. S., 412  
 Bowen, Frank, 608  
 Bowen, Henry F., 592  
 Bowen, Mrs. Nancy (Hicks), 338  
 Boyce, George D., 602  
 Boyer, Seymour A., 1014  
 Boynton, Cyrus, 523  
 Bradley, William S., 813  
 Branch, Eaton, 94, 546, 552, 553  
 Branch, Francis, 556  
 Branch, Israel, 546  
 Branch, Lemuel J., 445, 446  
 Branch, Luther, 546  
 Branch, Vine, 546  
 Breed, B. L., 352  
 Breed, Joshua B., 400, 662  
 Breed, Marie C., 663  
 Breed, A. Silas, 397, 400, 404, 467, 470, 603, 605, 697  
 Breeding, William P., 352, 834  
 Breedsville, 114, 470  
 Bregger, Louis A., 994

- Bridges, Lyman, 521  
 Bridges, William, 429  
 Briggs, Allen, 84, 424, 427  
 Briggs, Duane D., 428, 468  
 Briggs, Emory O., 343, 355, 424, 428, 432, 575  
 Briggs, Mansel M., 438, 439, 440, 605  
 Brockway, Hugh, 655  
 Broadwell, William, Sr., 350, 810  
 Brookfield, William, 484  
 Brooks, George E., 859  
 Brooks, Philip M., 495  
 Broughton, Aaron W., 510  
 Broughton, Emma J., 914  
 Brown, Amasa M., 468  
 Brown, Amos S., 467, 468  
 Brown, Charles R., 164  
 Brown, E. W., 392  
 Brown, George, 392  
 Brown, Green H., 400  
 Brown, Isaac, 625  
 Brown, James A., 530  
 Brown, J. W., 452  
 Brown, Levi A., 400  
 Brown, Luman, 467  
 Brown, Orlando, 441  
 Brown, Rufus M., 453  
 Brown, Walter A., 400  
 Brush Creek (Lawrence), 560  
 Bryant, Asahel, 602  
 Bryant, C. T., 322, 323  
 Buck, George M., 164, 165  
 Buck, Lucius E., 535  
 Buck, Orrin, 412  
 Buel, B. G., 511  
 Buffington, H. C., 360  
 Bullard, James F., 259  
 Burdick, C. E., 751  
 Burdick, John Q., 782  
 Burger, Francis A., 982  
 Burkette, F. Z., 446  
 Burkette, G. F., 363  
 Burlington, George, 1056  
 Burrows, O. H., 496  
 Burton, William S., 239  
 Butler, John B., 357  
 Butler, Oramel, 569  
 Butterfield, Chauncey W., 625  
 Butterfield, Frank A., 1112  
 Buys, Archibald, 567  
 Byers, C. W., 504  
 Byers, Tobias, 536
- Cadillac, Antoine de la Mothe, 55  
 Caldwell, H., 625  
 Camp, Joel, 468  
 Camp, Thomas S., 544  
 Campbell, Andrew H., 741  
 Canning, James, 1094  
 Cargo, George A., 1023  
 Carleton's (Will) "Country Doctor," 391  
 Carney, Malcolm S., 490  
 Carpenter, Frank A., 1048  
 Carroll, Thomas, 1007  
 Carter, E., Jr., 470  
 Cash, Erastus, 815  
 Cass, Lewis, 67, 78  
 Cate, Lorenzo D., 469
- Catholic church, Decatur, 492  
 Caughey, John, 455  
 Central Hotel, Bloomingdale, 459  
 Chadwick, Benjamin F., 134, 534, 535, 538, 556  
 Chadwick, Charles, 555  
 Chairman of the board of supervisors, 176  
 Chamberlain, H., 468  
 Chandler, Alonzo H., 361, 362, 526, 611  
 Chapman, Alvin, 350  
 Chapman, George W., 1117  
 Chapman, William H., 993  
 Charles, Clifton B., 746  
 Charles, William S., 1051  
 Chase, A. B., 350, 351  
 Chase, Edwin A., 625, 769  
 Chesebro, Nathaniel, 419  
 Chicago road, 99  
 Christian church, Bloomingdale, 456  
 Christian church, Decatur, 491  
 Christian church, Hartford, 530  
 Christian church, Paw Paw, 584  
 Christie, Robert, 555, 556  
 Church, Jesse L., 553  
 Church of Latter Day Saints, Hartford, 530  
 Churchill, Lewis E., 461  
 Churchill, Reuben E., 133, 135  
 Circuit court associate judges, 171  
 Circuit court commissioners, 173  
 Civil war—Sixth Michigan Infantry, 183;  
 Twelfth Michigan Infantry, 188; Thirteenth  
 Michigan Infantry, 197; Stone River, 198;  
 Seventeenth Michigan Infantry, 215; at South  
 Mountain, 216; Nineteenth Michigan Infan-  
 try, 218; Twenty-fourth Michigan Infantry,  
 225; Twenty-fifth Michigan Infantry, 226;  
 Twenty-eighth Michigan Infantry, 227; First  
 Michigan Cavalry, 232; Third Michigan  
 Cavalry, 239; justice to cavalry regiments,  
 241; Fourth Michigan Cavalry, 256; capture  
 of Jefferson Davis, 259; Ninth Michigan  
 Cavalry, 267; capture of Morgan, 268; first  
 and last, 269; First Michigan Engineers and  
 Mechanics, 274; First Michigan Sharp-  
 shooters, 278; First Regiment Michigan  
 Light Artillery, 279; Van Buren county sol-  
 diers in other Michigan regiments, 282;  
 Birge's Western Sharpshooters, 294; Com-  
 pany C, Seventieth New York Infantry, 300;  
 other companies or regiments, 307; troops  
 and money from the county, 309  
 "Citizens Advocate," 368  
 Citizens Bank, Decatur, 349  
 Citizens State Bank, South Haven, 345  
 Clapp, John T., 722  
 Clapp, Sarah A., 723  
 Clark, James J., 447  
 Clark, Joel H., 351, 505, 1039  
 Clark, Thomas, 397  
 Clark, William H., 996  
 Clarson, George, 492, 585  
 Clement, James L., 961  
 Clements, George W., 758  
 Cleveland, Edward, 385  
 Cleveland, Frank G., 432, 1009  
 Cleveland, Jewett, 708  
 Clinch township, 80, 81, 84, 591

- Deerfield, 447  
 Deerfield township, 85, 86  
 DeHaven, Levi, 432  
 DeLand, C. V., 278  
 Dell, William A., 474, 478  
 DeLong, Francis, 519  
 DeLong, Henry, 520  
 DeLong, Nathan, 520  
 DeLong, Silas, 520  
 Densmore, J., 367  
 Densmore, Randolph, 320, 605  
 Derosier, Joseph, 394  
 Des Voignes, L. Burget, 165  
 Dewey, Henry E., 605  
 Dilley, Marshall, 500  
 Dilley, Varnum H., 496, 500  
 Dillman, Adam, 978  
 Dillman, Peter J., 136  
 Disbrow, Lavoisier W., 988  
 Disciple (Christian) church, Bangor, 446  
 Dobbyn, Henry L., 1115  
 Dobbyn, James, 477  
 Dodge, Daniel O., 80, 82, 567, 575  
 Dodge, Mrs. Daniel O., 582  
 Dodge, Henry J., 1130  
 Donavan, Bartholomew, 1001  
 Donovan, Andrew, 1015  
 Doty, Charles, 529  
 Doty, Sarah, 529  
 Douglas, Edwin S., 695  
 Dow, Joseph, 320  
 Downing, Asahel S., 396  
 Downing, Selina, 593  
 Doyle, Stephen, 521  
 Drake, Lawrence, 996  
 Drummond, Frank, 355  
 Drury, E., 361  
 Duncombe, Albert O., 869  
 Duncombe, Charles, 177, 178, 535, 540, 872  
 Duncombe, Moses, 540  
 Duncombe, Stephen W., 540  
 Dunham, Carey, 418, 684  
 Dunkley, S. J., 113  
 Durkee, Elisha, 165, 575  
 Dyckman, Aaron S., 320, 324, 592, 605, 608, 610  
 Dyckman, Barney H., 605, 609  
 Dyckman, Evert B., 406, 578, 579  
 Dyckman, Evert S., 579, 931  
 Dyckman, William, 430  
 Dyer, Adoniram J., 518  
 Dygert's Sharpshooters, 288
- Eagan, James, 1024  
 Eagle Lake, 565  
 Eames, Aaron, 320  
 Earl, Francis, 530  
 Earl, Palmer, 504, 539  
 Earle, William, 539  
 Earle, William H. H., 362  
 Eastman, Jacob S., 897  
 Easton, Glenn S., 365, 686  
 Easton, Sylvester G., 521  
 Eaton, Charles L., 178, 358  
 Edgerton, Abel, 496  
 Educational (see Schools)  
 Eleventh Michigan Cavalry, 292  
 Eleventh Michigan Infantry, 285  
 Elliott, Mary, 490  
 Ely Park, 527  
 Engle, Cenius H., I, 6, 24, 26, 29, 514, 519, 523, 524, 526, 529  
 Engle, W. A., 383, 526  
 English period (1760-1796), 56  
 Enlow, Michael, 812  
 Enos, A. D., 468  
 Ewald, Edward W., 886
- Farmers and Merchants Bank, Lawrence, 351  
 Farnum, Matthias, 477  
 Farrow, Phineas, 1121  
 Fausnaugh, Adelbert, 1103  
 Fenton, Matthew, 538  
 Ferguson, James, 407  
 Ferguson, James D., 1149  
 Ferguson, James E., 381  
 Fields, Calvin, 504  
 Fifteenth Michigan Infantry, 286  
 Fifth Michigan Cavalry, 290  
 Fifth Michigan Infantry, 283  
 Financial and other institutions—First National Bank, Paw Paw, 342; the Paw Paw Savings Bank, 343; First National Bank, South Haven, 344; Citizens State Bank, South Haven, 345; banks of Decatur, 348; Hartford banks, 349; West Michigan Savings Bank, Bangor, 350; the People's Bank, Bloomingdale, 351; at Gobleville, Covert, Lawrence and Lawton, 351; South Haven Loan and Trust Company, 352; Farmers' Mutual Fire Insurance Company, 352; telegraph and telephone lines, 353  
 Finch, Charles A., 720  
 First Baptist church, Hartford, 529  
 First Baptist church, Lawrence, 561  
 First Baptist church, Paw Paw, 584  
 First Michigan Cavalry, 292  
 First Michigan Engineers and Mechanics, 274  
 First Michigan Infantry, 282  
 First Michigan Sharpshooters, 278  
 First National Bank, Decatur, 348  
 First National Bank, Paw Paw, 342  
 First National Bank, South Haven, 344  
 First Regiment Michigan Light Artillery, 279  
 First Presbyterian church, Lawrence, 561  
 First state convention, 69  
 Fish, Ellen, 497  
 Fish, Hiram, 86, 474, 477  
 Fisher, Everett A., 880  
 Fisk, Stephen W., 398, 400  
 Fitch, George A., 357  
 Fitch, Henry, 412  
 Fitch, Lyman A., 412  
 Fitch, Morgan L., 406, 412  
 Fitzsimmons, Michael, 863  
 "Fonetic Klips," 367  
 Foote, S. J., 575  
 Forbes, Fred, 1099  
 Ford, Henry, 112  
 Foster, Dwight, 535, 771  
 Foster, George S., 525  
 Foster, Ida, 858  
 Foster, Josephine, 858  
 Foster Sisters, The, 856

- Cobb, Alonzo, 398  
 Cobb, Vera P., 365  
 Cochran, Andrew M., 1019  
 Cochrane, Donald F., 362, 703  
 Cochrane, H. F., 362  
 Cochrane, James G., 430, 466  
 Colburn, Byron H., 553  
 Cole, Hiram A., 356, 700  
 Coleman, Henry D., 83, 503, 504, 509  
 Coleman, Sheldon, 412, 792  
 Collins, John H., 504  
 Columbia, 110, 472  
 Columbia township—Mention, 85; physical features and railroads, 464; site of Breedsville selected, 465; property holders and taxes, 467; settlers prior to 1845, 468; civil and political, 468; as a resort region, 469; present village of Breedsville, 470; village of Berlamont, 471; village of Columbia, 472; village of Grand Junction, 472  
 Comley, Maria, 508  
 Company C, 70th N. Y. Infantry, 300  
 Compton, John D., 486  
 Comstock, Albert, 445  
 Comstock, Darius E., 178  
 Comstock, Horace H., 109  
 Cone, Mehitable, 514  
 Congdon, William L., 1093  
 Congregational church, Bangor, 446  
 Congregational church, Covert, 480  
 Congregational church, Hartford, 530  
 Congregational church, Lawrence, 561  
 Congregational church, Mattawan, 422  
 Conklin, David, 883  
 Conklin, Luke, 517  
 Conklin, Mrs. Martha, 521  
 Conklin, Mary E., 883  
 Conklin, Thomas, 517  
 Connery, George B., 895  
 Conway, Austin D., 504  
 Conway, S. Tallmadge, 89, 94, 355, 358  
 Cook, John R., 1105  
 Cook, Sarah, 490  
 Cook, Sullivan, 363  
 Cooley, Franklin, 957  
 Cooper, John, 409  
 Copley, Alexander B., 86, 389, 484  
 Copley, E. B., 349  
 Copley, G. N., 483  
 Corey, Anthony, 405  
 Corey, Sanford, 602  
 Corey, Warren S., 601, 602  
 Cornish, George W., 369, 1101  
 Cornish, John H., 602, 1098  
 Cornish, Thomas J., 1044  
 Corwin, Jacob, 29  
 Coterie Club, 586  
 County buildings (new), 141-158  
 County clerks, 172  
 County commissioners, 171  
 County commissioners of schools, 174  
 County judges, 171  
 County seat—Lawrence as the seat of justice, 129; Paw Paw displaces Lawrence, 130; proposed county buildings, 132; old courthouse completed, 134; South Haven bids for county seat, 136; popular vote for Paw Paw, 138; new county buildings, 141; courthouse corner-stone laid, 141; cost of present county buildings, 155  
 County surveyors, 174  
 County treasurers, 173  
 Courthouse (see County buildings)  
 Courts (see Bench and Bar)  
 Covert, 113, 479  
 Covert Resort Association, 478  
 Covert township—Mention, 186; the original township, 474; physical features, 475; earliest settlers, 475; roads and schools, 477; statistical and political, 478; the village of Covert, 479  
 Covey Hill, 623  
 Covington township—Mention, 80, 81, 82, 83  
 Cox, Elisha C., 84  
 Cox, Isaac J., 535  
 Cox, Joseph, 625  
 Cox, O. E., 432  
 Coy, Daniel, 737  
 Crandall, J. C., 523  
 Crandall, Wallace W., 954  
 Crane, Alonzo, 569  
 Crane, Loyal, 569-575  
 Crane, Jane, 569  
 Crane, James, 342, 569  
 Craw, Joseph W., 443  
 Cronin, M. C., 381  
 Cronkhite, John, 420  
 Crops of the county, 324  
 Cross, Alfonso, 1030  
 Cross, Calvin, 442, 444, 526  
 Cross, Charles U., 438, 439, 440, 442, 444, 496, 603  
 Cross, Samuel P., 442  
 Crouse, Conrad, 472  
 Culver, Samuel, 766  
 Currier, Jacob, 397  
 Curry, David, 485  
 Curtenius, Frederick W., 184  
 Cushman, Charles M., 470  
 Cutter, Frank F., 681  
  
 Daines, G. W., 457  
 Daniels, Lyman I., 576, 578  
 Danks, Richard B., 549  
 Danneffel, Adolph, 535, 877  
 Danneffel, George J., 535  
 Danneffel, Henry H., 999  
 Darling, James H., 400  
 Darling, Loren, 575  
 Davey, George, 992  
 David, James I., 267  
 Davis, George W., 725  
 Davis, Jefferson (capture of), 259  
 Dayton, Edwin J., 1139  
 Decatur, 109  
 "Decatur Republican," 359  
 Decatur township—Mention, 80, 81, 82; first white settler of the county, 482; first native white child, 483; first Gospel sermon and pioneer school, 483; A. B. Copley on early days, 484; various pioneers, 485; civil and political, 486; statistics, 488; village of Decatur, 489; retrospect, 494  
 Decker, Milton L., 343, 496, 713

- Foster, Truman, 504, 557  
 Fountain, Stephen, 544  
 Fourteenth Michigan Infantry, 285  
 Fourth Michigan Cavalry, 256  
 Fowler, Orville, 885  
 Free, John W., 94, 112, 343, 575  
 Free Will Baptist church, Gobleville, 462  
 Free Will Baptist church, Waverly, 398  
 Freeman, John D., 555  
 Freese, George S., 487  
 French, Milford T., 605  
 French, Warren F., 400  
 French period (1634-1764), 53  
 Fruit Belt line, 402  
 Fuller, Frank H., 432  
 Fuller, Ora F., 828  
 Fuller, Sidney, 432  
 Funk, Charles, 836
- Gage, Walter O., 521  
 Gantt, James N., 356  
 Gantt, Samuel N., 354  
 Gault, John, 625  
 Gay, William L., 825  
 Gaynor, Andrew, 468  
 Geneva township—Mention, 85; descriptive, 495; roads and physical features, 496; political and educational, 496; pioneers of the township, 498; statistical and physical, 500; village of Lacota, 500; village of Kibbie, 501; general township progress, 501  
 Geology—The Cambrian age, 311; Ordovician age, 312; the Silurian, 313; the Devonian, 314; Lower Carboniferous, 315; the Pleistocene (last chapter), 315  
 George, Charles G., 535  
 George, Edward, 847  
 Gerow, Isaac, 655  
 Gibbs, Dexter, 551, 554  
 Gibbs, Elizabeth, 551  
 Gibney, Henry E., 882  
 Giffen, John R., 381  
 Gilbert, Henry C., 218  
 Gillett, Charles, 363, 443  
 Gleason, Bert, 1064  
 Gleason, William H., 675  
 Glendale, 626  
 Glendale creamery, 626  
 Glen Springs Trout Hatchery, 415  
 Glidden, Asa C., 412  
 Glidden, E. M., 575  
 Glidden, O. D., 575  
 Goble, Edna, 382  
 Goble, Hiram E., 459, 461  
 Gobleville, 110, 459, 596  
 Gobleville creamery, 463  
 "Gobleville News," 366  
 Godfrey, Stafford, 133, 135  
 Goodenough, Fanny, 529  
 Gorton, Frank E., 1132  
 Goss, Henry, 447  
 Goss, John P., 968  
 Goss, M. O., 969  
 Gould, Gilbert, 864  
 Grand Junction, 110, 114  
 Grant, George, 474  
 Grant, Roland B., 832
- Grape industry, 329  
 Graves, Benjamin F., 163  
 Gray, Emily, 594  
 Gray, James, 545, 552, 553, 557  
 Gray, James M., 468, 470  
 Gray, Wells, 406  
 Green, Sanford M., 162  
 Gregory, Albert E., 535  
 Gregory, Don F., 958  
 Gremps, Peter, 161, 575, 576, 578, 581, 582  
 Grover, Nathaniel, 611  
 Gunton, Samuel, 80, 550  
 Gunsaul, Jacob, 475
- Hadsell, O. D., 356, 361, 362  
 Hagar, Solomon B., 504  
 Hale & Company, 345  
 Hale, George, 475, 977  
 Hale, George N., 345, 974  
 Hall, Alvin, 395  
 Hall, Benoni, 575  
 Hall, Charles G., 689  
 Hall, Clair G., 749  
 Hall, David P., 1075  
 Hall, Elmer W., 412  
 Hall, Freeman, 395  
 Hall, Gideon, 496  
 Hall, Isaac, 601  
 Hall, J. M., 366  
 Hall, Syrena B., 705  
 Hall, Walter A., 1102  
 Hall, Wesley M., 781  
 Hall, Willis V., 642  
 Halleck mill, 610  
 Hamilton, Alexander, 1062  
 Hamilton, A. & Sons, 1062  
 Hamilton, Horace E., 1064  
 Hamilton, William L., 1064  
 Hamilton township—Mention, 83; civic and political matters, 502; physical features, 504; taxpayers and taxes of 1839, 505; first building and first permanent settlers, 505; also settled prior to 1844, 507; illustrative of the pioneers and their times, 508; schools then and now, 510; the Hamilton township fair, 511  
 Hammond, Catharine, 517  
 Hammond, Henry, 514  
 Hammond, James H., 1070  
 Hammond, John, 514  
 Hammond, Mary G., 1071  
 Hannahs, George, 611, 613  
 Hannahs, Marvin, 472, 499, 552  
 Hard, James T., 426  
 Harper, Harvey, 801  
 Harris, Alvinsy, 429, 432  
 Harris, Floyd, 1111  
 Harris, Jefferson D., 432  
 Harris, Leonard M., 1111  
 Harris, Percy F., 1049  
 Harrison, Aaron, 793  
 Harrison, George M., 343, 688  
 Harrison, Thaddeus R., 358  
 Harrison, William Henry, 66, 87  
 Hart, Roswell, 521, 523  
 Hartford, 112, 113, 114, 523  
 "Hartford Day Spring," 361

- Hartford township—Mention, 83; named and organized, 513; first things and events, 514; Allen's paper town, 515; first actual settlers, 517; a soldier of the Revolution, 519; territorial and official, 520; "When the World Goes Wrong with Me," 522; the village of Hartford, 523; educational and professional, 525; churches and societies, 528; business and industries, 531
- Harvey, Edward H., 742  
 Harvey, E. P., 441  
 Harvey, H. D., 796  
 Harvey, Henry W., 744  
 Harvey, Marshall J., 1108  
 Harwick, Allen, 736  
 Harwick, Frank, 736  
 Harwick, Harman, 412  
 Harwick, Peter, 412  
 Haskin, Albert S., 94, 548, 549, 679  
 Hathaway, George, 1100  
 Hathaway, William B., 605, 611  
 Haven, Augustus, 451, 454  
 Haven, Davis, 454  
 Haven, Edward A., 900  
 Havens, Charles W., 1116  
 Hawes, Josiah L., 164  
 Hawley, G. W., 462  
 Hawkins, Nathan, 1086  
 Hawkins, William R., 581  
 Haydon, Arthur W., 349, 507, 511, 668  
 Haydon, Philotus, 134, 504, 507  
 Hayne, John D., 1087  
 Haynes, Alonzo M., 613  
 Haynes, John R., 80, 335, 544, 545, 553, 556  
 Hazard, Enos E., 677  
 Heagy, George, 535  
 Heath, Arvin, 432  
 Heath, Charles E., 427  
 Heath, Major, 424, 432  
 Heath, Morrison, 429  
 Heckert, Benjamin F., 73, 166, 179  
 Hempstead, C. J., 345  
 Henderson, Port H., 788  
 Hendryx, Josiah, 511  
 Herron, Ashbel, 449  
 Herron, John W., 945  
 Herzog, Adolf, 1109  
 Hicks, Evert B. D., 608  
 High, Leon, 1066  
 High, Mary R., 1067  
 High, William A., 490  
 Hill, E. Parker, 349, 488, 490  
 Hill, James, 534, 537  
 Hill, Justus, 537  
 Hill, L. Dana, 349  
 Hill, Lyman G., 535  
 Hilliard, Weare, 523  
 Hilton, George V., 387  
 Hilton, Orrin N., 165  
 Hinkley, Asa G., 569  
 Hinkley, Isaac, 612  
 Hinkley, Jonathan, 135, 404, 465, 569  
 Hinkley, Marvin, 488  
 Hinkley, Peter, 406  
 Hinkley, Rodney, 567, 612  
 Hinkley, Roy, 753  
 Hipp, Benton W., 400  
 Hipp, E. M., 350, 443  
 Hoag, Charles N., 495  
 Hoag, Mrs. Harriet, 497  
 Hoag, Mrs. Orrin S., 497  
 "Hog Creek" (Roseville), 516  
 Hogmire, Conrad, 431  
 Hogmire, Daniel, 430  
 Hogmire, Henry, 431  
 Hogmire, John, 431  
 Hogmire, Mitchell H., 432, 433, 1016  
 Hollister, Chauncey, 488, 602  
 Hollon, Joseph A., 343  
 Holmes, Keason, 410, 411  
 Hood, Charles, 659  
 Hood, George, 723  
 Hopkins, Josiah, 809  
 Horticulture (see Agriculture and Horticulture)  
 Hoskins, Myron, 466-7  
 Hosmer, C. F., 749  
 Houghton, Hiram T., 449  
 Houseknecht, Jacob D., 1104  
 Hover, Josephus S., 1026  
 Howard, Barnard M., 465  
 Howard, Harvey H., 898  
 Howard, Jonathan, 455, 467, 468  
 Howard, Nancy, 466  
 Howard, Turner W., 831  
 Hoyt J., 529  
 Hoyt, Wilbur F., 768  
 Hudson, Frank G., 659  
 Hudson, G. J., 575  
 Hudson, J. B., 400  
 Hudson, Thomas, 450  
 Hull, Moses, 359  
 Hull, William, 63-66  
 Humphrey, Horace, 467, 468  
 Humphrey, Luther, 561  
 Hungerford, Benjamin, 538  
 Hungerford, Volney R., 773  
 Hunt, Adeline P., 725  
 Hunt, Benjamin F., 605  
 Hunt, Charles F., 344  
 Hunt, Garrie W., 724  
 Hunt, Isaiah F., 432  
 Hunt, John, 405, 412  
 Hunt, John A., 975  
 Hurlbut, William H., 440, 442, 574, 605, 608  
 Hutchins, Elias, 1000  
 Hutchins, George G., 833  
 Hutchins, George W., 937  
 Ihling, John, 111, 112, 412  
 Indian mounds in Lawrence township, 337  
 Indian trails, 98  
 Indians—First church built by, in Van Buren county, 4; Chief Pokagon's address, 5; Pokagon's last wigwam, 12; Julia Pokagon's address, 12; "Old Wapsey," 14; Do Indians cry, laugh or joke?, 20; Algonquin legend of man's creation, by Pokagon, 21; legend of Paw Paw and the Paw Paw valley, by Pokagon, 24; Algonquin legends of South Haven, by Pokagon, 26; after me-me-og (squabs) in Van Buren county, by C. H. Engle, 29; Indian basket-making, 30; the "buck pony" ride, 33; "never carry a revolver, boys," 37; Saw-kaw's love story, 38; me-me-og, the wild pigeon, by Pokagon, 45

- Indiana territory formed, 62  
 Ingalls, J., 349  
 Irwin, Thomas B., 556  
 Isabella Club, 417  
 Ives, Joseph, 429
- Jennings, James G., 365  
 Jennings, Ralph E., 965  
 Jewell, James, 1002  
 Johns, Thomas J., 521  
 Johnson, Andrew, 360  
 Johnson, James H., 166, 605  
 Johnson, Lewis, 507  
 Johnson, L. S., 362  
 Johnson, Smith, 83, 520  
 Johnstone, W. A., 457  
 Jones, A. B., 330  
 Jones, M. Adelia, 719  
 Jones, Sylvester H., 719  
 Jordan, James F., 356
- Kalamazoo & South Haven Railroad, 109, 595  
 Karmsen, Oscar, 795  
 Kaw-kee, Joe, 33-37  
 Keeler, 541  
 Keeler, E. H., 502, 534  
 Keeler, Wolcott H., 80, 83, 161, 536-7  
 Keeler township—Descriptive, 533; lakes and resorts, 534; civil organization, 534; first settlers of township, 535; Wolcott H. Keeler, 537; settlers of 1836-44, 537; tax payers, property and schools, 540; Keeler and other towns, 541; general view, 542  
 Keith, Henry S., 535  
 Kelley, Patrick H., 177  
 Kelley, James, 1128  
 Kemp, Thomas, 514  
 Kendall, 597  
 Kendall, Lucius B., 453, 454  
 Kennedy, Almus, 997  
 Kennedy, John C., 400, 706  
 Kern, Julius M., 1060  
 Kern, Menasseh, 602  
 Ketcham, E. B., 320  
 Ketchum, James, 397  
 Ketchum, Oliver P., 702  
 Kibbie, 110, 501  
 Kietzer, Charles, 1113  
 Killefer, Henry, 453-4  
 Killefer, William, 575, 717  
 King, Edward H., 1143  
 Kingsley, Henry M., 951  
 Kinney, Elijah, 598  
 Kinney, Luther, 602  
 Kinney, Stephen, 487  
 Kinney, Uri, 602  
 Kitzmiller, W. K., 456  
 Klett, John M., 692  
 Klock, Ernest G., 365  
 Knapp, Royal R., 685  
 Knowles, Elijah, 466, 467, 468  
 Knowles, William H., 468  
 Krogel, Fred, 1029  
 Krohne, Sophie, 698  
 Krull, Frederick, 395
- Labadie, Anthony, 568  
 Labadie, Joseph, 672
- Lacota, 110, 500  
 Laduke, Nelson, 1024  
 La Fayette township, 79, 80, 81, 82, 86, 564, 565  
 Lake Cora, 565  
 Lake Mills (Gobleville), 461  
 Lake of the Woods, 488, 504  
 Lake Park, 566  
 Lamb, Frank, 861  
 Lampson, Truman A., 475  
 Landphere, E. A., 355  
 Lane, W. K., 361  
 Langdon, George, 709  
 Langdon, Phoebe F., 709  
 Langelan, Herman, 1138  
 Lannin, J., 323  
 Lanphear, Oel E., 902  
 Lawrence, 111, 113, 129, 130, 135, 558-63  
 Lawrence, Robert R., 712  
 "Lawrence Times," 365  
 Lawrence township—Mention, 80, 81, 82, 337; streams and lakes, 543; early pioneers and settlements, 544; the Branch family, 546; Judge Jay R. Monroe, 547; first marriage, birth and death, 551; the food problem, 552; roads and mails, 552; flat-boat traffic, 554; paper town of Van Buren, 555; civil, educational and political, 556; looking backward, 558; village of Lawrence, 558; churches and societies, 561; business and general features, 563  
 Lawton, 109, 111, 113, 401, 413  
 Lawton, Charles D., 120, 177, 412, 415, 754  
 Lawton, George W., 112, 165, 361, 415  
 Lawton, Nathan, 413, 416  
 "Lawton Leader," 361  
 Lawton Lodge, No. 216, A. F. & A. M., 417  
 Lawton Lodge No. 83, I. O. O. F., 417  
 Lee, Bert, 1081  
 Lee, Hiram, 489  
 Lee, James, 570  
 Lee, James A., 535  
 Lee, Uriel C., 570  
 Lee, William H., 570  
 Leedy, William, 1125  
 Le Fevre N., 487  
 Lemont (Glendale), 626  
 Lewis, Abram, 432  
 Lewis, C. E., 361  
 Lewis, Cyrus H., 475  
 Lewis, Marshall, 538  
 Lincoln, F. T., 367  
 Linderman, I. S., 323  
 Linton, Charles, 455, 894  
 Littlejohn, Flavius J., 163  
 Live stock, 328  
 Lobdell, Howard, 136, 137, 521  
 Local option in the county, 180  
 Lockard, E. D., 470  
 Lockman, DeWitt C., 592  
 Longcor, Wesley N., 1058  
 Longstreet, Andrew, 411, 412, 413, 415  
 Longstreet, Samuel, 406  
 Longwell, James M., 959  
 Longwell, Phoebe A., 960  
 Loomis, Russell F., 970  
 Lord, Frederick, 165  
 Lothrop, Edwin H., 109  
 Luce, Charles W., 468



- Lurkins, Harry J., 658  
 Lyle, Jason J., 657  
 Lyle, John, 328, 568  
 Lyle, Lemuel, 1123  
 Lyle, Levi N., 850  
 Lyle, William, 328  
 Lyle, William G., 1046  
 Lyon, T. T., 324  
 Lytle, Charles, 1088  
 Lytle, David, 739  
 Lytle, E. H., 484  
 Lytle, John, 1067  
  
 McAdams, Edward, 1092  
 McAdams, Leslie, 1092  
 McAlpine, John, 521, 535  
 McAlpine, John G., 837  
 McCon, Frank, 830  
 McDonald (Deerfield), 447  
 McKee, Darwin, 1090  
 McKeyes, Frank, 351  
 McKeyes, Juan, 351, 467, 787  
 McKinley, Napoleon B., 412  
 McKinney, John, 177, 355, 487, 602  
 McKinney, Lewis, 445  
 McLain, James C., 1050  
 McLain John C., 602  
 McNeil, Henry, 415  
 McNeil, Harry L., 641  
 McNight, Jane (Mrs. Dr. A. S. Haskin), 548  
 McNight, Mary Nancy, 548  
 McNitt, Alpheus A., 816  
 McNitt, Leslie A., 818  
 McWilliams, Archibald P., 521  
 Madill, R. J., 347  
 Maguire, Phillip, 1095  
 Malbone, John S., 605, 920  
 Mallory, Merlin M., 449  
 Manley, C. B., 1131  
 Manley, Hervey, 467  
 Maple lake, 565  
 Marble, Elisha, 624  
 Markillie, John J., 768  
 Markillie, William, 397  
 Marshall, John, 602, 1054  
 Marshall, Nelson S., 549  
 Martin Edwin, 112  
 Martin, Francis, 1022  
 Martin, Harry A., 690  
 Martin, Mrs. A. C., 358  
 Martindale, Samuel, 445  
 Marvin, A. E., 361  
 Marvin, J. D., 561  
 Mason (Lawrence), 544, 560  
 Mason, Stevens T., 70-72  
 Mason, Williamson, 133, 579, 580  
 Mather, Eusebius, 468  
 Mather House, 555  
 Mattawan, 109, 111, 113, 401, 419  
 Matthews, G. W., 355  
 Maxwell, James E., 504  
 Maxwell, John C., 765  
 May, Charles J., 938  
 Maynard, Charles, 359  
 Mead, Hannah, 582  
 Mears, Edwin, 337  
 Medicine and Surgery—Medical scientific re-  
 search, 370; preventive medicine, 371; sur-  
 gery, 375; the country physician and the  
 trained nurse, 376; early physicians of Van  
 Buren county, 377; Paw Paw physicians,  
 379; Bangor, 381; Gobleville, 381; Hartford,  
 382; Covert, 383; Lawrence, 384; Lawton,  
 386; the profession in South Haven, 387;  
 South Haven City Hospital, 388 Decatur,  
 390; the Veterinary school, 392  
 Me-me-og (wild pigeons), 45-52  
 Mentha, 110, 597  
 Menig, Ferdinand, 734  
 Menig, Mary S., 735  
 Merrifield, Edwin J., 455  
 Merriman, George W., 846  
 Merriman, Harry J., 847  
 Merriman, Marcus, 503  
 Merry, Elizabeth, 399  
 Merwin, Jesse, 453  
 Methodist church, Ahmena township, 399  
 Methodist church, Bangor, 443  
 Methodist church, Bloomingdale, 456  
 Methodist church, Decatur, 491  
 Methodist church, Gobleville, 462  
 Methodist church, Hartford, 529  
 Methodist church, Keeler, 541  
 Methodist church, Lacota, 500  
 Methodist church, Lawrence, 562  
 Methodist church, Lawton, 418  
 Methodist church, Mattawan, 422  
 Meyer, Herman, 794  
 Michigan Central Iron Company, 416  
 Michigan Central Railroad, 107-109  
 Michigan Fruit Exchange, 418  
 Michigan Provost Guard, 289  
 Michigan territory formed, 63  
 Middletown (Roseville), 515  
 Miller, H. B., 354  
 Miller, Samuel O., 411  
 Miller, William H., 774  
 "Millerism," 332  
 Mills, Alfred J., 164, 165, 178  
 Miner, Caroline, 497  
 Minty, Robert H. G., 240, 256  
 Mitchell, Alonzo S., 412, 1083  
 Mitchell, Gilbert, 496  
 Mitchell, Jacob, 915  
 Mitchell, J. W., 412  
 Molby, Charles B., 774  
 Monroe Bank, 350  
 Monroe, Charles E., 1028  
 Monroe, Charles J., 94, 177, 323, 325, 344, 350,  
 352, 605, 611, 802  
 Monroe, George C., 351, 822  
 Monroe, Hattie E., 1029  
 Monroe, Isaac, 556  
 Monroe, Jay R., 80, 89, 93, 161, 344, 352, 442,  
 496, 547, 606  
 Monroe, L. S., 352  
 Monroe, Miles, 1026  
 Monroe, Moses, 599  
 Monroe, S. E., 432, 441, 607  
 Monroe Realty Company, 352  
 Moon, E. B., 387  
 Moon, Peter, 405  
 Moon, Philip, 405  
 Moore, David P., 605  
 Moore, Henry, 948  
 Moore, Volney A., 551

- Morehouse, Edward A., 740  
 Morehouse, Stephen B., 320, 605, 611  
 Morgan, John (capture of), 268  
 Morrill, Charles M., 399, 400, 592  
 Morris, Dolphin, 326, 482, 483, 485, 488, 536  
 Morris, Elias, 484  
 Morris, Lewis Creighton, 483  
 Morris, Samuel, 485  
 Morrison, A. H., 114  
 Morrow, Henry A., 225  
 Moses, Charles A., 990  
 Moulton, Arba N., 360, 387, 490  
 Munger, George, 259  
 Munn, Benjamin S., 912  
 Murch, William, 622, 625  
 Murdock, Benjamin A., 94, 650  
 Murdock, Benjamin F., 570  
 Murdock, Mary V., 651  
 Murphy, Norman D., 381  
 Murray, Mary E., 594  
 Mutchler, George, 760  
 Myers, Mallory H., 449, 621, 625  
 Myers, Merlin M., 621  
 Myers, Reuben J., 449, 621, 624, 625  
 Myers, Ruth Ann, 621  
 Myers, Sarah, 622  
 Myers, William H. H., 449, 621, 626  
 Myhan, George H., 665
- Nash, Augustus W., 165  
 Nash, Rufus C., 358, 359  
 Nesbitt, James, 507, 536  
 Nesbitt, John, 599  
 Nesbitt, Mary, 508  
 Nesbitt, Minnie, 776  
 Nesbitt, Robert, 504, 506, 508, 509, 510  
 Nesbitt, Sophia L., 775  
 Newbre, F. D., 748  
 Newcomb, Mary, 398  
 Newcomb, Orlando H., 450  
 Newcomb, Willard, 83, 394, 395  
 Newspapers (see Press)  
 Nichols, John F., 887  
 Nichols, John J., 1004  
 Nicholas, Wesley E., 1008  
 Nik-a-nong (South Haven), 28  
 Niles, F. L., 529  
 Ninth Michigan Cavalry, 267  
 Ninth Michigan Infantry, 284  
 Northrup, Caleb, 438, 439, 442  
 Northrup, Emmett, 1079  
 Northrup, Mehitable, 440  
 Northrup, Perrin M., 439, 440  
 Northrup, Willard S., 445  
 Norton, Hiram E., 799  
 Noud, John F., 922  
 Nower, Charles L., 824  
 Noye, J. F., 134  
 Noyes, Kirk W., 605  
 Nutting, Ransom, 488  
 Nyman, Joseph, 444  
 Nyman, Joseph H., 442  
 Nyman, R. C., 862
- "Oak openings," 326  
 Ocobock, Mrs. Emma, 531  
 Ocobock, George W., 888  
 O'Dell, Allen, 952  
 O'Dell, Barnabas, 356, 357, 785  
 Olds, Estella M., 528  
 Olds, Ferdino, 513, 517  
 Olds, Hezekiah, 517  
 Olds, L. T., 490  
 Olds, Orson, 517  
 Olds, Volney W., 528, 889  
 Olney, Burrell A., 514  
 Olney, Burrill A., 517, 521  
 Olney, Horace M., 343, 349, 527, 528  
 Olney National Bank, 349  
 Oppenheim, Jacob, 349, 886  
 Ordinance of 1887, 59-61  
 Orton, Edwin P., 1078  
 Orton, Samuel J., 956  
 Osborn, Erastus, 762  
 Osborn, Lester E., 874  
 Oslerism, 94  
 Overton, Miller, 981  
 Overton, S. E., 1127
- Packard, Alfred H., Jr., 479  
 Packard, William O., 474  
 "Painters," 334  
 Page, Thomas P., 468  
 Palmer, Chauncey B., 400  
 Palmer, Ephraim, 558  
 Palmer, Ezra A., 383  
 Palmer, Frank W., 445  
 Palmer, Lewis, 1042  
 Palmer, Milton F., 382, 526  
 Palmer, Russell, 395  
 Parker, Thomas E., 1043  
 Parks, E. F., 343, 355  
 Parmeter, J. F., 420  
 Parsons, L. E., 345, 346  
 Paw Paw, 24, 113, 130, 136, 138, 158, 576-590  
 "Paw Paw Courier," 356  
 "Paw Paw Democrat," 354  
 "Paw Paw Free Press," 354  
 "Paw Paw Free Press and Courier," 355  
 Paw Paw Fruit Growers Union, 587  
 Paw Paw Lodge No. 18, I. O. O. F., 585  
 Paw Paw Railroad, 111  
 Paw Paw river as a carrier, 105, 554  
 Paw Paw Savings Bank, 343  
 Paw Paw township—Mention, 82, 86; original township of La Fayette, 564; becomes Paw Paw township, 565; lakes, 565; the hardy pioneers, 566; Mr. and Mrs. Pe-Pe-Yah, 571; David Woodman's pioneer pictures, 571; the Paw Paw irrevocably crooked, 574; statistical, political and horticultural, 575; village of Paw Paw, 576  
 Pease, Anson D., 699  
 Pease, Enoch M., 500  
 Peck, J., 467  
 Peoples Bank, Bloomingdale, 351  
 Pe-Pe-Yah, "Mr. and Mrs.," 571  
 Pere Marquette Railway, 113  
 Perkins, Roy D., 365, 455  
 Peters, John, 477  
 Phelps, Alexander H., 549  
 Phelps, Horatio N., 555  
 Phelps, Theodore E., 134, 535  
 Phillips, Benjamin, 411  
 Phillips, Charles C., 362, 363  
 Phillips, David M., 366

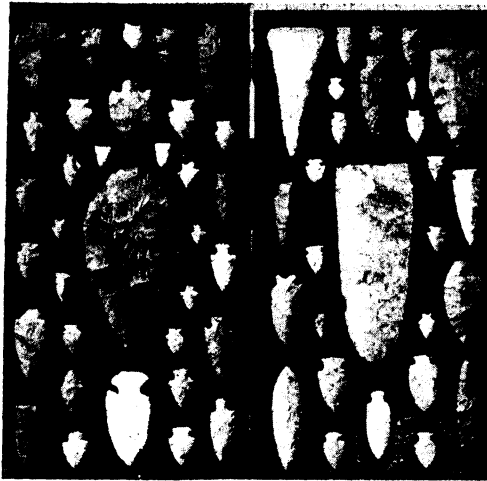
- Phillips, Eugene, 1134  
 Phillips, M. F., 504  
 Phillips, Norman, 323  
 Phillips, Solomon, 408, 411  
 Phillips, Waldo E., 504  
 Pierce, Almon J., 444, 500  
 Pierce, Clark, 498, 607  
 Pierce, Daniel, 498, 607  
 Pierce, H. M., 443  
 Pierce, Ransom T., 991  
 Pine Grove, 110, 597  
 Pine Grove township—Mention, 85; organized, 592; shingles as legal tender, 592; marital and legal, 594; Kalamazoo & South Haven Railroad, 595; general progress, 595; Gobleville, 596; Pine Grove, 597; Kendall, 597; Mentha, 597  
 Pioneer farm implements, 327  
 Place, Clarence E., 605  
 Plank roads, 103  
 Pokagon, Julia, 8, 11, 12-14  
 Pokagon, Simon (chief), 3, 5, 6, 8, 10, 11, 12, 21, 24, 26, 99  
 Politics of the county—General elections (1837-1910), 168; the parties in the county, 169; presidential vote in the county, 170; county officers, 171; members of the state legislature, 175; other important officials from Van Buren county, 177; constitutional conventions, 178; proposed constitutional amendments, 179; Van Buren county and the liquor traffic, 180  
 Pomeroy, George B., 605  
 Pontiac, 56-58  
 Poole, Olive, 514, 521  
 Poole, Watson, 550  
 Poor, Charles N., 510  
 Poor, Melvin H., 674  
 Poor, Simon B., 673  
 Poorman, Byron M., 1073  
 Population of county (1840-1910), 74  
 Porter, George G., 68  
 Porter township—Mention 82, 84; first settlers, 598; the Kinney settlement, 598; the Adams family, 600; township named and organized, 600; educational and political, 601; a retrospect, 602  
 Potter, Allen, 110  
 Potter, John B., 556  
 Pratt, Warren, 610  
 Presbyterian church, Decatur, 492  
 Presbyterian church, Paw Paw, 585  
 Press of Van Buren county—"Paw Paw Free Press," 354; "Paw Paw Free Press and Courier," 355; "The True Northerner," 356; "Decatur Republican," 359; the "Lawton Leader," 361; "Hartford Day Spring," 361; the "Bangor Advance," 363; early Lawrence newspapers, 364; "Lawrence Times," 365; "Bloomingdale Leader," 365; "Gobleville News," 366; South Haven newspapers, 366  
 Pritchard, Colonel, 258, 259, 260  
 Probate judges, 171  
 Prohibition in the county, 180  
 Prosecuting attorneys, 173  
 Prospect lake, 544  
 Pugsley, C. Ray, 649  
 Pugsley, Henry M., 569  
 Pugsley, John K., 568, 575  
 Pugsley, Milton H., 352, 653  
 Pugsley, Nathaniel M., 569  
 Pugsley's Lake, 565  
 Quackenbush, Elizabeth, 408  
 "Queen of the Woods," 6  
 Quinn, Francis, 188  
 Radtke, Charles, 800  
 Railroads—Michigan Central, 107; Kalamazoo & South Haven, 109; the Paw Paw Railroad, 111; Toledo & South Haven Railroad (Fruit Belt line), 111; the Pere Marquette Railway, 113  
 Randall, V. F., 468  
 Ranney, John A., 395, 400  
 Ranney, William, 395  
 Ransom, Epaphroditus, 109, 161, 162  
 Ransom, Thomas H., 455, 904  
 Reams, Fred W., 797  
 "Red Man's Greeting," 3  
 Register of deeds, 172  
 Reid, James L., 320  
 Remington, J. M., 453, 454  
 Renfer, Alfred, 1003  
 Rennie, James H., 652  
 Reynolds, Benjamin, 84, 505, 601  
 Reynolds, George, 544, 545, 558  
 Reynolds, Jane, 551  
 Reynolds, John, 358, 544, 545, 556, 558  
 Reynolds, Sarah, 551  
 Reynolds, Theodore L., 364  
 Rhoads, James O., 967  
 Rhodes, H. W., 135  
 Robinson, Daniel G., 450  
 Ridlon, John M., 638  
 Rice, Allen, 336  
 Rice, Mrs. Allen (Adelia), 122, 335, 383, 548  
 Rich, David E., 625  
 Richards, Chandler, 165, 556  
 Risley, C. S., 446  
 Rix, George H., 412  
 Roads—Indian trails, 98; first Michigan white man's road, 99; territorial and state roads, 99; old stage routes, 101; plank roads, 103  
 Robertson, Burrill A., 1152  
 Robbins, John, 1021  
 Robinson, Almiron, 838  
 Robinson, Claude D., 876  
 Robinson, Daniel G., 454  
 Robinson, John A., 1085  
 Rockwell, Charles, 556  
 Rogers, Joseph, 348  
 Rogers, Laura, 497  
 Rogers, Robert, 56  
 Rogers, Samuel, 472  
 Rood, Frank E., 1037  
 Root, Edson V., 445  
 Root, Herbert L., 925  
 Rose, Gilbert L., 390  
 Roosevelt, John V., 535  
 Roseville, 516  
 Ross, Thomas L., 575  
 Ross, Volney, 344  
 Rowe, George U., 667  
 Rowe, Nelson, 384, 556, 666

- Rowe, Rufus, 384  
 Rowe, Sylvanus, 385  
 Rowland, Marion O., 177, 358, 360  
 Rowland, Oran W., 94, 343, 358, 360, 1156  
 Ruggles, Joseph, 514, 521  
 Runyan, Arthur C., 926  
 Russell, L. S., 363  
 Russell, M. F., 363, 852  
 Ryan, John, 521
- Sackett, Stanley, 949  
 Sage, Richard E., 826  
 St. Clair, Arthur, 61  
 St. Mary's Church of the Immaculate Conception, Paw Paw, 585  
 Sanford, Lyman, 487  
 Savage, Levi, 409  
 Saw-kaw's love story, 38-45  
 Sawtelle, Elemuel, 468  
 Sayres, Rufus, 517  
 Schermerhorn, William, 1035  
 Schmidt, O. C., 366  
 School statistics, 125, 126  
 Schoolcraft, George W., 963  
 Schoolcraft, William, 941  
 Schools—Act of 1827 modified, 117; harassed school inspectors, 118; the teachers' qualifications, 120; Mrs. Allen Rice's reminiscences, 122; the old and the new, 125  
 Scott, Charles, 419  
 Scott, James, 622  
 Scott, John, 623  
 Scott, Leslie, 1034  
 Scott, Thomas, 486  
 Scott, William R., 891  
 Scott Club, South Haven, 617  
 Searls, Charles C., 661  
 Sebring, Horace, 415  
 Sebring, J. E., 350, 745  
 Second Michigan Cavalry, 290  
 Secord, W. W., 363, 365  
 Selkirk, Matthew V., 935  
 Selleck, Charles, 575  
 Sellick, F. W., 343  
 Sellick, George F., 355  
 Sellick, William J., 343  
 Sellick, W. R., 343  
 Semi-agricultural industries, 325  
 Seventeenth Michigan Infantry, 215  
 Shaefer, Charles S., 412  
 Shanahan, Joseph K., 1076  
 Shattuck, Shepard H., 475, 798  
 Shattuck, William J., 475  
 Shaw, Orrin S., 474  
 Sheffer, C. M., 320  
 Sheffer, S. G., 320  
 Sheldon, Charles P., 521, 1101  
 Sheldon, L. B., 575  
 Sheldon, Oliver H. P., 412  
 Sheldon, Thomas C., 613  
 Shepard, Henry, 867  
 Shepard, L. E., 575  
 Shepard, William W., 523, 525  
 Sheriffs, 171  
 Sherman, Alonzo, 342, 727  
 Sherman, John D., 733  
 Sherman, Joseph H., 729  
 Sherrod, Burtes M., 445  
 Sherrod, G. B., 575  
 Sherrod, Hiram, 761  
 Sherwood, George, 490  
 Sherwood, Samuel, 489  
 Shine, George, 854  
 Showerman, David, 397  
 Showerman, J. B., 343  
 Shuver, John H., 1027  
 Sibley, Solomon, 78  
 Sikes, Orendo M., 535, 538  
 Sikes, Zenas, 538  
 Simmons, Jeremiah H., 80, 165, 575  
 Simmons, Leander, 933  
 Simon, Ellis, 351  
 Sirrine, William R., 625  
 Sisson, Orrin, 602  
 Sister Lakes resort, 534  
 Sixteenth Michigan Infantry, 287  
 Sixth Michigan Infantry, 183  
 Skinner, Edward, 884  
 Smith, Augusta, 497  
 Smith, C. F., 365  
 Smith, David H., 625  
 Smith, Edmund, 343, 581  
 Smith, George P., 625  
 Smith, Harsen D., 165  
 Smith, Hattie B., 367  
 Smith, Henry, 511  
 Smith, Hiram A., 879  
 Smith, H. B., 432  
 Smith, Ira A., 367  
 Smith, James, 523  
 Smith, John, 438, 439  
 Smith, R. A., 311  
 Smith, Sherman D., 455  
 Smith, W. E., 359  
 Smith, Wilbur G., 367  
 Smolk, John, 412  
 South Haven, 28, 110, 136-138  
 South Haven and Casco Pomological Society, 322  
 South Haven Board of Trade, 619  
 South Haven City Hospital, 388  
 "South Haven Daily Gazette," 366, 367  
 "South Haven Daily Tribune," 367  
 South Haven fruit raising, 320  
 South Haven Gazette Company, 368  
 South Haven Loan and Trust Company, 352  
 South Haven Pomological Society, 322, 619  
 "South Haven Record," 367  
 "South Haven Sentinel," 366  
 "South Haven Tribune-Messenger," 367  
 South Haven township—Mention, 80, 81, 84, 85; early elections and officials, 603; property and population, 605; Jay R. Monroe, first white settler, 606; Clark and Daniel Pierce, 607; A. S. Dyckman's story, 608; pioneer steam sawmills, 609; first institutions and pioneers, 610; village (now city) of South Haven, 613; the summer resort business, 615; schools, churches and societies, 616; municipal and business matters, 618; Pomological Society and Board of Trade, 619  
 South Mountain (battle), 216  
 Southard, John, 438, 439  
 Southern Michigan Fruit Association, 417, 418  
 Southwell, Enoch, 556  
 Spanish-American war, 310

- Spaulding, Henry, 521, 1119  
 Spayde, Emerson D., 452  
 Spencer, Frank L., 694  
 Sprague, William, 483  
 Squier, David A., 488  
 Squier, Emory H., 488, 1091  
 Srackangast, Ezra, 1032  
 Stage routes, 101  
 Stanton, William H., 412  
 Starbuck, William, 1013  
 Starkweather, Nathaniel B., 80  
 State representatives, 175  
 State roads, 100, 101  
 State senators, 175  
 Stearns, Sidney, 509  
 Stearns, Zebina, 507, 509  
 Stephens, Frank E., 726  
 Stevens, F. E., 343  
 Stevens, F. H., 575  
 Stevens, French & Company, 342  
 Stevens, Harrison, 592  
 Stevens, James, 429  
 Stevens, William H., 400  
 Stewart, Gardner L., 455  
 Stewart, Nellie, 366  
 Stewart, W. E., 366  
 Stimson, Horace, 82, 546, 553, 556  
 Stoddard, John H., 556  
 Stone, William, 592  
 Stone River (battle), 198  
 Stoughton, Antoinette, 525  
 Stratton, Truman, 523  
 Stratton, Willard, 523  
 Streator, Prenett T., 625  
 Stuart, Charles E., 109, 197  
 Sturgis, Joseph, 609  
 Summers, William, 980  
 Summy, Eri, 468  
 Surdam, Nathaniel L., 407  
 Sutton, Luther, 362, 515, 546  
 Sutton, Orrin, 546, 556  
 Sweet, Charles P., 358, 359  
 Sweet, William, 1019  
 Swift, H. D., 485
- Taft, Geraldine, 478  
 Tanner, E. A., 529  
 Tarbell, Henry Y., 820  
 Tarbell, John, 348  
 Taylor, Charles A., 439  
 Taylor, Daniel, 84, 439  
 Taylor, Ephraim, 549  
 Taylor, F. W., 367  
 Taylor, Howland C., 521  
 Taylor, N. S., 350  
 Taylor, William N., 407, 426  
 Tedrow, Frank J., 1117  
 Teed, Jeremiah, 488  
 Teed, Philip N., 400  
 Telephone lines, 353  
 Tenth Michigan Cavalry, 291  
 Tenth Michigan Infantry, 284  
 Territorial road, 99, 553  
 Thayer, Haviland, 450  
 Third Michigan Cavalry, 239, 242  
 Third Michigan Infantry, 283  
 Thirteenth Michigan Cavalry, 293  
 Thirteenth Michigan Infantry, 197  
 Thirtieth Michigan Infantry, 288  
 Thomas, Jesse, 521  
 Thomas, Nathan, 751  
 Thomas, William, 521  
 Thompson, Albert, 605  
 Thompson, Edwin A., 358  
 Thompson, Jasper H., 521  
 Thorn, John S., 521  
 Three Mile lake, 565  
 Thresher, W. E., 364  
 Tittle, George, 485  
 Tobey, Samuel, 366  
 Todd, A. M., 597  
 Toledo & South Haven Railroad, 111  
 Tolles, Goodwin S., 496, 1109  
 Tolles, James T., 136, 496  
 Tolles, William R., 496  
 Tomlinson, Joel, 403  
 Torrey, A. W., 454  
 Torrey, Arthur, 1133  
 Townsend, Charles, 81  
 Townsend, Loren D., 470  
 Trafford, William F., 474  
 Traver, William M., 670  
 Traver canning factory, 531  
 Travis, J. B., 366  
 Traxler canning factory, 531  
 Trim, Charles E., 455  
 Tripp, John H., 939  
 Tripp, Robert H., 985  
 Trowbridge, S. M., 496  
 "True Northerner," 356  
 Truesdell, Merritt J., 1041  
 Truex, John M., 1033  
 Tubbs, Nathan, 85, 495, 496  
 Turner, George, 1059  
 Turner, Samuel, 400  
 Tuttle, William, Jr., 535  
 Twelfth Michigan Infantry, 188  
 Twell, Joseph, 361  
 Twenty-fourth Michigan Infantry, 225  
 Twenty-fifth Michigan Infantry, 226  
 Twenty-eighth Michigan Infantry, 227  
 Tyner, Thomas C., 556
- Universalist church, Decatur, 491  
 Upton, John B., 556
- Valleau, Peter T., 624  
 Valleau, Theodore W., 624, 908  
 Valuation of county property (1851-1911), 75  
 Van Antwerp, Daniel, 407, 412  
 Van Antwerp, Daniel C., 841  
 Van Antwerp, Mrs. Harriet (Cook), 600  
 Van Blaricon, Frank, 664  
 Van Buren (paper town), 555  
 Van Buren county—Population of (1840-1910),  
 74; property valuation (1851-1911), 75  
 Van Buren County Farmers' Mutual Fire In-  
 surance Company, 352  
 Van Buren County Pioneer Association, 89  
 "Van Buren County Press," 355  
 "Van Buren County Republican," 360  
 Van Fleet, William Norris, 551  
 Van Fossen, Isaac W., 355, 356, 645  
 Van Hise, Joseph, 486, 487  
 Van Hise, Stephen O., 490  
 Van Hise, William O., 488

- Van Horn, James, 911  
 Van Nise, William K., 488  
 Van Ostrand, Spencer, 839  
 Van Ostrom, John, 529  
 Van Ostrom, Maggie, 529  
 Van Riper, Charles A., 602  
 Vaughan, Orley M., 1077  
 Veterinary practitioners, 392  
 Vickers, Robert E., 452  
 Vining, G. M., 364  
 Vining, Lewis H., 1031
- Waber, George T., 929  
 Waber, Thomas, 923  
 Wagner, Amos B., 504  
 Wagner, Joseph S., 610  
 Wagner, L. R., 811  
 Waite, Caroline M., 739  
 Waite, Henry, 738  
 Waite, Rufus M., 400  
 Wakefield, Mason, 508  
 Wakeman, Frank N., 359, 631  
 Wakeman, Seth L., 1010  
 Waldo, Campbell, 395  
 Waldron, Elver E., 602, 1089  
 Walker, Lewis P., 678  
 Wallace, George A., 1040  
 Wallace, William, 1006  
 Walter, James A., 110  
 Wapsey, 14-19, 40  
 Ward, Thomas O., 358  
 Warner, Bangs F., 643  
 Warner, Elam L., 94  
 Warner, Elijah, 602  
 Warner, Frank E., 496  
 Warner, Glenn E., 634  
 Warner, Jerome C., 575, 632  
 Warner, Junia, Jr., 80, 394, 395, 398, 584  
 Warner, Levi H., 379  
 Warren, Grace F., 680  
 Warren, Nellie M., 819  
 Warren, Robert L., 360, 364  
 Waterford road, 552  
 Waterman, J., 467  
 Waters, Harlan P., 412, 779  
 Watkins, Andrew J., 1002  
 Watson, Jerome B., 496  
 Watson, Leonard, 467  
 Watson, M. P., 445  
 Watson, Ralph F., 496  
 Waverly Grange No. 37, P. of H., 399  
 Waverly township—Mention, 83; physical features, 620; the township named, 621; the Myers family, 621; first wedding between pioneers, 622; Covey Hill, 623; John Scott, 623; other early settlers, 624; from the official records, 625; village of Glendale, 626  
 Weber, Henry F., 980  
 Weeks, James M., 504  
 Weidenfeller, Charles A., 455  
 Welch, J. L., 351  
 Welch, O. T., 488  
 Weldin, George, 1142  
 Weldin, Joel M., 1047
- Welker, Jeremiah, 1080  
 Wells, Hiram K., 432  
 Wenban, W. W., 496  
 Weso, 33-37  
 Westgate, Orlo, 605  
 "West Michigan Advance," 363  
 West Michigan Savings Bank, Bangor, 350  
 Whipple, Charles W., 162  
 Wicksall, Guy J., 73, 179  
 Wickwire, J. H., 361  
 Wiggins, Milan D., 351, 1151  
 Wigglesworth, C. H., 323  
 Wilcox, John B., 1036  
 Wild pigeons, 45-52  
 Wildey, Albert R., 327, 328, 570, 574  
 Wildey, Edwin A., 177, 178, 327, 359, 575  
 Wildey, W. C., 327, 575  
 Willard, Isaac W., 73, 105, 109, 178, 574, 576, 578, 580  
 Williams, Charles W., 917  
 Williams, Henry S., 358  
 Williams, John, 323, 612  
 Williams, Nathan, 397  
 Williams, Norris A., 987  
 Williams, Oscar J., 412  
 Williams, Orsimus, 602  
 Williams, Philip, 410, 411  
 Williams, William R., 551  
 Williamson, Mrs. Prudence, 540  
 Willis, Lewis E., 984  
 Wilmot, Marlin L., 906  
 Wilson, Eugene A., 177  
 Wilson, S. H., 367  
 Wilson, Samuel P., 605  
 Wise, Abram S., 504  
 Withington, William H., 215  
 Wolcott, James, 523  
 Wolf stories, 333  
 Wolfs, C. A., 343  
 Wood, Walter A., 1094  
 Woodman, David, 327, 571, 575  
 Woodman, David, Jr., 571, 572  
 Woodman, Edson, 327, 328  
 Woodman, Jason, 325, 574  
 Woodman, Jonathan J., 94, 177, 404, 412  
 Woodman, Joseph, 337, 403, 404, 571, 578  
 Woodman, Lucius C., 239, 380  
 Woodman, Olivia J., 404  
 Woodruff, George, 163  
 Woodward, Marquis, 432  
 Wooster, A. M., 360  
 World's Fair (Chicago), 3, 6  
 Worthington, Henry, 541  
 Wygent, John, 477
- Yates, James A., 445  
 Yeckley, George G. B., 504  
 Young, Benoni, 476  
 Young, Charles W., 575  
 Young, David, 472  
 Young, George F., 946  
 Young, Merle H., 576, 707
- Zook, William E., 1012





The above are supposed to have been made by the mound builders who had sway in Van Buren county long before the Algonquin race had taken possession of Michigan, from the fact that many of these implements are found buried with their dead in the mounds scattered throughout the county. The cuts which have no notches at the base were used for various purposes as we use our knives. All notched at the base were used for arrow points. They were held in place in a split in one end of the arrow, securely held by the sinews of animals. Although our present Indians knew nothing about how they were manufactured, still when found they were successfully used by them.

The above illustrations were furnished by E. B. Starks, an old settler of Van Buren county—and considered good authority in aboriginal matters.



The above cuts, excepting those notched at the base, were used as we use axes or pick axes. They were securely fastened to the helms made of a crotched stick of proper size, securely held in place by animal thongs. The specimens from which the illustration was made were found in Van Buren county, and furnished by Conklin & Smith.



# HISTORY OF VAN BUREN COUNTY

## CHAPTER I

### ABORIGINAL HISTORY

FIRST CHURCH BUILT BY INDIANS—CHIEF POKAGON'S ADDRESS—  
POKAGON'S LAST WIGWAM—JULIA POKAGON'S ADDRESS—OLD  
WAPSEY—DO INDIANS CRY, LAUGH OR JOKE?—ALGONQUIN LE-  
GEND OF MAN'S CREATION—LEGEND OF PAW PAW AND THE PAW  
PAW VALLEY—ALGONQUIN LEGENDS OF SOUTH HAVEN—AFTER  
ME-ME-OG (SQUABS) IN VAN BUREN COUNTY—THE "BUCK  
PONY" RIDE—"NEVER CARRY A REVOLVER, BOYS"—SAW-KAW'S  
LOVE STORY—ME-ME-OG, THE WILD PIGEONS.

*By C. H. Engle, Associate Editor.*

"Is not the Redman's wigwam home  
As dear to him as costly dome?  
Is not his loved ones smile as bright  
As the dear ones of the man that's white?  
Freedom—this self-same freedom you adore—  
Bade him defend his violated shore.

\* \* \*

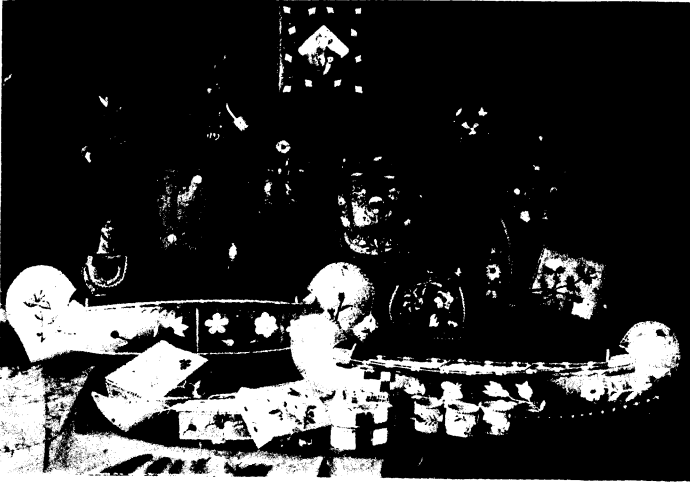
"The past can never be undone.  
The new day brings the rising sun  
To light the way of duty now  
To children with the dusky brow."

While we leave on record the history of our own people, let us not forget the Red Man who once owned this beautiful land and welcomed our pioneers when they first came to this county, and when in need sheltered and shared with them "man-do-min and suc-see" (corn and deer).

It is a lamentable fact that those who know least of the Indian race cry out against them most bitterly, as being vindictive, treacherous and cruel; while those who have lived among them and associated with them for years, frankly acknowledge that as a race they are no worse than we are. Of course when their lands were

invaded they fought like demons for home and native land; and so we might say of every race. General Sherman, when he led the boys in blue to the Sea, during the late rebellion, witnessed so much wantonness and cruelty that he cried from his heart, "War is Hell!" and truthfully he might have added "alike with savage and with sage." As far as we can learn from history Pere Marquette was the first white man who visited Southwest Michigan about two hundred and fifty years ago. A few years after he was followed by La Salle who built a fort at the mouth of St. Joseph river, Michigan, on the highlands west of the junction of Paw Paw and St. Joseph rivers, the main object of which seems to have been to monopolize the trade in buffalo hides. The natives of Michigan were firm in the belief that the country many years before their time was inhabited by a race much further advanced in the arts and sciences than were they. Their legends show it and the domestic implements and weapons of warfare which they found scattered broadcast over the land clearly proved it. Again, it was generally talked of and known among the Indians of Michigan, as near as they could estimate time, that about two hundred and fifty years ago one of their chiefs, We-me-gen-de-bay, while hunting in the wilderness discovered a great copper kettle which was partly underground. The roots of large trees had grown over it, and when taken up it appeared as if it had never been used, but seemed to be just as it came from the maker, as there was yet a round bright spot in the center of the bottom of it. This kettle was large enough to cook a whole deer or bear in. For a long time the Indians kept it as a sacred relic. They did not keep it near where they lived, but securely hidden in a place most unfrequented by human beings. They did not use it for anything except great feasts. Their idea was that it was made by some deity who presided over the country where it was found and that a copper mine must be near that place. It had no iron rim around it, nor bail for hanging while in use, but the edge of the upper part was much thicker than the rest and was turned out square about three fourths of an inch, as if made to rest on some support while in use. When the Indians began to be civilized they used it in common to boil down maple sap to sugar, instead of cooking bear for feast.

I first read an account of this magical kettle in the writings of the late Chief Blackbird, an educated Ottawa Indian. I have talked with him frequently since regarding this strange find. He told me that while a young man he worked in a government blacksmith shop, that it was brought to him to have a bail put in it, and that he fixed it up according to order. When I talked with him he was nearly one hundred years old and confirmed in full



### BARK AND QUILL WORK

Having presented our readers with photo-cuts of implements made by a pre-historic race of this country, we now present them photo-cuts of the present-day work of our Michigan Indians, showing their artistic creations in bark and porcupine quill work, etc.

About the time of the opening of the World's Fair in Chicago, in 1893, our late Chief Pokagon published a booklet on the manifold bark of the white birch tree, entitled "The Red Man's Greeting;" afterwards it was called by the public "The Red Man's Rebuke;" also "The Red Man's Book of Lamentation." In order that future generations of our county may understand the Indian love and appreciation of the white birch tree, I deem it best to here publish the preface of the bark book in full.

#### PREFACE OF "THE RED MAN'S GREETING"

My object in publishing "The Red Man's Greeting" on the manifold bark of the white birch tree is out of loyalty to my own people and gratitude to the Great Spirit, who, in his wisdom, provided for our use, for untold generations, this most remarkable tree with manifold bark, used by us instead of paper and being of greater value to us, as it could not be injured by sun or water. Out of the bark of this wonderful tree were made hats, caps and dishes for domestic use, while our maidens tied with it the knot that sealed the marriage vow. Wigwams were made of it, as well as the largest canoes that out-rode the most violent storms on lake and sea. It was also used for light and fuel at our war dances and spirit councils. Originally the shores of our northern lakes and streams were fringed with it and evergreen; and the white, charmingly contrasted with the green mirrored from the waters, was indeed beautiful; but, like the Red Man, this tree is vanishing from our forests.

"Alas for us! our day is o'er,  
 Our fires are out from shore to shore;  
 No more for us the wild deer bounds;  
 The plough is on our hunting grounds;  
 The pale man's axe rings through our woods.  
 The pale man's sails skim o'er our floods,  
 Our pleasant springs are dry.  
 Our children—look by power oppressed!  
 Beyond the mountains of the West,  
 Our children go to die!"

the above account of the kettle. He further added: "From this evidence of working in metals and from many other relics of former occupants, it is evident that this country has been inhabited for many ages by a people further advanced in the arts and sciences than we."

Our own people who have investigated as far as possible the prehistoric race that occupied this country long before the Algonquins, are of the opinion that they were the mound builders who have left so many earth works of various sizes scattered throughout this continent, traces of which still may be seen in nearly every township of Van Buren county; and that the flint arrow points, knives, spears, stone axes, etc., which are so profusely scattered throughout the county are the handiwork of those people. Whence they came or where they went no one knows, but some conjecture that for ages they slowly migrated southward and finally established the ancient kingdom of Mexico. Cortes, the Spanish conqueror who invaded Mexico in 1519, declared that the natives were just about as far advanced in the arts and sciences as were the Spaniards, except in the implements of warfare and the manufacture of gunpowder, of which they had no knowledge whatever.

#### FIRST CHURCH BUILT BY INDIANS

The Pottawattamies claim to have erected the first church in Van Buren county. It was built of logs on the south side of Rush lake, township of Hartford, in 1840. In 1856 they built a frame church, forty feet by sixty, just east of the log church. Both were Catholic churches. The frame church is still standing. I well remember when it was built from this fact: They came to me to get a job of cutting down about ten acres of timber that they might obtain money with which to buy shingles. They agreed to commence the job on the following day. I told them I would be over in the afternoon to see what kind of a job they were doing. I was rather late and did not get there until nearly sundown. When I was within eighty rods of the job I was surprised to hear what I thought must be a war-whooping pow wow. I hardly could decide whether to go ahead or retreat. While I paused I heard the falling of the great trees as if a cyclone was abroad in the timber. Advancing in haste I saw the timber crashing down the whole width of the ten-acre job. Again I paused, for the crashing of the falling timber, intermixed with the pow wow war-whoops, created such confusion of sounds,

"As if all the fiends from Heaven that fell  
Had pealed the banner cry of Hell."

As I met the tribe starting home, they informed me that the whole tribe had turned out and commenced cutting the timber part way down on the east side of the job and when they reached the west side they had formed in line across the entire front and felled the timber eastward and that one tree had pushed down the next and all had fallen, saving them much chopping. But what a job!

It is generally believed by the best men and women who have made a careful study of the issues between the two races that if the Indians had been treated under the golden rule, "Do to others as you would that they should do to you," they would have been the best kind of Christians. They never worshiped idols from the fact than they believed in one Great Spirit, known by them as "Ki-tchi Man-i-to," and one Great Spirit called "Mau-tchi Man-i-to." The first they believe to be all wisdom and goodness, who created all things and governs all. The other was bad and did all the evil he could. Hence it was that they loved and adored the first missionaries who taught them that the Great Spirit had revealed His will to man through Christ, His only Son. But when bad designing white men went among them to steal and rob, they naturally thought that all our race, of course, were Christians, and in their innocence looked upon their acts as the offspring of their religion; hence concluded that the white man's God was not "Ki-tchi Man-i-to" who loved and cared for them and their children.

In considering the natural character of the red man from what we read about him in our books, we must bear in mind that his history has been written by white men—by a race that invaded his country for conquest and settlement—and that it is a hard matter for the historian to write a correct history of a race that his own people are trying to subdue.

In order that future generations of this county may have unprejudiced views of the natives who were the former occupants of this beautiful land which they inherit, I will introduce them to the writings of the late Chief Pokagon, an educated Indian who spent over seventy years in this county. I will first present his address given under the auspices of Oricono Tribe No. 184, I. O. R. M., at Liberty, Indiana, on January 7, 1898. Read it carefully and note his opinion regarding the issue between the two races.

#### CHIEF POKAGON'S ADDRESS

For many years I have had a warm heart for the pale-faced "Redmen," but never expected to be invited to address them. I would not have you think that I flatter myself that I have been invited here on account of my intelligence or reputation, as I most keenly realize you have looked forward to my coming here with a sort of novel pride that you might point me out to your

*(Continued on page 7)*



CHIEF POKAGON

A correct likeness of Chief Pokagon in his tribal attire as he appeared at the World's Fair on Chicago Day, October 9, 1893, as painted by M. O. Whitney. Being an invited guest of the city on that day, the old veteran rang the new liberty bell for the first time, and was honored by addressing the vast throng in behalf of his race.

The old chief gained, while a guest of the World's Fair, a national reputation for native ability. He wrote in his lifetime several articles for leading magazines, which were highly eulogized by the press, both in this country and abroad. He is the only Indian who ever wrote his own courtship and married life, which is most touchingly told in his "Queen of the Woods." His words came from his heart and apparently never fail to reach the heart of the reader. It is the only book written by an Indian that was ever dramatized. This wonderful book has been so well received that the third edition is now being closed out. Van Buren county has just reasons to be proud of having produced the most remarkable Indian writer in America. "Queen of the Woods" was in the press at the time of the old chief's death in 1899.

Published and for sale by C. H. Engle, Hartford, Van Buren county.

children and say: "Behold a living specimen of the race with whom we once neighbored—a race we sometimes loved; and yet that love was mingled with distrust and fear." No greater compliment could have been bestowed upon our vanishing race than by naming one of the grandest orders after them. And that compliment was made perpetual in giving each officer of the Red Men's order Indian names pure and simple, as well as by giving each lodge some appropriate Indian name.

My heart is always made glad when I read of the Daughters of Pocahontas kindling their council fires. I have often thought if they dressed as becomingly as our maids and matrons did in their native style, I would be glad indeed to see them confer the Pocahontas degree work. The name Pocahontas and my own name were derived from the same Algonquin word, "Poka," meaning a "shield," or "protector."

And again we are highly complimented by the order of Red Men in dating their official business from the time of the discovery of America. I suppose the reason for fixing that date was because our forefathers had held for untold ages before that time, the American continent a profound secret from the white man. Again, the Red Men's order highly compliments our race by dividing time into suns and moons, as our forefathers did. All of which goes to show that they understood the fact we lived close to the great heart of Nature and that we believed in one Great Spirit who created all things and governed all. Hence that noble motto, born with our race, "Freedom, Friendship and Charity!" Yes, freedom, friendship, charity! Those heaven-born principles shall never, never die! It was by those principles our fathers cared for the orphan and unfortunate, without books, without laws, without judges; for the Great Spirit had written his love and law in their hearts and they obeyed. Tradition, as sacred to us as Holy Writ, has taught us that our forefathers came here from the Atlantic coast. When they first entered these woodland plains they said in their hearts "surely we are on the border-land of the happy hunting grounds beyond." Here they found game in great abundance. The elk, the buffalo and the deer stood unalarmed before the hunter's bended bow. Fish swarmed in the lakes and streams close to shore. Pigeons, ducks and geese moved in great clouds through the air, flying so low they fanned us with their wings, and our boys whose bows were scarcely a terror to the crows would often with their arrows bring them down. Here we enjoyed ourselves in the lap of luxury.

But our camp fires have all gone out! Our council fires blaze no more! Our wigwams and they who built them, with their children, have forever disappeared from this beautiful land, and Pokagon alone of all the chiefs is permitted to behold it once again! But what a change! Where our cabins and wigwams once stood, now stand churches, school houses, cottages and castles. And where we walked in single file along our winding trails, now locomotives scream, and as they rush along their iron trails like monstrous beasts of prey, dragging after them long rows of palaces with travelers therein outstripping the flight of eagles in their course! As I behold the mighty change all over this broad land, I feel about my heart as I did in childhood when I saw for the first time the rainbow spanning the departing storm!

I do not speak of the past complainingly. I have always taught my people not to sigh for years long gone by, nor pass again over the bloody trails our fathers trod. I have stood all my life as a peacemaker between the white people and my own people.

Without gun or bow, I have stood between the two contending armies, receiving a thousand wounds from your people and my own.

I have continued to pray the great Father at Washington to deal justly with my people. When they were robbed of their homes and lands, and felt mortally offended, I said to them: "Wait and pray for justice; the war path will lead you but to the grave!"

At the beginning of the present century my father became chief of the Pokagon tribe. At that time the heroic Tecumseh with his great eloquence stirred up the Algonquin tribes to unite as one and strike for liberty. My father most emphatically declared in all their war councils that they might as well attempt to stay a cyclone in its course as to beat back the onmarching hordes of civilization toward the setting sun. But in their loyal zeal they could not comprehend their own weakness and strength of the dominant race, but, being pressed onward by as noble motives as ever glowed in mortal hearts, they fought most desperately for home and native land.

Historians have recorded of us that we are vindictive and cruel, because we fought like tigers when our homes were invaded and we were being pushed toward the setting sun. When white men pillaged and burned our villages and slaughtered our families, they called it honorable warfare; but when we retaliated they called it butchery and murder! When the white man's renowned statesman, Patrick Henry, proclaimed in the ears of the English colonies "Give me liberty, or give me death," he was applauded by his people; and that applause still rolls on, undying, to freedom's farthest shore. When William Tell pierced the apple on the head of his son, Gesler noticed a second arrow drop from his vest. In tones of thunder he demanded, "Slave! why didst thou conceal that arrow?" As quick as lightning came the bold response, "To shoot the tyrant, if I had harmed my son." And all the civilized world since then, through the centuries of time, have continued to applaud that sentiment. But let Pokagon ask, in all that is sacred and dear to mankind, why should the red man be measured by one standard and the white man by another? The only answer I can give is that "mine and thine" the seed of all misery, predominates in the hearts of men when they become civilized and wealthy.

In conclusion, permit Pokagon to say: I rejoice with the joy of childhood that you have granted a son of the forest a right to address you; and the prayer of my heart, as long as I live, shall ever be that the Great Spirit will bless you and your children, and that generations yet unborn may learn to know that we are all brothers of the same fold under one Shepherd and that the Great Spirit is the father of all.

Chief Pokagon seemed to glory in the fact that Van Buren was the banner temperance county in the state of Michigan. In view of that fact, in justice to his temperance proclivities, I wish to leave on record an extract from his last speech delivered at Plymouth, Indiana, near Twin Lakes, from which his people were banished in 1838. Since then the state of Indiana has erected a splendid monument in memory of the unjust banishment of his people from that commonwealth. His granddaughter, Julia Pokagon, a graduate of Lawrence Indian school, Kansas, delivered the unveiling address. I was present on that occasion. Her speech was wonderfully eloquent, insomuch the great crowd was moved to tears. That night I said to her "Julia, during your talk, I saw not a dry eye." She simply said "I wept too."



The old chief, in his speech referred to, in conclusion said: "My dear friends; listen! Is there a father or mother among you who have laid in the grave all your children but the youngest of the flock, cut down by that fatal disease consumption, just as they were about to step upon the stage of manhood or womanhood? And have you looked upon that one spared you with bright hopes and prayers that he might live to support and comfort you in old age; and has that hope been cut short as the dreaded monster, consumption, has fallen like lead upon your heart? If so you can form some faint shadowy idea of my feelings at the thought of that accursed 'fire water' ever falling like death upon my heart, mortally wounding my highest hopes which, like a soaring eagle by a poisoned arrow pierced, fluttering falls!

"By adoption I am a citizen of these United States, therefore I beg of you, my white countrymen, who now occupy and enjoy this loved land of my infancy, draw near me in your hearts as a mother to her sorrowing child, and tell Pokagon frankly, 'Do you know of any good reason why that loathsome monster, born of your race, which is coiling about the vitals of your children and ours, should not be utterly destroyed?' You send missionaries across the great deep to save Hindu children from being drowned in the Ganges, or crushed under the wheels of the idol Juggernaut, and yet in your own Christian land, thousands yearly are being drowned in the American Ganges of Firewater, while the great Juggernaut of King Alcohol is ever rolling on night and day, crushing its victims without mercy. Hark! Do you not hear the agonizing wails on every side? Fathers and sons are falling into drunkards' graves. Mothers and daughters are weeping over them. Wives are lamenting as they bend over the bruised heads of their husbands as they return from their midnight brawls. Maidens weep in shame as they wipe the death damp from the brows of their drunken lovers, and briars of the deepest disappointment encumber the bridal chamber. Brave men and women who have fought long and well to redeem and save the fallen shrink before the power of the saloon and its votaries, and the pious are almost beginning to doubt the favor of God. But a few more words and I must close.

"My dear white friends, listen! This place is the cradle of my infancy. As Pokagon thinks of it and considers it, there comes creeping through his old and feeble frame an electric inspiration not born of earth but of Heaven. The Great Spirit whispering in my soul tells me to say to you who now own and occupy this, my native land: 'All of you from the least to the greatest join hands with Pokagon.' Let us kindle here a great temperance fire and commence at once with sledge and anvil of total abstinence



CHIEF SIMON POKAGON

The photograph of the above portrait was taken at the request of the governor of Michigan on the fiftieth anniversary of the founding of the city of Holland, Michigan. The guests of honor were The Holland Society, of Chicago, and many important residents of Michigan. The orators of the day were Governor Pingree, Hon. Alden Smith, and Chief Pokagon. The rosette which appears in the picture was the badge of the day, and was pinned on by the governor.

to forge the greatest chain on earth. Shrink not from the task. Then others about you, seeing your good works, will join hands with you by the millions and help you complete one mighty chain which will reach from sea to sea and from the gulf to the great lakes. Then shall appear that angel spoken of in your Holy Writ who carries the key of the bottomless pit, descending out of Heaven crying with a loud voice, saying: 'Well done ye workers for God and humanity;' and grasping in his hands the mighty chain you have forged, he will lay hold of the dragon, that cruel serpent, which is King Alcohol, the devil, and bind him and cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal over his mouth that he shall deceive the sons of men no longer. Then shall appear the worshippers of the beast, and those who fought against him, and they shall shake hands with each other, and rejoice to-



POKAGON'S WIGWAM

This is a photo of the late Chief Pokagon's wigwam, which stood for several years after his death on the lawn of C. H. Engle at Hartford. Last summer (1911) it was purchased by the State Normal School at Ypsilanti, and now stands in front of the science building protected from relic vandals by an iron tubular fence. The granddaughter of the old chief, Julia Pokagon, appears in the door of the wigwam, which is made of two thicknesses of the manifold white birch bark. It is a pyramidal decagon, sixteen feet base and twenty-four feet high.

gether: and their voices shall be like the mingling of many waters as they roll on undying to freedom's farthest shores. And their joyous song shall be 'Glory to God in the highest, Who hath redeemed and saved us, and on earth peace and good will to all men!'

"And now farewell! Remember the words I have spoken in weakness are words of soberness and truth, and by reason of old age, envy, malice, hatred and revenge have long since faded from my heart. Hence Pokagon's words should be received as the confessions of a dying man; for already with one hand I have pulled the latch string of time and one foot is passing over the threshold of the open door of the wigwam of life into the happy hunting

grounds beyond. Soon Pokagon will stand in the presence of the Great Spirit, where I shall plead with Him as I have pleaded on earth, that he will lead all by the hand who have so bravely fought that old Dragon, Mautchi Manito (the Devil), the destroyer of your children and ours and lead them on to glorious victory!"

#### CHIEF POKAGON'S LAST WIGWAM

On the preceding page is a picture of Chief Pokagon's last Wigwam. It stood for several years on the lawn of C. H. Engle, opposite the Hartford public park. It is a pyramidal decagon in shape, made of the manifold bark of the white birch tree, being sixteen feet at the base and twenty-four feet high. During the past summer it was procured by the advanced class of the study of nature at Ypsilanti, and now stands on the campus in front of the science building in the grounds of the State Normal School of Michigan. It is protected from relic fiends by a high tubular fence. When dedicated, C. H. Engle, of Van Buren County, after giving a brief history of the chief and his wigwam, introduced to the vast audience the granddaughter of the late chief, Julia Pokagon, who gave the dedicatory address, a portion of which is given below.

#### JULIA POKAGON'S ADDRESS

I am glad that I am here; indeed glad that you have granted to a child of the forest an opportunity to address the teachers and students of the greatest institution of Michigan; am glad this college has honored my race by placing on these grounds the wigwam of my fathers. There is nothing more sacred to our people than "wigwam." It is as dear to our hearts as "home" to the white race. It brings to us all the kindred ties of father, mother, sister, brother, son and daughter. We too can sing with overflowing hearts "Wigwam, Sweet Wigwam: there is no place like Wigwam!" About one year since I was honored, by making the unveiling address of an Indian statue erected in memory of the unjust banishment of my people from the state of Indiana in 1838. As I there stood in the presence of a great multitude gathered to atone as far as possible for the wrongs their fathers had dealt out to our people through the influence of bad men, my heart mourned; for well I knew that the broad stretch of land about me, with its beautiful lakes and streams, just seventy years before was wrenched without cause from my ancestors. As I stepped down from the platform to unveil the Indian statue, I realized it stood on the very spot where my people had built a church in the wilderness after their conversion to Christianity, and that the last time they met there for worship it was surrounded by an army of white soldiers, who barred the windows and door and demanded that the worshipers surrender as prisoners of war. They were then marched out between lines of soldiers into the smoke of their burning wigwams and the church, where they had taught their lisping children to repeat "Our FATHER, who art in HEAVEN, hallowed be Thy name" was burned to the ground before their eyes. As I thought of that great wrong my heart was sad and I wept. Thank Heaven, not so here on this occasion; for my heart is joyous as I con-

template the fact that the Pokagon band at that time fled into this state to escape banishment. They were here received with open arms. Michigan at that time, as a state, was less than one year old. Indiana had passed her twenty-first birthday. She demanded of infant Michigan that we should be given up and exiled with the rest of the Pottawattamie tribe. All praise to infant Michigan! She boldly said to her sister state "Stand back! You shall



JULIA POKAGON

not molest a single child of the forest within all our borders!" and a few years thereafter every Indian in Michigan was granted the right of citizenship, so we now can sing with you

"Michigan, Michigan, our Michigan!  
Long may she wave the flag  
O'er the land of the free and the home of the brave."

I must frankly confess I am sorely vexed regarding certain publications read in the home and schools of our state, the authors of which depict our race as vindictive and cruel, illustrating their works with war dances and bleeding scalps, and yet some of these authors never saw an Indian in their life; but the sole purpose of their mischievous publications has been to make money, irrespective of the result of creating a prejudice against our race. Again, many parents use their tongue instead of the whip to frighten their children into obedience by telling them, "Look out or the Inguns will git you,"

thereby creating a prejudice against us in the minds of their children that cannot be eradicated.

Again I thank you for this opportunity to address you, and please do not forget that I, a child of the forest, will ever pray that all you teachers who go forth from this school may be imbued with such noble principles that you cannot fail to impress upon the young that we are all brothers and sisters and that the Great Spirit is God of all.

#### OLD WAPSEY

Having given Chief Pokagon's address in full before the Order of Red Men and his last speech in part at Plymouth, Indiana, as well as his granddaughter's address at the dedication of her grandfather's wigwam at Ypsilanti, Michigan, I will now introduce you to old Wapsey, an unlettered Indian who was known in Van Buren county among the Pottawattamies as a mighty bear hunter. It was said of him that he killed more bears than any ten of his tribe and that he always drove them near to his wigwam to kill them. He was a better shot with his bow and arrow at a distance of two hundred feet than any of his white neighbors with their rifles. In order that my readers may better understand the peculiar character of this Nimrod among his people I will give an account of my visit to his wigwam fifty-five years ago.

What though his form was bent with age,  
 What though he never read a single page,  
 His heart was full of native lore,  
 He shared with me his muskrat dish  
 With Ingen soup and fine dogfish—  
 All he had;—a King could do no more.

When I first became acquainted with the Pottawattamie Pokagon tribe of Van Buren county in 1856, I was frequently told that old Wapsey was the most successful hunter among them, and that he killed more large game with his bow and arrows than any ten of their tribe could with the best white man's gun. Among other things the Indians told me he never left a bear's track night or day until he got his hide; and further, that he always drove the bears near to his wigwam to kill them. Hence it was frequently said "Wapsey drives bears home to kill them." Mr. Northrup, a white man who lived near these Indians several years before I knew them, told me of a remarkable bear chase in which he took a hand with old Wapsey. He said: Early one morning late in December, old Wapsey routed me out of bed telling me he had treed a big bear up a large white-wood tree which stood just below my clearing. He said "Now Norup, me want to git um your gun to shoot 'im ma-kwa (a bear). Me shoot um, my arrows in top of



OLD "WAPSEY" (SEES ALL)

Pottawattamie Indian who participated in the massacre of Fort Dearborn in 1812. This photograph was taken in January, 1897, when he was 110 years old.

tree and they no come back." I told him to go back and watch the bear and just as soon as I could dress myself I would come down with the gun. Arriving at the tree I said "Wapsey, I have always wanted to kill a bear. Let me shoot him. You can have his meat and hide the same as if you had shot him yourself." Wapsey said "You shoot um, in odo (heart)—shoot um dead, or meby um get away—meby kill us." I shot, grazing his head, he came tumbling to the ground and started off on the run. In passing Wapsey, he straddled the bear as a farmer would a hog in butchering time, sticking him in the neck until he fell for loss of blood. While he lay dying Wapsey said "Dare Norup: me tells you to shoot um dead, but you no do it." We found three arrows in the bear. One was shot clear through his side protruding three or four inches.

After hearing so much about this wonderful hunter and stirred up by Northrup's account of his straddling and killing the bear, I determined I would go and spend one night at least with the remarkable Redskin Nimrod of America. Learning that he lived north of Paw Paw lake, about ten miles west, with an Indian boy as guide, late in November I started through the unbroken wilderness. Arriving at the lake, the boy pointed out to me his wigwam just across a little bay. There he left me, remarking "me be afraid to go fader for Wapsey meby take us for ma-kwa ond-gans (bear and cub) and kill us both."

About sunset I stood before the wigwam of the mighty hunter. It was rudely built of elm bark with a smoke-hole at the top. I saw at a glance that the old man used a bear skin for a door. As I carefully approached I said "Hello! Hello! Hello!" The third time the bear skin was pushed aside, and before me stood a short thick set Indian. On his head was a coon skin cap, with the animal's ringed tail in the place of feathers. He had on a fur blouse of musk rats' hide, and buck skin pants, with moccasins of bear-skin with the hair outside. In his left hand he held a bow as long as he was tall, with some arrows in his quiver that no doubt had pierced many a bear. I asked, in my heart, "Is it possible they will pierce me?" He eyed me apparently with much distrust, as silent as the grave.

I said "Bo-sho Ni-con?" (How do you do, my friend?)

He slowly responded "Bo-sho?" omitting ni-con, as if he doubted my friendship.

I then said "Your chief, Pokagon, has told me much about you being the greatest hunter in his tribe. I am C. H. Engle, of Hartford. I have come to stay all night with you."

He then walked up to me, and we shook hands. He asked if I



knew certain Indians who lived in Hartford in certain places that he described very particularly. I said I did.

He asked "What be them called?"

"Well," I said "Jo Kaw-kee, John Mix, Bert-rand, Little and Big Weso."

He again grasped my hand saying "You know um. Come in wigwam."

I was pleased, for well I knew I had won his confidence and I have never known an Indian to betray a true friend. He seated me on a large bearskin in front of the fire in the center of the wigwam.

I asked him if he could speak white man's talk?

He replied "Me can little."

I then said "Wap-sey, I have come to stay all night with you. Will you let me?"

He replied "Guess meby me will." He then asked "Can you sleep um in wigwam?" I replied I was something of an Indian myself and had slept in all kinds of places. "Meby you be hungry," he said. I frankly said "I am." "Me lib alone," he said, "and me fear you no like um my stuff and cooking." I replied "I can eat anything, except musk rats, that goes on four legs." He said "Me will feed you. Me am cooking to eat um now." He then went to a wooden trough that would hold perhaps eight gallons, stirred up the contents with a wooden paddle, took out a piece of meat, tasted it, shook his head. He then took a red-hot stone out of the fire about the size of his head and plunged it into the trough. It sizzled and soon filled the wigwam full of steam. He waited a few minutes and asked "Do um smell good?" I answered "Fine." In a short time he said "Sit um down here and eat um." I reclined on one side of the trough and he on the other, and handing me a wooden spoon saying "eat um, good cooked." I dipped into the rude dish drawing out the hind leg of some small animal. I said "I like squirrel." "Me be glad of dat," he said, "me do too." I ate several fore legs and hind legs.

I thought it the finest squirrel I had ever eaten, and such nice soup I never expected to eat again.

Wapsey, seeing how I enjoyed the soup, handed me a gourd-shell, saying "Drink um like water." I did as he said, drinking down the soup like coffee until I was pleasantly satisfied. Supper over Wapsey asked "What meby you bin eatin?" "Squirrels, of course," I said. He straightened back and laughed so heartily that I could see all his double grinding teeth. "What you laugh so about?" I asked. He answered "No, no, no um squirrel—*mush rat!* *mush rat!*" handing me two green musk rats' tails. I was astonished! I never before nor since felt so completely sold. I

walked out of the wigwam, for I began to feel sea sick. Coming back into the wigwam Wapsee said "Me be sorry you feel um so bad." Putting on a bold front I said "I am feeling good," and added "I came here to learn from your own lips if in chasing bear you can drive them home to kill them. Come tell me all about it."

"Well," said the old man, "at sun-up tomorrow, me be goin' to hunt um bear. Me ready now. Here see um dis mokak (bark box)." He put his hand into it and took out three or four pounds of jerked venison and a lot of popped corn. "Now," said he, "when me find um bear track me foller im till dark, den me lay um down and sleep um till day, sun-up. When me get hungry me eat um deer and corn. Meby foller his track two day; then ma-kwa start um back towards im wigwam. When im get where me first find um track, me run bery fast after im. Me tire im out. He git bad tired. He find um big tree and climb um, and say 'come old Wapsey or come Mau-tchi Man-i-to (the Devil). Me can go no funder.' And Wapsey kill im close to wigwam." Remaining silent for a few moments with that stoical look peculiar to his race, he said "Yes, good many Ingun tink Manito help Wapsey drive ma-kwa near wigwam to kill um. Me tell um to foller um day and night as Wapsey do and dey will kill um ma-kwa as Wapsey do."

He then stepped outside of the wigwam, took a stick, marked out on the ground a small circle, making a number of them starting from the same point, increasing their size until the last one was very large. He then said "The small circle wa-boos (the rabbit) take when chased. Next sized circle es-si-kan (the raccoon) take, next sized circle him de wa-gosh (the fox) take. Next larger, him de ma-in-gam (the wolf) um take and next larger um suc-see (the deer) take. Next larger him ma-kwa (the bear) take. And dis longest line him mons (the moose) take. Foller track, im will go and go; you tink im neber will come back. Stick to im night and day, three times, and im will start back toward wigwam where im track am first found."

"Is it possible," I said, "that all animals will come round in that way when they are chased? Why do they do so?" I asked.

He replied "All me can tell is dat the Great Spirit made um so. Should dey keep goin' farder and farder away from wigwam, when killed poor Ingun would die before he got um pulled home."

I asked no more questions, accepting his version of what the Great Spirit had done for the Indians.

We slept that night between two green bear skins next to the hair. When I got up in the morning I found the old man cooking fish. He was just hauling them out of the ashes. I noticed he scaled them after they were cooked. I said "Where did you get

your fish?" "Me went to de lake before sun-up," he said, "and killed um." I ate them with a fair relish, as they were very soft and juicy. After eating I asked what kind of fish they were. He replied very stoically "O-nim gi-go (dog fish)."

The last time I saw old Wapsey was in July, 1893. Chief Pokagon had just come from Chicago, where he had been a guest of the city at the World's Fair, and requested me to go with him to see Uncle Wapsey, as he called him, as he had been requested to bring him to the fair, from the fact, it had been learned, that he was the only surviving Indian who took part in the massacre of Fort Dearborn in 1812. The Chief told me the old man was one hundred and ten years old. Arriving at his wigwam, we found the old man smoking a big cigar he had made out of home-grown tobacco. It was a foot long and he offered us each another. He seemed pleased to see the chief and he asked him "If he had killed any ma-kwa lately?" He said "No kill um any more. Wapsey gitting bery old."

The chief began to talk to him in his native tongue. He told him he was the only Indian now living who took part in the Fort Dearborn massacre and that he had been sent to bring him to the World's Fair at Chicago. Then he asked "You took part in that massacre did you not?"

He replied "Me did."

"How old were you at that time?" inquired the chief.

The old man began to count his fingers out loud, in his native tongue, taking hold of each finger as he counted it—"Be-gig, Nig, Nis-wi, Ni-win, Na-nan, Nin-get-was-wi, Nin-gwas-wi, Nish-was-wi, Jang-as-wi, Mi-das-wi" up to ten. He then raised his hand up three times, repeating "Mi-das-wi (ten):" then said "Nis-si-mi-da-na Bi-bon (thirty years)."

The chief then said "You must then be certainly one hundred and ten years old! Will you go to Chicago with us?"

He replied "Me fear to. They want to kill Wapsey."

Up to this time the old man had been walking about telling how well he felt. But now he sat down and humped up saying "Nind a-ki-we-si Nind-a-kos (I am old, I am sick). Nind be-si-ka (I can hardly crawl about)."

The chief then said "Come go with us, won't you?"

He shook his head firmly, saying "Kaw-es-so mika (No. I will not go.) Win-a-wa nish-i-we Wapsey (They will kill Wapsey). Nin-da-i-we tchi Smo-ka-man an-am-a-ka-mig (and send him to the white man's hell)."

I never saw the old man again. He passed away soon afterward, to the happy hunting ground of his race.

## DO INDIANS CRY, LAUGH OR JOKE?

I am often asked, Do Indians ever joke, cry or laugh? They certainly do just as much among themselves as we do. Get well acquainted with them and that stoical characteristic for which they are noted disappears almost entirely. I have known Indians in the prime of life with whom I have hunted but a few days to shed tears as they bid me "An-a-mi-ka (good-bye)." Many times I have been present when friends meet each other, taking hold of each other's right hands and grasping with their left hands each others elbows, warmly shaking each other's arms, laughing and shedding tears at the same time.

As regards joking, they are the greatest jokers of any race I have ever met and many times their jokes are very effective. Mr. Brown, a white man in this place, one morning found his axe gone. From where it was taken he found moccasin tracks. He followed them into the woods where he found an Indian cutting down a bee tree. He openly charged him with stealing his axe, saying to him "I have been told that Indians did not steal, but certainly this is my axe and you stole it." The Indian looked him square in the face saying "Yes, me steal im. No steal im before white men come, but now we am gitting cibilized!"

One of our bishops stayed all night with an Indian chief in Minnesota, and as he was about leaving in the morning to visit a distant charge with the old chief he asked, "Do you think my valise will be safe left here until our return?"

"Ob cose it will," he responded, "Not a white man lives within forty miles of here."

While I was acting as magistrate in the early days, an Indian claimed that a white neighbor had stolen his geese. He was arrested and brought into court. On the day of trial he brought a goose with him for evidence. He swore he had found the geese as goslings when hunting, and raised them; that they were the only domesticated wild geese in the country. He proved clearly that he had lost part of his flock, and that they were found shut up in an old smoke house where the defendant lived. The defendant's attorney from Bangor had him repeat several times how and where he got them and that there were none others like them in the country. The attorney finally faced down poor "Lo," telling him he had sworn falsely and stating to him with great pomposity, "Sir, I have a pair of geese marked exactly as the goose you brought to this court! What have you to say for yourself for the oath you have taken?"

The Redskin looked at the lawyer as if surprised beyond measure and turning to the court said, "Me tink, him big law man, tellum

truth. Me hab two more of dem goose stole afore dis man steal um."

It is unnecessary to state the uproar in the court room. The jury, after due deliberation, brought in a verdict of "guilty." An old man in the court room piped out "Who is guilty, the defendant or his lawyer?"

The three following Indian legends entitled "Legend of Man's Creation," "Legend of Paw Paw and the Paw Paw Valley" and "Legend of South Haven" were published by the late Pokagon in booklets made of the manifold bark of the white birch tree. Only a few copies are now known to be in existence and they will be valuable relics in the future. This is the first time any of them were ever printed on paper. They came into my possession as administrator of the old chief's estate. I am indeed glad that I have the opportunity of publishing them for the perusal of the people of Van Buren county, believing they will be highly appreciated, coming as they do from an Indian citizen of our county who was highly educated.

#### ALGONQUIN LEGEND OF MAN'S CREATION

*By Pokagon.\**

Within the inmost recess of the native soul  
There is a secret place, which God doth hold;  
And though the storms of life do war around,  
Yet still within, his image fixed, is found.

There is an old Pottawattamie tradition among our people, dimly seen through the mists of time, that Ki-ji Man-i-to (the Great Spirit) after he had created No-mash (the fish of the waters), bones-sig (the fowls of the air) and mo-naw-to-auk (the beasts of the land), his works still failed to satisfy the grand conceptions of his soul. Hence he called a great council of Man-i-to-og (the spirits) that ruled over land and sea, his agents, and revealed unto them how it was the great desire of his heart to create a new being that should stand erect upon his hind legs, and possess the combined intelligence of all the living creatures he had made. Most of these spirits whom he had delegated to hold dominion over the earth, when they met in the grand council, encouraged his divine plans, but the head leading spiritual chiefs, when they considered the great power the proposed being might wield, quietly sneaked away from the council and held a private pow-wow of their own to frustrate, if

\*Used by permission of C. H. Engle, administrator of the estate of the late Chief Pokagon.

possible, How-waw-toek (the Almighty). The loyal Man-i-to-og who remained at the grand council stood aghast as Ki-ji Man-i-to revealed unto them his divine plan, that awaited the new creature he had conceived in his heart to create.

The divine council was prolonged by debate, from the set of sun until morning dawn. Ke-sus (the sun) arose in greater brilliancy than ever before. The spirits anxiously began to inquire of His Majesty, how many suns and moons would pass before he could accomplish His wonderful work? While yet the inquiry hung on "ki-o-don-o (their lips,) He said unto them "Follow me." He led them into a great wilderness to Sa-gi-i-gan, a most beautiful inland lake, and as he stood upon the shores thereof in presence of them all. His eyes flashed "Waw-saw-mo-win (lightning)." The lake began to boil; hissing streams rose high in the air; the earth trembled. He then spake in tones of thunder: "Come forth ye lords of Au-kee (the world!)" The ground opened and from out the red clay that held the lake came forth Au-ne-ne wa-ga-e i-kwe (man and woman) like flying fish from out the waters. In presence of the new-born pair, all was still as death. A dark cloud hung over the lake. Again it began to boil. Again Ki-ji Man-i-to said: "Come forth, ye servants of Au-nish-naw-be!" Forth leaped at once from out waters "Ni-ji Wa-be gon O-nim-og (a pair of snow white dogs)" and lay down where stood the new made pair, kissing their feet and hands. The bride and groom then each other fondly kissed, as hand in hand they stood in naked innocence in the full bloom of youth, perfect in make and mold of body and of limb. "Ki-gi-nos maw-kaw mis-taw-kaw (their long black hair)" almost reached the ground which gently waving, in "nip-nong oden (the morning breeze,)" in contrast with their rich color, grace, and forms erect, they outrivaled in beauty all other creatures he had made. They gazed all about in wonder and surprise; surveyed all living creatures that moved in sight; gazed upon the trees, the grass, the flowers, the lake, the sunshine and the shade. Again each other fondly kissed, as their eyes looked love to eyes, with no other language their feelings to express. At length I-kwe, the maiden fair, slyly let go Os-ki-naw the young man's hand, and stole away into the dark shades and hid herself that she might watch and test his love, and learn thereby if it was akin to hers. With unbounded joy she watched him as vainly he sought to find her. At length the snow-white dogs following her trail, joyfully howled out "Here she is." Now when "Mau-tehi Manito (the disloyal spiritual chiefs)" first learned that Ki-ji Manito had finished his crowning works, as he had proposed to do, they sought diligently for the new made pair until they found them. As they surveyed the beauty of their forms standing erect and their surpassing love-

liness of body and of limb, their wonder and admiration was unbounded. But when they saw the soul of the Divine reflected in their faces, like the noonday sun, their hearts were stung through and through by "mutchi a-mog (the cruel wasps)" of envy and jealousy, they were mortally offended. Hence they resolved in "nin-o-daw (their hearts)" that instead of trying to live in peace with them, as they had done with the first creation, they would do all they could to make them discontented, unhappy and miserable.

As time rolled on, "O-nig-go-maw (our first parents)" and generations after them began to realize there were bad and good spirits that held dominion over mountains, lakes, streams and plains, and that they were in a measure controlled by them. They also began to learn that "au-nish-naw-be" possessed the nature and intelligence of all the combined animal creation, and that he was endowed with a spiritual nature, given by the creator of all things on earth and in heaven. Hence, when they were unfortunate in securing game, or unsuccessful in battle, it was all attributed to bad spirits that held dominion over the country wherein they dwelt.

But when successful in the chase or battle it was attributed to good spirits that had control over the country in which they lived. In order to appease the bad spirits, they often made offerings of fruit and grain; but they sacrificed animals to Man-i-to Wew-quin (the God of Heaven) who alone they recognized as the great creator and ruler of all things in heaven and on earth. Our fathers and mothers in their primeval state, did not name their children as do the civilized races simply that they might be known and designated by them. When a child was born whatever animal or bird they imagined it most resembled they called it by that name and, strange as it may appear to the white race, in after generations those bearing the name claimed to have descended from the animal bearing their name. It might be maw-qua, wa-gos or mi-gi-si (the bear, fox, or eagle). And so it was in after generations, each tribe or clan adopted as their totem the animal whose name the patriarch of the tribe was called when a child. Sometimes, when in war, the animal was taken with them alive, but generally it was painted on a tanned hide, and used as white men use their flags. It was an emblem of royalty, as well as a symbol of loyalty, and when engaged in battle a warrior would rather die than surrender his totem. It matters not how foolish our legends may appear to those races who call themselves civilized, they were as sacred to us as holy writ to them.

## LEGEND OF PAW PAW, AND THE PAW PAW VALLEY

*By Chief Pokagon.\**

His was this broad and grand domain.  
 The hills and vales, the sweep of plain,  
 The hunting grounds, the rivers wide--  
 They all belonged, before he died,  
 To Abel, my brother.

“Me-wi-ja, Me-wi-ja (Long, long time ago)” a great inland lake covered all the lands where Paw Paw village now stands, except the higher undulating lands extending as far as the village of Lawton, and westward near to the village of Decatur. At that time the Paw Paw valley was occupied by a race of Indians who manufactured flint arrow points and all those utensils made of flint found so profusely scattered throughout the valley. That prehistoric race is designated by the whites as the “Mound Builders.” They must have occupied this country at least “Mi-das-wak Bi-bon (a thousand years ago).” Paw Paw river was called “Si-bi-gan (River of Lakes.)” In fact, it appears from various legends that this once noted river, was a succession of small and great lakes, from source to mouth.

On the highlands just south of Paw Paw village, covering Prospect hill and beyond, was “Ki-tchi O-de-na (Big village of the valley).” This lake was called “Nib-i-wa (Lake of Plenty)” and supposed to be on the border-land of the spiritual kingdom, “wa-kwi (the happy hunting grounds).” Deer, moose, elk and buffalo roamed in multitudes around all its shores. Swans, geese and ducks moved like clouds over its surface, while myriads of all kinds of fish swarmed in its waters close to shore. It might well have been called the great commercial city of the Lower Peninsula of Michigan. Here, from the north and west, came the different tribes to exchange “sis-i-ba-kwat (maple sugar),” smoked fish, dried meats and all kinds of flint utensils then in use. The tribes also came from the east and from the south to exchange “Mando-min and Naw-ni-maw (corn and tobacco)” for flint work, and Sis-i-ba-quat, of which large quantities were always kept in store, as sugar was generally used by many tribes in place of salt.

While O-de-na was in all its glory, receiving tribute from the surrounding tribes, its commercial importance was suddenly cut short. One night about midnight, in the full of the moon, its inhabitants were aroused by a deep roaring sound as though a cy-

\*Used by permission of C. H. Engle, administrator of the estate of the late Chief Pokagon.



clone or earthquake was being born. The alarming sound appeared to be located at the west end of the lake near its outlet. A large number of the inhabitants, followed by crying children and whining dogs, started cautiously in the direction of the alarming sound. To add new fears to their imagination, all the waterfowls appeared to rise as one and circle to and fro about the lake in the utmost confusion, apparently screaming the cry of "ni-saw! (murder!)."

At length the outlet of the lake was reached, and to their amazement they saw at a glance that the shore, which for ages had bound the lake at its outlet, had given way, and great forest trees were plunging into the abyss, with commingled rocks and masses of earth. Ever now and then a canoe with its occupant would plunge into the vortex to certain death. In dismay they returned to their village, there to await the consequences. When morning came they beheld, not "Nib-i-wa," their beautiful lake, but (where it lay the night before in all its sunset glory) a slimy mass of mud, alive with struggling, dying fish, while overhead the fowls of the air were still flying, uttering their notes of deepest sorrow. Their navy of canoes that were left unanchored the night before were swept away, and those that were tied to the shore were on dry land far from the water's edge. As the people stood on the line that marked the ancient shore, looked far out into the basin of the lake, and only saw in place of it a winding stream that, like some great serpent, was slowly moving on half concealed by mud and dying fish, they were so wrought upon by the change that they wept.

Be-mi-ba-tod-og, their fastest runners, were sent by the chief to go down the valley as far as Lake Michigan and report as soon as possible what effect the deluge of water from their lake had on those lakes farther down the stream. On the third day they returned saying "All the lakes in the valley below have been swept into lake Michigan. The Miami (the St. Joseph) river is dammed up at its o-don (mouth) and flowing inland forming a great lake. The big lake, three hours' travel from here, that no one could paddle round betwixt sun and sun, is gone, and the river flows through where it was; and nearly all the people who lived there are gone too.

We suffered much from decaying fish which without number were steaming in the sunshine; the stench was so bad that all animals except "chi-kog (the skunk)" fled away; and all the fowls of the air except "ka-ga-gi and an-dek (the buzzard and the crow)" had disappeared. Mountains of stone and gravel and trees appeared on every hand; nothing remains of our loved "wa-di-na (valley)" but mud and desolation.

This report so worked on the minds of the natives that they were

led to believe that evil spirits that were envious of their prosperity were the cause of the great catastrophe. And so it was, that one of the most beautiful valleys of Michigan became depopulated, and so remained for hundreds of years, all on account of their perverted spirituality.

Pokagon fully realizes that some who read the above Legend will say of our race, "How spiritually weak they are." That is true, and it can be as truthfully said of the whole human family. Many times since I have been educated in the white man's books, I have been astonished to witness well informed men of the dominant race show, without blushing, an old dried rabbit's foot, or an old horse chestnut, or withered potato, and say, as if proud of it, "This is my mascot; it brings good luck." How or why it is that a Christian people can put their trust in such ridiculous things, ignoring their God, contrary to all the precepts of their religion, Pokagon cannot say. The only excuse he can give is that spiritual superstition is akin, alike, with savage and with sage.

I once camped out with a white preacher several days, hunting deer. He called me a red heathen because I refused to shoot at a white deer, which our people regarded sacred, and yet he would sit around the wigwam fire and shiver all day on Friday, claiming it was an unlucky day and he might get killed if he went out.

#### ALGONQUIN LEGENDS OF SOUTH HAVEN

*By Chief Pokagon.\**

No more for us the wild deer bounds;  
The plough is on our hunting grounds.

Our traditional account of South Haven given us by ki-os-ag (our forefathers) was held as sacred by them as Holy Writ by the white man. Long, long bi-bong (years) ago Ki-ji Man-i-to (the Great Spirit) who held dominion over Mi-shi-gan (Lake Michigan) and the surrounding country, selected Haw-waw-naw a place at the o-don (mouth) of Maw-kaw-te (Black river) as his seat of government. His royal throne (Ki-tehi-wik) was located on the highest point of that neck of land lying between Maw-kaw-te river and Lake Michigan. This high point of land was called Ish-pem-ing, meaning a high place.

Here it was that Ki-ji Man-i-to worked out the grand conceptions of his soul. With giant strides he scattered broadcast along

\*Used by permission of C. H. Engle, administrator of the estate of the late Chief Pokagon.

the shore, a day's journey northward, a multitude of beautiful stones of various colors, shape and size, that in sunshine outshone tehi-be-kan-a (the galaxy on high). No such charming stones elsewhere could be found around all the shores of the Great Lake. He also planted in saw-kaw (the forest) the most beautiful woodland flowers that ever bloomed on earth and filled all the trees with birds that sang the sweetest songs that ever fell on mortal ears. He also made a great mit-ig-wa (bow) at least ten arrow flights in length and laid it along the beach. He then painted it from end to end with beautiful lines, of various hues, that outshone the countless stones he had scattered along the shore. While thus at work a cyclone from the setting sun swept across the great lake. Waw-saw mo-win (lightning) flashed across Waw-kwi (the heavens) An-a-mi ka (thunder) in concert with ti-gow-og (the roaring waves) rolled their awful burden on the land. The earth shook. Hail and rain beat against Him. But he stood in his majesty, smiling in the teeth of the storm. At length the gloom clouds rolled away and the setting sun lighted up the passing storm. He then picked up the giant bow he had made, bending it across mi-ka-tik (his knee). Then with his breath he blew a blast that swept it eastward between the sun and clouds. As there as it stood each end resting upon the trees, it painted them all aglow, which, in contrast with their robes of green, added still more glory to the scene.

As he gazed upon its beauty and grandeur, arching the departing storm, He shouted in triumph above the roaring waves, saying in tones of thunder "Kaw-ka-naw in-in-i nash-ke nin-wab-sa aw-ni-quod (All men behold my bow in the cloud). See it has no mit-ig "Bim-ins-kwan ke-ma pin-da-wan (bow, arrow, string or quiver). It is the bow of peace. Tell it to your children's children that Ki-ji Man-i-to made and placed it there, that generations yet unborn, when they behold it, might tell their children that Ki-ji Man-i-to placed it there, without arrow, string or quiver, that they might know he loved peace and hated war." The tradition above given was handed down to us by a tribe of Au-nish-naw-be-og (Indians) that lived in Michigan before my people, the Pottawattamies. They were called Mash-ko-de (Prairie tribe), on account of their clearing up large tracts of woodland and living somewhat as farmers. They were said to be very peaceful, seldom going on the war-path. The Ottawas, who have always been very friendly with our people tell us they drove them out of this country and nearly exterminated them about four hundred years ago. We had great reverence for their traditions, as we occupied the land of their principal odena (village) about Black river. We named it Nik-onong, which

was derived from two Algonquin words "nik" (sunset) and o-nigis (beautiful).

It was a lovely, as well as an important place, Ki-tchi Mi-kan, the great trail, over which for ages all the northern and western tribes went around Lake Michigan to and from the great prairies of the west passed near this place. Traces of that great highway may still be seen along the grand sweep of country near the great lake between the Black and Kalamazoo rivers. In the dense forest north, south and east of us were great numbers of deer, elk and bears; while ducks, geese and swans clouded our waters, which were swarming with fish.

One half a mile walk north of our village was a sacred camping ground where we celebrated "Tchi-be-kan A-ke-win (our yearly six days' feast for the dead). During this feast bonfires were built along the shore, casting a lurid light far out into the lake and painting the crested waves all aflame. Children, young men and maidens, fathers and mothers, went about the camp, feasting and saluting one another, throwing food into the fire, and as it was being consumed, would sing, "Nebaw-baw tchi baw win (We are going about as spirits feeding the dead)." This feast kept alive the memory of the dead, as do the stones, that rise above the white man's tomb.

Nik-a-nong, in its day, was quite a manufacturing town. Large quantities of white birch bark were brought there by canoe loads and, as it never decays, was buried in the earth for use or trade when called for. Out of this wonderful manifold bark our fathers made canoes, hats, caps, wigwams and dishes for domestic use, and our maidens tied with it the knot that sealed the marriage vow. Sis-si-ba-kwat (maple sugar) was also made and kept in large quantities near this place and sold to southern and western tribes for wampun or in exchange for pi-jis-ki-we-win (buffalo robes). South Haven of the white man, with all its shipping, docks and cottage-crowned shores, does not compare with Nik-o-nong of the red man, with its deep wildwoods, and wigwamed shores. As tradition informs us, here our fathers lived for many generations in the lap of ease and plenty; but after the advent of the white man Nature frowned upon us; our forests were cut down; the game became scarce and kept beyond the arrow's reach; ke-go (the fish) hid themselves in deep waters; the woodland birds no more cheered us with their songs; the wild flowers bloomed no more. All, all has changed, except the sun, moon and stars; and they have not, because their God, and Ki-tchi Man-ito (our God), hung them beyond the white man's reach. Pokagon does not wish to complain; still, in nin-o-de (his heart) there lingers a love for Nik-o-nong, the o-de-na of his fathers. And now in old age, as with

feeble steps and slow he is passing through the open door of his wigwam into Waw-kwin (the world beyond) he must sing in his mother tongue, his last song on earth: "Nik-o-nong, nik-o-nong nin-im-en-dam mi-notch-sa bi-naw ki-kaw-ka-kaw-ka-naw kike-tchi-twan-in nin-sa-gia. Nik-o-nong, nik-o-nong, nik-o-nong (I yet shall behold Thee in all Thy glory)."

AFTER ME-ME-OG (SQUABS) IN VAN BUREN COUNTY

*By C. H. Engle*

In the spring of 1858 in company with Jacob Corwin, late of Keeler township, this county, an old hunter, seventy-five years of age, I went on a wild pigeon chase towards Lake Michigan. At that time there was a vast body of these birds nesting for miles along the lake south of South Haven, extending easterly along the north part of the county to and beyond Saddle lake, covering many square miles where every tree was spotted with their nests. Many times, while going out to feed, they moved in such clouds that they would obscure the sun. One hearing them, not knowing the cause, would imagine a whirlwind was abroad in the land.

After netting over one thousand dozen of these birds near Hartford, we noticed that they were changing their flight, and the main body was moving northward. From our knowledge of these strange birds, we were convinced that their young were nearly ready to leave their nests.

Learning that a large band of Indians were encamped on the edge of their nesting grounds, we procured an old shingle-weaver with an ox team and double wagon to take us to the nesting grounds. We started in a northwest direction, cutting our way through underbrush as we advanced into the unexplored forest.

On our way we passed an Indian shooting arrows into the top of a high tree. I said to him: "What are you shooting at?" "No-fin," he replied. I shook my head with a doubtful look. He then motioned for me to come to him. I did so. He told me in broken English, as well as he could, how he had lost an arrow shooting at a me-me and as he watched to see where it fell, he lost his arrow, and was shooting to find it. His scheme was this—to stand as near as possible in the same place from which he shot the bird and shoot other arrows in the same direction with like force, carefully noting where they fell with the hope that they would show where the missing arrow might be expected to be found. After shooting the third arrow he motioned me to follow him and I did so. Pointing out to me three arrows he exclaimed "There im am." And sure enough there in plain sight lay the lost arrow. It was made



INDIAN BASKET MAKING

In winter time our present girls and women of the Indian race are most industriously engaged in manufacturing splint baskets of mixed colors in all imaginable designs, varying in size from ladies' thimbles to hampers holding two bushels or more. They are quick to originate designs. Their finest work is made of white birch bark, sweet grass and porcupine quills. You can scarcely name an article in domestic use among the white people which they do not pattern after; tablets, napkin rings, watch cases, and even miniature houses and churches—all fall from their nimble fingers with equal skill. The porcupine quills are stained in all the colors of the rainbow. These they work into the bark of which the articles are made, representing leaves and flowers in all their natural colors. Some western tribes decorate with colored beads, but our Indian women will use only such material as they can get from Nature's store, which speaks volumes for their ingenuity and originality. They use sweet grass on account of its fragrance, which it retains for many years. Their work is much sought for by summer tourists, for which good prices are paid. No true lover of the beautiful can look through a well arranged collection of their goods without feeling they must have been washed in the rainbow and dipped in the sun.

of hickory, with a triangular, bluntish head for killing small game so as not to tear the skin. I bought it of him and still keep it as a relic of native shrewdness.

On nearing the camping grounds we met an Indian boy who certainly must have been Yankeeized. He was almost naked, wearing only a breech clout, showing clearly that he was a full blooded Indian, and yet he could speak broken English quite well for one of his years. He ran along the side of the wagon crying out "Stop, stop! Me want to talk wid you." "Whoa," said the ox driver and the cattle stopped. The little redskin climbed into the wagon and grabbed me by the hand saying "You am my fader; muder want to talk wid you bad." "What do you mean?" I said, "you little red skin?" Still holding my hand he said, "Do come and see muder." Uncle Corwin and the shingle-weaver both said "Go, Engle; the boy knows what he is talking about."

A few feet away, in the door of a wigwam, stood one of the dirtiest, greasiest looking squaws I had yet seen. I held back but the little rascal still held fast, repeating "Do come fader; muder want to see you bad." Suddenly it occurred to me that he had learned a Yankee trick to extort money. So I quickly handed him out a quarter, and he jumped out of the wagon handing it to the squaw who stood by the wigwam. I was astonished, as well as chagrined.

I have lived with several of the Algonquin tribes; hunted, fished and dealt with them for over fifty years; and yet I have never known one of them, to resort to trickery, to extort money, except that little rascal; and where he came from, where he went, or how he fared, I never knew and I never cared.

We soon reached the camping ground which was located on the south side of the nesting grounds, on either side of a small stream. I inquired if Kek-kek, their interpreter, was there? All shook their heads, saying "me no see im." I afterward learned that he had been arrested a few days before and they feared we might be after him again. Finally they came up around the wagon, examined the boxes and barrels filled with ice, and asked "Meby wat you want?" We explained to them that we wanted to buy a wagon load of me-me-og (squabs). An Indian then asked, "Do you want to see im Kek-kek?" I nodded "yes," and again asked if he was there? They then pointed out to me a tall Indian, a middle aged man, saying "There im be." He had a sort of stoical grin on his face. I said "Come here." He walked slowly up to the wagon, as if he doubted whether he should come or not. He could speak fair English and we made arrangements with him that we would pay then one shilling per dozen for all the squabs they would get us, dead or alive. Kek-kek, now being convinced that no harm was

meant for him, took much pride in giving us an insight into their domestic affairs. He took us all about the camp, pointing out to us long racks of poles and bark on which were spread hundreds of dozens of squabs, being smoked and dried over a slow fire.

As we expressed our surprise over such great quantities of birds, he said "Look um dis way," and pointed out to us many mokets (bark boxes) that would hold a bushel or more, each packed full of these young birds cured for future use. I asked him if they would keep. "Dem vill neber rot," he replied.

"Are they good eating?" I asked. He nodded his head saying "Num! Num! Num!" and handed me a mummy squab, saying "Eat um. It be gooder than white man's doves."

I did so with a relish, for I was hungry. "How you like im?" he asked. "It is all right," I replied. He then pointed out to me some mokets that he said were filled with "me-me bi-mi-da (squab butter;) "gooder," he said, "than cow butter." He then handed me a piece of corn bread and wooden knife, saying, "Eat um it wid de squab butter." I did so finding it quite pleasant to the taste. I finally said "Say, Kek-Kek, we are waiting here for your people to bring us in a wagon load of squabs." He then went and held a long pow-wow with the tribe; then came and told us, "De Inguns no no um shilling dozen. Da say give one cent, one pigeon, two cent, two pigeon, three cent, three pigeon; then um vill go." "Well," I said, "we will pay then one cent for each squab. Kek-kek then gave a sort of war whoop and in less than five minutes the camp was all astir. The men formed in single file moving northward, followed by the women on pony back, with their papooses strapped to their backs, while the children and dogs followed behind and we, with our stag team, brought up the rear. About one mile distant they halted among thick hemlock trees, not far from where the Packard mills were afterward built in the township of Covert. Here they started in all directions, the squaws sitting their papooses up against the trees leaving them in our charge. Uncle Corwin said he was "mighty glad there was no hogs running in the woods."

The squabs at this time were as large as the parent birds, though still in their nests. In less than two hours, the band began to return, each one with a back load of me-me-og. It was a hot day and there was no water in that locality. They were thirsty, and began to climb into the wagon, helping themselves to ice. We protested, telling them we could not buy their birds without ice to pack them in. One old Indian said, "We can lib with no muny, but die come wid no vater." They continued to take our ice until every pound was gone. We then counted their birds and paid for them. There were two hundred and ten dozen and they filled the



wagon box chock full. The old shingle weaver declared it would kill his team to draw them home. On our way back we came to a stream where we poured water onto the load until the birds were cooled off. We sent them to Boston and New York where they were sold for \$1.50 per dozen.

#### THE "BUCK PONY" RIDE

In order that the reader may more fully understand the joy, love and fear of the red man I place the following experience on record.

The rude Indian with untutored mind,  
To all our pride and glory blind,  
Could we his inward feelings gain  
We'd find affection, in white and red the same.

In the autumn of 1856 an Indian known as Little Weso came to see me on pony back saying "The chief has sent me to get you meby to go wid me to go on pony back, Saddle Lake to find um Joe Kaw-kee." "Is he lost," I inquired? With a tremulous voice he replied "Bad, very bad! Some white man say him be killed by a white hunter cause im kill um so many deer and make him mad." "Say Inglam, will take your pony and go wid me? Poor Joe, him good man, kill um lots of deer."

I got out my pony, a tall lank lean horse, and we started to find Joe. My horse was a fast walker and I laughed at Weso, telling him his pony was lazy and could not keep up. He said "Say Inglam, dis pony am very smart. Him can outrun your big pony." I said "we will try it," and started my big pony on the run. As he galloped off at full speed and I was beginning to think I would get out of sight of the Indian, I heard him give a loud war cry for me to clear the way. I urged my horse on with whip and heels, but all in vain. Poor Lo passed me like the wind and was soon out of sight among the trees. I felt dumfounded and stopped my horse in amazement. Soon I saw the redskin galloping back towards me. As he came up he said, "Inglam, what tink now of my pony?" "He can keep up all right enough," I said.

As we rode on deeper into the north woods, Weso asked if I was hungry? I told him I was, for in my haste to start I had forgotten to eat dinner. He asked "Do you like um jerk venson?" I replied that I had never seen any. He took from an old bark sack about his shoulders something that looked like a dark clay ball, gnawed at it a few times himself and then handed it to me saying "Take im; eat im; it am jerk venson; very good." I grabbed it with half closed eyes so as not to spleen against it, but as I dimly

saw teeth prints all around it, I closed my eyes, gnawed at it several times and handed it back to the Indian, telling him he had saved me from starving. It had a kind of sweetish smoky taste and tasted fairly well to a hungry man. I thought if it had been salted it would have been very palatable. We rode on in silence, with the redskin ahead, until darkness began to close about us, when all at once the monotony was broken, as the Indian cried out "Me see um light. Me tink it am Kaw-kee's wigwam. Me know it am, for me see Saddle lake, dat way and de small lake de uder way, and me know Kaw-kee's wigwam am tween um." We dismounted, walked to the wigwam and, in true Indian style, peeked in to see if anyone was there.

The redskin said, "Me see um Joe's wife, but no Joe." We then rapped at the door. A tall white woman opened it and Weso asked, "Am Joe alive." "Why yes, he is gone to the spring for a pail of water." Weso then told her: "We heard him am killed, and In glam, with me, hab come good ways from Hartford to know if so." I now began to realize that she was his wife, for she was wonderfully excited and threw up her arms exclaiming "De Lord will punish um for lying about Joe! De Lord will punish um! Yes He will. This be the fourth time they have had poor Joe killed!" Kaw-kee came in as the last words were spoken, but his wife was so excited that she continued to do all the talking, telling Joe all about our mission there, until Kaw-kee said: "Shut up! Sit down, you old squaw!" She did so and cried like a child. I concluded she felt mortally offended to think she had made such a big fool of herself in marrying an Indian.

The two Indians talked for an hour in their native tongue, of which I could understand but little. I understood he had killed fifty deer, three bears, and one wolf in four weeks and that the white hunters had stolen five of the deer, and were mad because he had killed so much game. I know I thought they could hardly be blamed for their feelings of bitterness.

About ten o'clock, Kaw-kee told his wife she had pouted long enough and to get up and get supper. She sprang to her feet like a jumping-jack, soon having a deer liver and tongue stew, with corn soup on the table and announced: "Your supper is ready." I was indeed glad to hear that, as I had eaten nothing in twelve hours but a little jerked venison. We three men sat down on a log before a slab table while the hostess waited on us as best she could under the circumstances. We had but two plates and two knives and forks to accommodate three, but the good wife cut the meat up for us in fine shape so we could handle it to the best advantage. The two Indians ate off of one plate, that I might enjoy the other all to myself. I must admit that I never before or since

enjoyed a better supper. In fact, I congratulated Kaw-kee on being so lucky in procuring a wife, but she kindly kicked it over by saying, "And you old Ingun don't know enough to know it!"

We slept that night on hemlock boughs between green deer skins. I slept soundly all night. At breakfast we finished what was left of the evening meal. Kaw-kee, after our meal, said "Me want you come out dis way." Following him a short distance, he said "See um big buck. Him am yours, to take home wid you." We both told him we did not think it possible to take him on pony back.

Kaw-kee looked sad and finally said, "Me feel um bad if you no take im. You be good to come way up here in de storm to find um Kaw-kee dead, and find me live Ingun." "How can we take im?" asked Weso.

"Me will load im on pony back as tight as an arrow point to um arrow." So saying he stepped to a small basswood tree and stripped off some long pieces of the inner bark. Then he requested Weso to bring his pony forward, telling him to take hold of the buck's hind legs and he at the same time grasped the fore legs, throwing the big buck astride of the pony, when he fastened him so securely one might think they were born together. The deer's big horns reached just above the pony's head, while their noses reached out about the same distance. Both pony and deer had short tails which extended behind nearly the same distance. The two Indians laughed aloud as they surveyed the double monstrosity and so did I.

Weso proposed to lead his pony home, but I persuaded him to straddle the buck and he did so. That put on the capsheaf and so



THE START FROM SADDLE LAKE

pleased Kaw-kee, that he yelled out to Polly Ann, his wife, to come out and see the sight. She did so, exclaiming "Holy Moses and all the saints!" It had a good influence over Polly Ann for that sober face of hers, which had not smiled since the night before when she was ordered to shut up her mouth, now grinned from ear to ear until she laughed so loud that Kaw-kee told her to quiet down or she would scare all the game out of the woods, and all the fish out of Saddle Lake!

I went and brought my horse out from the underbrush so as to start home, but when he caught sight of the monstrosity, he broke into a run and beat the record for all past time. I finally got him stopped and turned him round to be sure the pony, passenger and baggage were coming behind. As I glimpsed the oncoming train, my horse snorted like an engine, wheeled and ran again as if to escape death. After much coaxing I got him quieted down so as to get within speaking distance of Weso. Kaw-kee was coming along with him carrying a long strip of bass-wood bark. He yelled to me to hold on and after much careful maneuvering he got within fifty feet, telling me that Weso had given up a riding buck back and wanted to know if my pony would carry double? I replied "I thought so." He then ran back to Weso, helped him dismount, tied a long strip of bark to the pony's halter, came forward with Weso, and after carefully petting my horse, assisted Weso to mount behind me on the blanket. Then handing him the end of the long bark halter, he said "Now start, and go bery slow, and yous will be home wid deer meby by sunset."

We obeyed instructions, reaching Bangor a little after noon where we found a sort of wagon road. About a mile south of this place we met an old man and woman, driving a rack-a-bone horse. The horse no sooner saw us than he gave a snort, ran into the woods and tipped over the wagon, spilling out the passengers with a load of pumpkins. Leaving my horse in care of Weso, I ran to assist the unfortunate couple. No one was seriously hurt, but my, how mad! The old man said "You will pay dear for this. I will put you in state prison!" I said "Uncle, you should not drive such a skittish young horse." "Young horse" said he, "I have driven him twenty-five years. I brought him with me from York State. I never saw him scart before. That rig, or whatever it is, is enough to scare any animal or man!" His wife who had remained quiet until now, piped out in a sharp nasal tone, "Pa says that thing would scare any animal or man. I say it is enough to scare the Divil himself!" I finally, with their help, got things together in good shape, reloaded the pumpkins and they started off quite good naturedly.

We reached home about sunset, as predicted, with our big buck. For forty years after, I never met Weso without a broad grin, saying "Well, Ingham, how you like um now, buck pony ride?"

"NEVER CARRY A REVOLVER, BOYS"

Often when our fears are greatest  
There are no dangers near us  
And sometimes when we feel the safest  
A sword may hang above us  
Suspended by a single hair!

In the fall of 1856, while buying fur among the Indians in Bangor township, I was obliged to stay all night with an Indian family. It was in a log house with one room below and an upper room above that might be called a garret. In this room I lodged. The only access to it was by a ladder through a small opening in the ceiling large enough to let a medium-sized man pass through. Climbing into this room I found there was a sort of bed and an open place in one end of the chamber.

The old Indian said to me before retiring, "Yous vil have to lay down widout candle, for poor Ingun haint got im."

I have always made it a rule in life to conform to circumstances as cheerfully as possible; and so I did in this case. I found in the place of a bedstead a few poles laid across some small logs. On these were piled a quantity of hemlock brush, over which was spread several wolf robes, with a large bear skin in place of sheets and quilts. Into this strange nest I crawled, wondering what redskin had last rested there. Soon I was fast asleep, enjoying my slumbers just as well as though I were in the best kind of a white man's bed.

At midnight I awoke, feeling fully convinced that some one was climbing the ladder into my room. I watched and listened. My heart beat like a snare drum. Instead of one person, I was convinced there were two. Then, to still add a new feature, I could see something was being hauled up the ladder into the chamber and, as I listened more intently, I heard a sort of whining noise, and dimly saw by the light of the moon two big Indians pull up a great dog into the room. That almost paralyzed me. The dog snuffed and whined as though he expected to be pounced upon by a catamount.

The two men walked very slowly towards me and the slab floor squeaked out at every step the cry of murder! Oh how I did wish I had my revolver with me, which I had left at home. I placed my back firmly against the wall and drew the old bear skin close about me, preparing for my last struggle on earth. The intruders

reached the bed and there stood still, as if to pause before taking my life. Their eyes glared like cats' eyes in the night time.

Suddenly it occurred to me that it might be barely possible that I was in their nest. Trembling I said "Nin ni-baw o-maw? (Do you sleep here?)" Slowly a voice replied "E-n-c-h, E-n-c-h (Y-e-s, Y-e-s)." I now asked "Can you talk white man's talk?" An answer came: "Me am a white boy." A great burden was lifted. I unrolled the bear skin from my body and spread it out to its full bigness, saying "get into bed." Both laid down with their clothes all on, as I had done the night before.

And we, brave foemen, with the dog, lay side by side,  
Peacefully like four brothers tried,  
But slept not until the morning beams,  
Purpled the woodlands and the streams.

I learned during the night that they were boys about fourteen years old; that the white boy had been brought up among the Indians; that the day previous the Indian boy went to stay with him all night so they might go out on a coon hunt in the evening, that the dog had treed a coon a short distance from where I was staying, so they concluded to come and stay there; and the reason why the parents did not let me or the boys know the situation was because the boys avoided waking up the old folks.

They said when they pulled the old coon dog into the room he gave a sort of whining sniff, which convinced them something was wrong in the room and that they dimly saw the bear skin moving about and feared the old old bear himself had come back and was crawling into his hide again! They further said "We be scared most to def!" I was mighty glad they did not know how I felt at that time, as I rolled the bear's hide about me.

Since then I have often wondered what the result would have been if I had had my revolver with me. It is possible I might have been tried for murdering the whole household and have to show I did it in self-defence, in order to save myself from a life sentence, or on the other hand I might have been scalped or killed.

On my return home I disposed of my revolver, and have never owned or carried one since, and am fully convinced that in a country like ours one is much safer without a revolver than with one; hence my advice to boys ever since then has been "Never carry a revolver."

#### SAW-KAW'S LOVE STORY

From Saw-kaw's own story: "The course of true love never does run smooth" even in the natives heart; under the most favorable circumstances, its joys are marred with many doubts and fears.

Se-gitan Saw-kaw I-kwe (Listen to the child of the forest).

My grandfather, during my early girlhood, took great pride in teaching me and a boy chum of mine how to bend the bow and direct the arrow in its course. Almost daily this little boy and I would contest in archery for a prize to be awarded by grandfather. It was generally conceded I was the best shot. White boys of the neighborhood often joined in our sports, contesting with powder and ball for the prize at a distance of one hundred feet or less. An old white man was sure to be present on such occasions to act as umpire.

Our arrows seldom failed to win the prize. I can now see the old man limping along to see who had centered the mark and hear him say "Wall, wall,—I do declare! The little redskins have won." Or "Wall, wall, I do declare! The little redskins have lost this time." In order that we might know our arrows apart, Kaw-kee's were painted red and mine white. The old man gave each prize as it was won—a turkey, goose or pheasant was generally provided by some white man.

All these endearing sports were suddenly cut short as, at fourteen years of age, it had been decided that I should be sent to the Indian school at Lawrence, Kansas. I felt almost mortally offended, I feared to meet strangers in a strange land.

I continued to sob and cry until my parents feared my heart would break. Grandfather was consulted. He said "Nin Saw-kaw (my dear child) weep no more. It is best that you should go. I have visited the school many times. You will like the children there and find the teachers good and kind." In vain I plead not to be sent away. Finally I opened to him the full burden of my soul. I told him how much I loved my people and our woodland home; how ardently I loved my bow and arrows which he gave and all my sports. "Is that all?" he asked. I replied: "Oh! Do forgive my childish heart, and do tell me how I can leave my dear Kaw-kee and see him no more. I love him far beyond my power to tell; you have the secret of my heart. Do be good and let me stay here."

Nodding his head, he finally said "Is it possible that one so young can love so great?" With astonishment he looked me square in the face and asked "Does he love you?" "He has never told me so" said I. "Have you ever told Kaw-kee that you loved him?" he asked. "I never have." "Why not?" he asked. I made reply: "Because deep down in my heart I felt his feelings were akin to mine." Thoughtfully he bowed his head. Then looking up, the dear old man seemed filled with pity and finally said, as he kissed me, "My dear child, I well remember the days of my youth. I know full well how wicked it is to trifle with the cords of heaven-

born love. The best I can promise is that after you have spent two years at school I will send for you to come home, and we will all go into the north woods for several months and there dress and hunt as our fathers did before the white men came. "Can Kaw-kee go too?" I asked. "Yes," he replied, "he can go too. Think of it, Saw-kaw; that will give you both a chance to hunt and test your skill in shooting game with bows and arrows!"

A soothing feeling of reconciliation came over me as the rainbow over the departing storm. I had full faith in grandfather's promise. Cheerfully I went forth to a strange land, and there pored over the white man's books, cheered on day by day with the bright promise from the lips of one who failed not to do as he agreed.

Two long years had nearly passed. I began to wonder if it could be possible for grandfather to forget his promise. One morning my teacher handed me a letter. I looked it over; it was post-marked Hartford, Michigan. I felt sure it must be from grandfather. As soon as school was out for noon I ran to my room. Quickly I opened the letter. Saw-kaw was indeed proud that she could read it for herself. In it I heard dear grandfather say: "My dear Saw-kaw:—Find enclosed twenty dollars to bring you home. I have found good hunting grounds and, as I promised, on your return we will go there, hunt and fish, dress and live as our fathers did before the white man came." Again and again I read the letter, but, alas! Kaw-kee, no Kaw-kee, was there.

Saw-kaw slept not that night. The night following I dreamed of going home. All seemed overjoyed to meet me, but no one lisped the name of Kaw-kee. I felt him in my heart. Just then I heard him say "Bo-sho nic-con Saw-kaw." I answered back "Bo-sho nic-con Kaw-kee," and tried to grasp his hand, when lo! his form was changed into an angry wolf. Upright he stood, so close that I could smell his sickening breath. I awoke while yet his growls and snarls rang in my ears. So real it seemed, I could not believe it all a dream.

Three days later I reached our wigwam. None of our people at first knew me, but when I greeted them "Bo-sho nic-con?" (how do you do, my friends?) an old time pow-wow ensued, all trying to embrace and greet me first in broken English.

During the evening, old Wapsee, a noted bear hunter who had the reputation of driving bears to his wigwam to kill them, called to see me. This old man thought he could speak better English than the young Indians who had been to the white man's school. Grasping my hand he said: "Saw-kaw, me am eber so glad to see you. Me tink you tink meby, you can speak all de white man's words. Me no like um white talk much; dem say ebry ting wrong.



Ingun call ebry ting right. You know um all him talk about. De young Inguns come from school and can't tell nofin. If dem be sick or well and try to tell um, de old folks can't guess um what dey mean." Owing to his deafness he could not understand a word I said: When leaving he said, "You know um Kaw-kee. Him talk much bout you him do; me tink him lub you bery much." However embarrassing his parting words, I drank them in; for I was starving! starving in my soul! .

Grandfather came at last. We kissed each other with joy and gladness. Frankly he assured me I had greatly improved both in appearance and conversation. With a tremulous voice he said "Saw-kaw, how I have missed you!" Then he added "I still hold the promise made you sacred. All things are now ready. Tomorrow we start for the hunting grounds. I am anxious to have you try your skill among the deer with the bow and arrows which I gave. I said: "Say grandfather, what has become of Kaw-kee?" He simply made reply: "After you left he went away to live with the Ottawas over two hundred miles north of here."

Early the next morning our family with their ponies well loaded took their line of march along an ancient trail through dense forests of hemlock and pine, where the day, through lofty archways of overhanging boughs, could scarcely find its way. Now and then our arrows brought down me-me-og and as-sana-go (pigeons and squirrels) from the trees, and frequently the dogs brought to us maw-boos (the rabbit). At nightfall we reached Mat-a-won, a point where two streams meet, pouring their waters into one and forming the Great Se-be. As we surveyed the romantic scene before us and listened to the voice of a mighty cataract just below, my grandfather said with great feeling in his soul "It was on the shores of this stream I first met my dear Lonida, the wife of my youth that long since passed to the happy hunting grounds beyond." I said not a word but thought in my heart "I wish I knew if Kaw-kee has gone there too." Here we unloaded our ponies and prepared lodgings for the night. Fire was built and soup made out of the game we had secured on our way, mixed with man-do-win (dried corn) and salt, which we ate with a relish that can only be enjoyed after a long march through evergreen forests.

At break of day our little camp was all astir. Grandfather superintended laying out the grounds and building the wigwam, which was made of bark and poles with a smoke hole at the top, according to our ancient custom. No prince or king could have felt prouder of his castle than we did of our wigwam. The day following grandfather called the family together telling them

that before commencing a general hunt, according to ancient custom, we must enjoy a regular corn dance which he said eight could do in fine style. "Further," he said, "I have a little surprise for you." Judge if you can of our surprise as he opened a large mo-cot (birch bark box) and handed each of us a clean new Indian buckskin suit of clothes that fitted each perfectly.

When all were dressed, grandfather started off with a swaying motion to lead the dance. I laughed saying, "Hold on grandfather, you said it required eight to give the corn dance. There are but seven of us." "Well," said he, "Saw-kaw, as you have no partner, go stand in the door of the wigwam and enjoy seeing the rest of us dance."

I did as he requested and ran into the wigwam. As I entered, to my great surprise, before me stood a tall Indian dressed like a chief in a new buckskin suit, with fur cap trimmed with eagle feathers. Trembling, I gazed at him in fear and astonishment; still as a statue and as dumb. Finally he broke the silence and in soothing tones said, "Saw-kaw, don't you know me?" I finally replied, "Oh! Kaw-kee, is that you?" and rushed weeping into his arms.

After recovering from my great excitement, he explained to me how grandfather originated the whole scheme, so as to give me a joyful surprise, and that the whole family were on the joke excepting myself; and I was "innocence abroad." As we walked out to join the dance, the little party gave cheer on cheer until the echoes made the welkin ring. Within my heart I felt "One hour like this is worth more than I have learned in two years at school."

The following day grandfather arranged the distribution of his forces. At that time of the year a still hunt was necessary and only father was allowed to use the white man's gun. The rest of us—that is, Kaw-kee, grandfather and I,—our bows and arrows. Mother, two sisters and my little brother, not loving the chase, were to fish and keep things about the wigwam in order. Grandfather took his point farthest down the stream, while Kaw-kee and I watched the trail above him, a few rods apart. All reported seeing deer the first day, but no shots were made. A week passed; many deer had been seen, but none killed and I was deeply disappointed and called to mind grandfather's saying of years before—that since the advent of the white man, "all game is wild and keeps beyond the arrow's reach, and the fish hide themselves in deep water."

That night grandfather gave orders: That all must be on their runways at peep of day the next morning. He then told the following story which he said was of white man's origin: "A renowned statesman passed over a bridge at sunrise. On it sat a man

fishing. At sunset he recrossed the same bridge, finding the man still fishing. He said he had fished there all day. 'Well,' inquired the statesman 'have you caught any fish?' 'Oh no,' he replied, 'but I have had one glorious nibble.' Now that man had the pluck. Go and do likewise."

Morning dawn found us all at our stations. Just as the sun had tinged with red the highland trees, I was startled by the report of a rifle, which, in the morning stillness, was repeated back from shore to shore until it died away the merest whisper. My heart fluttered like a caged bird struggling to get free. I well knew it was my father's gun, and if he had missed a deer it might pass me any moment. Listening and peering through the underbrush that fringed the stream, I faintly heard a crackling sound. On towards me came a monstrous buck with antlers broad and white as snow. He stopped so close, that I could see him wink and hear him breathe. Summing up all the powers within me, in two heart beats of time I sent two successive arrows deep into his right side. He made one monstrous leap, falling in mid stream. "Kaw-kee! Father, Father!" I cried. "Come quick!" Soon both came on the run, with grandfather in the rear, fearing some great disaster had befallen me. But when I pointed out the monarch of the woods struggling in the water, their fears were turned to joy. Kaw-kee jumped headlong into the stream and hauled the noble deer upon the shore.

It was found that a ball had pierced one ear. "My rifle ball did that," my father said. From his neck an arrow dangled. "I shot that arrow," Kaw-kee explained. See it is painted red." Transfixed in his right side were two arrows painted white. "Now who killed the deer?" grandfather asked. "Saw-kaw killed the deer!" Kaw-kee and father both exclaimed. "Her white arrows cannot lie." It is unnecessary for me to say that the greatest ambition of my life was now a reality.

We remained in camp several weeks longer and each killed several deer. Besides Kaw-kee killed a wolf, and grandfather (bless the dear old man!) killed a bear and caught two cubs.

During our stay a French trader came down the stream and landed at our shore. He appeared pleased to meet grandfather, addressing him as "chief." "Who is that?" I asked. Father made reply "Ish-cot-a-wa-bo (whiskey)." His real name is Lapaz. He smiled on me in such a bold manner that I avoided having any conversation with him. He remained with us several days. One morning he started to go with me to my runaway. I slighted him, and Kaw-kee went with me. He was mad and called Kaw-kee "the smallest end of the red trash." The next day he grew much more bolder in his attention to me, which I

avoided at every point. Stung by "a-mo (the wasp of jealousy)" he opened his heart to father, telling him how much he admired my skill, how dearly he loved me; then boldly asked, "Can I marry Saw-kaw?" Father said, "Saw-kaw is under her grandfather's control. Lay your case before him."

Now grandfather well knew Lapaz. The year before he told some of his people that the needle maker was dead and thereby induced them to pay him one dollar per needle. On his next trip among them he sold them for five cents each. An old squaw told Lapaz, "Me gib you when here before one dollar for one needle 'cause you say 'needle maker am dead.'" "He did die," said the trader, "but another man learned how to make them." From this and other tricks grandfather hated him as "Satan hates holy water." So he concluded to get rid of the nuisance forever. He told Lapaz that Saw-kaw was engaged to young Kaw-kee; that the two had been bosom companions since childhood, but that in-as-much as he had keen sympathy for an ardent lover, he found it in his heart to give him a chance to secure the darling of his heart. Encouraged by this promise, Lapaz was very happy. He told Lapaz: "Tomorrow we will arrange for a contest between Kaw-kee and you for the hand of Saw-kaw. I will suspend a live duck by one leg to a limb, by a string at the distance of one hundred feet and you may have the first chance with your rifle; then Kaw-kee with his bow and arrow. The one that cuts the string and lets fall the duck, shall claim the girl." "That's fair," said Lapaz "Saw-kaw is mine!" "Hold on," grandfather said, "you are too hasty. Now listen! In case the loser wishes another chance he can have it by taking a square-hold wrestle with his opponent. If he wins in the second contest, Saw-kaw shall be his wife." "All right," said Lapaz.

Morning came and the family met on the river's bank to witness the contest. All understood the come-out but Lapaz. A duck hung dangling in the air from the branch of a tree. Lapaz took aim and fired. No duck fell. Kaw-kee then drew his bow and let the arrow fly. Down came the duck! Lapaz seemed confounded, but without a word, rushed at Kaw-kee clinching him for a square-hold wrestle, big with hope to win the prize. Now came the tug-of-war. Kaw-kee stepped backward near the river bank and there on his shoulders he backward fell, followed by Lapaz, muttering between his teeth "I've got you now." Quick as thought Kaw-kee planted both his feet between the hips of his rival, then with a mighty spring with both legs hurled his adversary headlong into the stream at least ten feet below. Poor Lapaz, like a drowning rat, crawled into his boat, looking as though he hated everybody and himself as he floated down the stream and disappeared. Where he went and how he fared nobody knew and nobody cared.

A few days after this, while we were making preparations to break camp, grandfather called the family together. He spoke of the glorious time we had enjoyed, living as our fathers lived. He referred to the true love which had existed so long between Kaw-kee and myself without being interfered with. He further said, "It is a fact that among our people in their native state, they regarded true love so sacred that they never tried to plague their children about it. Hence, in after years, they were consulted by them in all such affairs." "But," said he, "with the white man it is not so. Their little children are so much laughed at about the opposite sex, that in after years they hide their true feelings as if it were a great sin to fall in love. I am indeed glad that none of you have tried to plague Saw-kaw and Kaw-kee, thereby living up to the customs of our fathers." He then said, pointing at Kaw-kee and myself, "I propose that now, and here, we close our outing with a marriage between Kaw-kee and Saw-kaw, according to native custom." After consulting each other we both stood up at the same time and there, under the evergreen archways above us, we promised grandfather, in the presence of the family, that as we had loved each other in the past, so we would in the future. He then said, "Face each other; clasp your hands together." And we did so. As there we stood, face to face, he said: "As your hands are joined together, so may your hearts be, in true love, that faileth not. Now in the presence of Ki-tchi Man-i-to (the Great Spirit) I declare you 'In-aw-kaw ne-naw (husband and wife).'" The family then, in subdued tones, repeated, "Maw-ge-ong, Maw-ge-ong! (Amen! Amen!)" The streams below and trees above murmured "Maw-ge-ong! Maw-ge-ong!" Then we two were known as one, and so have lived.

#### ME-ME-OG, THE WILD PIGEON

In springtime when the rosy hand of morning light  
 Unfolds the curtain of an April night,  
 And golden clouds float in the liquid blue,  
 As guardian spirits, weeping crystal dew,  
 The frightened woodsman, in wonder list'ning stands!  
 Thinks a whirlwind is abroad in the land!  
 Darkness increases, his eyes grow dim.  
 And as he seeks shelter from the impending wind,  
 Suddenly his fears are turned to joy, for he sees  
 Sweeping through and high above the forest trees  
 Millions of pigeons, on their north-bound way,  
 Almost shutting out the morning light of day!

In closing the aboriginal sketch of Van Buren county, I deem it appropriate to present an article written by the late Chief Pokagon entitled "Me-me-og" (the migratory or wild pigeon of North

America). It was published by the Chautauqua Magazine of New York which paid nearly one hundred dollars for the contribution. It is acknowledged by our best ornithologists to be the most exhaustive article ever published regarding those wonderful birds, which, for unknown centuries had one of their main breeding grounds in Van Buren County, generally every other year, during April and May.

Audubon, the great American ornithologist, declared their numbers were absolutely countless both at their roosts and breeding places. In his exhaustive work on ornithology he states that in 1813, near Henderson, Kentucky, he made a careful computation of a body of birds that passed northward in spring, estimating that it contained not less than one billion one hundred and fifty millions one hundred and thirty-six thousand pigeons and, as each pigeon would consume at least half a pint of mast per day, it would require to feed such a flock eight millions seven hundred and twelve thousand bushels per day. Think of it!

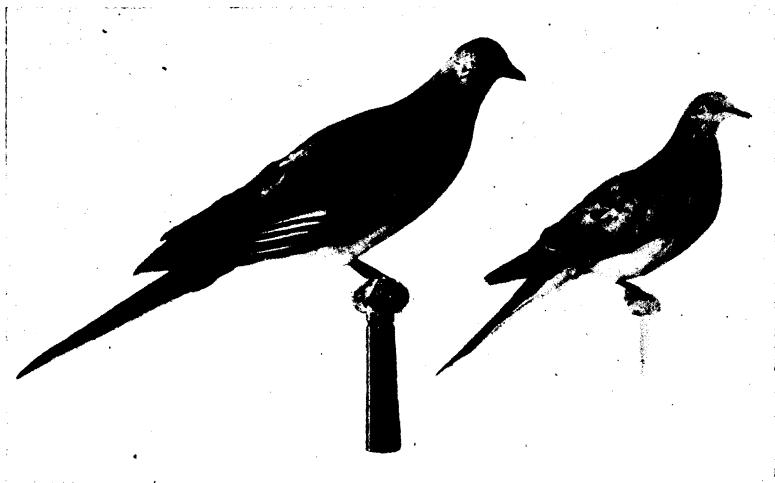
Residents of this county under forty years of age will probably read the old chief's account of them with many doubts, but those past that age will verify its truth. Notwithstanding the countless millions of these birds thirty-five years ago, there has been a standing offer for years of five hundred dollars for a single pair of them; yet no one has been able to produce them.

Many theories have been advanced regarding their total disappearance. One is that they undertook to cross one of the Great Lakes in a body, were overtaken by a tornado and drowned. Others claim they must have been wiped out by some contagious disease. While it seems to be well authenticated by some old sailors, that they witnessed, about the time of their disappearance, great bodies of these birds moving south across the Gulf of Mexico, in such great clouds that they shut out the light of day for several hours, and that in their opinion, unless they were drowned in the gulf, they are located somewhere in South America. From all I have been able to learn, for ages, they generally wintered in Arkansas, where mast was wonderfully plenty, and that in spring time they moved northward, nesting in Tennessee and Kentucky in February, in Indiana in March and Pennsylvania and Michigan in April and May. Their great wintering places in the south being broken up and the timber in the north that supplied them with such great quantities of mast, being cut down, so demoralized them that they could no longer exist in such vast bodies. Thus they scattered, and, like bees that abandon their hive, most of them could not survive an unsocial condition and finally died.

When our western plains in the spring and fall were covered with vast herds of buffalo moving north or south, migrating to

their summer or winter feeding grounds, they were followed by immense flocks of wolves and other animals that fed on the calves and the old animals that were left in their rear, but with the pigeons it was not so. No birds of prey were swift enough to follow them in their flights. They were only preyed upon by such birds as lived where they located. They were followed and preyed upon by cruel man, who had knowledge of their breeding places, as described by the old chief in his article.

Some years since while ploughing, close in front of me a hawk swooped down and carried off in his talons a robin. It awakened in me an intricate train of thought. I began to inquire "How can an all-wise creator excuse himself for creating one creature to live upon another?" While my feelings were wrought upon by this thought, I heard in a thicket close by a touching sound like the crying of a strangling babe. Quickly I ran to see what it was. To my surprise I found a large black snake coiled about a rabbit that was begging for its life. Quick as thought, with my knife I severed the coils of the snake and released its victim so quickly that it escaped without a "thank you." I then sat down on a log to consider and analyze my acts. Result: I had saved the innocent rabbit through sympathy and had butchered the snake through revenge! I finally concluded not to meddle further with great Nature's laws, but to accept the Darwinian theory of the survival of the fittest, which, physically speaking, is true.



MALE AND FEMALE PIGEONS

The female on the right shows the size of the dove

[From photo furnished by Prof W. B. Burrows, Michigan Agricultural College.]

The migratory or wild pigeons of North America, were known to our race as "me-me-og." Why the European race did not accept that name, was, no doubt, because the bird so much resembled the domesticated pigeon; as they called us, wild men.

This remarkable bird differs from the dove or domesticated pigeon, which was imported into this country, in the grace of its long neck, its slender bill and legs, and its narrow wings. Its length is seventeen inches. Its tail is eight inches long, having twelve feathers, white on the under side. The two center feathers are longest, while five arranged on either side diminish gradually each one-half inch in length, giving to the tail when spread an almost conical appearance. Its back and upper part of its wings and head are a darkish blue, with a silky, velvety appearance. Its neck is resplendent in gold and green, with royal purple intermixed. Its breast is reddish brown, fading towards the belly into white. Its tail is tipped with white, intermixed with bluish black. The female is one inch shorter than the male, and her color less vivid. Its length of wings when spread is twenty-eight inches. It was proverbial with our fathers, that if the Great Spirit, in his wisdom, could have created a more elegant bird in plumage, form and movements, he never did.

When a young man I have stood for hours admiring the movements of these birds. I have seen them fly from horizon to horizon, from morning until night, in unbroken columns, like an army of trained soldiers pushing to the front, while detached bodies of the birds appeared in different parts of the heavens, pressing forward in haste like raw recruits preparing for battle. At other times I have seen them move for hours in one wide unbroken line across the sky, like some great river, ever varying in course and as some mighty stream, sweeping on at sixty miles an hour, reached some deep valley, it would pour its living mass headlong down hundreds of feet, sounding as though a cyclone was abroad in the land. I have stood by the grandest cata-racts of America and witnessed their descending torrents in wonder and astonishment, yet never have I been so moved and awakened in admiration as when I have seen these living columns drop from their course like meteors from heaven. While feeding they always have guards on duty, to give alarm of danger. It is made by the watch bird as it takes its flight, beating its wings together in quick succession, sounding like the rolling beat of a snare drum. Quick as thought each bird repeats the alarm, as the flock struggles to rise, leading a stranger to think a young cyclone is being born.

I have visited in the southern states many roosting places of these birds, where the ground under the great forest trees for thousands of acres was covered with branches torn from the parent trees, some from eight to ten inches in diameter. At such a time so much confusion of sound is caused by the breaking of limbs and the continued fluttering and chattering that a gun fired a few feet distant cannot be heard, while to converse, so as to be heard, is almost impossible.

About the middle of May, 1850, while in the fur trade, I was camping on the headwaters of the Manistee river in Michigan. One morning while leaving my wigwam I was startled by hearing a gurgling, rumbling sound, as though an army of horses laden with sleigh bells was advancing through the deep forests toward me. As I listened more intently, I concluded that instead of the tramping of horses it was distant thunder; and yet the morning was clear, calm and beautiful. Nearer and nearer came the strange comingling sounds of sleigh bells, mixed with the rumbling of an approaching storm. While I gazed and listened, in wonder and astonishment, I beheld moving toward me in an unbroken front millions of pigeons, the first I had



seen that season. They passed like a cloud through the branches of the high trees, through the underbrush and over the ground, apparently overturning every leaf.

Statue-like I stood, half concealed by cedar boughs. They fluttered all about me, lighting on my head and shoulders. Gently I caught two in my hands and carefully concealed them under my blanket. I now began to realize that they were mating, preparatory to nesting. It was an event which I had long hoped to witness, so I sat down and carefully watched their movements, amid the greatest tumult. I tried to understand their strange language and why they chattered in concert. In the course of the day the great on-moving mass passed by me, but the trees were still filled with them sitting in pairs in convenient crotches of the limbs, now and then gently fluttering their half spread wings and uttering to their mates those strange bell-like wooing notes which I had mistaken for the ringing of bells in the distance. On the third day after, this chattering ceased and all were busy carrying sticks with which they were building nests in the same crotches of the limbs they had occupied in pairs the day before. On the morning of the fourth day their nests were finished and eggs laid. The hen birds occupied the nests in the morning while the male birds went out into the surrounding country to feed, returning about 10 o'clock, taking the nest, while the hens went out to feed, returning about 3 o'clock P. M. Again changing nests, the males went out the second time to feed, returning at sundown. The same routine was pursued each day, until the young were hatched and nearly half grown, at which time all the parent birds left the breeding grounds about daylight. On the morning of the eleventh day after the eggs were laid, I found the nesting grounds strewn with egg shells, convincing me that the young were hatched.

In thirteen days more the parent birds left their young to shift for themselves, flying to the east about sixty miles, where they again nested. The female lays but one egg during the same nesting. Both sexes secrete in their crops milk or curd, with which they feed their young, until they are nearly ready to fly, when they stuff them with mast and such other raw material as they themselves eat, until their crops exceed their bodies in size, giving to them an appearance of two birds with one head. Within two days after the stuffing they become a mass of fat (a squab). At this period the parent birds drive them from their nests to take care of themselves, while they fly off within a day or two, sometimes hundreds of miles, and again nest. It has been well established that these birds look after and take care of all orphan squabs whose parents have been killed or are missing. These birds are long lived, having been known to live twenty-five years while caged. When food is abundant they nest each month in the year. Their principal food is the mast of the forest, except when curd is being secreted in their crops, at which time they denude the country of snails and worms for miles around the nesting grounds. Because they nest in such immense bodies, they are frequently compelled to fly one hundred miles for food.

During my early life I learned that these birds in spring and fall were seen in their migrations from the Atlantic to Ki-tchi-se-be (the Mississippi river). This knowledge, together with my personal observation of their countless numbers, led me to believe they were almost as inexhaustible as the great ocean itself.

Of course, I had witnessed the passing away of the deer, buffalo and elk, but I looked upon them as local in their habits, while these birds spanned the continent, frequently nesting beyond the reach of cruel man. Between 1840 and 1880 I visited in the states of Tennessee, Ohio, Indiana and Michigan.

Many breeding places were from twenty to thirty miles long and from three to five miles wide, every tree in its limits being spotted with nests. Yet notwithstanding their countless numbers, great endurance and long life, they have almost entirely disappeared from our forests. We strain our eyes in spring time and autumn, in vain, to catch a glimpse of these passing pilgrims. White men tell us they have moved in a body to the Rocky mountain region, where they are as plenty as they were here, but when we ask red men about them, who are familiar with that region, they "we-we-bi-kwen" (shake their heads) in disbelief. A pigeon nesting was always a great source of revenue to our people. Whole tribes would wigwam in the breeding places. We seldom killed the old birds, but made great preparations to secure their young, out of which the squaws made "bi-mi-de" (squab butter) claimed by them to be better than "cow butter."

They also smoked and dried them by thousands for future use. Yet under our practice of securing them they continued to increase. White men commenced netting them for shipping to market between 1830 and 1840. These men were known as professional pigeons, from the fact that they banded themselves together, so as to keep in touch with these great moving bodies. In this way they managed to keep almost continually on the borders of their breeding places. As they were always prepared with trained stool pigeons and flyers which they carried with them, they were enabled to call down the passing flocks and secure as many by net as they wished to pack in ice and ship to market. In 1848 there were shipped over one hundred tons of these birds from western New York and from that time to 1878 the wholesale slaughter continued to increase and in that year there must have been shipped to market over five hundred tons of these birds. Think of it! During that time hunters from all parts of the country were killing them without number; demoralizing them in their breeding places without mercy. A great cry has gone up at the north because the robins which breed in the northern states are killed as game birds in the south and no law to protect them. They, too, will become extinct like the pigeons, unless stringent laws are passed to protect them.

These traveling experts above referred to finally learned that the pigeons, while nesting, were frantic for salt, so they frequently made, near the nesting what they called salted mud beds, to which the pigeons flocked by the millions. In April, 1876, I was invited to see a net sprung over one of these death pits. It was near Petoskey, Michigan. I think I am correct in saying that the birds piled upon each other at least three feet deep. When the net was sprung, it appeared that nearly all escaped, but when killed and counted there were over three hundred dozen, all nesting birds. When squabs in a nesting become fit for market, these experts prepared with climbers would get into some convenient place in a tree top loaded with nests and with long poles punch out the young, which would fall with a thud like lead, to the ground. In May, 1880, I visited the last nesting place of any size known in the United States. It was in Benzie County, Michigan, on Plat River. There were on these grounds many large white birch trees filled with nests; these trees have manifold bark, which, when old hangs in shreds like rags, along the trunks and limbs. This bark will burn like paper soaked in oil; here for the first time I saw with shame and pity, a new mode for robbing these birds' nests, which I looked upon as being devilish. These outlaws to all moral sense would touch a lighted match to the bark of the trees, when, with a flash more like an explosion, the blast would reach every limb of the tree and while the affrighted young birds would leap simultaneously to the ground, the parent birds would rise high in air amid flame and smoke. I noticed

that some of the squabs were so fat and clumsy they would burst open on striking the ground. Several thousand were obtained during the day by this cruel process.

That night I stayed with an old man on the highlands just north of the nesting. In the course of the evening I explained to him the cruelty that was being shown to the young birds in the nesting. He listened to me in utter astonishment and said "My God, is it possible!" Remaining silent a few moments with bowed head, he looked up and said "See here, old Ingun; you go out with me in the morning and I'll show you a way to catch pigeons that will please any red man and the birds too." Early the next morning I followed him a few rods from his hut, where he showed me an open pole pen about four feet high, which he called his bait bed. Into this he scattered a bucket of wheat. We then sat in ambush so as to see through between the poles into the pen. Soon the pigeons began to pour into the pen and gorge themselves. While I was watching and admiring them, all at once, to my surprise they began fluttering and falling on their sides and backs and kicking and quivering like a lot of cats with paper tied over their feet. He jumped into the pen saying "Come on, you red skin!" I was right on hand by his side. A few birds flew out of the pen apparently crippled, but we caught and caged about one hundred live birds. After my excitement was over I sat down on one of the cages and thought in my heart "Certainly Pokagon is dreaming, or this long haired white man is a witch." I finally said "Look here old fellow, tell me how you did that." He gazed at me, holding his long white beard in one hand and saying with one eye half shut and a sly wink with the other "That wheat was soaked over night in whisky." His answer fell like lead upon my heart. We had talked temperance together the night before and the old man wept as I told him how my people had fallen by the intoxicating cup of the white man, like leaves before the blast of autumn. In silence I left the place, saying in my heart "Is it possible? Is there some of the white race in league with Maw-tchi-manito (the Devil) to deal out Ish-kot-i-wa-be (whiskey) to even the animal creation?"

I have read recently in some of our game sporting journals: "A war-whoop has been sounded against some of our western Indians for killing game in the mountain region." Now if these red men are guilty of a moral wrong which subjects them to punishment, I would most prayerfully ask in the name of Him who suffers not a sparrow to fall unnoticed, What must be the nature of the crime and degree of punishment awaiting our white neighbors who have so wantonly butchered and driven from our forests these wild pigeons, the most beautiful flowers of the animal creation of North America?

In closing this article I wish to say a few words relative to the knowledge of things about them that these birds seem to possess. In the spring of 1866, there were scattered throughout northern Indiana and southern Michigan vast numbers of these birds. On April 10th, in the morning, they commenced moving in small flocks in diverging lines toward the northwest part of Van Buren county, Michigan. For two days they continued to pour into that vicinity from all directions, commencing at once to build their nests. I talked with an old trapper who lived on the breeding grounds, and he assured me the first pigeons he had seen that season were on the day they commenced nesting and that he had lived there fifteen years and never knew them to nest there before.

From the above instance and many more I could mention, it is established in my mind beyond a reasonable doubt, that these birds, as well as many other animals, have communicated to them by some means unknown to us, a

knowledge of distant places and of one another when separated and that they act on such knowledge with just as much certainty as if it were conveyed to them by ear or eye. Hence we conclude it is possible that the Great Spirit, in his wisdom, has provided them a means to receive electric communications from distant places and with one another.

The buffaloes have gone, the pigeons are extinct and other game, once so abundant, is rapidly disappearing and the Indians themselves are a disappearing race, rapidly journeying to their "happy hunting ground." If Mr. Engle is right, and he must be, for he speaks from observation and many years of experience and intimate acquaintance with them, the often-heard saying that "the only good Indians are dead Indians," is a base slander of a sadly maligned and misunderstood people. While there were bad Indians, as there are bad white men, they were by no means all bad. Among them, as among the Caucasian race, the good, no doubt, was predominant.

## CHAPTER II

### FOREIGN AND AMERICAN GOVERNMENT

FRENCH PERIOD (1634-1764)—ENGLISH PERIOD (1760-1796)—  
TERRITORIAL (AMERICAN) PERIOD—MICHIGAN AS A STATE—  
POPULATION OF THE STATE (1810-1910)—POPULATION OF THE  
COUNTY (1840-1910)—PROPERTY VALUATION OF STATE AND  
COUNTY (1851-1911).

Any history of the county of Van Buren would be incomplete without an historical sketch in the outline of the early history of the great state of which it forms so important a constituent part.

Michigan, the twenty-sixth state of the Union, became a full fledged commonwealth by an act of congress, approved January 20, 1837.

#### FRENCH PERIOD (1634-1764)

Like many other historical occurrences not absolutely authentic, it is alleged that the first white man who ever set foot within the present boundaries of the state was Jean Nicolet, who was in the service of Governor Champlain, and that he first landed at the site of the city of Sault Ste. Marie, at which place he arrived in the summer of 1634. After remaining there for a short time he descended the strait and made a short stop at Michilimackinac, the Moche-ne-mok-e-nung of the Indians, and which is now known as Mackinac or, as it is sometimes written, Mackinaw.

Following Nicolet were the two Jesuit missionaries, Rambault and Jougues, who arrived at the Sault seven years later, in 1641. They found a large assembly of Indians there who received them in a very friendly manner and desired that they should remain among them, but their stay was brief and they soon returned to eastern missionary points.

In 1660 Pere Menard undertook to form a mission on the shores of Lake Superior and in October of that year he reached the head of Keweenaw bay, where he spent the winter among the Indians and in the spring he resumed his travels. He was accompanied by an Indian guide, but was either lost or murdered, as nothing further was ever heard of him.

Five years afterward a mission was established and a chapel erected by Pere Claude Allouez, at La Pointe, the first house of worship ever built west of Lake Huron.

The second mission was founded at the Sault Ste. Marie, in 1668 by Pere Marquette, whose name is identified with Michigan history and is perpetuated in one of the great railways that have so largely aided in developing the marvelous resources of the state. A year later, Marquette was joined at the Sault by Pere Dablon and they speedily established themselves in a fort constructed of cedar pickets, enclosing both the chapel and a residence for their personal occupancy, as well as a space for the growing of grain and vegetables—probably the first attempt at agriculture by white men within the boundaries of the state. In the fall of the same year that Marquette assumed charge of the La Pointe mission Allouez went to Green Bay and Dablon remained at the Sault.

Since the time of the founding of these missions, the Sault has been inhabited by Europeans and Americans and is the oldest settlement in Michigan.

Special messengers were sent out among the tribes, in the spring of 1671, for the purpose of calling a great council of the Indians at the Sault. Fourteen tribes sent representatives to this council to meet the French officers, who, with all due formality and ceremony, took possession of the country. Pere Allouez raised the cross and lilies of France and delivered an address on the occasion representing his King, Louis XIV, as "the chief of chiefs having no equal in the world."

During the same year Marquette's mission at La Pointe was practically abandoned and himself accompanied a band of Hurons to the straits of Mackinac, where he founded the mission of St. Ignatius (now St. Ignace). Father Marquette was buried near this mission which he founded nearly two hundred and fifty years ago. A monument to his memory is erected there, but his mortal remains have been deposited at the Marquette college, Milwaukee.

For the next nine years, 1671 to 1680, Pere Druilletes was the leading spirit at the Sault. Several times his chapel was destroyed by fire, but the aged missionary was full of energy and continued his work until his advancing years and increasing infirmities compelled him to abandon it. He returned to Quebec, where he died in 1680.

The first settlements made in this new land were largely under the auspices of companies organized for the purpose of engaging in the fur trade and for years there was little development of the country. On the 7th day of August, 1679, the schooner, "Griffin" set sail for the first voyage ever made on any of the great lakes that wash the shores of the Peninsular state. This vessel was

commanded by Chevalier La Salle (who was accompanied by Father Hennepin, the missionary) and manned by a crew of fur traders. They were entirely ignorant of the waters over which they sailed and felt their way with great caution, finally reaching the mouth of the Detroit river on the 10th of August, and sailing northerly passed the Indian village of Teuchsagrondie, now the site of the great city of Detroit. This place had been previously visited by the French missionaries and traders but no attempt had been made to form a settlement. They continued their voyage through Lake St. Clair and the St. Clair river, into Lake Huron, where they experienced a severe storm, but finally succeeded in reaching the harbor of St. Ignace.

Soon afterward La Salle, resuming his voyage, crossed Lake Michigan and cast anchor in Green Bay, where the "Griffin" was loaded with furs and sailed for Niagara, under orders to return to the mouth of the St. Joseph river as soon as possible, but she never reached her destination. A terrible storm swept over the lake almost immediately after her departure and it is altogether probable that she found a watery grave at the time.

La Salle, with a few men, followed the coast of Lake Michigan to the mouth of the river, now the site of the city of St. Joseph, where he built a rude fort and shortly afterward was joined by a party from Mackinac under Tonty, La Salle's trusted agent. Losing hope of the return of the "Griffin" with the sorely needed supplies, the near approach of winter made further delay dangerous and they began the ascent of the St. Joseph river. Near the present site of the city of South Bend, Indiana, they made a portage and continued their explorations, going down the Illinois river to the point where they built Fort Creve Coeur.

The first European settlement at Detroit was founded by Antoine de la Mothe Cadillac on the 24th day of July, 1701. He brought with him a company of fifty soldiers and fifty traders and artisans, and proceeded at once to the construction of a fort which he named Fort Ponchartrain; around the fort were soon erected log houses thatched with grass in which the settlers found shelter and a home. Cadillac remained in charge of the new settlement until 1710. The colony continued to exist, but did not increase very much during the period of French control.

In the meantime the rival claims of the French and English, in this valley of the Ohio and elsewhere, led to disputes which eventually culminated in a war, during which the French lost control of Forts Niagara, Ticonderoga and Crown Point. Finally the fall of Quebec decided the contest and all the vast territory was abandoned to English rule and New France became a memory.

The most prominent feature of the French rule of the territory

was the neglect to develop the resources of the country, agricultural and otherwise. Very little land was cleared, few permanent improvements were made and the settlements were of little importance. The fur trade was the chief occupation of the people and this was not calculated to build up and sustain thriving communities. Hence, at the close of the French and Indian war, the little trading posts of Sault Ste Marie, Michilimackinac and Detroit were the meager results of a hundred years of French colonization and control of the great state of Michigan that was destined soon to be.

#### ENGLISH PERIOD (1760 TO 1796)

Shortly after the surrender of the territory to the British Major Robert Rogers took possession of the post at Detroit, which at that time contained an estimated population of about 2,500 inhabitants. The posts of Michilimackinac, Sault Ste. Marie and St. Joseph were not occupied by the English until the fall of 1761.

Although the French had abandoned the territory and their chief military leaders had returned to France, the English were not destined long to remain in peaceful occupation of their new possessions. Less than three years of intercourse with the Indian tribes aroused intense hostility against the new occupants of the country. Many of the French inhabitants remained and, as they had little love for the English, they made common cause with the red men, and with them hoped for a speedy downfall of British domination.

A conspiracy was formed for the purpose of attempting the overthrow of English rule. An able leader was found in the person of Pontiac, an Ottawa chief. He was well fitted for the daring enterprise; an eloquent orator, a brave and crafty warrior who had won first place among the Indians of his day, and, what was more than all the rest, he was a real military genius, thoughtful and far seeing and able both to originate and manage complicated plans. In this latter respect, he was probably the greatest chief of his race ever produced. His plan was to simultaneously attack all the English posts west of the Alleghany mountains and to accomplish the massacre of all the garrisons at a single stroke, hoping thus to rid the country of a people whom they hated and whom they regarded as intruders in the valleys of the west which had, from time immemorial, been the possession of the Indians themselves. There were at this time twelve posts scattered from Niagara to Chicago, three of which, Detroit, Michilimackinac and St. Joseph, were within the boundaries of the present state of Michigan. Pontiac sent his ambassadors throughout the west and south and all the various tribes, from the Ottawa to the lower



Mississippi, were visited, and all the Algonquins, most of the Wyandottes and some of the southern tribes were enlisted in the enterprise.

A great council was held at a point on the River Ecorse, near Detroit, on the 27th day of April, 1763, at which arrangements were made for an attack on the posts in May.

The attack on Detroit was led by Pontiac in person. The crafty chief sought an interview with Major Gladwin, commander of the post, on the 7th day of May and was admitted, accompanied by a band of some sixty warriors, who, to all appearances were unarmed, their weapons being carefully concealed beneath their blankets. The plan was for Pontiac to make an address to the commander of the fort and the presentation of a string of wampun was to be the signal for the beginning of the massacre. This plan would, without doubt, have been successfully carried out, had it not been revealed to Major Gladwin by an Ojibwa maiden the evening previous to the intended attack, and he was prepared for it. When the red men were admitted to the fort they found the garrison under arms and ready to meet any hostile demonstration that might be attempted. Being convinced that the commander had been made aware of his plans, Pontiac was at a loss what course to pursue, or what to say and made his speech very brief. Major Gladwin told the Indians that the English would be their friends as long as they merited it, but that any hostile act would meet with instant vengeance. Two days later Pontiac sought to gain an entrance with a greater number of warriors, but did not succeed. The Indians then set up a war-whoop and murdered a number of the English who were outside the fort.

The garrison were expecting reinforcements and on the 30th of May a sentinel reported that a fleet of boats was approaching, but the hopes of the garrison for assistance and supplies were not to be realized, for the Indians had learned of the approach of the fleet, consisting of twenty-three batteaux, and had captured all the supplies and massacred all but one officer and thirty men who escaped in a boat and crossed the lake to Sandusky bay. The siege lasted from May until late in October, when scarcity of food in the camp of the Indians compelled them to withdraw. In anticipation of a possible renewal of hostilities on the part of the Indians, the commandant laid in a good supply of provisions, but the savages made no further demonstration, and in the spring the negotiations of Sir William Johnson and the opportune arrival of General Bradstreet induced them to refrain from further hostilities.

Fort St. Joseph, which was garrisoned by Ensign Schlosser and fourteen men, was captured on the 25th of May, 1763, by a band

of Pottawattamies, who gained admission through pretended friendship and massacred all the little band except the commander and three men, who were afterward taken to Detroit and exchanged.

Fort Michilimackinac, which was situated on the south side of the strait a short distance southwest of the present site of Mackinaw City, was garrisoned by a force of nearly a hundred soldiers under the command of Major Etherington, who had full and ample warning of the hostile intentions of the Indians, but, disbelieving the reports, carelessly and foolishly neglected to take any precaution against possible attack, and on the second day of June, 1763, the Indians engaged in a game of ball just outside the gates of the fort, the officers and soldiers being interested spectators of the sport. About noon the ball was thrown into the fort and the red assassins rushed after it through the open gate. The Indians were furnished with tomahawks by the squaws who stood near the gate with the weapons concealed within their blankets. The garrison was taken completely by surprise and had little or no opportunity for defense. Lieutenant Jamette and seventy men were killed. Major Etherington and twenty-six men were taken prisoners and subsequently released.

After burning the fort and appropriating all the supplies therein, the savages for greater security from deserved retribution encamped on Mackinac Island.

As a result of this Indian uprising, eight of the twelve English posts were captured, hundreds of Englishmen were slain and a reign of terror prevailed throughout the valleys of the west. But as far as accomplishing the real object of the conspiracy, the removal of the English from the interior of the country, the scheme of the great red chieftain was a complete failure. In the summer of 1764, General Bradstreet arrived at Detroit with an army of three thousand men. The Indians, realizing that it was useless for them to contend against so great a force, laid down their arms and thus the war was ended. From this time forth, the settlements grew slowly during the remainder of the English occupation. Being so far removed from the scenes of conflict, the few settlers in this then far west had no occasion or opportunity to participate in the War of Independence, and although the treaty of peace between the colonies and the mother country, concluded at Paris in 1783, provided for the surrender of the English posts to the United States, it was not until July, 1796, that Detroit and Michilimackinac were given over into the possession of the new republic and Michigan for the first time became an American possession.

## TERRITORIAL (AMERICAN) PERIOD

Although the ordinance creating the Northwest territory was passed by congress in 1787, the retention of the Michigan posts by the English until 1796 made the latter date the practical beginning of the American territorial period.

The anti-slavery clause contained in this ordinance was at first rejected by the committee having it in charge, but was subsequently accepted, although a majority of the committee were from the then slave states. Except the Declaration of Independence, it was, at the date of its adoption, the most important declaration of fundamental law ever adopted by a free people. It provided for the government of the vast territory lying between the Ohio river and Lake Superior, and was framed with such wisdom that a modern jurist, Judge Cooley of the Michigan Supreme court, has said of it: "No charter has so completely withstood the tests of time and experience. It was not a temporary adaptation to a particular emergency, but its principles were for all time and worthy of acceptance under all circumstances."

The ordinance was a compact between the original states and the people and states of the territory, and it provides that these articles shall forever remain unalterable, except by common consent. This ordinance is the second of the four great and immortal documents that insure to the American people their religious and political freedom, viz: The Declaration of Independence, the Ordinance of 1787, the Constitution of the United States and the Proclamation of Emancipation.

Of these four documents, the ordinance is less generally known among the people at large than either of the others, although it might as well be instilled into the minds of the rising generation as the Declaration itself.

The important provisions of the ordinance were embodied in the six following articles:

Art. I. No person demeaning himself in a peaceable and orderly manner, shall ever be molested on account of his mode of worship or religious sentiments, in the said territory.

Art. II. The inhabitants of said territory shall always be entitled to the benefits of the writ of habeas corpus and of the trial by jury; of a proportionate representation of the people in the legislature, and of judicial proceedings according to the course of the common law. All persons shall be bailable unless for capital offenses, where the proof shall be evident or the presumption great. All fines shall be moderate, and no cruel or unusual punishments shall be inflicted. No man shall be deprived of liberty or property, but by the judgment of his peers or the law of the land, and should the public exigencies make it necessary for the common preservation to take any person's property, or to demand his particular services, full compensa-

tion shall be made for the same. And in the just preservation of rights and property, it is understood and declared that no law ought ever to be made, or have force in the said territory, that shall in any manner whatever, interfere with or affect private contracts or engagements, bona fide and without fraud previously formed.

Art. III. Religion, morality and knowledge being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged. The utmost good faith shall always be observed towards the Indians; their lands and property shall never be taken from them without their consent and in their property, rights and liberty, they shall never be invaded or disturbed, unless in just and lawful wars authorized by congress; but laws founded in justice and humanity, shall, from time to time, be made for preventing wrongs being done to them and for preserving peace and friendship with them.

Art. IV. The said territory and the states that may be formed therein shall forever remain a part of this confederacy of the United States of America, subject to the articles of confederation and to such alterations therein as shall be constitutionally made, and to all the acts and ordinances of the United States in congress assembled, conformable thereto. The inhabitants and settlers in the said territory shall be subject to pay a part of the federal debts contracted or to be contracted, and a proportional part of the expenses of government, to be apportioned among them by congress according to the same common rule and measure by which apportionments thereof shall be made on other states, and the taxes for paying their proportion shall be laid and levied by the authority and direction of the legislatures of the district or districts, or new states, as in the original states, within the time agreed upon by the United States in congress assembled. The legislatures of those districts or new states shall never interfere with the primary disposal of the soil by the United States in congress assembled, nor with any regulations congress may find necessary for securing the title in such soil to the bona fide purchasers. No tax shall be imposed on lands the property of the United States, and in no case shall non-resident proprietors be taxed higher than residents. The navigable waters leading into the Mississippi and St. Lawrence, and the carrying places between the same, shall be common highways and forever free, as well to the inhabitants of the said territory as to the citizens of the United States and those of any other state that may be admitted into the confederacy, without any tax, impost or duty therefor.

Art. V. There shall be formed in the said territory not less than three nor more than five states and the boundaries of the said states, as soon as Virginia shall alter her act of cession and consent to the same,\* shall become fixed and established as follows, to-wit: The western state in the said territory shall be bounded by the Mississippi, Ohio and Wabash rivers, a direct line drawn from the Wabash and Post St. Vincent's due north to the territorial line between the United States and Canada and, by the said territorial line, to the Lake of the Woods and Mississippi. The middle states shall be bounded by the said direct line, the Wabash from Post St. Vincent's

\* In the Virginia act of cession of December, 1783, the cession was made on condition that the territory so ceded should be laid out and formed into states, containing suitable extent of territory, not less than one hundred nor more than one hundred and fifty miles square, or as near thereto as circumstances would permit. Five years later, in December, 1788, Virginia altered her act of cession and consented to the boundaries of the new states as fixed in the ordinance of 1787.

to the Ohio, by the Ohio, by a direct line, drawn due north from the mouth of the Great Miami to the said territorial line, and by the said territorial line. The eastern state shall be bounded by the last mentioned direct line, the Ohio, Pennsylvania and the said territorial line: Provided, however, and it is further understood and declared, that the boundaries of these three states shall be subject, so far to be altered that, if congress shall hereafter find it expedient, they shall have authority to form one or two states in that part of said territory which lies north of an east and west line drawn through the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan. And whenever any of the said states shall have sixty thousand free inhabitants therein, such state shall be admitted, by its delegates, into the congress of the United States, on an equal footing with the original states in all respects whatever, and shall be at liberty to form a permanent constitution and state government: Provided, the constitution and government so to be formed shall be republican and in conformity to the principles contained in these articles; and, so far as it can be consistent with the general interest of the confederacy, such admission shall be allowed at an earlier period, and when there may be a less number of free inhabitants in the state than sixty thousand.

Art. VI. There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in the said territory, otherwise than in the punishment of crimes, whereof the party shall have been duly convicted: Provided, always, that any person escaping into the same, from whom labor or service is lawfully claimed in any one of the original states, such fugitive may be lawfully reclaimed and conveyed to the person claiming his or her labor or service as aforesaid.

The congress that adopted the foregoing ordinance was the old continental congress, which, under the articles of confederation, had carried the new nation through the War of the Revolution. However, as soon as the colonies had won the contest with the mother country and had secured their independence, it was perceived that the loosely drawn articles of confederation were not sufficient to hold the several colonies together under one government, and steps were taken by the people of the several states "to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic tranquility, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare and secure the blessings of liberty." At the very time when the Ordinance of 1787 was adopted, the constitutional convention which would "secure a more perfect union" was in session. The ordinance and the constitution each contains the same patriotic conditions and both of the great documents were the product of practically the same wise Fathers, who laid so broad and deep the foundations of the new republic that it has ever since been able to successfully resist all assaults from without, as well as to survive all domestic contention and discord.

By the adoption of the Ordinance of 1787, at the very beginning of its political existence, this vast region was pledged to education, freedom and equal rights for all.

In the fall of 1787 congress appointed General Arthur St. Clair governor of the Northwest territory, but owing to the failure of

the British to surrender the posts in this section until 1796 the first pages of territorial history have only slight connection with Michigan affairs.

Indiana territory was formed by act of congress in 1800, and two years later the lower peninsula of the present state of Michigan was made a part of the new territory and so remained until 1805. The most important event that occurred in the history of Michigan during the period while it was attached to Indiana territory, was an act of congress enacted in 1804, providing for the disposal of public lands within the territory, by which section sixteen, in each township, was reserved for the use of schools, and one entire township in each of the districts afterwards forming the states of Michigan, Indiana and Illinois, was to be located for the benefit of a seminary of learning. This act was the germ of the primary school fund in the state of Michigan and was the original source from which sprang the great university of the state, which has become one of the world's foremost educational institutions.

Several different plans were evolved for the division of this great Northwest territory into states, besides the Virginia plan, in the original deed of cession, and the plan embodied in the Ordinance of 1787. The first congressional plan contemplated the formation of seventeen individual states, eight states to be between the Mississippi and a line due north from the Falls of the Ohio, at Louisville, eight more to be between the Ohio Falls line and a parallel line running north from the western side of the mouth of the Kanawha river. On the extreme east was to be the seventeenth state. This plan did not meet with favorable consideration.

What is called the Jeffersonian plan, because Thomas Jefferson was one of its chief originators, proposed a division into ten states. This plan is of interest chiefly for the names by which the proposed states were to have been called. Some of these names were Latin, some were Greek and some were of Indian derivation. The proposed states were to be about two degrees in width, north and south, and bounded on the east and west, as nearly as practicable, by the north and south lines of the first congressional plan, above noted.

That part of the territory north of the forty-fifth parallel, covering the then heavily timbered regions of northern Michigan, Wisconsin and Minnesota, was to be called Sylvania. The remainder of the present state of Michigan was to be called Chersonesus, a Greek word signifying peninsula. South of Sylvania and covering a part of the present state of Wisconsin was to be the state of Michigania. South of Michigania and extending to

the forty-first parallel was to be the state of Assenisipia, an Indian word signifying Rock river. East of Assenisipia and extending north to the shore of Lake Erie, was to be the state of Mesopotamia. South of Assenisipia, to the 39th parallel, was to be the state of Illinoia. To the east of Illinoia was to be the state of Saratoga, and east of Saratoga, bounded by the Ohio river, the west line of Pennsylvania and the eastern part of the south shore of Lake Erie, was to be the state of Washington. South of Illinoia and Saratoga and lying along the Ohio river, was to be a state called Polypotamia. East of Polypotamia was to be the tenth state called Pelisipi, from a Cherokee word sometimes given to the Ohio river. While all these proposed state lines have disappeared and most of the proposed names are recalled only as matters of curiosity, it will be noticed that the name of the Father of his country has since been conferred on the extreme northwest state of the Union lying on the border of that greatest of oceans, which, at that date, no man had ever dreamed would one day become the western boundary of the United States and that even that ocean itself would not stop the westward march of the American people, but that they would cross to the islands of the sea and still farther onward, until the far west should have become also the far east and American civilization should have practically encircled the earth and that the "sun should never set" upon the flag of the free.

Two of the other proposed names, Illinoia and Michigania, have been preserved with only slight changes in orthography. Had the proposed plan been adopted Van Buren county would now be located, not in the state of Michigan, but in the state of Chersoneusus.

On the eleventh of January, 1805, congress passed an act for the organization of Michigan territory, which was to embrace all that portion of Indiana territory lying north of a line drawn east from the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan until it intersected Lake Erie, and lying east of a line drawn from the same southerly bend through the middle of Lake Michigan to its northern extremity and thence due north to the northern boundary of the United States. General William Hull was appointed governor of the newly organized territory and arrived at Detroit in the month of July, 1805. A few weeks previous to his arrival the town had been destroyed by fire and he found the inhabitants encamped in the fields with a scanty supply of food and little shelter. But they were an indomitable people, not discouraged by their misfortune, and they immediately began to rebuild the town, which was made the capital of the new territory. Detroit, which at the last census (1910) contained a population of 465,766

souls, was then a hamlet of not to exceed 4,000 inhabitants, and at that time there appeared to be little inducement for immigration into the new territory, the great natural resources of which were almost wholly unknown.

About two years after Governor Hull had assumed control of the territory, signs of Indian troubles became manifest. Instigated by British fur traders, a plan similar to that of Pontiac was devised, but was not then ready to be put into execution, although well-founded rumors of ill-feeling, discontent and evil designs came to the governor and the people from time to time, causing much anxiety and greatly retarding the settlement of the territory. Tecumseh and his brother, commonly called the Prophet, being the Indian leaders. Such was the condition of territorial affairs when the impressment of American seamen and other British insults brought on a second conflict with Great Britain.

Encouraged by the gathering war clouds, the Indians, long before the beginning of actual hostilities, assembled in great numbers on the banks of the Wabash river, but, fortunately, not only for Indiana, but for Michigan and the entire northwest, General William Henry Harrison, afterward president of the United States, was the governor of that territory. Governor Harrison was an able, brave and energetic officer and took no chances and lost no time in instituting vigorous measures for the protection of the people against the redskins. With an army of about nine hundred men, he marched to the camp of the Indians called Prophet's Town. There he was met by a delegation of chiefs who professed to be greatly surprised at the visit, and assured the general that their intentions were peaceful and that they had no thought of fighting and asked for a conference on the morrow. The general replied that he would be glad to give them an opportunity to show their peaceful intentions and would grant them the desired council. But, being somewhat versed in the treacherous nature of the savages, on going into camp for the night, every precaution was taken to prevent a surprise in case the redskins should attack the camp. As the general had anticipated, the savages had only requested a council for the purpose of throwing the command off its guard and gaining an easy victory by means of a night attack. About four o'clock in the morning the Indians assaulted the camp, but, contrary to their expectations, they found the soldiers fully prepared for them. The engagement that followed is known in history as the battle of Tippecanoe and resulted in the complete rout of the Indians. This battle played no small part in elevating General Harrison to the presidency. There are yet surviving a considerable number of people who well remember the refrain of a campaign song of 1840 which ran as follows: "Tippecanoe and



Tyler too," John Tyler being General Harrison's running mate in the presidential campaign of 1840, known as the "hard-cider campaign."

Governor Hull, of the Michigan territory, was given command of a military force for the protection of the frontier and the invasion of Canada, should war ensue. With an army of about fifteen hundred men, he started from Dayton, Ohio, and after a tedious march of three weeks, reached Detroit on the sixth day of July, 1812. War had been declared on the 18th day of June, but Governor Hull did not receive notice of that fact until the second day of July.

At that time, Fort Mackinac was garrisoned by a little band of fifty-seven men, under the command of Lieutenant Porter Hanks. The British commandant on St. Joseph's island learned of the declaration of war about the middle of July and immediately started for Mackinac with a force of about one thousand men, with which force he landed and took up a commanding position above the fort. Being at the mercy of the foe with his little garrison, Lieutenant Hanks was obliged to surrender and, with his men, was paroled and sent to Detroit. Thus, on the 17th day of July, 1812, the post at Mackinac again passed under English control.

Orders were given to General Hull to cross the Detroit river, take possession of Canada and dislodge the British at Fort Malden, which was garrisoned by only a small force and probably would have been easily captured had General Hull moved forward in the same vigorous manner as did General Harrison at the battle of Tippecanoe. But Commander Hull was not a man of the same caliber and mental vigor as General Harrison, and "under pretext that heavy artillery was necessary to an attack on the fort at Malden, the army lay inactive at Sandwich from the 12th of July to the 8th of August." During this interval, while Hull was "marking time" at Sandwich, General Brock moved toward Fort Malden with a considerable military force. On the ninth day of August, General Hull recrossed the river, entered the fort at Detroit and abandoned Canada. No man can say what different history might have been written if Hull had pushed forward and taken possession of Malden, as he was ordered to do. It is possible, perhaps probable, that in that event Canada might have become a constituent part of the United States, instead of being, as it is, a foreign country on our northern border, identical in interest with her great southern neighbor and separated from this nation only by an imaginary line.

The next day after his arrival at Malden General Brock moved up to Sandwich and summoned General Hull to surrender. This summons being refused, a cannonade was at once opened on the

American fort and the fire was returned, little damage being done to either side.

On the morning of the 16th day of July General Brock crossed the river and repeated his demand for the surrender of the post. The English commander had a force of about thirteen hundred men, and Hull had not less than a thousand. Without holding any council of war or in any way consulting with his officers, and without waiting to make any stipulation as to terms, General Hull at once hoisted a white flag and sent word to the English general that he would surrender the fort. The American officers were incensed beyond measure at the cowardly action of their commander.

Hull was accused of treason, cowardice and criminal neglect of duty, and, although he was acquitted of the charge of treason, he was convicted of the second and third offenses and, by a court martial, was sentenced to be shot. This sentence was not carried into execution, as, in consideration of valuable service he had rendered the country in the War of the Revolution, he was pardoned by the president.

Hull's name was for many years held in contempt by the people of the country and was regarded a synonym of cowardice and poltroonery.

Let General Hull be counted null,  
And let him not be named,  
Upon the rolls of valiant souls,  
Of him we are ashamed.

was a quatrain that was familiar to every school boy in the early part of the nineteenth century.

With the surrender of Detroit, the territory of Michigan became for a time a British province. General Brock placed Colonel Proctor in command of both the fort and the territory. Proctor assumed the title of governor and proceeded to organize the civil government. He appointed Judge Woodward as his secretary. Woodward had considerable influence with Proctor and was of great service to the people, whose interests he was instrumental in protecting in a large degree.

In the fall and winter following Hull's surrender of Detroit, General Harrison organized an army and moved northward for the recapture of the frontier posts, sending General Winchester in advance to the Maumee river. A few days later General Winchester moved forward and encamped on the River Raisin, where on the 22d of January, 1813, he was attacked by the British and Indians under the command of Proctor. The American force was taken by surprise and compelled to surrender. During the night following the surrender, the savages butchered the wounded soldiers and defenseless inhabitants without mercy.

The great naval victory at Put-in-Bay, won by Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry, on the 10th day of September, 1813, by which the entire naval force of the British commander, Commodore Barclay, was captured, was a decisive stroke and paved the way for the recovery of Michigan territory and the entire northwest. This victory was the most complete in naval history up to that date, and the only naval battles comparable to it in after years are the victories of Admiral Dewey at Manila bay and the capture of the Spanish fleet by Admirals Schley and Sampson at Santiago, during the war with Spain.

The captured vessels were used by General Harrison for the transportation of his command across Lake Erie, preparatory to a vigorous Canadian campaign, but the British forces evacuated Malden and Detroit, Colonel Proctor making a speedy retreat. He was overtaken and defeated at Moravian town, Tecumseh, the great Indian leader, was killed, and Proctor fled. On the 29th of September, 1813, Detroit again passed into the possession of the Americans and Colonel Lewis Cass was placed in command, and on the 9th of October next he was appointed by President Madison as governor of the territory.

An attempt was made, in the summer of 1814, to regain possession of Mackinac island, which was still held by the British. Lieutenant Croghan was sent with a force to effect its capture, but he delayed his movements so long that the English commander was enabled to strengthen his position and to increase his force to such an extent that the expedition ended in an ignominious failure. It was not until the close of the war that the island came once more into the possession of the Americans, the post being evacuated in the spring of 1815 and being again occupied by a force of American soldiery.

At the beginning of the administration of Governor Cass, there was but a small population in the entire territory and that was confined to a few settlements on the eastern border. The entire interior of what was destined to be, in the not distant future, one of the great and most prosperous states of the Union, was practically an unknown wilderness, and, what was greatly to its disadvantage, it was regarded as being an almost impenetrable swamp and of little value, possessing no attraction for other than trappers and hunters. Some of the civil engineers sent out by the general government to make the survey of bounty lands for the soldiers were responsible, in a large degree, for reports that served to injure the territory and retard its settlement. Governor Cass took great pains to counteract these reports and to remove the erroneous impressions that had been created thereby. He made treaties with the Indians, dealt with them fairly and honorably,

secured cession of their lands to United States, and by his untiring efforts in behalf of much maligned territory, he won imperishable renown. After the necessary treaties had been concluded, the country was opened for settlement. The survey of public lands was begun in 1816, and after the lapse of two years the authorities began their sale. Farmers would not come in any considerable numbers until there was an opportunity to procure lands to which they could obtain a sure title, and, without tillers of the soil, there could be little growth or prosperity, but, with the settlement of the interior, which really began in 1818, the territory commenced to make a substantial growth.

The first steamboat that ever sailed on the great lakes, the "Walk-in-the-Water," arrived at Detroit in the summer of 1818, and from that time forth, westward bound settlers had less difficulty in coming to Michigan. The "Walk-in-the-Water" was wrecked three years afterward, but the "Superior" and other steamers soon took her place and steam navigation contributed in no slight degree to increasing prosperity of the growing territory.

Another pressing need was the matter of roads. Immigrants could not come in any considerable numbers to the new territory as long as the only method of finding their way through the forests was by trails or by roads cut out, but never worked, and which were often practically impassable. Roads around the west end of Lake Erie to Detroit, and from the latter place to Chicago, and other highways of importance, were constructed as soon as practicable through the energetic work of Governor Cass and his efficient secretary, Woodbridge. The opening of the Erie canal in 1825 was also an event of great importance to Michigan. Steamers and sailing craft rapidly increased in number and it is estimated that at least three hundred passengers a week were landed in Detroit during the fall of that year.

George G. Porter, of Pennsylvania, succeeded Cass as governor of the territory and Stevens T. Mason became his secretary. As Governor Porter was absent for a considerable portion of the time, his duties were performed by Secretary Mason. When Porter died in 1834, no change was made and Mason continued to perform the duties of governor during the remainder of the territorial period. In the meantime, the population of the territory had reached and passed the number (60,000) prescribed in the Ordinance of 1787, and the people desired admission into the Union.

It was about this time that a serious dispute arose in regard to the boundary line between Michigan and the state of Ohio, which had been admitted in 1802 with an indefinite northern boundary. The act of 1805, by which the territory of Michigan was organ-

ized, fixed the southern boundary of the territory at a line running due east from the southern bend of Lake Michigan. This line included Toledo and a considerable strip of land to which Ohio laid claim, and of which, by proclamation of Governor Lucas issued in 1835, the Ohio authorities assumed control, the legislature of that state passing an act for its organization as the county of Lucas. This action was resented by the Michigan authorities and Acting Governor Mason called out the militia and proceeded to Toledo for the avowed purpose of preventing the Ohio officials from taking possession and exercising control over the disputed strip. Although some shots were fired it was a bloodless war, as nobody was injured.

Congress, anxious for a peaceable solution of the matter, offered Michigan all that portion of the present state lying north of the straits known as the Upper Peninsula, on condition that she should relinquish all claim to the land claimed by Ohio. This compromise was reluctantly accepted by the Michigan authorities, practically nothing being known of the resources of the territory which she received in exchange for that which she abandoned to the state of Ohio. Subsequent events, however, proved that it was a most valuable exchange, the mineral resources of the Upper Peninsula, especially iron and copper, which were then entirely unknown, having added many millions of dollars to the value of the state.

The first state convention looking to the adoption of a constitution for the embryo state was held at Detroit in May, 1835. The document framed by the convention was submitted to a vote of the people and adopted on the first Monday of the following October, state officers being chosen at the same time. Stevens T. Mason was elected governor and Edward Mundy, lieutenant governor. Mason is distinguished in Michigan history by the title of the "boy governor," he being but nineteen years of age when he first assumed gubernatorial duties as acting executive of the territory, and but twenty-three years old when elected as the first governor of the new state that was soon to be. He was born in the state of Virginia in 1812 and died January 4, 1843, aged not quite thirty-one years.

The Michigan legislature met in November, 1835, and elected Lucius Lyon and John Norvell as United States senators. Everything was ready for her admission, but the dispute with the state of Ohio as to the southern boundary of the state prevented favorable congressional action at that time, and it was not until January 26, 1837, that congress acted favorably on the question and Michigan became the twenty-sixth state of the Union.

## MICHIGAN AS A STATE

Under the first constitution of Michigan, the governor and the lieutenant governor were elective. The other state officers—secretary of state, attorney general, auditor general, superintendent of public instruction and the judges of the supreme court—were to be appointed by the governor by and with the consent of the senate, except as to the superintendent of public instruction, whose appointment was to be ratified by both houses of the legislature, in joint session. A state treasurer was also provided for, who received his appointment from the legislature by a joint vote of the two houses. The governor also had the appointment of a prosecuting attorney for each county, subject to the approval of the senate.

Another peculiar provision of the constitution of 1835, deserving of especial notice, was that in regard to internal improvements, which was as follows: "Internal improvements shall be encouraged by the government of this state and it shall be the duty of the legislature, as soon as may be, to make provision by law for ascertaining the proper objects of improvement in relation to roads, canals and navigable waters; and it shall also be their duty to provide by law for an equal, systematic, economical application of the funds which may be appropriated to these objects."

Governor Mason was in full sympathy with the proposed system of internal improvement by the state, and as his recommendation and with his approval the scheme was speedily put into execution. Arrangement was made for the issue of five million dollars of state bonds and the governor was given authority to negotiate the loan. Among the more important projected improvements were two lines of railway, the Michigan Central and the Michigan Southern. The former was projected to begin at Detroit, extend across the state and end at St. Joseph on the eastern shore of Lake Michigan. Of this project we shall have occasion to speak further in another chapter. The other line was projected to extend from Monroe to New Buffalo. After an unsuccessful experience of five years in the prosecution of these enterprises and others of lesser note, it became evident that it would be for the best interests of the state to dispose of these railroads, neither of which was completed, to private corporations. They were accordingly sold in 1846 for the sum of two and a half millions of dollars, which was very much less than the state had invested in them, but which was, doubtless, a very good sale for the interests of the people. Under the management of the purchasers the roads were soon completed, but some changes were made along the western portion of their routes.

The new state also had an unique and disastrous experience with its banking system which afterward came to be known as and called "wild-cat banking." Among the crude and ill-digested theories of that primitive day was the notion that banking, like farming, store-keeping and other ordinary business, should be free to all. When the state was admitted there was fifteen banks doing business within its borders, and, in the spring of 1837, the legislature passed a general banking law. This act provided that any ten or more freeholders might engage in the business of banking with a capital of not less than \$50,000, nor more than \$300,000. This law was loosely framed and without proper safeguards, and proved in practice to be utterly worthless. Among other things, it was provided that not less than thirty per cent of the entire capital should be paid in, in specie, before commencing business; that debts and bills issued should be secured by mortgages on real estate, etc. Banks were to be subject to examination and supervision by commissioners, but all these statutory provisions for safety were successfully evaded. Banks were started by irresponsible parties, mere adventurers, who were wholly destitute of either capital or credit. Whenever the banking commissioners started on their tours of investigation, bags of coin were secretly carried from one bank to another, so that the commissioners were constantly deceived. It is said that nails, with specie in the tops of the kegs were palmed off on the commissioners as full kegs of coin, but as this is not properly vouched for, it may not be true. At all events every possible ruse was made use of to make a showing of the legal amount of coin, and by means of the speedy and surreptitious transfer of specie from bank to bank, the same coin was made to do duty over and over again, and in the meantime these wild-cat institutions were putting into circulation a vast amount of utterly worthless currency.

The year 1837 is memorable as a time of great financial panic throughout the entire United States. In June of that year the Michigan legislature passed an act authorizing the suspension of specie payment until the middle of May of the following year, hoping thereby to relieve in some degree the financial stress that prevailed, not only in Michigan, but in the entire country. But as the wild-cat banking law remained unrepealed, banks continued to be organized and a constant stream of worthless currency continued to be issued, and was put into circulation as rapidly as possible. Banks were located anywhere and everywhere. One was found doing a flourishing business in an old saw mill, and it was humorously asserted that a hollow stump served as a vault. The bank of Singapore, located in the woods where now is the site of the flourishing village of Saugatuck, in

the county of Allegan which adjoins Van Buren county on the north, was a typical institution of the kind. The writer has a bill of that bank in his possession that was issued in 1837. By the close of the year 1839, most of these wild-cat banks had gone out of business, but more than a million dollars of worthless currency, which was a total loss to the people, had been put into circulation. In 1844 the banking law was declared to be unconstitutional, and that decision closed out the last of the "wild-cats."

One of the first steps of interest taken by Governor Mason, after the admission of Michigan into the Union, was the appointment of a superintendent of public instruction. Rev. John D. Pierce was selected for this important office. He was the founder of the Michigan primary school system, a system that is acknowledged to be second to that of no other one of the states of the Union.

Father Pierce, as he is affectionately termed, wished to place the primary school within the reach of every child of school age in the state, and also to establish a state university for the higher culture of the more advanced students. How well he succeeded in his efforts along these lines the present admirable Michigan system of educating her children bears ample testimony. The plan which he developed contained most of the essential features of the present school system, and when it is remembered that he was the first superintendent of public instruction in the United States, and that he had to formulate the entire educational plan, we are better prepared to appreciate the wisdom and foresight displayed by this founder of the justly celebrated Michigan school system.

A majority of the pioneers who settled in the interior of Michigan came from the New England states, New York and Ohio. Some of them came from the very birthplace of the town meeting, and all of them took an active and earnest interest in the good government of the state of their adoption. They were an intelligent and public spirited people, prudent and industrious, desirable citizens in any community. Their style of living was unavoidably plain; their dwellings were structures built of logs from the forests, primitive, but comfortable; their clothing cheap and coarse, but that mattered not to the hardy settlers, so long as it possessed the qualities of wear and comfort. Hard work was the order of the day and while neighbors were few and far between, genuine friendship and hospitality were marked characteristics of the "pathfinders" of the vast Michigan wilderness.

From 1701, when Cadillac first occupied Fort Pontchartrain, until 1847, Detroit had been the seat of government, but in the latter part of that year, the legislature located the capital at Lansing, which was then an unbroken forest forty miles distant from any railroad, but which is now a flourishing city of upwards



of 30,000 inhabitants. This action of the legislature met with much ridicule and opposition, but the event justified the location, which has proved to be satisfactory to the people of the state. The township of Lansing, in which the capital city is situated, was organized by an act of the legislature of 1842, as follows: "That all that part of the county of Ingham designated by the United States survey as township number four north, of range number two west, be set off and organized into a separate township, by the name of Lansing, and the first township meeting shall be held at the *shantee* near the cedar bridge in said township."

After an experience of more than a dozen years under the constitution of 1835, it became manifest that some radical changes were needed in the fundamental law of the state, and a convention was called to meet at Lansing in June, 1850, for the purpose of preparing and submitting a new constitution. This duty was performed and the work of the convention submitted to the people at the general election held on the 5th day of November, 1850.\* Hon. Isaac W. Willard, a man prominent in the development of Van Buren county, was a delegate to this convention. The constitution of 1850 remained as the supreme law of the state until 1908, when it was superseded by the present constitution which was adopted by a vote of the people at the general election of November in that year. The present constitution was framed by a convention that met at Lansing, October 22, 1907, and remained in session until March 3, 1908. At this convention, Hon. Benjamin F. Heckert and Hon. Guy J. Wicksall were delegates from Van Buren county.

At the time of the admission of Michigan into the Union, the Democratic party was in power and the first governor of the state was affiliated with that party. He was succeeded by Governor Woodbridge, a Whig, for a single term, after which the Democrats again came into control of the state and remained as the dominant party until the organization of the Republican party in 1854, since which date that party has, with the exception of two terms, been in full control of the state government.

During the Civil war the state was fortunate in having Hon. Austin Blair, known as her great "war governor," as her chief executive. No state was more earnest in supporting the general government and in upholding the hands of the immortal Lincoln, than was Michigan. None made greater sacrifice for the suppression of the Rebellion and none sent better or braver soldiers into the field. Altogether, Michigan furnished 93,700 men, of whom

\* Among other changes, this constitution made judges of the supreme court and state officers, heads of departments, elective instead of appointive.

14,855 died in the service of their country. Upwards of 4,000 Michigan men were enlisted in the more recent Spanish-American war.

The first half century of the history of Michigan witnessed many wonderful changes. In 1837 the interior of the state was almost wholly an unbroken wilderness, inhabited only by the Indian tribes and the beasts of the forest, and there were very few signs of civilization to be seen. Postal arrangements were of the crudest character and correspondence was an expensive luxury. The entire population of the state at that time was but 174,467, and that largely along the borders of the state next the great lakes. The census of 1910 places Michigan, in point of numbers, as the eighth state in the Union, giving to her a population of 2,810,173, an increase of sixteen-fold in seventy-three years. Detroit, the metropolis of the state, is now the ninth American city, having by the last census a population of 465,766.

The following table shows the population of the state at each decennial year, for the past century, and of the county of Van Buren at each decennial census since the admission of Michigan as a state.

MICHIGAN		
Date.	Population.	Increase.
1810 .....	4,762	.....
1820 .....	8,896	4,134
1830 .....	31,639	22,743
1840 .....	212,267	180,628
1850 .....	397,654	185,387
1860 .....	749,113	351,497
1870 .....	1,184,282	435,869
1880 .....	1,636,937	452,655
1890 .....	2,093,889	456,952
1900 .....	2,420,982	327,093
1910 .....	2,810,873	389,191

VAN BUREN COUNTY	
Date.	Population.
1840 .....	1,910
1850 .....	5,800
1860 .....	15,224
1870 .....	28,829
1880 .....	30,807
1890 .....	30,541
1900 .....	34,965
1910 .....	33,185

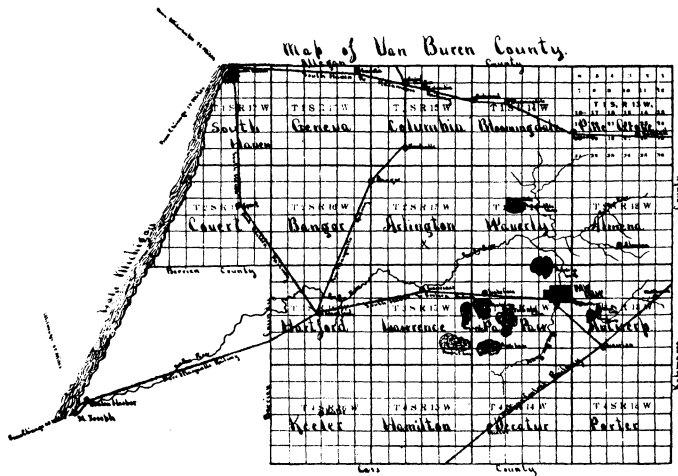
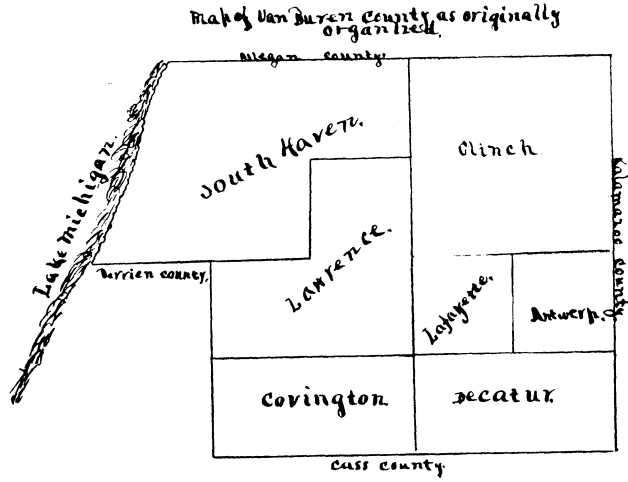
While there has been the above remarkable increase in the population of the state, there has been a corresponding increase in its financial prosperity, as may be seen by the following tabulation, showing the valuation of the state and also of Van Buren county for the past sixty years, as fixed by the state board of equalization.

Date	State.	County.
1851 .....	\$ 30,976,270	\$ 541,663
1853 .....	120,362,470	1,683,561
1856 .....	137,663,009	2,132,374
1861 .....	172,055,805	2,591,490
1866 .....	307,965,842	4,926,238
1871 .....	630,000,000	11,550,000
1876 .....	630,000,000	11,000,000
1881 .....	810,000,000	14,000,000
1886 .....	945,459,000	14,000,000
1891 .....	1,130,000,000	15,000,000
1896 .....	1,105,100,000	14,500,000
1901 .....	1,578,100,000	16,000,000
1906 .....	1,734,100,000	17,000,000
1911 .....	2,390,000,000	27,300,000

A glance at the foregoing tables will show that during the past sixty years the state of Michigan has increased in wealth seventy-seven fold and, that during the same length of time, from 1850 to 1910, its population has been multiplied nearly eight times, while Van Buren county during the same period increased in wealth fifty-two fold, probably as great an increase as would be shown by any other rural county in the entire state; its population during the same time has increased nearly six-fold.

When we realize something of the greatness of our state and take cognizance of its various industrial interests, its mines of iron, copper and coal, its beds of cement, its magnificent orchards, vineyards and farms, its unsurpassed manufacturing industries, its salt and its sugar, its beautiful cities and villages, its great transportation facilities, both by land and by water, its fisheries around the great lakes that lave its borders, its beautiful inland lakes and streams, its thousands upon thousands of handsome and commodious dwellings, in country as well as in city, and a thousand and one other attractions, it would seem that there is no other state in the Union that can excel it, or that can bestow upon its fortunate inhabitants more of the comforts and luxuries of life. If Michigan were to be cut off from all communication with the rest of the world, her people would still be a prosperous people and would lack none of the real necessities and few of the luxuries to which they have been accustomed. It was indeed a happy thought when her pioneer statesmen chose for her motto, that most appropriate legend *Si Quaeris Peninsulam Amoenam Circumspice*.

HISTORY OF VAN BUREN COUNTY



THE COUNTY OF TODAY

## CHAPTER III

### CIVIL AND EARLY HISTORY

FIRST MICHIGAN COUNTY—VAN BUREN COUNTY CREATED—CIVIL AND JUDICIAL ORGANIZATION—TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION—PIONEER PICTURES—VAN BUREN COUNTY PIONEER ASSOCIATION—EDWIN BARNUM'S POEM—OSLERISM REVIEWED.

I hear the tread of pioneers,  
Of nations yet to be,  
The first low wash of waves where soon  
Shall wave a human sea.  
The rudiments of empire here  
Are plastic yet and warm,  
The chaos of a mighty world  
Is rounding into form.

It is popularly supposed that Van Buren county once formed a part of the county of Wayne, but this supposition, strictly speaking, is incorrect. It is true, however, that on the 15th day of July, 1796, General Arthur St. Clair, at that time governor of the Northwest territory, issued an executive proclamation by which he assumed to organize the county of Wayne, and in which he included the northwestern part of Ohio, the northeastern part of Indiana and the whole of Michigan, which at that time included a part of the state of Wisconsin, truly a magnificent extent of territory to be included within the boundaries of a single county. But at that time the county of Van Buren had not been named or thought of as a distinct entity, and the Indian title to a large portion of the widely extended county thus attempted to be created had not been extinguished, so that the proclamation of Governor St. Clair, in-so-far as the territory which subsequently became Van Buren county was involved, was a mere nullity, it being then, as it has always since been, the policy of the general government to recognize the title of the Indian tribes to the lands occupied by them and not to attempt to exercise jurisdiction therein until such time as their title should be extinguished and vested in the United States.

## FIRST MICHIGAN COUNTY

The first actual county organization within the territory of Michigan was created by proclamation of General Lewis Cass, governor of the territory, dated November 21st, 1815, as follows: "To all to whom these presents may come, greeting: Know ye, that I do hereby lay out that part of the territory of Michigan to which the Indian title has been extinguished into a county to be called the County of Wayne, and the seat of justice of said county shall be at the City of Detroit." (Territorial Laws, Vol. I. p. 323).

The proclamation of Governor Cass, above quoted, makes the new county cover all the territory to which the "Indian title has been extinguished," and as the title to the territory included within the boundaries of Van Buren county remained in the Pottawattamies until what is called the Chicago treaty of 1821, some six years after the proclamation creating the county of Wayne, such proclamation did not affect the territory now included within boundaries of this county.

This treaty was signed by General Cass and Solomon Sibley, as commissioners of the United States, and had attached to it the totemic signatures of Topinabee, Wesaw and fifty-three other chiefs of the Pottawattamies. By this treaty the Indian title was extinguished to all the present county of Van Buren, as well as to certain other lands, being nearly all of Berrien county; nine entire counties and a part of five others, all in southwest Michigan, and also a strip of land ten miles in width south of the state line between Michigan and Indiana.

By executive proclamation, dated September 10, 1822, made by Governor Cass, it was ordered that "All the country within this territory to which the Indian title was extinguished by the treaty of Chicago shall be attached to, and compose a part of the county of Monroe," so that for municipal purposes the territory afterward organized as the county of Van Buren was first within the jurisdiction of Monroe county. (Territorial Laws, Vol. I. p. 335-336).

## VAN BUREN COUNTY CREATED

The first act of the legislature of the territory affecting Van Buren county was placed upon the statute books in 1829 and was as follows: "That so much of the territory included within the following limits—viz., beginning where the line between ranges twelve and thirteen west of the meridian intersects the base line, thence west to the shore of Lake Michigan, thence southerly along the shore of said lake to the intersection of the line between townships two and three south of the base line, thence east on the line between said townships to the intersection of the line between

ranges sixteen and seventeen west of the meridian, thence south on the line between said ranges to the intersection of the line between townships four and five south of the base line, thence east on the line between said townships to the intersection of the line between ranges twelve and thirteen west of the meridian, thence north on the line between said ranges to the base line be and the same is hereby set off into a separate county and the name thereof shall be Van Buren." (Territorial Laws, Vol. II. p. 736).

This act embraced the territory included within the present county of Van Buren.

In the same year, the legislature passed an act organizing the county of Cass, establishing a county court therein and providing for the holding of two terms of court in said county each year. Section four of the same act provided "that the counties of Berrien and Van Buren and all the country lying north of the same to Lake Michigan, shall be attached to and form a part of the county of Cass." (Territorial Laws, Vol. II. p. 745). By this act Van Buren, still unable to stand alone, found her second municipal copartner.

By the same act of the legislature the counties of Calhoun and Jackson came into existence, thus placing with others, in the two southern tiers of counties, Van Buren, Cass, Calhoun, Jackson and Monroe, the names of these noted Democratic statesmen plainly indicating the prevailing political sentiment in the territory. Just why Michigan was not, at the same time, honored by having a county named Jefferson, as well as after these other distinguished statesmen, is a little singular.

#### CIVIL AND JUDICIAL ORGANIZATION

In 1835 the legislative council of the territory ordained "that the county of Van Buren shall be a township by the name of La Fayette, and the first township meeting shall be held at the school-house near Paw Paw mills, in said township." (Territorial Laws, Vol. III. p. 1403).

However, it was not until Michigan had been admitted as a state that the county was fully organized and endowed with the necessary political machinery for the management of her own municipal affairs.

In 1837 the first legislature of the newly admitted state enacted a law providing, among other things "that the county of Van Buren be, and the same is hereby organized, and the inhabitants thereof entitled to all the rights and privileges to which by law the inhabitants of the other counties are entitled.

"All suits, prosecutions and other matters now pending before

any court, or before any justice of the peace of the county to which said county of Van Buren is now attached for judicial purposes, shall be prosecuted to final judgment and execution, and all taxes heretofore levied shall be collected in the same manner as though this act had not passed.

“The circuit court for the county of Van Buren shall be held for one year from the first day of November next, at such place as the supervisors of said county shall provide in said county, on the first Monday in June and December in each year, and after the first day of November, 1838, at the seat of justice in said county.

“There shall be elected in said county of Van Buren, on the second Monday of April next, all the several county officers to which by law the said county is entitled, and whose terms of office shall expire at the time the same would have expired, had they been elected on the first Monday and the next succeeding day of November last, and said election shall in all respects be conducted and held in the manner prescribed by law for holding elections for county and state officers.

“In case the election for county officers shall not be held on the second Monday of April, as provided by the eighth section of this act, the same may be held on the first Monday of May next.” (Laws of Michigan, 1837, pp. 97-98.)

In those early days, it will be observed, it was the practice to hold elections on two successive days and should they not be so held the statute gave the people another opportunity to exercise their right of franchise. Just imagine, if such a thing be possible, the voters of the present day neglecting an opportunity to hold an election. And they do not need two days for it at that.

The election was held at the appointed date, to-wit, on the 11th day of April, 1837, and resulted in the choice of the following named officers: First county judge, Wolcott H. Keeler, of Covington; second county judge, Jay R. Monroe, of South Haven; county treasurer, Daniel O. Dodge, of Lafayette; judge of probate, Jeremiah H. Simmons, of Lafayette; sheriff Samuel Gunton; register of deeds, Jeremiah H. Simmons, of Lafayette; county clerk, Nathaniel B. Starkweather; county surveyor, Humphrey P. Barnum, of Lafayette; coroners, John R. Haynes, of Lawrence, and Junia Warner, Jr., of Antwerp.

The highest number of votes cast for any candidate was ninety and the least number was sixty-two.

At that date the county consisted of seven townships, viz., South Haven, Clinch, Lawrence, Lafayette, Antwerp, Covington and Decatur. The vote by townships, as returned and canvassed,



was as follows: South Haven, 10; Lawrence, 13; Lafayette, 23; Antwerp, 17; Covington, 27.

No returns were received from the townships of Decatur and Clinch, and the presumption is that no election was held in those townships.

Pursuant to the requirements of the statute above quoted the board of supervisors of the newly organized county convened on the 27th day of May, 1837, for the purpose of designating the place where the circuit court in and for said county should be held.

This was the first meeting of that august body, which is sometimes designated as the county legislature. The record of this meeting is very brief and reads as follows: "The supervisors of the towns of Van Buren County met at the village of Paw Paw, on the 27th day of May, A. D. 1837, and organized by appointing D. O. Dodge clerk.

"The business of said meeting being for locating the place for the circuit courts of said county: Whereupon, it is decided that the courts of said county be held at the schoolhouse in the village of Paw Paw.

"D. O. DODGE, Clerk."

This action of the board of supervisors, while having no special reference to the final location of the county seat of the county, may well be considered as the entering wedge to a long and more or less bitter and hard fought contest over that matter which eventually resulted in the permanent location of the county buildings at Paw Paw, where they are likely to remain indefinitely. This matter is presented at length in its proper place in this work.

#### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION

To further provide for the complete organization of the county, the legislature of 1837 enacted as follows: "All that portion of the county of Van Buren known as township number three south of range number thirteen west, be, and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of Antwerp; and the first township meeting therein shall be held at the house of Philip Williams, in said township. (This is the only town in the county that has undergone neither change of name nor territory since the organization of the county.)

"All that portion of the county of Van Buren designated by the United States survey as townships one and two south of range thirteen and fourteen west, be, and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of Clinch, and the first township meeting therein shall be held at the house of Charles

Townsend, in said township. (The township of Clinch disappeared from the map of Van Buren county so many years ago that very few of its citizens are aware that there ever was a township by that name. The territory embraced within the boundaries of this ancient township now constitutes the townships of Pine Grove, Bloomingdale, Waverly and Almena).

“All that portion of the county of Van Buren, designated by the United States survey as township three south of range fourteen west, be and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township, by the name of Lafayette; and the first township meeting therein shall be held at the house of D. O. Dodge, in said township. (This township, as above designated, is now the township of Paw Paw. Few people are aware that Berrien county first had a township named Paw Paw, but such is the fact.) (Laws of Michigan, 1837, p. 38.)

“All that portion of the county of Van Buren designated by the United States survey as townships four south in ranges thirteen and fourteen west, be, and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of Decatur, and the first township meeting, shall be held at the schoolhouse near Little Prairie Ronde in said township. (The west half of the territory so organized into a township still remains as the township of Decatur, while the east half of the same constitutes the present township of Porter).

“All that portion of the county of Van Buren designated in the United States survey as township one south in ranges fifteen, sixteen and seventeen west, and township two south in ranges sixteen and seventeen west, be, and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of South Haven; and the first township meeting therein shall be held at the house of J. R. Monroe, in said township. (The territory so organized into a single township now comprises the townships of South Haven, Geneva, Columbia, Bangor and Covert).

“All that portion of the county of Van Buren, designated by the United States survey as township two south in range fifteen west, and township three south in ranges fifteen and sixteen west, be, and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of Lawrence; and the first township meeting therein shall be held at the house of Horace Stimpson in said township. (The territory so organized now comprises the present townships of Lawrence, Arlington, and Hartford).

“All that portion of the county of Van Buren designated by the United States survey as township four south in ranges fifteen and sixteen west, be, and the same is hereby set off and organized into a separate township by the name of Covington; and the first town-

ship meeting therein shall be held at the Keelerville postoffice in said township" (Covington, which covered the present townships of Keeler and Hamilton, sank into oblivion, as did its sister township of Clinch, and is not now even a memory save only to a few of the oldest inhabitants of the county).

The foregoing quotations are from the Laws of Michigan for 1837, pages 35, 37 and 38.

The legislature of 1839 (Laws of Michigan, 1839, p. 27) enacted that townships number three and four south, of range number sixteen west, should be set off and organized into a separate township to be called Keeler, and that the first township meeting should be held at the house of W. H. Keeler in said township. This new township comprised the present township of Hartford, then a part of Lawrence, and the west half of the then township of Covington.

At the same session of the legislature (Laws of Michigan, 1839, p. 24) an act was passed organizing township number four south, of range number fifteen west, into a separate township to be known as the township of Alpena, and providing that the first township meeting should be held at the house of Henry Coleman in said township. By these two acts the township of Covington was entirely wiped off the map of the county.

Another law, enacted in 1840, changed the name of the township of Alpena to Hamilton, and as such it still remains. (Laws of Michigan, 1840, p. 80.)

By the same legislature township number three south, of range number sixteen west, was organized into a new township to be known as Hartford, and the first township meeting was ordered to be held at the house of Smith Johnson in said township. (Laws of Michigan, 1840, p. 79.) This township comprised the north half of the township of Keeler.

The legislature of 1842 (Laws of Michigan, 1842, pp. 83 and 84) passed an act organizing three new townships in the county of Van Buren; to-wit, townships number one and two south, of range number fourteen west, then a part of the township of Clinch, were set off and organized into a township to be called Waverly, the first township meeting to be held at the schoolhouse near Ashbel Herring's, in said township. (The name should have been Heron, instead of Herring.)

Townships number one and two south, of range number thirteen west, also a part of the township of Clinch, were set off and organized into a township to be called Almena, the first town meeting to be held at the schoolhouse near Willard Newcomb's in said township. By the organization of these two townships,

the township of Clinch ceased to exist and has been practically forgotten.

By the same act of the legislature township number two south, of range number fifteen west, at that time a part of the township of Lawrence, was set off and organized into a separate township under the name of Arlington, the first town meeting to be held at the house of Allen Briggs in said township.

In 1845 (Laws of Michigan, 1845, pp. 50 and 51) the following township organizations were effected, viz.: Township number one south, of range number fourteen west, then constituting the north half of the township of Waverly, was set off and organized into a township to be known as and called the township of Bloomingdale, the first town meeting to be held at the house of Elisha C. Cox in said township.

Townships number one south, of ranges number fifteen and sixteen west, then being a part of the township of South Haven, were set off and organized into a township under the name of Columbia, the first township meeting to be held at the schoolhouse in district number four in said township.

Township number four south, of range number thirteen west, being the east half of the then township of Decatur, was set off and organized as the township of Porter, the first township meeting to be held at the schoolhouse near the residence of Benjamin Reynolds.

This same act also provided that township number two south of range number sixteen west, should be organized into a township to be called South Haven, the first town meeting to be held at the house of Daniel Taylor in said township. This embraced what is now the present township of Bangor, and was already a part of the township of South Haven, as theretofore organized, which organization was left intact, except that the township of Columbia had been detached therefrom, as hereinbefore noted.

It is evident that there must have been some mistake in this matter. This township does not border on Lake Michigan and there was nothing in the situation that could possibly have suggested the name "Haven," south or in any other direction, and it has never been known as the township of South Haven, nor in any way treated as such, except as it formed a part of said township as originally organized in 1837. The legislature of the next year, 1846, appears to have been informed of the error and so passed a new law, the third, for the organization of the township of South Haven. This statute provided that fractional townships number one and two south of range number seventeen west, fractional township number two south of range number eighteen west, and township number two south of range number sixteen west,

should be organized into a township by the name of South Haven, and that the act of 1845, above noted, be repealed. This left the township of South Haven the same as originally organized in 1839, except that township number two south of range number eighteen west, a small triangular piece of land jutting into the lake, containing about one section, was added, and that townships number one south of ranges numbers fifteen and sixteen west had been detached and organized into the township of Columbia, as above noted. (Laws of Michigan, 1846, p. 126.)

The legislature of 1849 enacted that township number one south, of range number thirteen west, the north half of the then township of Almena, should be set off and organized into a township to be called Pine Grove, and that the first town meeting should be held at the house of Henry F. Bowen in said township. (Laws of Michigan, 1849, p. 105.)

The townships of Bangor, Geneva and Deerfield were organized, not by act of the legislature, but by resolution of the board of supervisors. On the 11th day of October, 1853, at the annual session of the board, a resolution was adopted, reading in part as follows: "Resolved, that township number two south of range number sixteen west, situate at present in and belonging to the township of South Haven, be and the same is hereby set off from said township and organized into a new township by the name of the township of Bangor, and that the time and place of holding the first annual meeting in said township of Bangor shall be on the first Monday of April next, 1854, at the schoolhouse situated on section twelve, in said township."

At a special meeting of the board of supervisors held on the 5th day of January, 1854, a similar resolution, in part as follows was adopted: "Resolved, that township number one south of range number sixteen west, situate at present in and belonging to the township of Columbia, be and the same is hereby set off from said township and organized into a new township by the name of Geneva, and that the time and place of holding the first township meeting in said township of Geneva shall be on the first Monday of April next, 1854, at the dwelling house of Nathan Tubbs, on section two in said township."

At a session of the board of supervisors, held on the 8th day of October, 1855, a resolution reading in part as follows was adopted: "Resolved, that township number two south of range number seventeen west, situated at present in and belonging to the township of South Haven, be and the same is hereby set off and organized into a new township by the name of Deerfield, and that the time and place of holding the first annual township meeting in said township of Deerfield shall be on the first Monday of April next,

1856, at the dwelling house of Hiram Fish, on section number 21 in said township.”

This action on the part of the board of supervisors of the county completed the organization of the county into eighteen townships, each of which, with the exception of the fractional townships of South Haven and Deerfield, (now Covert) was six miles square and contained thirty-six sections of land. No change has been made in the boundaries of any township since the date last mentioned, except that, by action of the board of supervisors at their October session, 1871, section number thirty-two and the west half of section number thirty-one of the township of Waverly was set off from said township and attached to the township of Paw Paw, and the southeast part of the township of Arlington, south of the Paw Paw river about one-third of section thirty-six, has been set off and attached to the township of Lawrence. The only other changes that have taken place have been changes of name, the township of Lafayette having been changed to Paw Paw and the township of Deerfield having been renamed Covert. It is altogether unlikely that any other alterations will be made, at least for many years to come.

#### PIONEER PICTURES

The following extracts from an article written by Hon. Alexander B. Copley, and read at the meeting of the Van Buren County Pioneer Association in 1894, will serve to give some idea of the customs, the difficulties and the hardships encountered by the brave and hardy pioneers to whom we are indebted for this prosperous and beautiful land they have bequeathed to us. He says: “At the time of which I am writing, (the early thirties) it is doubtful if there was a cabin with rafters and board gable in either Cass or Van Buren county, and for years thereafter one could distinguish the eastern settler from the southern by the board gable with rafters, the logs squared at the corners, and the chimney built on the inside without jams and supported on the curved timbers of a natural crook.

“The farming tools of the pioneer were of the simplest kind, hardly differing from their ancestors of fifty to a hundred years before. An ax, iron wedge, bar share plow (which was a plow with share and landslide combined) to which a wooden mould board was attached, shovel plow (sometimes iron harrow teeth, more often wooden ones), a heavy hoe, and a sickle for cutting grain, which, after being cut, was stacked around a circular threshing floor of dirt, upon which it was tramped out by horses and winnowed by one man throwing it into the air, while two men flopped a sheet to fan it.

The first fanning mill in the settlement was in 1831. The wheat was in poor condition for flour, the smut and dirt were mixed with it, and the rude mills of that day had few appliances to clean and scour the grain as compared with the complicated machinery of modern days. The result was a leaden-colored product much unlike, in appearance, taste or smell, the snow-white roller process flour of today, and owing to the difficulty of threshing, on account of stormy weather at times, bad roads and the mills a long distance away, the settlers were often entirely out of flour and borrowing was the rule and general practice. Sometimes even borrowing was unavailable, as, for instance, Dolphin Morris (of Decatur township) and his brother were gone fourteen days to mill, Lacey's mill, near Niles, although the distance was but thirty miles. Some difficulty at the mill at first, then a severe storm of rain and sleet and snow, compelled them to abandon their loads and wagons, except the forward wheels of one wagon upon which they placed a small supply of flour for temporary use; and even then they were three days in going twenty miles to reach their families, who were out of bread and fearing the worst that could have happened to the absent husbands.

The spring of 1832 was particularly unfortunate; the Sac war for one thing, when everyone expected an uprising of the resident Indians and nearly all the settlers were called out to resist the threatened invasion of Blackhawk and his warriors. Happily this scare soon passed away and the settlers returned to their families, but the weather was very unfavorable for crops, the corn having been twice cut down by frosts and there being no seed for replanting. As a last resort, Mr. Morris sent a boy of fifteen with pack horses to Defiance, Ohio, a distance of over a hundred miles, to procure seed corn. The lad was successful in procuring two bushels, arriving home late one Saturday night and the next day all hands turned out and planted it, the product of which was all the corn raised in the neighborhood that year.

The dress of the settlers was of the most primitive style, both as to fashion and material. With the men the old time hunting shirt had given way to a garment called a 'wamus,' a loose blouse with a narrow binding at the top and a single button at the throat, the skirt reaching to the hips when loose, or to the waist when tied by the corners as it was usually worn. The material was linsey, a homespun cloth of cotton and wool woven plain. Pantaloon were of jeans, blue or butternut, with different shades of color as the different skeins of yarn took on a light or dark hue in the dyeing. Occasionally buckskin trousers were worn, or trousers faced with buckskin, fore and aft, as a sailor would say, where the protection would be the most serviceable.

“Feminine fashions were at a standstill, and it would be presumptuous for me to attempt to describe them, still it would be an easier task than now, for as I look on this beautiful scene before me, who could describe the lovely toiles which meet the eye on every side, their style, color and material eclipsed only by the charms of the wearers? Suffice it to say that notwithstanding the poke bonnets from five to ten years old, the belles and matrons who wore them were worthy of being the mothers and grandmothers of the radiant maidens of today.

“The chief business of the pioneer was to live. Speculation and money-making was not considered, as their locations and first settlements show. An easy place to farm was sought for; hence a choice location on a prairie was taken without taking into consideration the distance from market. Rich lands were available near the St. Joseph river, navigable to the lake and thence by water, but the emigrant passed on for thirty miles to a prairie, even if it took several days to get a barrel of salt. What was time to men whose wants were so few? The forests, the swamps and the lakes were to them vast storehouses furnishing both amusement and subsistence. Game of many kinds abounded in the forest, the streams and lakes teemed with fish, wild honey from the woods, huckleberries and cranberries from the swamps, and various other kinds of wild fruits in plenty, all served to make life at times a holiday. Not all sunshine, however. In 1835 there was a great frost in June, almost totally destroying a promising crop prospect and very nearly causing a famine, only a few favored localities escaping the general destruction. The roads of those early days were execrable, especially in the timbered lands. Wagons were generally covered, and an axe and log chain were always taken on trips of any considerable distance, such as going to mill or market, as the roads were liable to be obstructed by trees blown down during heavy rain storms or high winds.

“As an example of the early roads and teaming in Van Buren county, on the 21st day of September, 1834, John Shaw, a prominent settler of Volinia, with a wagon and a team of three horses and a hired man sent by my father with a wagon and two yoke of oxen, started on a trip from Little Prairie Ronde to St. Joseph with wheat. The first day they reached Paw Paw; the second day Prospect Lake; the third day camped in the woods, and the fourth day reached St. Joseph. The fifth day they sold their loads, made their purchases, started home, and reached Rulo's, a French settler ten miles from St. Joseph; the sixth day they got to Paw Paw, and the next day they reached home, having camped out every night except the two nights at Dodge's tavern, Paw Paw, which at that time was little more than a shanty, he having just



commenced building his hotel. My father's account book says: 36 bushels of wheat at 60 cents, \$21.60; one barrel of salt, \$2.50; expenses, \$1.94; cash brought home, \$1.82; the rest in sundries. This year (1834) was the first opening up of trade and business between the prairie and Paw Paw. The next year, the winter of 1835, I accompanied my father on a trip to St. Joseph, with a load of oats to be exchanged for salt. The oats sold for 37½ cents a bushel and the salt cost \$2.62½ per barrel. We accomplished the round trip in six days. The only settler at that time between Paw Paw and St. Joseph, was John B. Rulo, the Frenchman above mentioned, who lived in the township of Bainbridge, Berrien county. A log barn had been built at Prospect Lake and several miles farther west was a log house, but no roof; otherwise no improvements whatever. But the snows of that winter had hardly melted before the road, so desolate at that time, had become an artery of life to the thronging settlers overrunning Van Buren county to found homes for themselves and their posterity."

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY PIONEER ASSOCIATION

The Van Buren County Pioneer Association was organized at the village of Lawrence, on the 22d day of February, 1872. Pursuant to a call, which had been previously issued, a large number of the older settlers of the county assembled at Chadwick's hall in that village, for the purpose of effecting some kind of an organization in honor of the pioneers of the county and to commemorate the scenes and days of pioneer life.

General Benjamin F. Chadwick was chosen chairman of the meeting, Hon. Morgan L. Fitch, assistant chairman, and S. Tallmadge Conway, secretary.

A committee was appointed on permanent organization, consisting of Messrs. Chas M. Morrill, John Smolk, William Markillie, Silas Breed and Orrin Sisson.

Hon. Jonathan J. Woodman and Charles U. Cross were appointed to draft a constitution.

The committee on permanent organization recommended that the officers of the association be Judge Jay R. Monroe, president; Edwin Barnum, vice-president, and S. Tallmadge Conway, secretary, which recommendations were adopted. Dr. Josiah Andrews was elected treasurer.

The committee appointed to draft a constitution presented its report, of which the following is the preamble: "We, the pioneer residents of Van Buren County, in order to perpetuate the memory of old associations and interesting events of our pioneer life, do hereby organize ourselves into an association to be called 'The

Van Buren County Pioneer Association.' " The constitution provided for annual meetings, for keeping record of the age, nativity, etc., of each member, outlined the duties of the officers, and prescribed that all persons who had been residents of the county for twenty years should be eligible to membership in the association.

The following executive committee was appointed: David D. Wise, Pine Grove; Silas Breed, Almena; Charles M. Morrill, Antwerp; Sanford Corey, Porter; Ashbel Herron, Bloomingdale; Reuben J. Myers, Waverly; Nathaniel M. Pugsley, Paw Paw; Elisha Goble, Decatur; Jonathan N. Howard, Columbia; Duane D. Briggs, Arlington; Eaton Branch, Lawrence; Calvin Fields, Hamilton; Clark Pierce, Geneva; Charles U. Cross, Bangor; Lewis Miller, Hartford; Roderick Irish, Keeler; D. T. Pierce, South Haven; Miram Fish, Deerfield. Of the gentlemen above named as officers and committeemen, not one remains. All have passed into the great Beyond.

#### EDWIN BARNUM'S POEM

The second meeting of the association was held in the Town Hall in the village of Paw Paw, on the 22d day of February, 1873. At this meeting the date of holding the annual meetings was changed to the second Wednesday in June of each year. The feature of this meeting was the following address of welcome written and read by Edwin Barnum of Paw Paw.

The old settlers have a meeting; we have it every year.  
Last year we met at Lawrence; to-day we have it here.  
We've made the preparation and sent abroad the call,  
We give you all a welcome here in this spacious hall.

These old pioneers who assemble here to-day,  
Mostly had their birthplace in lands now far away:  
Some came from merry England, and some were born in Cork;  
Some had their birth in Canada and some in old New York.

New England sent us Yankees from off her rocky coast,  
And like the frogs of Egypt, there came a mighty host.  
New Jersey sent a few, about a half a score—  
Virginia doubled that, perhaps a trifle more.  
Her noble hardy sons were first upon the ground,  
And four and forty years ago took Little Prairie Ronde—  
Our sister, Indiana, that's just across the line,  
Sent up a troop of Hoosiers, all stalwart men and fine.  
Ohio furnished Buckeyes, their help we needed much;  
While Pennsylvania sent up to us the honest Dutch.

No matter where your birthplace, no matter in what land,  
We welcome you as brothers in this "Old settlers' land."  
We welcome you, our brothers in labor, toil and care;  
We welcome you, our sisters, you've nobly done your share.

The hardships we have suffered have served like iron bands  
To bind us firm together, to bind our hearts and hands.  
Together, o'er life's journey, we've traveled on the road  
And shared each other's trials and borne each other's load;  
We drank the cup of sorrow with many a bitter sigh,  
We drank it all together, we drank the fountain dry.

Although your forms are bending, your step in somewhat slow,  
Your faces much more wrinkled than thirty years ago;  
Although you lean on crutches, your heads are silvered o'er,  
Old pioneers, we love you as loved in days of yore.  
We hail you, noble brother, as the early pioneer  
I know your early history, for I was with you here.  
I've met you in your cabins, I've slept upon your floor;  
Your house had not a window, a blanket formed the door.  
It scarcely was one story, no help to raise it higher  
Your wives they did the cooking outdoors there by a fire.  
Sometimes you had a plenty at morning, night and noon;  
Sometimes your store was shortened to a squirrel or a coon.  
But though your stock was scanty, I ne'er among you come,  
But that you raised the blanket—I felt myself at home.

I've seen you in your sorrow, your hunger and despair,  
When corn meal and potatoes made up your humble fare.  
You had a little clearing around the cabin door—  
It might have been an acre, perhaps a little more.  
You burned away the brush heaps, the logs you did not heed,  
But planted right among them your corn and pumpkin seed.  
The soil was rich and fertile, quite free from clods and lumps,  
And pumpkin vines for want of room, crept over logs and stumps;  
And then for their protection you hedged it round about  
With jumpiles made of timber to keep the cattle out.  
And then with patient waiting the spring and summer rains  
Came oft upon your labor, rewarding all your pains—  
And when the crop was ripened and gathered in the fall,  
Of all the crops you ever raised, you praised it most of all.

I've seen the sturdy axmen, with well directed blow,  
Attack the mighty forest and lay the monarchs low.  
I've seen the hungry fire consume your heaps of logs,  
And seen the ditcher's spade remove the marshy bogs;  
And here upon the openings, no timber in the way,  
I've seen the patient oxen move on from day to day.  
The sod was quite unyielding, the roots were tough and long,  
To draw the heavy "breaker," the team it must be strong.  
Sometimes eight yoke of cattle were tethered in a row,  
Their march across the breaking was powerful, but slow.  
The steady, watchful driver made each perform his toil;  
The father held the plow that turned the virgin soil,  
For he had early learned that by the plow to thrive.  
Himself must either hold, or take the whip and drive.

Thus by your patient labor and well directed skill  
You have subdued the county and conquered it at will;  
Have swept away the forests, removed the stumps and stones,

Torn down your lowly cabins and built your stately homes;  
 Have planted fruitful orchards whose tops now kiss the breeze.  
 Have made our pleasant highways and lined them well with trees;  
 Have drained the stagnant marshes and bridged the brooks and rills,  
 Threw dams across our rivers and built thereon our mills.  
 As said an ancient prophet, although 'twas said in prose,  
 You have removed the bramble and planted there the rose;  
 Cut down the noxious thistle, removed the ugly thorn,  
 And planted out the fir tree, your dwellings to adorn.  
 We know your task was arduous and troubles thick and fast.  
 We welcome you as victors; you overcame at last.

We welcome you, our brothers, as men of good renown.  
 We welcome you from Keeler, our southwest corner town;  
 From Hamilton and Hartford, Bangor and Waverly too,  
 Columbia and Geneva, we gladly welcome you.  
 You're welcome from South Haven, the town of boats and oars;  
 You're welcome, too, from Deerfield, where Thunder mountain roars—  
 From Arlington, from Lawrence, the home of Judge Monroe,  
 Who settled in this county some forty years ago.  
 You're welcome from the hilltop, you're welcome from the vale—  
 From Porter and Almena, Antwerp and Bloomingdale.  
 Our brothers from Decatur, we're glad to meet you here;  
 The pioneers of Paw Paw all hail you with a cheer.

We meet today in friendship, as in the days of yore.  
 We meet today as neighbors to talk our conquests o'er.  
 We meet today as veterans who have subdued the land.  
 We meet today as brothers to clasp the friendly hand.  
 We meet to live in memory those early stirring scenes,  
 Through which we passed together, becoming Wolverines.

Among the early settlers it very soon was found  
 We had a modern Egypt ('twas Big Prairie Ronde)  
 On which we were dependent and thither had to go,  
 Whenever flour was minus or meal was getting low.  
 The wheat there grew abundant, potatoes large and fine,  
 And like the land of promise, it yielded corn and wine.  
 The father loved his children—for bread he heard the cry—  
 He yoked old Buck and Brindle and went for fresh supply.  
 The corn he had to husk, 'twas standing on the hill,  
 The wheat he helped to thresh, then took it off to mill.  
 The tiresome road was long, the mill was far away,  
 And when the father would return, he could not set the day.  
 He started early Monday, above him shone the stars,  
 Behind, his wife and children stood weeping at the bars.  
 They saw him drive away, their love for him did burn;  
 Back to the cabin then and prayed his safe return.

There in the lonely forest, with not a neighbor near,  
 The wife and children waited, each day seemed like a year.  
 The week would wear away and Saturday would come  
 Before that absent father could reach his lonely home.  
 Meanwhile, the faithful wife the last crust would divide,  
 Then told her children dear "the Lord must now provide."

Those quizzing little ones, to their dear mother said  
 "Has the Lord an oven got, and can the Lord make bread?"

God bless these noble women, our glory and our pride,  
 God bless these noble women who labored by our side!  
 When neighbors were far distant and laborers were few,  
 You helped to build our cabins, did all that you could do.  
 You helped us roll the log heaps, you helped us burn the brush,  
 You baked for us the johnnycake, you cooked for us the mush.  
 You patched our worn-out garments, our trousers and our coats,  
 And some you patched so often that we were left in doubts—  
 The mending was so frequent, the work was done so well,  
 That which was coat and which was patch, it puzzled us to tell.  
 You guarded well our cabins and saved with jealous care  
 The scanty little comforts that we had gathered there.  
 You helped us tend our gardens, you helped us plant the corn,  
 And from such worthy mothers our children all were born.  
 And when the burning fever was coursing through our veins,  
 Or when the shaking ague was racking us with pains,  
 By day and night you watched us and stood beside our beds,  
 Like watchful angels ever, and fanned our aching heads.  
 God bless these noble women, Van Buren county's pride,  
 We welcome you as equals—you labored by our side!

But some who started with us, I see not here today;  
 The road was long and weary, they faltered by the way.  
 We stood around their bedside and heard th' expiring breath,  
 And wiped from off their foreheads the cold damp dews of death.  
 We did what e'er we could, their precious lives to save,  
 Then closed their weary lids and laid them in the grave.

Until the current year the association has never missed holding its annual meeting, although the real pioneers of the county have nearly all passed over the "great divide," gone to join the great majority on the other side. A meeting was advertised to be held last summer at the usual time, but other matters caused it to be postponed and afterward it was permitted to go by default.

Judge Monroe continued to hold the position of president of the association until his death, which occurred in the fall of 1876. At the next meeting of the association after his decease, which was held at the village of Paw Paw, the following resolutions in part, were adopted: "Whereas, since our last meeting, our worthy friend and late president, has entered upon that long journey we must also soon undertake; therefore

"Resolved, that in his death we recognize the loss of a good man, a worthy member, an efficient officer of this association and a sturdy old pioneer; that as we see our friends and brothers, full of years, falling around us like the tall trees of the forests they helped to subdue, we realize the fact that ere long our reunions will be held, not in the houses of earth, but in a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."

The committee that drafted these resolutions was composed of the following named gentlemen: Fernando C. Annable, Samuel H. Blackman, Charles M. Morrill, Eaton Branch and Irving W. Pierce. The first four of the committee have gone to find a home in that "house not made with hands." Mr. Pierce still remains on this side of the stream that divides Time from Eternity.

Eaton Branch succeeded Judge Monroe as president of the association. He continued to occupy the office until the meeting in June, 1885, at which Charles M. Morrill was chosen as president. Mr. Morrill filled the office for two years, when he was succeeded by Hon. Jonathan J. Woodman, who held the office for the next nineteen years, when he was compelled to decline further service on account of failing health. Mr. Woodman died within a few weeks afterward. His successor in the office of the presidency of the association was Hon. Charles J. Monroe.

The other officers of the association have been as follows: Vice-presidents—Edwin Barnum, Jonathan J. Woodman, Alexander B. Copley, Charles J. Monroe, E. Parker Hill, A. W. Haydon, and O. W. Rowland.

Secretaries—S. Tallmadge Conway, Josiah Andrews, Benjamin A. Murdock, John W. Free, Elam L. Warner, and Israel P. Bates.

Treasurers—Josiah Andrews, Franklin M. Manning, Benjamin A. Murdock, William R. Hawkins, and Albert S. Haskin.

The present officers are Charles J. Monroe, president; Oran W. Rowland, vice-president; Israel P. Bates, secretary; Albert S. Haskin, treasurer.

The association has not only been a source of gratification to its members, but it has also been of great utility as well, by way of preserving for future generations many interesting facts, scenes and incidents of the pioneer days of the county, valuable historical matter that otherwise would have been wholly lost and forgotten.

And while it is true that there is left only here and there a person who is entitled to be classed as a real pioneer, it is altogether likely that the association will be continued in remembrance of those brave and noble men and women whose labors and sacrifices gave us this prosperous and beautiful land which is the heritage of those who succeeded them.

#### OSLERISM REVIEWED

Besides, these annual meetings are a source of much pleasure and profit to those who attend them. On these occasions they have listened to addresses from senators and representatives, judges and lawyers, state officers and laymen, all of which were interesting and more or less profitable and instructive. Some of these ad-

dresses were sedate and replete with wisdom, while others were amusing and humorous.

A brief skit of the latter kind was read by the vice president of the association at the thirty-sixth annual meeting held at Bangor in 1906. This was just at the time when the public press was exploiting what was said to be the advice of the celebrated Dr. Osler, that men should be quietly and painlessly passed into the future world on arriving at the age of sixty years, and it was this that inspired the sketch, as follows: "Long, long years ago, when you and I were young, there were no telegraphs, no ocean cables, no electric railways, no automobiles, no lighting of our dwellings by the simple push of a button, no Marconigrams sent through earth and air, no standard oil octopus, no beef trust, no steel trust, no multimillionaries, no financial 'system,' no daring Wellman had conceived the astounding idea of sailing to the pole in a dirigible airship and, strange as it may appear, there was no such fashionable ailment as appendicitis; the people did not even know that among them all there was such a thing as a vermiform appendix!

"In those days, people were born as they are today, lived out their three-score years and ten, more or less, as the case might be, and died what was called a natural death. They lived in a simple manner, ate of the fat of the land and recked not of the risk they ran in the consumption of their daily diet. They knew naught of the lurking poison concealed in their daily bread, of the deadly ptomaines lying in wait for them in the meat they ate, or of the fatal tyro-toxicon hidden in the milk they drank. They did not know, as do the so-called scientists of these modern days, that there is not a single article of diet that is not dangerous to life. They only knew that a man would die if he didn't eat. They did not know that he would, if he did. And yet, they seemed to have a glimmering of modern, scientific teaching along this line, for they had, even then, a saying that 'what is one man's meat is another man's poison.' And more than all else, they knew naught of the 'germ theory' of disease. They had not even dreamed of the malignant bacillus and were absolutely ignorant of the deadly bacteria that abound in earth and air and sky, that permeate the food we eat, that pollute the water we drink. Bacteria and bacilli, all lying in wait to seize upon our vital organs and to bring upon us dire disease, suffering and pain and death! Creatures so minute that if one were magnified so as to appear an inch in length, an ordinary man, under the same magnifying power, would appear to be a towering giant twenty-five miles in altitude! Creatures that possess such marvelous powers of reproduction that, unmolested, a single pair would soon fill the whole earth!

"And then there are so many varieties of these diminutive little

demons—the bacillus of rabies, the bacillus of yellow fever, which is said to be so carefully planted beneath the human epidermis by that villainous little songster, *Stegomya Fasciata*; the bacillus of diphtheria; the bacillus of small pox, which has as yet eluded capture; the bacillus of tuberculosis, of cancer, of typhoid fever, and nobody knows how many others. The marvel is not that the population of earth does not increase more rapidly, but rather that the human race has not been wholly destroyed by the great multitudes of these malicious mites that are constantly preying upon it.

“Perhaps the time may come when those scientists who claim that they have originated some of the lower forms of life, will, contrary to the expressed preference of Mrs. Partington, succeed in producing men and women in the chemical laboratory, instead of Nature’s laboratory, and in endowing the newly invented race with power to absolutely resist the horde of malignant germs that now seems to have it in for us all.

“Methinks, however, that before that time shall have arrived, some great German savant, born and bred, probably, in the Nutmeg State, will have astonished the world by the discovery or invention of an universal germ panacea. In my mind’s eye, I can see his initial announcement: ‘The Greatest Discovery Since the World Began! A Boon for all Mankind! Professor Von Hombogg’s Great German Germicide, Bacilli Balm and Bacteria Buster! Warranted to destroy all Disease Germs, Bacteria and Bacilli and to render the Human System Absolutely Immune to all Disease of Whatsoever Kind or Character! One Bottle only is Required to produce the desired result; Satisfaction Guaranteed or Money Refunded!’

“What a rush there will be for Professor Von Hombogg’s new elixir of life, and what an immense fortune will be his! No future Rockefeller, or Morgan, or Carnegie, will be in the same class with Von Hombogg. Just think of it! No more pain, no more sickness, no more disease, no more death! Just one everlasting, unending era of good health! This will beat even Bob Ingersoll, who said if he had the ordering of things on this mundane sphere, he would have made good health catching, instead of disease.

“When this time shall have arrived, Oslerization will be the only remaining method of shuffling off this mortal coil. Perhaps, after the lapse of a thousand years or so, life may become a burden too grievous to be borne and one may have an insatiable desire to depart and be at rest.

“When trouble and care are weighing us down  
And pleasures are minimized—



Oh, then, but one refuge remains,  
We'll gladly be Oslerized.

“When the burdens of life so great have become  
That death is a boon to be prized,  
How cheerfully we'll lay them all down  
And gladly be Oslerized.

“When life on this earth is no longer desired,  
A truth by us all recognized,  
How good it will seem to escape  
And quickly be Oslerized!

“But, hold! No death save a death by violence will be possible. The guillotine, the hangman's rope, the electric chair, the stiletto or the musket! Which will you choose? Ah, me! Will Prof. Von Hombogg's discovery prove a blessing, or will it prove a curse? I don't know—do you?

“And so, old pioneers, farewell, adieu, good bye. Soon there will be none of you remaining. May you all reap a rich reward in the world beyond for the good you wrought in your earthly lives.”

## CHAPTER IV

### ROADS AND RAILROADS

NOTED INDIAN TRAILS—FIRST MICHIGAN WHITE MAN'S ROAD—  
TERRITORIAL AND STATE ROADS—THE OLD STAGE ROUTES—  
PLANK ROADS—THE PAW PAW RIVER—RAILROADS—THE MICHIGAN  
CENTRAL—KALAMAZOO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD—THE  
PAW PAW RAILROAD—TOLEDO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD  
(FRUIT BELT LINE)—THE PERE MARQUETTE RAILWAY.

When the first settlers came to Van Buren county there were, of course, no roads other than Indian trails. Certain portions of the county, however, that consisted of what were termed "oak openings" permitted of travel, even with teams, in almost any direction, and this was one attractive feature to the pioneer. Other parts of the county were heavily timbered with beech, maple, elm, oak, walnut, pine, hemlock, whitewood and other varieties of timber, so that the making of roads was almost a Herculean undertaking. Getting rid of this timber was one of the first objects of the pioneer, for upon these timbered lands no crops could be grown until the timber was removed. On many of the finest farms in the county, now in the highest state of cultivation, the timber would be worth more at the present time, as it stood sixty or seventy years ago, than the same farms, with all their fine buildings and modern improvements, are worth today. Road building was one of the first matters that necessarily engaged the attention of the pioneers. Even in the "openings" it was sometimes necessary to clear a way through intervening thickets, to construct some kind of bridges for crossing the streams, or to lay causeways across marshes and low-lands, while in the heavily timbered portions of the county the task of constructing even the rude roads of those primitive days was a stupendous one.

#### NOTED INDIAN TRAILS OF THE REGION

The first roads were the Indian trails, two of the principal ones passing through the county. One of them, coming from Little Traverse bay, extended southward and passed through the

counties of Kent, Allegan and Van Buren to the Pottawattamie villages on the St. Joseph river. Another, starting from the vicinity of Saginaw, passed up the Saginaw and Shiawassee rivers to the present location of the City of Ionia, thence southwesterly through the counties of Barry and Van Buren to the same Pottawattamie villages. Another, and the most important of these great Indian highways, which, however, did not enter Van Buren county, started southward on the west side of Lake Michigan and led toward the south from Green bay and the rivers of Wisconsin, around the southern extremity of the lake, thence northeasterly through the headquarters of Chief Pokagon in the southeastern part of Berrien county and on easterly through the wilderness to the Detroit river. It was over this trail that the warriors of the tribes had passed from time immemorial, and it was along this primitive highway that for many years the red men with their entire families passed to Malden in Canada to receive from the British government the small pension paid them (to men, women and children alike) for services rendered in the War of 1812.

#### FIRST MICHIGAN WHITE MAN'S ROAD

It was over this route that the old "Chicago road" was constructed, which was commenced in 1825, under authority of an act of congress, and was the first laid-out thoroughfare that traversed the state of Michigan. The road was not completed until 1836, and it was over this thoroughfare that many of the early settlers of southwest Michigan passed, finding their way into Van Buren county, as well as elsewhere.

A mania for the construction of roads seems to have possessed the authorities of the territory of Michigan and this spirit was equally evident after it became a state, as was manifest by the internal improvement clause embodied in the constitution of 1835 and by the acts of the legislatures immediately following. From 1833 to 1840, at least two hundred and fifty territorial and state roads were authorized by legislative enactment.

#### TERRITORIAL AND STATE ROADS

The road that is known to the inhabitants of Van Buren county and all along the line of the route as "the Territorial road," a highway passing through the state from east to west, was surveyed in 1836 and opened the following year. This road enters Van Buren county near the northeast corner of Antwerp and passes through that township and the townships of Paw Paw, Lawrence, Hamilton and Keeler into the township of Bainbridge, Berrien county, thence through that county to the cities of Ben-

ton Harbor and St. Joseph. It is still the Territorial road, although along a very considerable part of the original route it has been taken up and relaid on the section lines, or the east and west division lines of the sections through which it passes.

Other territorial and state roads in which Van Buren county had or might have had an interest, if they had ever been constructed as authorized, are as follows: Authorized by the legislative council of 1833: "A road from the village of Schoolcraft, in Kalamazoo county, on the most direct and eligible route, by Paw Paw Landing, to the mouth of Black river." The statute authorizing these roads also appointed commissioners to lay out and establish them. Joseph Smith, John Perrine and Abiel Fellows were so appointed for this road. "A road from Adamsville in Cass county, by the most direct and eligible route to the Paw Paw river, at or near the center of Van Buren county." Sterling Adams, Charles Jones and Lyman I. Daniels, commissioners.

Authorized by the legislative council of 1834: "A road from Marshall, Calhoun county, through Climax Prairie, by the most direct and eligible route to the county seat of Van Buren county." Michael Spencer, Benjamin F. Dwinnell and Nathaniel E. Matthews, commissioners.

Although Michigan was not admitted until 1837, the first constitution was adopted in 1835 and the first legislature convened on the second day of November, 1835, and remained in session until the 14th of the same month. Two sessions were held in 1836, the first from February 1st to March 28th, and the second from July 11th to July 26th. During the sessions of 1836, quite a number of state roads were authorized to be laid out and constructed. Among them were the following: "A state road from Edwardsburg, in Cass county, via Cassopolis, Volinia and Paw Paw Mills, to Allegan in Allegan county." David Crane, Jacob Silver and John L. Shearer, commissioners.

"A state road from Paw Paw Mills, in the village of Paw Paw, Van Buren county, leading through the village of Otsego, to the Falls of Grand river, in the county of Kent." John Wittenmeyer, Jacob Enos and Fowler Preston, commissioners.

Authorized by the legislature of 1837: "A road from Berrien in Berrien county, through Bainbridge to South Haven, in Van Buren county." Pitt Brown, John P. Davis and E. P. Deacon, commissioners.

Authorized by the legislature of 1838: "A state road from the village of Niles, in the county of Berrien, to the village of Kalamazoo, in the county of Kalamazoo, making the Twin Lakes in section sixteen of town five south, in range fifteen west, at Henry

Barney's, a point on said road." Uriel Enos, Richard V. V. Crane and Isaac W. Willard, commissioners.

Authorized by the legislature of 1841: "A state road leading from Centerville, in the county of St. Joseph, to Waterford, in the county of Van Buren, through the villages of Three Rivers, Little Prairie Ronde and Keelersville." W. H. Keeler, J. Moffit and John H. Bowman, commissioners. (The western terminus of this road was evidently intended to be Watervliet, in the county of Berrien, as that village used to be called "Waterford;" it is not and never was within the boundaries of Van Buren county.)

It should be remembered that a statute directing that a road should be laid out and established—particularly in the earlier years—did not necessarily mean that such road would be promptly constructed. In numerous instances years elapsed after the passage of an act authorizing a road and after it was laid out by the commissioners, before it would be made passable for vehicles, and frequently such roads were never opened. The collapse of the "wild cat" banking business seriously crippled the state finances and materially delayed the many plans for contemplated internal improvements.

#### THE OLD STAGE ROUTES

For many years, in fact until the railroads of the county superseded them, stages carried passengers from Lawton to St. Joseph and from Decatur to South Haven. Great Concord coaches, drawn by four horses were used and the passenger traffic carried on by them was no small item. Until the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad to Chicago the stage lines between the above mentioned towns embraced the most feasible and the direct routes between that city and eastern points. In addition to the passenger traffic, mail was also transported over the same lines which was an additional source of revenue to the proprietors of the routes. The completion of the Toledo and South Haven Railroad, as it was then called, between the villages of Lawton and Hartford, sent the last stage coach in the county to the scrap heap.

As an illustration of the value of the stage routes to the community the following statute enacted by the legislature of 1845 is apropos, and serves to emphasize the changes that time has wrought and to show the different conditions that exist in this twentieth century from those that obtained even as late as the middle of the nineteenth century.

"Whereas, The regular stage road leading from the village of Paw Paw, to the village of St. Joseph, passes through a thinly settled district of country where the highway taxes are insufficient to keep the road in good repair; and whereas, the revenue of the

Central Railroad depends in a great measure upon said stage road being kept in good repair for the safe and comfortable transmission of passengers to and from the western termination of said railroad:

Therefore, Be it enacted that all the non-resident highway taxes which shall be assessed upon non-resident lands within one and a half miles on each side of said stage road, between the village of Paw Paw in the county of Van Buren and the village of St. Joseph in the county of Berrien, be and the same are hereby appropriated to be expended in improving said stage road between the village of Paw Paw and the village of St. Joseph aforesaid for the period of two years from the date of this act."

A similar statute was passed in 1847 appropriating non-resident highway taxes to apply on the road "commencing on the east side of section ten, town three south, range fifteen west, thence westerly through the village of Brush Creek (Lawrence) in Van Buren county and Waterford (Watervliet) in the county of Berrien," and thence westerly to St. Joseph.

In 1857, a similar act of the legislature appropriated for three years all the non-resident highway tax within two miles of the center of the road leading from Dowagiac, county of Cass, to the territorial road in Van Buren county, for the improvement of such road.

In 1859 the road leading from Breedsville to South Haven, one of the principal stage roads of Van Buren county, was given the non-resident highway tax assessed within one mile on either side of such road.

The congress of 1841 appropriated and set apart to the state half a million acres of public lands for internal improvement purposes, the minimum price of which was fixed by act of the legislature of 1844 at \$1.25 per acre. In 1848 the legislature appropriated seven thousand acres of such lands for opening and improving the state road from Constantine, St. Joseph county, through Cassopolis, Cass county, to Paw Paw, in Van Buren county.

But few of these old lines of road now remain as originally laid out. Most of the statutes authorizing them provided that they should be laid on the most direct and eligible route. This resulted in many crooked and angling roads, most of which have been changed and relaid on section, half section or quarter section lines, so that there are comparatively few roads in the county but run parallel with or at right angles to each other; and such is the general rule throughout the state. Of course there are exceptions. Lakes, of which there are many scattered throughout Van Buren county, and other localities as well, and other natural obstructions

have prevented some roads from being laid on direct lines, but such highways are the exception and not the rule.

#### PLANK ROADS

The next transportation idea that seems to have struck the people of Michigan was that of plank roads, and the craze was about as virulent as that of territorial and state roads had been; but the fever did not last as long.

The legislature of 1848 enacted a general plank road law, authorizing the incorporation of plank road companies, permitting them under certain conditions to occupy the country highways and the streets of villages, prescribing that the planks used in the construction of such roads should be not less than three inches in thickness and fixing the following maximum rates of toll: For a vehicle or carriage drawn by two animals, two cents per mile, and one cent per mile for every sled or sleigh so drawn, if drawn by more than two animals; three-quarters of a cent per mile for every such additional animal; for any kind of a vehicle drawn by one animal, one cent per mile; for every score of sheep one half a cent per mile; for every score of neat cattle, two cents per mile—there was no provision in the statute fixing toll for less than a score of domestic animals—and for every horse and rider or led-horse, one cent per mile. Farmers were exempt from toll in passing from one part of the farm to another while engaged in the business of the farm. Toll gates might be erected at such points as the company chose and the penalty for illegally passing any toll gate was a forfeiture to the company of the sum of twenty-five dollars. It will be noticed that it cost a person driving his own team and carriage along one of those roads exactly the same sum that he now has to pay for riding in a palace car along the great railroad lines of the state. Timber was plenty in those days and planks were cheap, and yet the plank road companies, with very few exceptions, were not a financial success. To build such roads in these modern days when lumber has become so scarce and valuable would cost many times more than in those early days.

Van Buren county had her full share of plank road corporations, but only comparatively few plank roads.

The "Paw Paw Plank Road Company" was chartered by the legislature of 1848, "with power to lay out, establish and construct a plank road from the village of Paw Paw, in the county of Van Buren, to some point on the Central Railroad, at or near where the Little Prairie Ronde road crosses said railroad." The capital stock of said company was fixed at \$10,000, in shares of twenty-five dollars each. Isaac W. Willard, James Crane and Nathan

Mears were appointed commissioners to receive subscriptions of stock.

By the legislature of 1849 a charter was given to the "Decatur, Lawrence and Breedsville Plank Road Company," which was authorized "to lay out, establish and construct a plank road and all necessary buildings from the village of Decatur to the village of Lawrence, thence to the village of Breedsville, in Van Buren county." Aaron W. Broughton, Marvin Hannah, William B. Sherwood, Henry Coleman, Jonathan N. Hinckley, Milo J. Goss, Benjamin F. Chadwick, Horatio N. Phelps, Israel Kellogg and John Andrews were appointed commissioners to receive subscriptions to the stock of the company, which was fixed at the sum of \$40,000, divided into forty dollar shares.

Seven companies, the line of whose proposed roads lay wholly or in part within Van Buren county were incorporated by the legislature of 1850, as follows: The Breedsville and South Haven Plank Road Company, with power to "lay out, establish and construct a plank road and all necessary buildings from Breedsville to the mouth of Black River, Van Buren county, by the most eligible route." The capital stock of this company was fixed at the sum of \$25,000 divided into twenty-five dollar shares, and Marvin Hannah, Elijah Knowles, Joseph B. Sturgis, Smith Brown and Jonathan N. Hinckley were appointed commissioners to receive stock subscriptions.

The Paw Paw and Lawrence Plank Road Company, with like power to lay out and construct a plank road from the village of Paw Paw to the village of Lawrence in Van Buren county. The capital stock of this company was fixed at the sum of \$25,000, in shares of twenty-five dollars each. Fitz H. Stevens, John R. Baker and Nelson Phelps were appointed commissioners.

The Paw Paw and Schoolcraft Plank Road Company, with authority to lay out and construct a plank road from Paw Paw Station (now Lawton) on the Central Railroad, in the county of Van Buren, to the village of Schoolcraft in the county of Kalamazoo. Capital stock, \$20,000, divided into twenty-five dollar shares. Commissioners, Edward A. Parks, Uriah Kenney, Evert B. Dyckman and Isaac W. Willard.

The Paw Paw and Allegan Plank Road Company was empowered to lay out, establish and construct a plank road company from the village of Paw Paw, to intersect with the Kalamazoo and Grand River Plank Road Company at the most eligible point in the county of Allegan. Capital stock, \$25,000; shares twenty-five dollars each. Commissioners, Isaac W. Willard, James Crane, John R. Baker, Henry H. Booth, Joseph Fisk, Abraham Hoag,



Joshua Hill, Charles Parkhurst, D. W. C. Chapin, Eber Sherwood and A. Rossman.

The Decatur and St. Joseph Plank Road Company was created and empowered to lay out, establish and construct a plank road from the village of Decatur, Van Buren county, to the village of St. Joseph, Berrien county. Capital stock \$30,000; shares twenty-five dollars each. Commissioners, Solomon Wheeler, B. C. Hoyt, Henry Morton, Samuel McRoys, Henry Coleman and W. H. Keeler.

The Lawrence and St. Joseph Plank Road Company was chartered and authorized to lay out, establish and construct a plank road from such point in the township of Lawrence, in Van Buren county, as the commissioners should determine, to St. Joseph, in the county of Berrien. Capital stock, \$50,000; shares twenty-five dollars each.

The Kalamazoo and Breedsville Plank Road Company was incorporated and given power and authority to lay out, establish and construct a plank road from the village of Kalamazoo, in the county of Kalamazoo, to the village of Breedsville, county of Van Buren. Capital stock, \$30,000; shares fifty dollars each. Commissioners, D. B. Webster, B. Drake, T. P. Sheldon and Marvin Hannah.

The term of all these corporations was fixed at sixty years, but they were all dead long before the lapse of that period of time.

Out of this multiplicity of roads authorized, the only plank roads constructed in Van Buren county were the road from Paw Paw to the Central Railroad, which was controlled by Hon. Isaac W. Willard of Paw Paw, and that from Paw Paw to Lawrence, of which John R. Baker, also of Paw Paw, was the controlling spirit. Both of these roads went out of commission about the year 1853, and neither of them was the source of any gain to the stockholders. The remains of them, however, were visible for many years thereafter. Indeed some of the planks are yet in evidence—not as part of the highway, however. Van Buren, the eastern part of the county in particular, has numerous gravel beds which afford excellent road material and there are many miles of fine gravel roads in the county.

#### THE PAW PAW RIVER

Perhaps it would not be strictly correct to call a river a road, but as a not very successful attempt was made to make the Paw Paw river a highway of commerce and an avenue of transportation between the villages of Paw Paw and St. Joseph, on the shore

of Lake Michigan, there is no impropriety in mentioning it in connection with the "roads and railroads" of the county.

Before the days of railroads, the subject of water transportation was a much more important matter than at the present day. The idea of the Paw Paw as a navigable stream was born at an early date, and was not abandoned for a considerable number of years. With this idea in mind, the territorial government, in 1833, authorized the construction of roads connecting the "Forks of the Paw Paw" (which was supposed to be the head of the navigable waters of the stream) with Schoolcraft, and other places in Kalamazoo, Van Buren and Barry counties. In 1840 Isaac W. Willard built two large flat boats and loaded them with flour from the "Paw Paw Mills" and dispatched them for the village of St. Joseph. It was a comparatively easy matter to make the run down the river, but the labor of poling the boats back to Paw Paw against the current was a difficult matter and only accomplished by a great expenditure of time and muscle. These two boats of Mr. Willard's were named the "Daniel Buckley," Albert R. Wildey, commander, and the "Wave," commanded by William H. Hurlbult. It is not to be supposed that the exalted position of "flat boat commander" was, by any means, a sinecure. There was, however, for a time, a considerable flat boat traffic on the river from Paw Paw to Lake Michigan, but it did not prove to be very profitable. Interest in the matter was revived in 1848 by the enactment of a statute appropriating ten thousand acres of the internal improvement lands of the Lower Peninsula "for the improvement of the navigation of the Paw Paw river." Nothing of value to the people resulted from this legislation and the river remains to this day a beautiful, winding stream, passing through forest, field and farm, one of the crookedest streams in Michigan, and watering as fine a stretch of country as may be found in the entire Peninsular state.

#### RAILROADS

It has been said and has been recorded as an historical fact that the act of the legislative council incorporating a railroad from Detroit to St. Joseph was the first official movement looking to the construction of a railroad within the territory of Michigan, but such is not the fact.

The first railroad corporation in the territory was that of the Pontiac and Detroit Railway Company, which was approved July 31, 1830, nearly two years before the date of the act of incorporation looking to the construction of a line of railroad across the state, from east to west.

The legislative council of 1832 passed the act that created a railroad corporation for the construction of a railroad to be known as the Detroit and St. Joseph Railroad, with authority to "construct a single or double railroad from the city of Detroit to the mouth of the St. Joseph river, commencing at Detroit, and passing through, or as near as practicable, to the village of Ypsilanti, and the county seats of the counties of Washtenaw, Jackson and Kalamazoo, with power to transport, take and carry property and persons upon the same, by the power and force of steam, of animals, or any mechanical or other power, or any combination of them."

The company was bound, under penalty of forfeiture of its charter, to begin the work within two years, and within six years to construct and put in operation thirty miles of the road, within fifteen years to complete one-half the line and to have the entire road in operation within a period of thirty years.

The proposed line was surveyed by Lieutenant Berrien, a regular army officer, and some work, enough to retain the corporate rights of the company for the two years prescribed in the act, was done on the eastern end of the route. The question of whether the company could have completed thirty miles of road within the prescribed six years was never solved, as before the expiration of that time new and important official action was taken.

#### THE MICHIGAN CENTRAL

One of the first things that engaged the attention of the state, after its admission, was an extended system of internal improvements. With this policy Governor Mason was in full sympathy. A Board of Internal Improvements was authorized by statute and appointed by the governor, upon which large discretionary powers were conferred, and a magnificent scheme of such improvements was at once entered upon by the state. Among them three lines of railways across the entire breadth of the state were authorized, to be known as and called the "Northern" the "Central" and the "Southern"—a magnificent scheme, indeed, for the young state, and one that eventually came to full fruition, by the construction of the Michigan Central, the Michigan Southern and the Detroit and Milwaukee lines of road, the latter being now a part of the Grand Trunk system.

Special authority was conferred upon the Board of Internal Improvements to purchase for the state the rights of the Detroit and St. Joseph company. The legislature made an appropriation of \$400,000 for the Central road and lesser sums for the other two. In order to procure the necessary funds for carrying out the extensive improvements planned, the legislature authorized the ne-

gotiation of a loan of five millions of dollars. This provided means with which the commissioners undertook the work of constructing the Southern and Central roads.

The roads of that day were laid with strap rail, that is, with a flat rail spiked onto wooden stringers, and "snake heads" were not of infrequent occurrence. These so-called snake heads were occasioned by the end of the iron straps becoming loosened, curling up and coming through the floor of the coaches, endangering the lives and persons of travelers.

An illustration of the primitive character of those early roads is afforded by the following joint resolution of the legislature of 1842: "Resolved, That the commissioner of internal improvement be instructed to cause a train of passenger cars to run over the Central railroad on the first day of the week, at the same hours that it does on other days."

Another joint resolution, adopted by the same legislature, required the Board of Commissioners of Internal Improvements to restrain Sunday trains, when, in their opinion, it was not for the interest of the state to run them.

The progress made in the construction of the road was slow and in 1846, after the lapse of nine years, the Central line had only been completed to Kalamazoo, a distance of 144 miles. In the meantime the state had exhausted its funds, and the people had become heartily tired of having its railroads built by its politicians, some of whom, without doubt, had waxed fat while the "d ear people" had to foot the bills.

By an act of the legislature approved March 28, 1846, the Michigan Central Railroad Company was organized and given authority to purchase the road from the state for the sum of \$2,000,000, which was much less than it had cost the people, but nevertheless a good bargain, for by it the state disposed of a property that bade fair to become a financial incubus on its prosperity. By the terms of the purchase and sale of the road to the company it was not compelled to follow the route originally planned, to make St. Joseph its western terminus, but was only required to construct the road to some point within the state of Michigan, on or near Lake Michigan and accessible to steamboats. This was an unfortunate provision for Van Buren county, as the new company at once changed the route, making New Buffalo the western terminus instead of St. Joseph. By this action, instead of passing diagonally through the central part of the county, the road merely cut off a small portion from the southeastern corner thereof, and instead of reaching St. Joseph, one of the best harbors on the east shore of the lake, it stopped at New Buffalo, which had no harbor of consequence and never can have. The road was completed to Niles in

1848, to New Buffalo in 1849, to Michigan City, Indiana, in 1851 and to Chicago the next year. Van Buren county stations on the Central are Mattawan, a small unincorporated village; Lawton, at first called Paw Paw Station, four miles southeast of Paw Paw, with a population according to the census of 1810, of 1,042; and Decatur, with a population of 1,286, according to the same census.

#### KALAMAZOO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD

A line of railroad from the village of Bronson, now the flourishing city of Kalamazoo, to the mouth of Black river, now the site of the prosperous city of South Haven, was one of the dreams of the early pioneers—a dream that was destined to complete fulfillment in the course of time.

On the 28th day of March, 1836, an act was passed by the legislature incorporating the Kalamazoo and Lake Michigan Railroad Company and authorizing it to construct a line of road “from the mouth of the South Black river, in the county of Van Buren, to the county seat of Kalamazoo county.

The parties mentioned in the articles of association were Epa-phroditus Ransom, Charles E. Stuart, Edwin H. Lothrop, Horace H. Comstock and Isaac W. Willard. The capital stock of the company was fixed at \$400,000. However, before anything was done looking to the building of the road, the panic of 1837 came on, the banking system of the state reached an inglorious end, and the powers of the company lapsed because of non-user. Although there may have been more or less discussion of the project thereafter, it was more than thirty years before new life was infused into the scheme, and when it was again revived there was much discussion as to whether the road should be built direct from Kalamazoo to South Haven or whether it should start at Lawton on the main line of the Central and run thence to South Haven. Railroad meetings were held in various localities to discuss the project. At a meeting held in Paw Paw to take into consideration the matter of giving aid to a line over the latter route, which would have been entirely within the county of Van Buren, one prominent man remarked that he would give the devil his head for a football whenever the road should be built direct from Kalamazoo to South Haven. The prevailing sentiment seemed to be that the Van Buren county route would be chosen in any event and nothing in the way of aiding the project was offered by the citizens of Paw Paw and vicinity, although they had been found willing at various times to help other and less promising schemes, which had all come to naught. Perhaps that was the reason that they would offer nothing on this occasion. They had been victimized

too often. This would seem to have been the one time when they missed the mark, for no place in the county would have received greater benefit from such a line than Paw Paw.

On the 14th day of April, 1869, articles of association were filed organizing the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad Company, and the following named gentlemen were named as directors: Allen Potter, Lucius B. Kendall, John Dudgeon, David Fisher, Stephen W. Fisk, Charles D. Ruggles, Amos S. Brown, Samuel Hoppin, Stephen Garnet, John Scott, Samuel Rogers, Daniel G. Wright and Barney H. Dyckman. Allen Potter was chosen president of the company, but resigned soon afterward and was succeeded by James A. Walter. During Mr. Walter's administration, arrangements were perfected by which the Michigan Central Company guaranteed the bonds of the new company to the amount of \$640,000, the people of Kalamazoo aided the project by bonds and subscription and the townships along the line also voted a large amount of aid in the way of township bonds. Such bonds were held to be unconstitutional by the supreme court of the state, but were upheld by the United States supreme court, and where such bonds were held by non-residents who could bring suit in the federal court they were collectible and were eventually paid.

By these various means money was obtained for the construction of the road which was opened as far as Pine Grove, in Van Buren county, in the month of January, 1870, and was completed to South Haven in December of the same year. And, as far as heard from, the devil got nobody's head for a football.

The road has been of great benefit to the county, has been especially helpful in developing the northern tier of townships through which it runs, and has been the principal cause of the building up of a number of flourishing villages along the line.

The road long since passed into the hands and under the control of the Michigan Central and is now designated as the South Haven division of that company.

The Van Buren county stations along the line are Mentha, a little burg so named from the large peppermint interests that were the sole reason for its birth; Kendall, an unincorporated village; Pine Grove, likewise unincorporated; Gobleville, a village of 537 inhabitants according to the census of 1910; Bloomingdale, population 501; Berlamont, Columbia, Grand Junction, Lacota, Kibbie, all unincorporated villages; and South Haven, with a population of 3,767 inhabitants, the largest place and the only city in the county.

## THE PAW PAW RAILROAD

From the days of the pioneers the people of Paw Paw had desired and expected some kind of railroad connection. It was a great disappointment to them when the route of the Michigan Central was changed so as to run to New Buffalo instead of to St. Joseph. Paw Paw was to be a point on that road, as originally laid out, and had the route not been changed the history of the county would, without doubt, have been far different from what it is at the present time. Numerous projects had been presented that seemed to promise the desired railroad connection, but none of them had been realized. The town had even undertaken to build a little road of its own, connecting with the line of the Central, between the villages of Lawton and Mattawan, instead of running direct to the latter village as it obviously should have done. The real reason of this action grew out of jealousy between the two towns. Lawton did not care so very much about the matter as she had the Central and could get along very well without a little road to Paw Paw. This project proceeded as far as the grading of a considerable portion of route, when for some reason, probably a lack of funds, it was abandoned and was afterward derisively named the "calico grade." Afterward, in 1867, the citizens of the vicinity became convinced that if they ever had a railroad, they must make one for themselves. A local company was organized and the Paw Paw Railroad was constructed direct from Paw Paw to Lawton, connecting at the latter place with the Michigan Central. The road was a short line, only four miles, but it gave the people of Paw Paw an outlet and its opening was an occasion of great rejoicing. It continued in operation for a period of ten years before any change was made. One engine and one passenger coach comprised its principal equipment and the memory of the old "Vulcan," as the engine was named, still remains with many of the older inhabitants. The means for the building of this road came principally from Paw Paw township ten per cent bonds which were voted to the amount of \$50,000, in aid of the project, and which, before they were fully canceled, cost the town double that sum, as, under the decision of the supreme court, a tax could not be legally levied for their payment until after suit had been brought and judgment rendered in the federal court.

## TOLEDO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD (FRUIT BELT LINE)

This road, with the high sounding name, was at first only a narrow gauge road nine miles in length extending from Paw Paw to the village of Lawrence on the west. The company that built it was organized in the winter of 1866-7. The late John Ihling

was the moving spirit in the construction of this road. Without means and associated with F. B. Adams, Henry Ford and George W. Lawton of Lawton, and John W. Free and Edwin Martin of Paw Paw, who were all public spirited citizens, comfortably situated, but none of them wealthy enough to finance much of a railroad project, Mr. Ihling commenced the work of building the road. Local subscriptions were solicited and some considerable amount secured, the larger amount from citizens of Lawrence, who were anxious to have some kind of railroad connection with the outside world.

By the help thus acquired and by indomitable energy and "push," by what is sometimes aptly designated as "cheek," the road was completed to Lawrence, and on the first day of October, 1877, was opened for traffic. The writer had the pleasure of being a guest of Mr. Ihling on the first passenger trip over the road.

The only one of the gentlemen above named as promoters of the road that is yet in the land of the living is John W. Free, now president of the Paw Paw Savings Bank.

But this road was only a three feet gauge, while the Paw Paw road was of standard gauge, which necessitated much unloading and reloading of freight at Paw Paw, and it was desirable that the gauge of the latter road should be narrowed up so that this extra handling of freight and change of cars could be avoided. To this plan there was a good deal of opposition and it was sought to be blocked by injunction of the court. To avoid this, a gang of men were assembled one Sunday morning when legal process could not issue and be served, and before the close of the day there was a narrow gauge road all the way from Lawton to Lawrence.

The road did not stop permanently at Lawrence, but within a few years was extended to Hartford, connecting there with the Chicago and West Michigan, now the main line of the Pere Marquette, and eventually was continued on to South Haven. So at last there was a line of railway from the Michigan Central to South Haven, just as years before it had been hoped there might be; but it was a narrow gauge and this proved to be unsatisfactory. So it was determined that the road should be widened, and again Paw Paw came to the aid of the project with ten thousand dollars of bonds to be devoted to "public improvements," which really meant the improvement of this road. A proceeding to hold up the payment of these bonds was begun in the circuit court, which sustained their validity. The case was appealed to the supreme court, where the decision of the lower court was reversed, but the bonds had found their way into the hands of innocent (?) non-resident parties, were beyond the jurisdiction of the Michigan court and were eventually paid. The road was converted into



a standard gauge and has since been doing good service for the people. It passed from the control of the building company into the hands of the bondholders, and its ambitious name was changed to the "South Haven and Eastern," possibly because it ran easterly from South Haven. It was uncertain just how far east it would eventually get, but there was no probability that it would ever reach the City of Toledo, its first paper terminus. Eventually it passed into the control of the Pere Marquette Company and was run as a feeder for that road at Hartford.

In 1905 a company had been formed, of which S. J. Dunkley of South Haven was a prime mover, with the avowed object of constructing an electric interurban railway between the cities of Kalamazoo and South Haven. The company purchased the right-of-way for a large part of the route through Van Buren county, built a line between the villages of Paw Paw and Lawton and operated it as a steam road for one season (1906), and so for a brief period of time Paw Paw actually had two railroads. This new road utilized, for part of its route, the old "calico grade." Meanwhile, the Michigan Central had relayed and double tracked its road between Kalamazoo and Lawton, leaving its old road bed and a considerable portion of its iron unoccupied. This passed into the hands of the new company and they actually operated the road from Paw Paw to Kalamazoo. Some sort of a deal was eventually made by which the line first occupied by the old Paw Paw road between Paw Paw and Lawton passed into the possession of this new company, and not needing two lines between these points the newly laid iron was taken up and Paw Paw once more had but one railroad. This road again changed its name and assumed one as ambitious as its first, being called the "Kalamazoo, Lake Shore and Chicago," but it is popularly known as "the Fruit Belt Line." Recently another change of ownership has taken place and the road is now controlled and operated by the "Michigan United Railways Company," which has announced its intention to electrify the line in the near future, thus providing an interurban line across the state from Detroit to South Haven. The principal Van Buren county stations along this line are the villages of Mattawan, Lawton, Paw Paw, Lawrence, Hartford, Covert and South Haven. Lawton has a population, according to the last census of 1,042; Paw Paw, 1,643; Lawrence, 663; Hartford, 1,268; Mattawan and Covert are unincorporated.

#### THE PERE MARQUETTE RAILWAY

In 1869 a company was organized under the general railroad law of the state, called the Chicago and Michigan Lake Shore Rail-

road Company, the object of which was to build a railroad along the lake shore from New Buffalo northward. A. H. Morrison, of Berrien county, was the first president of the road. This was essentially a Berrien county project, although the route of the proposed road passed through the townships of Hartford, Bangor and Columbia in Van Buren county. The road was opened for traffic from St. Joseph to New Buffalo in February, 1870, and one year later had reached Grand Junction near the north line of Van Buren county, at which point it intersects the South Haven division of the Michigan Central. The road was continued to the north, reaching Pentwater on the first day of January, 1872, and being subsequently extended to Petoskey. Another part of the line was built from Holland to Grand Rapids. The road continued in possession of the original company until 1874, when it was surrendered to the bondholders and its name changed to the Chicago and West Michigan Railroad. A considerable number of years since it was purchased by the Pere Marquette and by that company extended from New Buffalo to Chicago. The road has become a part of the main line of the Pere Marquette system, one of the great railroad systems that "gridiron" the state of Michigan.

The principal Van Buren county stations on this line are the villages of Hartford, Bangor, Breedsville, Grand Junction. Hartford is a village of 1,268 inhabitants, as shown by the census of 1910, Bangor has a population of 1,158, and Breedsville has a population of 219 souls. Grand Junction is not incorporated.

Of the eighteen townships in the county there are but three that no railroad touches—Almena, Keeler and Waverly; although there are three others,—Arlington, Hamilton and Porter—that have only a small corner cut off, Porter being barely touched.

Two of these roads make close connection with steamship lines to Chicago: the South Haven branch of the Central at South Haven, and the Fruit Belt Line at the same place, and also, by reason of its connection with the Pere Marquette at Hartford, at Benton Harbor and St. Joseph in the county of Berrien, thus giving the people of the county the benefit of water transportation to the great metropolis of the west during the season of navigation.

## CHAPTER V

### EDUCATIONAL HISTORY

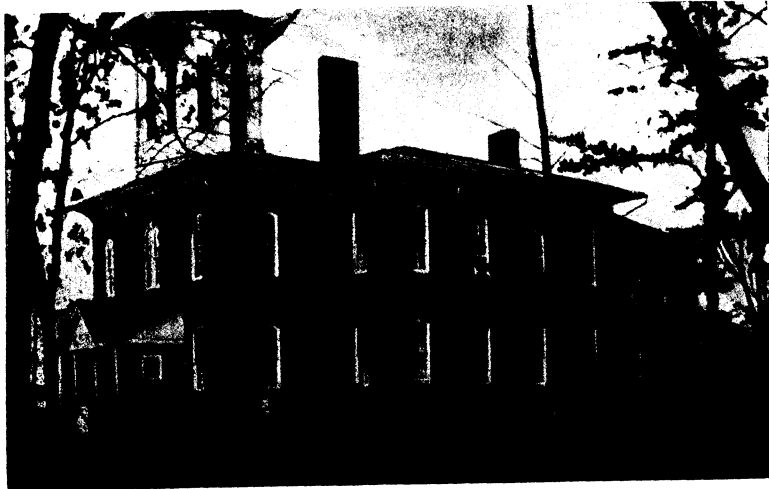
ACT OF 1827 MODIFIED—HARASSED SCHOOL INSPECTORS—THE  
TEACHERS' QUALIFICATIONS—MRS. ALLEN RICE'S REMINISCENCES  
—THE OLD AND THE NEW.

Schools went hand in hand with the pioneers and their support was regulated by statute at an early day. By an act of the legislative council of the territory of Michigan for the establishment of common schools, approved April 12, 1827, it was provided among other things: "That every township within this territory containing fifty families or householders shall be provided with a good schoolmaster or schoolmasters, of good morals, to teach children to read and write and to instruct them in the English or French language, as well as in arithmetic, orthography and decent behavior, for such time as shall be equivalent to six months for one school in each year. And every township containing one hundred families or householders shall be provided with such schoolmaster or teacher for such time as shall be equivalent to twelve months for one school in each year. And every township containing one hundred and fifty families or householders shall be provided with such schoolmaster or teacher for such term of time as shall be equivalent to six months in each year, and shall, in addition thereto, be provided with a schoolmaster or teacher as above described, to instruct the children in the English language for such term of time as shall be equivalent to twelve months for one school in each year. And every township containing two hundred families or householders shall be provided with a grammar schoolmaster of good morals, well instructed in the Latin, French and English languages, and shall in addition thereto be provided with a schoolmaster or teacher, as above described, to instruct children in the English language, for such term as shall be equivalent to twelve months for each of said schools in each year."

The statute also provided penalties for refusal or neglect to comply with its provisions, as follows: The penalty imposed on any township having fifty and less than one hundred families or householders was a forfeiture of fifty dollars; on the next grade,



HIGH SCHOOL, PAW PAW



LAWTON HIGH SCHOOL

comprising townships from one hundred to one hundred and fifty families or householders, a forfeiture of one hundred dollars; and on the higher grade of one hundred and fifty families or householders or more, a forfeiture of one hundred and fifty dollars. These penalties were all made proportionable for any neglect for a less time than one year.

The same statute provided that a board of inspectors, not exceeding five in number, should be chosen in each township, three or more of whom should be competent to examine both the teachers and the schools; that no person should be employed as a teacher without a certificate issued to him by the board of inspectors; and "that if any person shall presume to keep such school, without a certificate as aforesaid, he or she shall forfeit and pay a sum not exceeding two hundred dollars to be recovered in any court having jurisdiction thereof, one moiety thereof to the informer and the other moiety to the use of the poor of the township where such school may be kept.

"Provision was likewise made for the division of townships into school districts, for the election of a board of trustees in each district to have control of the concerns of the district and for the electors of the township to vote a tax for the support of schools.

"Schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged." These words are found in the ordinance of 1787, which provided that section sixteen in each township should be set apart as school land; and by act of the legislative council approved July 3, 1828, townships were authorized to choose a board of trustees to have charge of such school lands and to lease the same or any part thereof and to apply the proceeds toward the payment of the school teachers employed in their several townships.

#### ACT OF 1827 MODIFIED

By an act of the legislative council of the territory, approved November 5, 1829, the system inaugurated in 1827 was modified in a considerable degree. This act provided, among other things, that a board of "commissioners of common schools" consisting of five members should be elected in each township, who should lay out and number the school districts of their several townships and perform certain other prescribed duties; that three school directors should be chosen in each district whose duty it should be to levy a tax for the building of schoolhouses where such structures had not been previously provided; to employ qualified teachers in their respective districts for a term of three months at least in each year and for such longer time as the inhabitants in public-school meeting should direct, said schools to commence on or be-

fore the tenth day of December in each year; to make out a rate bill for the collection of the wages of the teacher, to be levied on the inhabitants of the district, proportional to the number of days' attendance of the pupils from the family of each patron of the school. Provision was also made for the same proportional furnishing of fuel for the school, which might be delivered in kind, otherwise to stand as a personal tax.

These early laws may be considered as the beginning of Michigan's magnificent common school system, which is universally acknowledged to be second to none.

#### HARASSED SCHOOL INSPECTORS

It may well be supposed that in those pioneer days it was not always easy to find teachers fully equipped as the law required, and still less easy to fill the position of school inspectors duly qualified to pass upon the qualifications of those persons who applied for the necessary certificates. And this was not only true in those territorial days, but it continued in a greater or less degree long after Michigan became a state, indeed as long as the township system of examination of teachers continued in existence.

The following well authenticated anecdote will illustrate this matter: It is said to have transpired in the township of Pine Grove, where William Adair, an American citizen of Irish descent, being considered well equipped for the office, was elected as a school inspector and was the only one of the three chosen who took the oath of office, and he, if he had been better posted as to his official duties, would, without doubt, have declined the honor.

One morning, while "Billy" was industriously attending to his more congenial duties in his saw-mill, word was sent to him that a young lady had presented herself at his residence and wished to interview him. "Eh," said Billy, "What fur?" "To be examined for a certificate to teach school," was the reply. "Ain't got no time to attend to it this mornin'. Tell her to come agin," said Billy. "No," was the response, "you are sworn in and must examine her now." After some hesitation, Billy finally stripped off his "wamus," went to his house, washed and shaved, combed out his bushy locks, donned his Sunday-go-to-meeting garments and a pair of new moccasins, and bashfully presented himself before his fair visitor. "Are you Mr. Adair, the school inspector?" asked the young lady. "Indade, mum," said Billy, reaching up and pulling the "cow lick" that graced the top of his head, "I suppose I be, mum." "I have come to be examined for a certificate to teach school," continued the lady. "Surtificut, is ut?" said Billy. "Yes, sir," she replied. "I must surtify ye kin?"

enquired Billy, "Nade it be a paper, a writin?" he continued with a groan. "I think it should be," was the reply. "Kin ye write?" responded Billy. The lady informed him that she possessed that necessary qualification. "Well thin," said Billy, "jest ye write it out and let me see ye do it." The applicant wrote what she thought would answer the purpose. "Rade it if ye will," said Billy, with a show of confidence that he was for from possessing. The lady complied and read over what she had written. "Now," said Billy, "let me see ye write William Adair on it if ye plase." The young lady, after some hesitation, did as directed. "Now," said Billy, "will ye take thot as yer surtificut and go yer way?" "No," was the reply, "you must sign it or it will do me no good, they will dispute it." "They will?" said Billy. "Show me the mon that dare dispute the word of a lady and I will tach him better manners." But the young woman persisted, and Billy finally set to work to write his name. Beginning well at the left side of the sheet in order that he might have plenty of room, he succeeded in spelling out "William Adair," in letters that nearly obliterated the calligraphy of the applicant for the necessary document, but he would have preferred that she had asked him to tackle the largest monarch of the forest or thrash a schoolhouse full of doubters as to the regularity of his certificate, which was the only one he ever gave, but it served its purpose. Billy resigned his office shortly afterward.

Another instance is recalled of the perspicuity of a member of a board of school inspectors which was exhibited as late as 1860. The writer was at that time a young man, barely turned twenty-one, and his fellow citizens had done him the honor of choosing him for an inspector of schools. The two other members of the board were elderly men—one of them a teacher of years' standing, the other a minister of the Gospel, highly educated. A class of young ladies and gentlemen were being examined before the board, when this question was propounded by the gray haired schoolmaster member: "Why is a nautical mile longer than a statute mile?" None could answer. Indeed the only correct answer that could have been given would have been, "Because it is;" but the schoolmaster proposed to enlighten the class on the matter, and proceeded to explain that the nautical mile was measured over the level sea, while the statute mile was measured over hill and valley and therefore does not reach as far as it would on a level and that the difference in their length was an allowance made for the inequalities of the earth's surface. Being scarcely more than a boy, we did not dare to dispute the absurd proposition of the schoolmaster. No so, however, with the preacher, who, to the great confusion of the would-be savant, promptly replied "It

isn't so. It isn't so. There isn't a word of truth in such a proposition."

The following quoted extracts from a paper written in 1899 by the late Charles D. Lawton, one of the regents of the Michigan University, will serve to illustrate the methods of conducting the schools of early pioneer days. "Every old pioneer," said Mr. Lawton, "and all who have passed the three-score mark, will vividly recall the primitive educational facilities of their early school days in Van Buren county, if perchance, they were so fortunate as to have their lot cast so long ago in this far away wilderness. But, whether here or elsewhere, the experiences of school life in this northern or western country, where the conditions were the same, did not greatly differ. So long as memory retains its grasp upon any of the past events of life, the lights and shadows of school days in the little old log schoolhouse will remain among the most permanent of one's reminiscences. 'Memory reveals the rose, but secretes the thorn,' and thus we are apt to recall the lights and ignore the shadows of those early school days, when in truth, school life was not a period of unalloyed delight. We did not, at that time, consider it so very much fun to sit all day on the high benches made without backs that extended around three sides of the school room." So high in fact were these seats that were simply slabs with legs under them—tempting, indeed, to the pocket knives of the lads—that the younger pupils could not "touch bottom" so to speak, but were compelled to sit during the long hours of school with their feet just aching to touch the floor. Back of these seats, or in front of them, it depended how one sat, was a wide board for a desk, with a shelf underneath to hold the few books that the pupils were so fortunate as to possess. The usual position for the more advanced scholars who had attained to the dignity of studying the three R's was facing these desks with their backs toward the teacher, which gave the schoolmaster or ma'am what seemed to be an undue advantage, enabling him or her to see without being seen, save only by an occasional furtive glance.

#### THE TEACHERS' QUALIFICATIONS

To quote again from Mr. Lawton: "Unfortunately for the happiness of the pupil, the teacher was generally chosen for his muscular development, for his ability to punish and from his willingness to put this ability into constant practice, rather than for his superior mental acquirements and ability to impart instruction." Especially was this the case with the winter schools, which were practically the only terms attended by the "big" boys and girls. "As a rule, in the schoolhouse of pioneer days, the whip and fer-



ule predominated and the chief ingenuity shown by the teacher was in his methods of administering punishment. Many an elderly man can recall the torture he endured by being compelled to hold his finger on the head of a nail in the floor, or forced to lie over a chair and grasp the lower rungs with the hands, thus placing himself in the best possible position for application of rawhide or birch. Possibly, to vary the method of punishment in the case of girls, resort was had to the ferule applied to the hand until it was blistered. There was sometimes a sequel to these punishments, the scene of which was laid in the home, where, if the school episode became known, there resulted a further trouncing administered by the paternal hand, so that it became an important matter for the pupil to suppress information."

And sometimes there was a good deal of ingenuity displayed on the part of the pupil in trying to "get even." Occasionally the master would sit down on a bent pin or receive a severe thrust from a darning needle, which by some device would be vigorously projected through a hole in his chair causing him to make a sudden spring from his seat, much to the amusement of those who were in the secret and to the great surprise and mystification of those who were not.

In some districts the pupils asquired an unenviable reputation for "cleaning out" the teacher, the "big boys" being too many for him. When a teacher was disposed of in this way another and more muscular one was procured if possible.

An instance of this kind is related as follows: Two or three teachers had been turned out in this manner by the unruly pupils, and the officers of the district were beginning to despair of finding anybody who could "keep" the school successfully. Finally an application was made by a young man who did not appear to be particularly "husky." The directors explained the condition of things to him and suggested that his appearance did not seem to indicate that he would be able to fill the bill. The young man insisted that he could manage the school and as a last resort was given a trial. Things moved along very smoothly for two or three days, when the ringleaders concluded the time had arrived to test the teacher's mettle. Standing by the fire near the master, one of the boys picked up the poker, and, assuming a military attitude, brought it briskly to his shoulder and in a loud voice commanded "shoulder arms." Instantly the schoolmaster's fist came in contact with the point of the young man's chin, and, as he went down, the master commanded "ground arms." This speedy adaptation to the situation so pleased the boys that they became the teacher's firm friends, and the entire school term was completed without further trouble.

The lot of a teacher in those early days was not a "bed of roses" and he had to put up with many unpleasant experiences. He had to "board around;" that is, board and lodge with each of the families patronizing the school, apportioning his stay according to the number of children that attended from each particular family. Some of his boarding places would prove to be very pleasant and agreeable, while others were—well, let us say not quite so satisfactory. Teachers were prone to overstay their time in the pleasant homes, where they were always welcome, and cut short their allotted time at the other places, but these latter could not be wholly ignored, as that would be the cause of immediate trouble, and if he delayed too long he was sure to receive a message sent by one of the little boys or girls, as follows: "Teacher when are you coming to our house?" And that was a question that it would never do to ignore.

Frequently the sleeping accommodations in these pioneer homes were very limited; the teacher would have to sleep with the children, and often the space was too limited for any great degree of privacy. The schoolmaster was paid but a meager salary—the school ma'am a good deal less—the major portion of which had to be collected by a "rate bill" and came very slowly, the people of those days not usually having very much ready money at their command and some of the patrons of the school furnishing only children and promises. Text books were crude and scarce, consisting principally of the "English Reader," "Daboll's Arithmetick" (as it was spelled), "Kirkham's Grammar" and a "Webster's Elementary Spelling Book," with an occasional copy, perhaps, of "Hale's History of the United States," which was not studied as a history, but used as a "reading book." One set of these books had to serve for the entire family, if indeed they were fortunate enough to possess them all.

#### MRS. ALLEN RICE'S REMINISCENCES

The following sketch written by Mrs. Allen Rice, of Lawrence, one of the very, very few remaining pioneers of those early days, is a fair illustration of pioneer schools. Mrs. Rice, teaching a summer school, did not have any unruly "big" boys and girls, who so often made the teacher's life a burden grievous to be borne. She says: "In my sixteenth summer it was my fortune to teach the first school in the township of Bangor, which was then known as South Haven, as that township embraced all the territory from the west line of Arlington to the lake, the town of Arlington being included in Lawrence.

"Some six or eight families had settled in the southeast corner

of the town and across the line in Lawrence, and they were anxious that their children should be sent to school. Accordingly, in the spring of 1840, they were organized as the first fractional district of Lawrence and South Haven. As there was no money with which to build, they proceeded in pioneer fashion to roll up a log cabin about fourteen by eighteen feet in dimension. They had no money with which to buy shingles and lumber was scarce, as it was a long way to a saw-mill, and so the cabin, which was shanty roofed, was covered with troughs—that is, with logs hollowed out, one tier being placed hollow side up and the other hollow side down, breaking joints and thus effectually excluding the rain. Two holes were cut for windows, but they were guiltless of either sash or glass; a rude door was made, and a table constructed by nailing a board across a frame made of poles. They did not have quite boards enough to complete the floor and so a space about two feet wide was left on one side. Seats were made by putting legs into a couple of thick slabs; a little shelf was made in one corner near the door, by driving pins into the logs; lastly some one furnished an old chair for the use of the teacher.

“When these preparations were complete, they looked around for a teacher. The director came to me and said: ‘We want you to teach our school this summer. The schoolhouse is all ready and we want school to begin next Monday.’ I told them I did not feel competent and, besides, I thought my mother could not spare me. My objections were overruled, and, with my mother’s consent, it was agreed that I should begin school the first Monday in July and teach three months at a salary of one dollar per week, which was the usual pay of pioneer teachers, although in some districts, where there were thirty or forty pupils, they paid \$1.50 per week.

“The following Monday found me at my task with nine pupils ranging from five to fourteen years of age, five of them being members of one family. The books used were ‘Webster’s Elementary Spelling Book,’ Cobb’s First Reader,’ ‘Peter Parley’s Geography,’ ‘Daboll’s Arithmetic,’ and the ‘English Reader,’ all of which are unknown to the present generation.

“After I had begun my school I was informed that I was expected to teach six days every week and thirteen weeks for a three-months’ term, so that the district could draw public money. Of course I boarded around, and so I had about six weeks to board in one place.

“One day near the close of August I was surprised by the entrance of three stalwart men into my little school room, who announced themselves as the township school inspectors. I gave one of them my chair and seated the others on the bench with the pupils and proceeded with my work as well as my embarrassment

would allow, and, I must say, never were better behaved pupils. Well, the time passed at length, and I dismissed my little charges. Then the inspectors proceeded to ask questions, and, after about an hour of questioning, I found myself in possession of a document certifying that I had been examined as to moral character, learning and ability to teach a common school, etc. The names attached to this certificate were Nelson S. Marshall, George Parmalee and Mansell M. Briggs. These men, as I afterward learned, reported my little school as a model school, at which I was not a little vain.

“As the season advanced and the weather became rainy and chilly, I procured some cotton cloth and nailed it over the window spaces; then we built large fires, using the dead wood that lay all about, and carried coals in an iron kettle into the school room to warm it.

“Teachers’ wages had to be collected by a rate bill and the law allowed sixty days for collection, but I did not get my pay until New Year’s, and then I found myself in possession of twelve dollars and two pigs. The possession of the pigs is a part of my story.

“Soon after I began my school, my two little brothers came to see me and went home with one of the little boys who told them that their father had a swine that had more young than she could care for, and he was going to kill a couple of them. My brothers begged that they might not be killed until they had asked their father if they might get them, and the next day they returned and got the pigs. Nothing more was thought about the matter until I received my pay for teaching the school, when I found myself charged with two pigs at fifty cents each. I did not like it very much, but the pigs had grown to thrifty swine and my father said ‘let it go,’ but we had more than a dollar’s worth of fun over my pigs.

“Although this term of school did not leave me in possession of much money, it was not an unprofitable season. Books were not abundant in the pioneers’ cabins, but I found a number of valuable ones and I read all I could get hold of from ‘Scott’s Pirate’ to a volume of sermons, and I even took a dip into the ‘Book of Mormon,’ which I should have read through, if the owner had not gone away taking the book with him.”

Occasionally a teacher like Mrs. Rice, would be secured who was broad minded, resourceful and really in love with the work. Such a teacher was a power for good in the community that was so fortunate as to secure his services, and the time under his instruction passed all too swiftly. In those days the teacher was without the aids that are provided in these modern days. He had

no books different from those studied by his scholars, no maps, no globes, no apparatus, no aids of any sort, but was thrown entirely on his own resources. What wonder that so many failed to make a success of the work they had undertaken. An abundance of books of reference, convenient rooms, suitable seats and desks, maps, globes and scientific apparatus, together with an enlightened public sentiment to support him, make the profession of a present day teacher altogether different from those days in the little old log schoolhouse, and although a much more efficient equipment is required at the present time, the work is not as difficult as it was seventy-five or even fifty years ago.

#### THE OLD AND THE NEW

It is doubtful, however, if the scholars or the parents of these modern days enjoy themselves any better or are any happier than they were in those primitive times. Who that ever participated in them will ever forget the old fashioned spelling schools, the singing schools and the debating schools—they would be termed “lyceums” in modern parlance—when, packed closely in the box of the big sled half filled with straw, wrapped in blankets and robes, hitched behind old “Buck and Bright” the family ox team, they traveled miles over the sparkling snow, with the mercury down to the zero mark (they knew nothing about zero in those days and cared less) to attend a spelling school? How eagerly they looked forward to the longed-for victory in the final “spelling down,” a victory that was the source of as great degree of satisfaction to the victors as the winning of the game is to a lot of modern baseball fans! In nothing are the wonderful changes that have taken place within the past seventy-five years more marked or more strongly emphasized than in the progress made by the common schools of the county.

As the first settlers began to overcome the difficulties incident to converting the wilderness into productive farms, the primitive structures of logs and shakes gave way to the “little red schoolhouse,” and as the people increased in prosperity and financial ability, these in turn, were superseded by the present modern schoolhouse, with all of its up-to-date equipment and appliances to aid both teacher and pupil in their labors—buildings which, in many instances well deserve the honorable distinction of being “temples of education.” At the present time there are 149 school districts in the county and the number of school children, which includes all persons between the ages of five and twenty, at the school census of 1911 was 9,065.

The number of school houses is 154, and, with very few excep-

tions, they are all modern buildings, fully equipped with everything needful to assist the student in acquiring a knowledge of the arts and sciences, beginning at the kindergarten and ending with his graduation from the high school, with a diploma entitling its owner to enter into the Michigan University at Ann Arbor, an institution conceded to be the peer of any educational institution in America, upon presentation of his certificate of graduation, without further examination or other condition.

These schoolhouses are so plentifully scattered throughout the county that a person passing through it scarcely leaves one out of sight before another comes within the range of his vision. And some of these school buildings are among the finest buildings in the county, costing thousands of dollars. There are eleven "high schools," from five of which the graduates are entitled to enter the university on presentation of diploma of graduation.

Almost every school district in the county maintains a district library. These various libraries contain about 24,000 volumes, thus giving pupils easy access to much of the first class literature of the world and aiding them greatly along the pathway of knowledge.

The value of the school property, as returned by the various school boards in reports for 1911, is \$343,475.

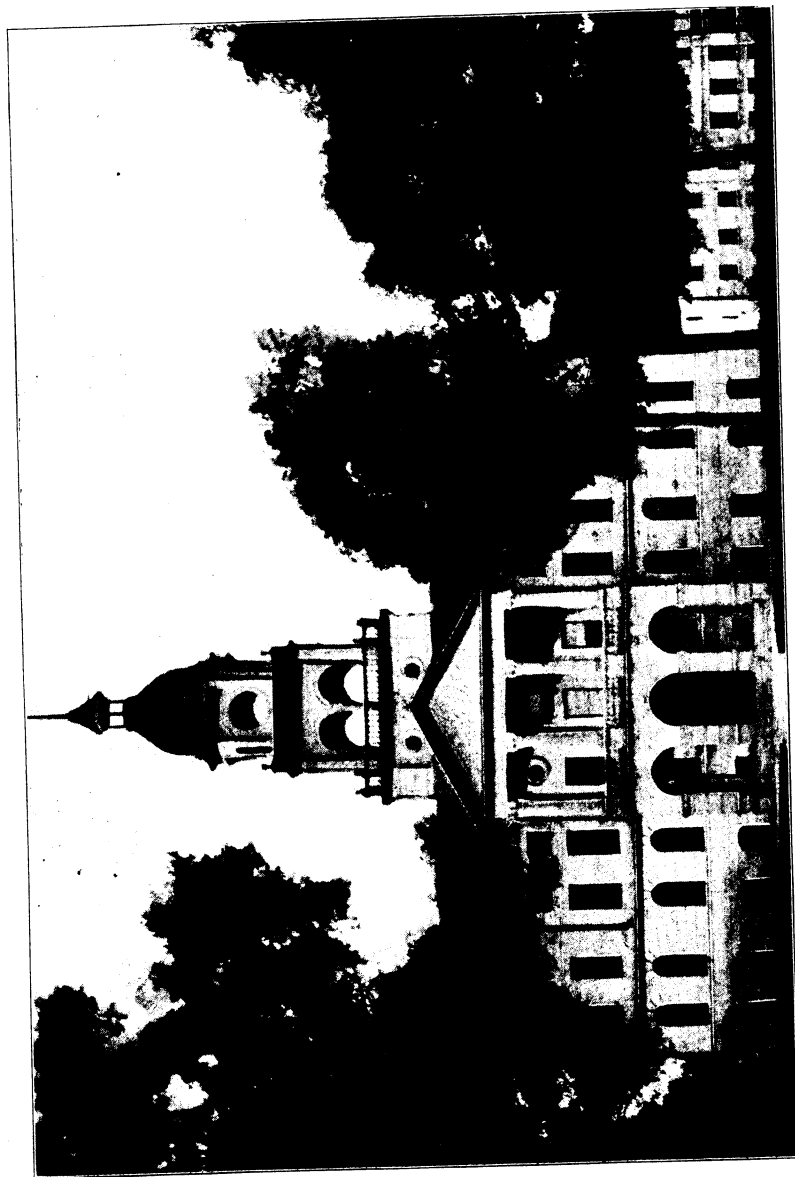
During the school year ending on the tenth day of July, 1911, there were 269 teachers employed in the schools of the county, 35 men and 235 women. There was paid for teachers' wages during the past school year the sum of \$111,985.25. The salaries ranged from \$30 to \$166.66 per month. The average salary of the teachers in the country schools was about \$40 per month, the higher salaries being paid to superintendents and principal teachers in the city and village schools. The aggregate number of months taught in the various schools was 2,219.

The ordinary English branches, reading, writing, orthography, grammar, arithmetic, geography, physiology, civil government and United States history, were taught in all the country schools, with an occasional class in agriculture, algebra and music. The curriculum of the high schools embraced all the foregoing studies and, in addition thereto, higher mathematics, languages (ancient and modern), botany, manual training, physics, astronomy, domestic science, agriculture and all other studies required to prepare the student for a course in the university.

Van Buren county has just reason to be proud of her school system. The graduates of her schools are filling many important positions in the business world. They are doctors, lawyers, merchants, divines, agriculturists, horticulturists, insurance men, bankers, public officials, journalists and other equally honorable

and responsible positions, and few, very few indeed, have been the instances in which they did not "make good." They are scattered all over this broad land, from the far east to the distant west, from the frozen north to the sunny south; perhaps not a single state in the Union where some of them may not be found, and in foreign countries as well.

The Peninsular state has certainly obeyed the injunction of the famous old ordinance of 1787, that "schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged" and Van Buren county has kept fully abreast of her sister counties in carrying on this grand work of educating the generations that have been born within her jurisdiction, or that have sought her hospitable borders from other counties, states and nations.



VAN BUREN COUNTY COURT HOUSE, PAW PAW



## CHAPTER VI

### THE COUNTY SEAT

LAWRENCE AS THE COUNTY SEAT—PAW PAW DISPLACES LAWRENCE  
—PROPOSED COUNTY BUILDINGS—OLD COURT HOUSE COM-  
PLETED—SOUTH HAVEN BIDS FOR COUNTY SEAT—POPULAR VOTE  
FOR PAW PAW—NEW COUNTY BUILDINGS—COURT HOUSE CORNER-  
STONE LAID—COST OF PRESENT COUNTY BUILDINGS.

As hereinbefore intimated, there was much contention and controversy over the location of the county seat of Van Buren county. The county was not organized until the spring of 1837, although it had been set off and named nearly eight years before. As has been said: "The formation of a county at that period, by no means necessitated the exercise of the usual functions pertaining to a county, nor even made it certain that there were any people within the designated boundaries. It merely indicated that, in the opinion of the state authorities, the territory described in the act would, at some future time, make a good county." No mistake in that regard was made in organizing Van Buren county.

#### LAWRENCE AS THE COUNTY SEAT

The citizens of the village of Lawrence, nine miles west of the village of Paw Paw, claimed strenuously and vigorously that there was the proper place for the location of the seat of justice of the county, a claim not without reasonable foundation and not entirely abandoned for a period of sixty years. When that pretty and pleasant village was platted, in 1846, an entire block in the center of the plat was set apart and dedicated as a public square, upon which for many years the people of that town and vicinity fondly hoped some day to see the county buildings erected. The town was centrally located and, in those early days, was the most prominent village in the county except Paw Paw. It is, perhaps, not generally known that the county seat was originally located at Lawrence, although that claim has often been made and as often denied, but such was the fact.

In 1835, a year before the organization of the county, the gov-

ernor of the territory, acting under the provisions of a general statute, appointed three commissioners—Charles Hascall, Stillman Blanchard and John W. Strong—to locate the county seat. These commissioners selected Lawrence as the proper place and stuck the stake that designated the site in the center of the block subsequently designated as the “public square.”

On the 28th day of March, 1836, the following statute was passed: “Be it enacted, that the governor be and he is hereby authorized to issue his proclamation confirming and establishing the seat of justice for the county of Van Buren at the point fixed for the said seat of justice in said county by Charles Hascall, Stillman Blanchard and John W. Strong, commissioners appointed for that purpose, as appears by their report on file in the office of the secretary of state; provided, that the proprietors of said seat of justice for said county shall pay into the treasury of this state the amount advanced from the territorial treasury for said location, with interest thereon from the date of such advance and shall produce the certificate of the said payment to the governor within sixty days.”

But, as hereinbefore noted, the legislature authorized the board of supervisors of the county to designate for a limited period the place where the circuit courts should be held and at the first meeting of that body, held in 1837, the village of Paw Paw was so designated.

The legislature of 1838 again directed that “all circuit courts to be held in and for the county of Van Buren, previous to the first day of January, 1840, shall be held at such place within said county as the board of supervisors shall direct.” (Laws of Michigan, 1838, p. 99.)

Acting under authority of this statute, the board of supervisors, at their annual meeting in October, 1838, adopted the following resolution: “The supervisors of the county of Van Buren direct that the circuit court for said county shall be held at the schoolhouse in the village of Paw Paw.”

It is a fair presumption, perhaps, that Paw Paw was selected by the board because the accommodations were better there than at Lawrence, although they were meager enough in either place.

#### PAW PAW DISPLACES LAWRENCE

Previous to this action, however, at a special meeting held on the twenty-third day of June, 1838, the board of supervisors had directed “That the sheriff be authorized to build a suitable building to serve as a jail for said county, the expense of said building not to exceed four hundred dollars. That the said jail shall be

built on the ground appropriated for that purpose by the proprietors of the village of Paw Paw in said county.”

That the legally established county seat was understood as being at the village of Lawrence is evidenced by the fact that in 1840, the legislature passed the following act entitled “An act to provide for the vacation of the present seat of justice of Van Buren county, and to locate the same in the village of Paw Paw, in said county.

“Section 1—Be it enacted by the senate and house of representatives of the state of Michigan that the county seat of Van Buren county be and the same is hereby vacated and removed to the village of Paw Paw in said county, upon such land as shall be deeded to the county for that purpose: Provided, that the quantity of land shall not be less than one acre, to be located under the direction of a majority of the county commissioners, or board of supervisors, as the case may be, who are hereby required to make such location and fix the site for such county seat in said village, within one year from the passage of this law, and to take a deed of the land aforesaid to them and their successors in office for the use and purpose of the county of Van Buren, and shall have the deed recorded in the register’s office in that county; And provided further, that the title to said land so conveyed shall be good, absolute and indefeasible and the premises free from all legal incumbrances.

“Section 2—All writs which have been or may be issued out of the circuit court of said county since the last term thereof, whether the same were made returnable at the village of Paw Paw or at the present county seat, shall be returned to, and heard and tried at the village of Paw Paw aforesaid, at the time they were made returnable.” (Laws of Michigan, 1840, pp. 36-37. )

By this act of the legislature, Paw Paw became the legal, as it had previously been the actual seat of justice for the county. No session of the circuit court was ever held elsewhere and no county buildings were ever erected at any other place.

But it did not follow, by any manner of means, that the question was settled beyond all controversy by the enactment of the foregoing statute. The citizens of Lawrence were not disposed to abandon the fight. They believed that they had been unjustly deprived of that which rightfully belonged to them, and the question of the removal of the county seat from the village of Paw Paw became a vital one, and many unsuccessful efforts were made to have such removal submitted to a vote of the people. In order to secure such submission, the law required a two-thirds vote of the board of supervisors in favor of such proposition, and although this was frequently attempted every such effort met with failure

until the lapse of sixty years after its location at Paw Paw. It is a matter of much uncertainty as to what would have been the result if the question of the removal of the county seat from Paw Paw to Lawrence had been submitted to a vote. Only a majority vote would have been necessary to decide the matter, and there were times very probably, when a majority in favor of such removal might have been obtained, but the electors of the county never had an opportunity to express their choice as between those two villages.

#### PROPOSED COUNTY BUILDINGS

Immediate steps were taken after the above noted action of the legislature, looking to the erection of county buildings at the newly established county seat. At a meeting of the board of county commissioners held at the office of the county clerk on the first day of April, 1840, the following resolutions were adopted, to-wit: "Resolved, that the site for the seat of justice for the county of Van Buren be and the same is hereby located and fixed on that portion of block number eleven known and described as lots number one, two, three, four, five, six, seven and eight, in the village of Paw Paw, being the same land appropriated for that purpose by the proprietors of said village, the aforesaid location being made agreeable and in conformity with the act of the legislature of the State of Michigan, approved March 6, 1840.

"Resolved, that the clerk of said county be and he is hereby required to procure a quit claim deed from the proprietors of said village for the land mentioned in the foregoing resolution and cause the same to be recorded in the register's office of this county."

However, the county buildings were not erected on the site so designated, although the present court house and jail now occupy the same.

At a special meeting of the board of county commissioners held on the 30th day of January, 1841, the following action was taken: "It appearing that the title for the county seat, as located and fixed by the board of commissioners on the first day of April, 1840, not having been perfected, therefore it is

"Resolved, that the act or resolution of the commissioners locating and fixing the site for the seat of justice in the county of Van Buren on block number eleven in the village of Paw Paw is hereby annulled and vacated.

"Then, resolved and determined that the site for the seat of justice for said county of Van Buren (title having been given) be and the same is hereby located and fixed on block number forty in the village of Paw Paw, in this county."

But neither were the proposed county buildings ever erected on this site which for many years has been occupied by the Free Will Baptist church of Paw Paw and private residences.

On March 6, 1841, the board of county commissioners passed the following resolution: "Resolved, that the sum of four thousand dollars be and the same is hereby appropriated for the purpose of building a court house in and for the county of Van Buren.

"The board directed W. Mason to draft or cause to be drafted a plan for a court house."

This action of the county commissioners seems to have accomplished nothing, except to make an appropriation of funds, and at a meeting held April 3, 1842, the same body, having apparently come to the conclusion that four thousand dollars for a court house was a piece of unwarranted extravagance, adopted another resolution in reference to the matter, as follows: "Resolved by the board of commissioners to contract for the building a court house, provided that some responsible person or persons contract to furnish materials, build and furnish a good and substantial house for a sum not to exceed three thousand dollars.

"The board directed R. E. Churchill to make a draft, etc."

Four days later the board gave notice that the "county board will continue to receive proposals for building a court house until twelve o'clock noon, on the 8th inst."

On the afternoon of that day, the following entries appear on the official record, to-wit: "On examination of the several proposals for building the court house, it was ascertained that Reuben E. Churchill and Stafford Godfrey had proposed to furnish materials, build and finish the woodwork of said house for the lowest sum—that is, for the sum of \$2,410, and that Henry W. Rhodes had proposed to furnish materials and do the mason work for the lowest sum—that is, for \$494.

"Whereupon, Reuben E. Churchill and Stafford Godfrey entered into a stipulation or agreement, with a penal sum of five thousand dollars with approved security, to build said court house and complete the same (agreeably to draft and specifications lodged in the county clerk's office) in eighteen months from this date; for which an order on the treasury was given to said Churchill and Godfrey for two thousand four hundred and ten dollars to be paid out of the money appropriated by the county board of commissioners at their meeting at the clerk's office, March 1, 1841, for the building of a court house."

Also Henry W. Rhodes gave a bond, with approved surety, to furnish materials and finish the mason work of said house in eighteen months from date, for which an order on the treasury was given for four hundred and ninety-four dollars, to be paid out of

the money appropriated for building a court house, March 1, 1841, by the county board of commissioners.

“The county board then procured a warranty deed of I. W. Willard to the county of Van Buren for lots 5, 6, 7, and 8, in block No. 12, in the village of Paw Paw, on which to build said court house, and in consideration thereof quit claimed to said Willard, block 40, the present site; also gave an order on the county treasury for \$331 to J. F. Noye to clear the above lots from incumbrance, and received the security of Willard, Gremps & Company for the repayment of the same to the treasury. (It was on this site that the court house and jail were built.)

“The county board then appointed Josiah Andrews to oversee (on the part of the county) the building of said court house.”

After allowing a few miscellaneous claims, the board of county commissioners adjourned “never to meet again,” having been legislated out of existence by an act passed by the legislature of 1842, which took effect on the second Monday of April of that year, the duties theretofore devolving on such board being conferred upon the board of supervisors.

The first meeting of the board of supervisors under the new regime was held at the office of the county clerk in the village of Paw Paw, on the fourth day of July, 1842, as required by the new statute, and was organized by choosing Gen. Benj. F. Chadwick as chairman. The only action taken at that meeting relative to the building of the court house was as follows: “Resolved, that this board call upon the county treasurer for a statement of the financial concerns of the county, information respecting the erection of the court house, the amount of funds paid out, and all other information relative to the office and that the treasurer report to this board at their next meeting.”

The next entry on the records relative to the new building appears at the meeting of the board of supervisors on the 13th day of October, 1842, at which time Theodore E. Phelps, Philotus Haydon and Joshua Bangs were appointed as a committee “to paint the court house, the same to be painted when the outside is finished, ready to receive the paint, also for the building a fence or yard around the court house when the said committee in their opinion deem it necessary.”

#### OLD COURT HOUSE COMPLETED

The contractors, evidently, did not get their job completed in the stipulated eighteen months, as on the 14th day of August, 1844, considerably more than two years after the date of their contract, we find the following entries on the proceedings of the board for

that year: "Resolved, that we will appoint a committee to examine the work which Messrs. Churchill & Godfrey have done on the court house and report to the board relative to the materials and workmanship of the same, and that T. E. Phelps and George A. Bentley be appointed said committee.

"The committee appointed to examine the court house reported the workmanship and materials on the house was according to contract, as far as it had progressed, which report was received by the board.

"Resolved, that there shall be a gallery built in the south end of the court house and that Mr. Godfrey and Mr. Mason be requested to draft a plan for the same."

On the 7th day of January, 1845, almost three years after the contract for building the court house was entered into another committee consisting of Messrs. Humphrey P. Barnum, Jonathan N. Hinckley and George A. Bentley were appointed to examine the building.

After receiving the report of this committee, the board adopted the following resolution: "Resolved, that the report of the committee on examination of the finishing of the court house be received, which is as follows, viz: That the finishing of the joiner work of the court house be accepted from the hands of Stafford Godfrey and Reuben E. Churchill as finishel agreeable to their contract and the committee be discharged."

With the exception of some of the inside work and the building of the gallery, the house at this time appears to have been finished. The board, however, apparently had some difficulty in getting the plastering all completed. Several times attention was called to the matter at different sessions of the board. Finally, on the 7th day of March, 1845, the official record shows that the following action was taken: "On motion, Resolved, that Joseph B. Barnes be appointed a committee to see H. W. Rhodes and inform him that he must have the remainder of the court house finished—that is, the plastering—by the first of May next or suffer damage for the same."

It is impossible to ascertain from the records when the first term of court was held in the new court house, but it is probable that it was at the June term, 1845.

This court house served the county for fifty-five years before any action was taken looking to new county buildings. There had been kept up, however, a constant agitation for the removal of the county seat from Paw Paw to some other place, Lawrence being the point generally under consideration, although some of the other villages of the county that had outstripped that place in growth began to have aspirations to become the favored site.

Meantime the population of the county had increased from less than 2,000 in 1845 to more than 33,000 in 1900, the county buildings which had served for more than half a century had become old and entirely inadequate for the needs of the people, and the board of supervisors realized, as did the citizens of the county in general, that new and more commodious accommodations for the transaction of the public business had become an absolute necessity and that action looking to a new and modern court house and jail could not longer be delayed.

#### SOUTH HAVEN BIDS FOR COUNTY SEAT

In the meantime the village of South Haven had become the largest town in the county and was about ready to don city garb, and her people thought that her importance as a thriving manufacturing town and as a lake port, entitled her to be considered as in the running for the proposed new location of the county seat of justice.

At the session of the board of supervisors held in January, 1900, Supervisor Peter J. Dillman, of Bangor, offered the following resolution: "Whereas, the county buildings of Van Buren County are in condition requiring the building of new ones, therefore,

"Resolved, by the board of supervisors of this county, that the county seat of Van Buren County be removed to some other place in Van Buren County."

This resolution was first laid on the table by a vote of ten to eight, but, on reconsideration, was adopted by a vote sixteen to two, the only supervisors voting in the negative being D. A. Squier of Decatur and Dwight Foster of Keeler, and thus for the first time, after many trials, a two-thirds vote of the board was secured favorable to a submission of the question to a vote of the electors of the county.

Following this action of the board, Supervisor J. T. Tolles of Geneva, offered the following resolution: "Whereas, this board has passed a resolution providing that the county seat of Van Buren County be moved from its present location, therefore:

"Be it resolved, that the county seat of Van Buren County be removed from its present location to the village of South Haven, and this board does hereby designate the village of South Haven as the place to which it shall be removed."

Supervisor Amos Benedict of Lawrence moved to amend the resolution by substituting Lawrence in the place of South Haven.

Supervisor Howard Lobdell of Hartford moved to amend the proposed amendment by substituting Hartford in the place of Lawrence.



Mr. Lobdell's amendment was lost by a tie vote, nine to nine; Mr. Benedict's motion shared the same fate by the same vote, and in that vote vanished the hope that Lawrence had cherished for sixty years, that some day she might become the county seat of Van Buren county.

The board then proceeded to vote on the resolution of Supervisor Tolles providing that the county seat be removed to South Haven, which was adopted by a vote of twelve to six, exactly the required two-thirds.

The vote by townships was as follows: Yeas—Supervisors Brown of Almena, Mitchell of Antwerp, Dillman of Bangor, Smith of Bloomingdale, Gaynor of Columbia, Lampson of Covert, Tolles of Geneva, Wildey of Paw Paw, Waber of Pine Grove, Cornish of Porter, French of South Haven and Chase of Waverly.

Nays—Supervisors Monroe of Arlington, Squier of Decatur, Byers of Hamilton, Foster of Keeler, Benedict of Lawrence, and Lobdell of Hartford.

It required the vote of the supervisor from Paw Paw to make the necessary two-thirds. His vote, like that of several others, was not cast in favor of the proposition, because he favored a removal from Paw Paw, but because he realized that the time had come when new buildings must be erected and when the people themselves must finally settle by their votes, beyond all further agitation, where the county seat should be located.

Immediately following this action of the board, Supervisor Wildey offered a resolution providing "That there be submitted to the qualified electors of said county at the annual spring election to be held on the first Monday in April, A. D., 1901, the proposition to borrow on the faith and credit of the county and to issue its evidence of indebtedness therefor the sum of sixty thousand dollars, the proceeds to be used solely for the purpose of erecting a suitable building to be used as a court house, and a suitable building or buildings to be used and occupied as a county jail, and a suitable building or buildings to be used and occupied as a sheriff's residence in said county of Van Buren."

This resolution was adopted by a vote of fourteen to four.

Immediately the "county seat war" was on in earnest. Meetings were held in different localities, either favoring or opposing one or both of the propositions submitted; but the battle was fought largely through the columns of the public press. The two Paw Paw papers led the opponents of removal, while the South Haven papers took charge of the other side of the contest, and from then until the vote was taken there was no cessation of the battle. A majority of the newspapers of the county opposed the plan to remove the county buildings to South Haven, some of them because

they wanted no change and others, perhaps, because they hoped if the proposition was defeated that "county seat lightning" might possibly strike their own town. During the three months that elapsed before the vote was taken, the county seat question was the principal topic of discussion and conversation throughout the county and also occupied the most prominent position in the columns of its newspapers.

It was not expected when the proposition was submitted that any locality would be called upon to offer any pecuniary consideration to secure the location of the new court house, but South Haven was determined to win out if there was any possible chance, and Paw Paw was equally determined to retain what had been hers for more than sixty years, so neither of the contestants left anything undone that would tend to settle the fight in its own favor, and, as it chanced, the legislature of the state was in session, and so South Haven procured the passage of an act authorizing that township to issue bonds to an amount not exceeding fifty thousand dollars, "which shall be expended for the purchase of a site for and to aid in the construction of a court house and jail for the county of Van Buren, to be located in said township of South Haven, \* \* \* provided that a majority of the electors of said township \* \* \* shall vote in favor of the said loan in the manner specified in this act."

Paw Paw realized that this move on the part of the enterprising lakeside village would be a body blow unless its effect could be counteracted, and so immediately secured the passage of a precisely similar act, except that Paw Paw was mentioned therein in place of South Haven.

South Haven called a special election to be held on the 25th day of March, at which the question of issuing township bonds should be submitted to a vote of the people, and Paw Paw followed suit by calling an election for the same purpose to be held two days later.

The result of the South Haven election was 765 votes in favor of bonding and 44 against the proposition.

Paw Paw voted 587 for the bonds and 56 against.

#### POPULAR VOTE FOR PAW PAW

Immediately after this the battle waged hotter than ever. Each party accused the other of bluffing and of not intending to issue the bonds so voted. As the date of the election drew near (April 1st) the excitement increased and practically nothing else was heard but "county seat." The result was an overwhelming defeat for the \$60,000 county bonding proposition, the majority

against it being 2,797. The proposition to remove the county seat from Paw Paw was also defeated by a majority of 356 in a vote of 8,520, the largest vote ever polled in the county, either before or since. It is not likely that anybody's vote was challenged on that day. The vote in detail was as follows:

Township.	Yes.	No.
Almena .....	7	259
Antwerp .....	174	415
Arlington .....	186	147
Bangor .....	554	90
Bloomington .....	262	193
Columbia .....	345	41
Covert .....	359	30
Decatur .....	106	400
Geneva .....	407	21
Hartford .....	102	485
Hamilton .....	20	183
Keeler .....	65	176
Lawrence .....	71	361
Porter .....	17	230
Pine Grove .....	147	263
Paw Paw .....	13	841
South Haven .....	1213	26
Waverly .....	33	277
Total vote .....	4082	4438

As soon as possible after the result of the vote was known Paw Paw issued and negotiated \$50,000 of bonds, and when the board of supervisors met on the 18th day of April to canvass the vote, the money was in the hands of the treasurer and was by him tendered to the board to aid in the construction of new county buildings at Paw Paw. The bonds having sold for a premium of \$356.44, the town had more than fulfilled its financial pledge.

After the canvass of the vote had been completed, Supervisor Chase of Waverly offered the following resolution, which was adopted by a vote of 12 to 6: "Whereas, the treasurer of Van Buren County has in his hands the sum of fifty thousand three hundred and sixty-six and 44-100 dollars donated by the township of Paw Paw for the purpose of purchasing a site and to aid in the construction of a court house, jail and sheriff's residence in the village of Paw Paw in said county, and

"Whereas, said buildings are necessary and essential and should be built by said county with all convenient speed; now therefore be it,

“Resolved by the board of supervisors of Van Buren County at a session thereof held at the court house, on Thursday, the 18th day of April, A. D. 1901, that a site for such building be purchased and that a new, modern and commodious court house, jail and sheriff’s residence be constructed and erected in said village of Paw Paw; that to carry out the provisions of this resolution said sum of money so offered and donated by the township of Paw Paw be accepted and placed to the credit of the county of Van Buren in a separate fund to be known and designated as the ‘Court House construction fund.’ ”

A building committee was appointed with power to interview architects, and receive bids, plans and specifications for the proposed buildings.

A resolution was presented and adopted providing that the board should not, in any case, use more than seventy-five thousand dollars, including the sum donated by the township of Paw Paw. This resolution was never rescinded, but a much larger sum was expended.

A special meeting of the board was held June 3d and 4th, 1901, at which several bids were received for the construction of the new county buildings, the lowest being that of George Rickman & Sons of Kalamazoo, for the sum of \$54,500 for the court house and \$22,700 for the jail and sheriff’s residence, and the county clerk and building committee were authorized and instructed to enter into a contract with that firm for the construction of the proposed buildings according to the plans and specifications that had been placed on file in the office of the county clerk.

A resolution was adopted by the board, reading in part as follows: “Whereas, the building now occupied and used as a court house in and for Van Buren County, is no longer suitable for such purpose; now therefore:

“Be it resolved by the board of supervisors of the county of Van Buren, that it is necessary to raise the sum of thirty-five thousand dollars in addition to the sum above mentioned (the money received from Paw Paw) and that the same be raised by a loan:

“Be it further resolved, that there be submitted to the qualified electors of said county at a special election to be held on the 15th day of July, 1901, the proposition to borrow on the faith and credit of said county the sum of thirty-five thousand dollars, the proceeds to be used solely for the erection of a suitable building to be used as a court house and a suitable building or buildings to be used and occupied as a county jail and sheriff’s residence in said county of Van Buren.”

## NEW COUNTY BUILDINGS

The board voted to purchase the block immediately south of the block on which the county buildings then stood as a site for the new court house and jail. This block was at the time almost entirely occupied by residences and is the same block upon which the old buildings were first ordered to be located some sixty years before. This site cost the county about \$10,000.

The board again met on the 24th day of June, 1901, at which action was taken looking to the condemnation of certain private property on the newly designated site for the conveyance of which the committee and the owners had failed to come to an agreement.

Again, on the 29th day of July the board met for the purpose of canvassing the vote of the special election on the county bonding question and ascertained that the proposition to issue \$35,000 of county bonds had carried by the following vote: Yes, 1,355; No, 1,097. The result of this vote placed a little more than \$85,000 in the building fund.

## COURT HOUSE CORNER-STONE LAID

The corner-stone of the new court house was laid with appropriate ceremonies on the second day of September, 1901, and was attended by a large concourse of people from all parts of the county. No event in the history of the county is more worthy to be preserved in its annals than the laying of that corner-stone. The following is a full and complete report of the ceremonies of the day as contained in the report of the building committee made to the board of supervisors one week thereafter:

“Gentlemen—Your building committee beg leave to submit the following report:

In accordance with the resolution submitted by Supervisor French and passed by the board of supervisors on June 25th A. D. 1901, your chairman appointed the following executive committee to make the necessary arrangements for the laying of the corner stone of the new court house:

Executive Committee.—R. W. Broughton, E. F. Parks, B. F. Heckert, T. J. Cavanaugh, M. O. Rowland.

Soon after the appointment of said committee we conferred with the contractors, Messrs. George Rickman Sons & Co., to ascertain the date upon which the building would be ready for the corner stone ceremony.

Being assured that labor day, Sept. 2, would be a convenient time and the earliest date they could safely name, said date was accepted and agreed upon as the day for said ceremony.

The executive committee appointed the following sub-committees and began active preparations for the proper observance and celebration of said day.

Reception Committee—W. J. Thomas, L. H. Titus, Daniel Spicer, I. B. Conner, B. F. Warner, W. J. Sellick, J. H. Johnson, G. W. Longwell, O. W. Rowland, H. A. Cole, C. W. Young, C. R. Avery, John Marshall, J. M. Longwell, F. B. Ocobock, J. C. Warner, Wm. Butler, A. C. Martin.

Business Committee—Geo. M. Harrison, E. B. Longwell, E. F. Parks.

Committee on Archives—F. N. Wakeman, J. W. Free, J. C. Maxwell, C. S. Maynard, H. L. McNeil, W. F. Hoyt, L. W. Curtiss, C. E. Thompson.

Decoration Committee—David Anderson, M. D. Buskirk, W. R. Sellick, H. C. Waters, W. L. Miller, Elmer Downing.

Arrangement Committee—Wm. Killefer, R. A. Shoemith, A. H. Dodge.

Transportation Committee—I. Jay Cumings, J. D. Holmes, H. W. Showerman, D. H. Patterson, W. H. Longwell.

Entertainment Committee—W. C. Y. Ferguson, J. A. O'Leary, E. S. Briggs.

Music Committee—J. F. Taylor, W. J. Barnard, E. A. Aseltine.

The Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons of the State of Michigan were invited to lay the corner stone of the building which invitation was accepted by Mr. Frank O. Gilbert, grand master.

Hon. Frank T. Lodge of Detroit was engaged to deliver the address for the occasion.

The Peninsula Commandery Knights Templar of Kalamazoo, all organized societies of the county and citizens in general were invited to be present and assist in the exercises of the day, which invitation was accepted.

On Monday, September 2, A. D. 1901, at half past one o'clock in the afternoon, the various societies that took part in the parade assembled at the school house park and there awaited the arrival of the Peninsular Commandery Knights Templar, of Kalamazoo.

On the arrival of the said commandery the parade started at once and proceeded over the course previously arranged and from thence directly to the court house grounds where a vast crowd was assembled and the Grand Lodge of F. & A. M. of Michigan, proceeded to lay the corner stone with the following ceremonies:

The Grand Marshal commanded silence as follows:

“In the name of the Most Worshipful Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons of the state of Michigan I do now command all persons here assembled to keep silence and to observe due order and decorum during the ceremonies. This proclamation I make that each and every person may govern himself accordingly.”

Mr. T. J. Cavanaugh invited the Grand Master in these appropriate words to lay the corner stone:

“Most Worshipful Grand Master—The people of this county have undertaken to erect on the place where we now stand an edifice to be devoted to the uses of the county. We hope it may long serve the purposes for which it is being constructed; that strength and beauty may adorn all its parts, and wisdom continually go forth from within its walls to enlighten the community. On behalf of those engaged in its erection I now most respectfully request that you lay the corner stone thereof according to the forms and ceremonies of your ancient and honorable fraternity.”

Grand Master:—“From time immemorial it has been the custom of Free Masons to join their operative brethren upon occasions such as this, and to lay with fitting ceremonies the corner stones of important public buildings.

“In accordance with that custom we accept your invitation so graciously given. We have assembled our Grand Lodge in special communication for that purpose and will now proceed to lay this foundation stone according to ancient Masonic usage.

“One of the first lessons which Free Masonry teaches is that in all our work, great or small, begun or finished, we should first seek the aid of Almighty God. It is therefore our first duty upon this present occasion to ask the

aid of the Supreme Architect of the Universe upon the undertakings in which we are now about to engage and request that everyone present will unite with our grand chaplain in an address to the Throne of Grace."

Grand Chaplain:—"Let us Pray. Almighty God who hath given us grace at this time, with one accord, to make our common supplication unto Thee, we most heartily beseech Thee to behold with favor and bless this assemblage. Pour down thy mercies like the dew that falls upon the mountains upon thy servants engaged in the solemn ceremonies of this day. Help us wisely and well to do the work assigned to us, and may this corner stone, be safely deposited in its allotted place. Well and fittingly may it be laid.

"May there be erected upon it a structure worthy of the purpose it is designed to fill and may this building so auspiciously begun progress to its completion under Thy gracious care. As to-day with exultant hearts we lay its corner stone, so with ever heightening joy may we witness its progress until safely and happily the top-most stone shall be laid and those who work and those who behold shall rejoice together in its completion. Bless, we pray Thee, all the workmen who shall be engaged in its erection; keep them from all forms of accident and of harm and grant them in health and prosperity to live. Fulfill the desire of all Thy servants as may be most expedient for them, granting unto all of us in this work, knowledge of the truth, and in the world to come everlasting life. Amen."

Response by brethren:—"So mote it be."

The Grand Marshal introduced the chairman of the building committee as follows:

"Most Worshipful Grand Master, I now present W. C. Wildey; chairman of the building committee to whose hands has been intrusted the work of erecting this building."

The chairman of the building committee then addressed the Grand Master as follows:

"Most Worshipful Sir:—The Committee charged with preparing the foundation stone for this building have completed that part of their labors and it is now ready to be made the chief foundation stone of this building."

Grand Master:—"It has ever been the custom to deposit within the cavity in corner stones, certain memorials of the period at which the building was erected, so that in the lapse of ages, if the fury of the elements or the slow but certain ravages of time should lay bare its foundation, an enduring record may be found by succeeding generations to bear testimony to the industry, energy and culture of our time.

"Have you prepared any articles to be deposited in this stone? If so, please present them and a copy thereof."

W. C. Wiley:—"Most Worshipful Sir: They are safely sealed within this box and here is a list of them."

Grand Master:—"Right Worshipful Grand Secretary, you will read the list."

Grand Secretary:—"Most Worshipful Grand Master, with your permission I will cause the list to be published without reading as it is somewhat lengthy and the hour is late."

Grand Master:—"Right Worshipful Grand Treasurer, assisted by the Grand Deacons you will deposit this box in the stone and may Almighty God in His wisdom grant that ages and ages shall pass away ere it shall again be seen by men."

Grand Treasurer:—"Most Worshipful Grand Master, your orders have been duly executed."

The box which was at this time placed in the corner stone, was a small copper box, six by six by ten inches, securely sealed and containing the following articles to-wit:

- 1 Holy Bible.
- 2 United States flag.
- 3 True Northerner, date Aug. 30, 1901.
- 4 Free Press & Courier, date Aug. 22, 1901.
- 5 Morning Sentinel, date Aug. 29, 1901.
- 6 South Haven Sentinel, date July 22, 1899.
- 7 South Haven Messenger, date Aug. 23, 1901.
- 8 Weekly Tribune, date Aug. 23, 1901.
- 9 Daily Tribune, date Aug. 30, 1901.
- 10 Bangor Advance, date Aug. 30, 1901.
- 11 Van Buren Co. Visitor, date Aug. 30, 1901.
- 12 Hartford Day Spring, date Aug. 23, 1901.
- 13 People's Alliance, date Aug. 29, 1901.
- 14 Lawrence Times, date Aug. 30, 1901.
- 15 Decatur Republican, date Aug. 29, 1901.
- 16 Bloomingdale Leader, date Aug. 23, 1901.
- 17 Lawton Leader, date Aug. 30, 1901.
- 18 Gobleville News, date Aug. 23, 1901.
- 19 List of officers Grand Lodge F. & A. M. of Michigan.
- 20 Autograph letters from President McKinley's private secretary, Vice President Theodore Roosevelt, Governor Aaron T. Bliss, Senator James McMillan, Senator Julius C. Burrows and Congressman Edward L. Hamilton.
- 21 Proceedings of first board of supervisors in Van Buren county, May 27th, 1837.
- 22 Proceedings of first term of circuit court in Van Buren county June 6th, 1837.
- 23 List of first county officers in Van Buren county, April, 1837.
- 24 Copy of first marriage recorded in Van Buren county, George L. Reynolds to Rebecca Luke, by D. O. Dodge, justice of the peace, July 24, 1836.
- 25 Portraits of Mr. and Mrs. Peter Gremps who came to Paw Paw in 1833. Mr. Gremps was one of the founders of Paw Paw, its first merchant and first post-master.
- 26 Sketch of county buildings, old and new.
- 27 Official canvass of vote for November election, 1900.
- 28 Election returns by townships for November, election, 1900.
- 29 Proceedings of board of supervisors, October, 1900 and January, 1901.
- 30 List of jurors for September term of court, 1901.
- 31 Standing committee of board of Supervisors for year 1901.
- 32 Picture of old court house and county buildings.
- 33 Circuit court calendar, September term, 1901.
- 34 List of state officers, senators, representatives in congress, and members of Michigan state legislature for 1901-2.
- 35 List of county officers for state of Michigan for years 1901-2.
- 36 List of township officers in Van Buren county, 1901.
- 37 List of village officers in Van Buren county, 1901.
- 38 List of qualified teachers in Van Buren county, 1901.
- 39 Autographs of Van Buren county officials, deputies, clerks, etc., 1901.
- 40 Autographs of village officers of Paw Paw, 1901.
- 41 List of officers Decatur Hive No. 540, L. O. T. M.



- List of officers Lawton Hive No. 427, L. O. T. M.  
 List of officers Paw Paw Hive 418, L. O. T. M.
- 42 List of officers Decatur lodge No. 112, K. of P.  
 List of officers Vienna lodge No. 48, K. of P.  
 List of officers Maple Grove lodge No. 198, K. of P.
- 43 List of officers Edwin Colwell Post No. 23, G. A. R.  
 List of officers A Lincoln Post No. 19, G. A. R.  
 List of officers Brodhead Post No. 31, G. A. R.  
 List of officers L. C. Woodman Post No. 196, G. A. R.
- 44 List of officers Lacota lodge No. 33, I. O. O. F.  
 List of officers Paw Paw lodge No. 18, I. O. O. F.  
 List of officers Paw Paw Encampment No. 30, I. O. O. F.  
 List of officers Fidelity Rebekah lodge No. 70, I. O. O. F.  
 List of officers Hartford Rebekah lodge, I. O. O. F.  
 List of officers Lawton lodge No. 83, I. O. O. F.
- 45 List of officers Lawton Chapter No. 246, O. E. S.  
 List of officers Bloomingdale Chapter No. 185, O. E. S.  
 List of officers Acacia Chapter No. 211, O. E. S.  
 List of officers Paw Paw Chapter, O. E. S.
- 46 List of officers L. C. Woodman, W. R. C.  
 List of officers Hartford, W. R. C.  
 List of officers Ellsworth No. 46, W. R. C.
- 47 List of officers Hartford Division Court No. 29, Patricians.  
 List of officers Paw Paw Court No. 33, Patricians.  
 List of officers Lawrence Division Court No. 131, Patricians.
- 48 List of officers Van Buren county, W. C. T. U.
- 49 List of officers Bangor Grange No. 60, P. of H.  
 List of officers Van Buren county Pomona Grange No. 18, P. of H.
- 50 Rising Sun Lodge No. 119, F. & A. M.  
 Paw Paw Lodge No. 25, F. & A. M.  
 Paw Paw Chapter No. 34, R. A. M.  
 Lawrence Chapter, R. A. M.
- 51 So. Haven Lodge, A. O. U. W.  
 Paw Paw lodge No. 37, A. O. U. W.
- 52 Lawrence Camp No. 3219, M. W. A.  
 Paw Paw Camp No. 3103, M. W. A.
- 53 So. Haven tent, K. O. T. M.  
 Paw Paw tent No 108, K. O. T. M.  
 Lawton tent No. 307, K. O. T. M.
- 54 Glendale camp, R. N. A.  
 Maple camp No. 36, R. N. A.
- 55 List of officers and number of members of the Free Will Baptist church  
 of Van Buren County.  
 List of officers and number of members of M. E. Church of Paw Paw.  
 List of officers and number of members of M. E. Church of Mattawan.  
 List of officers and number of members of M. E. Sunday school of Mat-  
 tawan.
- 56 List of members of Lawton school board.  
 Annual of Lawrence public schools, 1901-2.  
 Teachers of Covert public schools, 1901-2.  
 Announcement of Paw Paw public schools, 1901-2.  
 List of teachers of Hamilton township.
- 57 Historical notes of Lawrence township.

- 58 Program of Up-to-date Farmers club.
- 59 Program of Farmers Association.
- 60 Roster Lafayette Light Guard.
- 61 Corner stone poster program.
- 62 Officers of Van Buren County Pioneer Association.
- 63 Copy of Patrician August, 1901.
- 64 List of Corner stone celebration committees.
- 65 Copy of Michigan Manual for year 1901.
- 66 Copy proceedings Michigan Grand lodge I. O. O. F. for 1900.
- 67 Copy McClure's Magazine for Sept., 1901.
- 68 Copy Cosmopolitan for Sept., 1901.
- 69 List of Coins as follows:  
 Copper cent date 1847.  
 Ancient copper penny.  
 Three-cent piece date 1852.  
 One-cent piece date 1899.  
 Five-cent piece date 1901.  
 Ten-cent piece date 1900.  
 Twenty-five cent piece date 1898.
- 70 List of postage stamps as follows:  
 1 cent, 2 cent, 3 cent, 4 cent, 5 cent, 6 cent, 8 cent, 10 cent and 15 cent.  
 Pan-American Postage stamps: 1 cent, 2 cent, 5 cent.  
 U. S. Revenue stamps, 1 cent, 2 cent, 5 cent.
- 71 Names of architect, contractors, and mechanics employed on new court house.
- 72 List of articles deposited in corner stone.  
 The craftsmen, under direction of the Grand Marshal brought forth the cement, a portion of which was spread upon the stone by the Grand Master and the "Public grand honors" were given by the grand officers.  
 Grand Master:—"Almighty and Eternal God, maker of all things, grant that whatsoever shall be builded upon this stone shall be builded to Thy honor and the glory of Thy name to which be praise forever more. Amen."  
 Grand Master:—"Worshipful Grand Architect, present your working tools."  
 "Grand Marshal, you will present these working tools to the proper officers."  
 This being done the Grand Master addressed the grand officers as follows:  
 Grand Master:—"Deputy Grand Master, what is the proper implement of your office?"  
 Deputy Grand Master:—"The square."  
 Grand Master:—"What are its moral and Masonic uses?"  
 Deputy Grand Master:—"To square our actions by the square of virtue and prove our work."  
 Grand Master:—"Apply the square to that foundation stone and make report."  
 The deputy grand master received the square from the grand master, tried the stone and reported:  
 "Most Worshipful Grand Master, I find the stone to be square. The craftsmen have performed their duty.  
 Grand Master:—"Senior Grand Warden what is the proper implement of your office?"  
 Senior Grand Warden:—"The level."  
 Grand Master:—"What are its moral and Masonic uses?"

Senior Grand Warden:—"Morally it teaches equality and we use it to lay horizontals."

Grand Master:—"Apply the level to this foundation stone and make report."

Senior Grand Warden, received the level from the Grand Master, tried top of stone and reported:

"Most Worshipful Grand Master, I find this stone to be level. The craftsmen have performed their duty."

Grand Master:—"Junior Grand Warden, what is the proper implement of your office?"

Junior Grand Warden:—"The plumb."

Grand Master:—"What are its moral and Masonic uses?"

Junior Grand Warden:—"Morally it teaches rectitude of conduct. We use it to lay perpendiculars."

Grand Master:—"Apply the plumb to the several edges of this foundation stone and make report."

Junior Grand Warden received the plumb from the Grand Master, tried sides of stone and reported.

"I find the stone to be plumb. The craftsmen have performed their duty."

Grand Master:—"This stone has been tested by the proper implements of Masonry. I find that the craftsmen have faithfully and skillfully performed their duty, and I do declare the stone to be well formed square, level and plumb; and correctly laid according to the rules of our ancient order. Let the elements of consecration be now presented."

The Grand Marshal presented the vessel of corn to the Deputy Grand Master, the wine to the Senior Grand Warden and the oil to the Junior Grand Warden, each of whom advanced separately to the stone consecrating it as follows:—

Deputy Grand Master:—"I scatter this corn as an emblem of plenty. May the blessings of bounteous Heaven be showered upon this and all like patriotic and benevolent undertakings and inspire the hearts of the people with virtue, wisdom and gratitude. Amen."

Senior Grand Warden:—"I pour this wine as an emblem of joy and gladness, may the Great Ruler of the Universe bless and prosper our national, state and city governments, preserve the union of the states and may it be a bond of friendship and brotherly love that shall endure through all time. Amen."

Junior Grand Warden:—"I pour this oil as an emblem of peace. May its blessings abide with us continually and may the Grand Master of Heaven and Earth shelter and protect the widow and orphan, shield and defend them from the trials and vicissitudes of the world and so bestow His mercy upon the bereaved, the afflicted and the sorrowing that they may know sorrow and trouble no more. Amen."

Grand Master:—"May the All Bounteous Author of Nature benevolently bless the inhabitants of this place with the necessaries, comforts and conveniences of life, assist in the erection and completion of this building, protect the workmen against every accident; long preserve the structure from decay, and grant to all of us a bountiful supply of the corn of nourishment, the wine of refreshment and the oil of joy."

Response of the Brethren:—"So Mote it Be."

The Grand Master being in his place the Grand Marshal presented the architect as follows:

"Most Worshipful Grand Master, I now present to you the architect of this

building. He is ready with craftsmen for the work and asks the tools for his task."

The Grand Master then gave him the square, level, plumb, and plan of the building saying:

"Having as Grand Master of Masons, laid the corner stone of this structure, I with pleasure return to you, your working tools and confide to your hands the plan of this building. Labor on, my brother, in this task and be blest in your work. May there be wisdom in the plans, strength in the execution and beauty in the adornment and when completed, may there be wisdom within its walls to enlighten, strength to encourage and support its rulers and the beauty of holiness to adorn their work."

Grand Master:—"Men and Brethren here assembled, Be it known unto you that we be lawful Masons true and faithful to the laws of our country and engaged by solemn obligations to erect magnificent buildings to be serviceable to all men and to love God, the Great Creator of the Universe. We have among us certain secrets which cannot be divulged, but which are lawful and honorable and not repugnant to the laws of God or man. They were intrusted in peace and harmony to our ancient brethren and having been faithfully transmitted by them it is now our duty to convey them unimpaired to the latest posterity. Unless our craft was good and our calling honorable, we should not have lasted for so many centuries, nor should we have been honored by the patronage of so many illustrious men in all ages who are ever ready to protect our interests and defend us against any adversary.

We are assembled to-day to lay the corner stone of a building, which we pray God, may deserve to prosper by becoming a place of concourse for good men and promoting peace and brotherly love throughout the world until time shall be no more. Amen."

"Worshipful Grand Marshal, make your proclamation."

Grand Marshal:—"In the name of the Most Worshipful Grand Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons of the State of Michigan, I proclaim that this corner stone has this day been found to be square, level and plumb and has been laid in ample and ancient form by most worshipful Frank O. Gilbert, Grand Master of Masons according to the ancient custom of the ancient craft."

Hon. B. F. Heckert presented to the Grand Master on behalf of Paw Paw Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star, a handsome silver trowel bearing the following inscription:

"Presented to Frank O. Gilbert, Grand Master F. & A. M. at the laying of the corner stone September 2d, A. D. 1901, from Paw Paw Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star."

Mr. Heckert in making the presentation spoke as follows:

"Most Worshipful Grand Master, the pleasing duty of speaking for the Paw Paw Chapter of the Order of Eastern Star, on this occasion has been assigned to me.

"The time has come in the history of our ancient and honorable institution, when the sisters of this order occupy no unimportant position. While they are not admitted to seats of our council chamber and are not invested with the unwritten work of the order, yet they are recognized by the several grand bodies of masons throughout our country as valuable auxiliaries.

"Their intelligence, sympathy and affection are fully enlisted in behalf of our fraternity and their earnest efforts have contributed no small part to the growth and present prosperous condition of the subordinate lodges throughout the masonic jurisdiction, over which you have the honor to preside.

"They appreciate in a large degree the objects and aims of our order, and

are proud of the distinction conferred upon them in being grafted as scions onto the trunk of the ancient tree of Masonry, whose spreading branches have extended and grown until they overhang the civilized world.

“As a slight token of this appreciation and to signify in a small degree the honor they feel by your presence here to-day they have delegated me to present to you this silver trowel, with the hope that from your commanding position in the order, you will use it in spreading liberally the cement of brotherly love. When you depart from this place you will bear with you not only the best wishes of the chapter of this order but of the whole community for the memorable services you have rendered here to-day, and the honor which you have conferred upon the people and this entire county. Accept this as a token of our appreciation of your presence here to-day and the valuable services you have rendered us.”

The Grand Master replied as follows:

“My Dear Brother, I realize the honor conferred upon myself and my brother grand officers in being invited to participate in the ceremonies of laying the corner stone of this court house and we deem it still more of an honor because it is in the home of our honored and respected Senior Grand Warden where we have all wanted to come.

“I accept this little token from the sisters of the Eastern Star, and, by the way, I might say I am a member of the Eastern Star—and will treasure it as long as anything that I have in my possession in a masonic line and I would simply delegate you, my brother, to pay my honest respects to the sisters of this chapter on my behalf, if you will be so kind.”

The Grand Marshal introduced the Hon. Frank T. Lodge of Detroit, as orator of the day, who in an eloquent manner delivered a masterly address as follows:

*Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen:*—The interesting ceremonies of this occasion have been important only as types and symbols. From a material standpoint, the stone we have just laid is no different from any other of the many stones which will become a part of this beautiful building. To the materialist's eye, it will not be even so important as the keystone in the entrance which binds the whole arch into one beautiful, stable curve, upon which may be safely laid the great weight of the stately walls. But, to the finer, keener eye of the mind, this granite block is the chief stone of the building. It shapes and determines the character of the whole fabric, and the imposing structure will take its entire tone and significance from this, its “chief corner stone.”

It is, then most appropriate, when the time has come for this important part of the chief public building of this great county to be placed in its permanent position, that its laying should be marked with public ceremonials, that the citizens of this community should witness those ceremonies, that the finer, spiritual things for which this corner stone stands should be publicly mentioned, that souvenirs indicative of the character of this age and historical memorials of this occasion should be deposited in this secure hiding place, to be transmitted to future generations, and that the lessons of this occasion should be recounted for our entertainment and instruction. For these reasons those who have charge of ceremonies have endeavored to secure the attendance of as large a number of the citizens of this county as possible; and it is a fortunate coincidence that they invited to lay the corner stone of this temple, wherein justice is to be impartially administered to rich and poor alike, the great Fraternity of equality, which is the oldest institution of organized labor in the world, that those representing the first class of laborers, the tillers of the soil, should be present in such large numbers, and that these cere-

monies should be celebrated on the day which has been set apart by law as a legal holiday, devoted to the interests of the great hosts of labor in this commonwealth.

The building whose corner stone we lay to day will be one of the choicest products of the skill of the operative workman. The public spirit of this flourishing county will demand of the builders their choicest handiwork. Here will be found the cunning tracery of the artist. The finest stones of the quarry, the polished woods of the forest, the choice products of the loom, will be wrought by skillful hands, into its fabric, that it may be worthy of the wealth and munificence of the community which it represents. It is fitting, then that its chief corner stone should be laid with appropriate ceremonies by the great Fraternity, which was framed, reared and dedicated by its founders to the great work of building.

The first Masons were operative workmen—builders, manual users of the Plumb, Square and Level. In the dim, traditional past, the world's greatest and most imposing architectural piles were built by our ancient brethren. One of our first known Grand Masters, Sir Christopher Wren, was the father of English architecture, and in the stone cutter's sheds around the splendid monument to his memory—St. Paul's Cathedral in London—the operative workmen formed the first of the modern Masonic lodges.

Since then the progress of our art has developed as from operative unto speculative Masons. From toiling workmen, handling the actual tools of the Mason's craft, we have become laborers in a spiritual field, using the workmen's tools as symbols of moral truths. The buildings we now erect are human characters; the temples we now build are the temples of the soul. The plans we draw, the specifications we construct, are to be good men and true, in the State to be quiet and peaceful subjects, true to our government and just to our country; not countenancing disloyalty nor rebellion, but patiently submitting to legal authority, and conforming with cheerfulness to the government of the country in which we live. Our tenets are obedience to God, fairness and loyalty to our brothers, and just care for our bodies and souls. It is these things that make good citizens, and wherever men have banded themselves together for the accomplishment of these lofty aims, the moral tone of that community has received sensible uplift.

The modern representatives of this ancient association of laborers across the great gulf which separates the venerable past from the youthful, vigorous present, join hands in fraternal greeting with the hosts of operative laborers on this, labor's festal day, and ask that together we con the lessons of this occasion.

What do these ceremonies mean? for what does this corner stone stand? What will be the future of the building which we have launched to-day?

To no one else is the even handed, impartial, unbiased, inexpensive and equitable administration of the law so important as to the workingman, the members of the great middle classes. His sole capital and stock in trade is his hands and his brains. He has absolutely no time to cultivate friendship among judges, jurymen and other court officers. His duties are onerous and exacting; they keep him at work in the factory, the foundry and the workshop during business hours; the nature of his occupation is such as to engross his entire attention and prevent him from learning the arts by which the verdicts of juries are manipulated and the opinions of judges biased. When the misfortunes of life force him into court, his cases are relatively insignificant in amount compared with the vastly larger sum over which the business men and the capitalist litigate. But to him these small amounts are even more im-

portant than the larger sums of the capitalist, for they represent all that he has in the world. His cases are about exemptions of household goods from execution, the protection from garnishment of his small weekly earnings, the loss of which means starvation to himself and family; or the settlement of a dispute between himself and his landlord as to the tenure upon which he holds the house he calls his home. And the saying is a true one, that the working-man's lawsuit is located very close to the fibers of his heart.

His scanty earnings will not permit him to employ the skillful and high-priced leaders of the bar to defend his interests in court; and unless the judge upon the bench is clear-sighted, broadminded and impartial, unless the jurymen in the box are absolutely honest, fearless and unbiased, the justice which the workingman invokes when he goes into court, is but a mockery, the bitter Dead Sea fruit, the unsubstantial apples of Sodom which turn to ashes in his grasp. No one, then, is more deeply interested in making and keeping the administration of justice absolutely honest and impartial than is the workingman, the poor man, the farmer, the member of the great middle classes. Now, the theory of the law is absolutely perfect, and that theory deserves the highest encomiums which the greatest thinkers and scholars of every age have paid it. Some of the choicest gems of ancient classic literature are the beautiful diction in which the sages of the past have eulogized the perfection of municipal law.

But we live in a practical age. We care nothing for fine spun, elegant theories, unless the practical reality corresponds with them, and we ask ourselves, "Does to-day's practical administration of the law deserve the high praise which has been paid it in the past?" And to this question every practicing lawyer, no matter how optimistic, must answer with an unqualified negative. In every court room in this land, it frequently happens that men either forget their solemn oath to testify to the truth, the whole truth and nothing but the truth or else intentionally violate that oath. How many witnesses lose sight of every one of the three parts of the oath, and wilfully refuse to tell either the truth, the whole truth or nothing but the truth. How many even conscientious witnesses, on cross examination, bear in mind only the first injunction of the oath, to tell the truth, but do not tell the whole truth, unless a skillful cross-examiner, armed with a perfect knowledge of every detail of the transaction, forces the whole truth from their unwilling lips. How many witnesses, while telling the truth, evade the last part of the oath, to tell nothing but the truth, and so shade and color the truth to suit the purpose of their side of the case as to totally distort and pervert their entire testimony.

There was a time when judges of the courts delighted to call to their aid expert witnesses to help them in the great task of establishing the exact truth in matters which were in controversy before them, but to-day the courts of last resort have taken judicial notice of the fact that the expert witness is too often nothing more nor less than the paid attorney for the side on which he is called; that he too often expresses not facts and opinions, but arguments under oath, suppressing those facts and opinions that are unfavorable and exaggerating those that are favorable to his side; that his entire testimony is too often not a lucid exposition and explanation of complicated, scientific facts, but a cunning, sophistical perversion of the truth regarding those facts.

Then, again, the defects of our present jury system have become a crying evil, which is deplored by every class of citizens. Theoretically, the jury system is well nigh perfect. It recognizes that judges on the bench, whose sole occupation it is to hear cases, and who are withdrawn from the every day walk of life, are very apt to fall into a rut, to have incomplete knowledge of

practical affairs, to have warped and distorted ideas where the practical man of affairs would have more just views. For this reason the jury system takes men for short periods from different walks of life, and asks them to bring to the decision of the matters in controversy before them their practical knowledge of similar affairs. These jurymen bring to the discharge of their duty the ardor and freshness of men who are dealing with new experiences, and are then dismissed before the monotony of constant reiteration has palled upon them and dulled their keen perception of the little things which go so far toward indicating the truth or falsity of testimony. It requires that they must be kept free from any acquaintance with the parties, their attorneys, or the facts in dispute, which would in any way bias their verdict, and theoretically, no better system could be devised for administering justice impartially, in the decision of questions of fact, than the jury system.

Yet, today, this splendid system theoretically, as it is practically carried out, is a shame and a scoff to those who know it best. Ignorant men are frequently, more frequently in large cities than in an intelligent community like this—but nevertheless drawn upon our juries, who while they may have political influence with their ignorant fellows which makes the placing of them upon the jury panel a shrewd political move, yet they are unable to fairly understand either the testimony of the witnesses, or the arguments of the lawyers, much less making a righteous decision of the case.

Again, too many jurors are easily susceptible to artful appeals to passion or prejudice, and many a shrewd lawyer has won his case by throwing aside argument, losing sight of facts, disregarding reason, and simply inflaming the passions and prejudices of the jurors, while the jurors forgetting that they were impartially to decide the cases submitted to them upon the law and the evidence, have rendered grossly unjust verdicts.

Again, in our large cities, many a juror has added to the faults of ignorance and prejudice the absolute crime of dishonesty. In some of our larger cities, it soon becomes known to the lawyers who have many cases at the bar that certain jurors are for sale, and that their verdicts may be secured for a consideration. Certain classes of corporations which have much business in the courts have, naturally enough, made it their business to learn the characteristics of every man who has been drawn as a jurymen, and those who are interested notice that the cases against those corporations which are tried at the first of the term are decided partly for and partly against those corporations, as one would naturally expect in such cases, while it has become proverbial that towards the last of each term, after the agents of these parties have had opportunities to become acquainted with the jurymen, these same corporations win every case that is submitted to certain jurors and soon after the term of court ends certain of the members of these same juries receive lucrative situations from those same corporations.

I may go one step further and say that, in a few cases, judges are elected to the bench who forget that their duty is to stand out fearlessly against public opinion when the public opinion is at variance with the principles of law and equity, and whose decisions of certain cases are biased by the effect which those decisions will have upon their political future.

Then, too, charges of corruption in legislative halls are now-a-days so common as to cause no special comment. And in certain communities it is as much as a high-minded honest and honorable man's reputation is worth to become interested in politics and become a member of a city council or a state legislature. No one who is familiar with legislative assemblies can truthfully deny that the legislature is subjected to a fierce fire of temptation and cor-



ruption, which requires heroic virtue successfully to withstand, and many a law is upon our statute books and must be administered in our courts whose enactment has been purchased by a special class influence using the arts of the lobbyist and the corruptionist in legislative halls.

Now, all of these evils mean trouble for the future unless they are successfully remedied. That man was never yet cheated, who knew he was cheated, and yet was perfectly satisfied. That man was never yet defeated in a lawsuit, who felt pleased and complacent when he was absolutely certain that his defeat was due to a dishonest jury or a weak, incompetent or dishonest judge. The instinct for fair play has been planted by the God of Justice deep in the heart of every man, no matter how mean his station or humble his rank, and when the instinct is thwarted, when the body of our citizenship are fully aware that there is dishonesty in courts and legislative halls, the punishment will be swift and it will be effective. It takes the people a long time to become thoroughly aroused, but when once the common sense of the whole community is aroused, something must give away. Public opinion is slow in action, but swift in execution. It breathed upon the crime of slavery, and slavery vanished like a foul mist before the King of Day. It suffered long under the misrule of Boss Tweed and his cohorts in New York; but, one day, it arose in its might and the King of the Metropolis dies disgraced, in fetters in a felon's cell.

Now, my friends, I am not here on this great day of rejoicing to drape your horizon in black; to give you pessimistic views of things, but we are here to take note of the future, to see how that future may be brightened, to make our generation better than any generation ever was before, and we can only do this by discovering where are our weak points and how they may be strengthened; and on this occasion, when we are laying the corner stone of a new Temple of Justice, it seems to me the best and most important lesson is to see in what respect our judicial system may be strengthened and improved.

Now, if you have thoughtfully considered each one of the evils I have recounted to you, you will have noticed the trouble has been, not with the system, but with the persons by whom that system must be worked out. Our system of giving evidence in court, the oath which is administered to the witness, and the punishment prescribed for perjury, are all the best that can be devised. The trouble is with the persons who take the oath and who violate it, with the dishonest litigants and lawyers who suborn those witnesses to swear falsely, with the weak and incompetent prosecuting attorneys and judges who fail to punish perjurers when their perjury is palpably apparent.

The jury system is perfect in theory; the trouble is with the jury commissioners and other like officers who put ignorant and dishonest men upon the panels; with the judges who allow these ignorant or dishonest men to sit as jurors; with the jurors who are swayed by passion and prejudice, or who take bribes as the price of their verdicts; with the dishonest litigants who offer those bribes, either directly or indirectly; with the prosecuting attorneys and judges, to whom these indications of bribery are so manifest, and yet who weakly refuse to set in motion the grand jury, or other means provided by law for punishing dishonesty.

Our system of electing legislators, and passing laws is perhaps as good as can be devised; the trouble is with the dishonest legislators, and those who corrupt them, and with the weak and incompetent judges and prosecuting attorneys who fail to investigate cases where bribery is suspected. The fault is not with the system, but with the persons who abuse the system; and the lesson to you and me, my friends, on this momentous occasion, is not, how shall

we reform the systems, but how shall we reform the persons, to whom we entrust the carrying out of these systems?

This can only be done by the aggressive, persistent action of every honest man and every honest woman. So long as the dollar is deified and no questions are asked as to how that dollar has been acquired, so long as success is worshipped and men's eyes are tightly closed to the means by which that success has been attained, just so long will unscrupulous men continue to do the wicked things which we deplore. There is no force, save that of Diety Himself, which is so potent as that of enlightened determined public opinion. Thrones have crumbled before it; statutes and constitutions derive their binding force from its powerful sanction. It will cleanse public places when, without it, press and pulpit may plead in vain for the cleansing. To it, when thoroughly inspired with earnest purpose, the greatest autocrat must bend the suppliant knee. From it, when inflamed with righteous wrath, the most strongly entrenched political scoundrel will flee in trembling haste.

Suppose the glib perjurer should be arrested on a bench warrant for his perjury as soon as he leaves the witness stand, and should be brought to speedy trial for his false swearing. Do you think he or those who knew of his case would repeat the offense? Suppose the suborner of perjury should be brought to swift and sure punishment. Would not the subornation of perjury soon become a very unpopular method of winning lawsuits? Suppose the weak judge and the spineless prosecuting attorney realized that their constituents were watching their failure to prosecute, and that those constituents despised them for it, and would show their disapproval in no uncertain tones at the next election. Would not the official be speedily rendered more ardent? Suppose that the members of legislative bodies should feel that every suspicious vote would be examined by a watchful constituency, that any suspicion of bribery would be promptly examined by the proper authorities and that criminal prosecutions would be instituted should there be a fair prospect of conviction. Suppose they were given to understand that their official record was as fragile as a woman's reputation, and that the slightest breath of suspicion would blast it forever. Would there not be a speedy stiffening up of official backbone and a sudden and tremendous awakening of official consciences?

I tell you, my friends, the men and women of every community have its official honesty and ability in their own keeping. If every man, by his voice and by his vote, should sternly rebuke official wrongdoing wherever he sees it, and, besides, should vigilantly scrutinize the official action of the public servants to see whether it meets his conscientious approval; if every woman, instead of blindly worshipping the possessors of wealth, should closely scrutinize the methods by which that wealth has been acquired, if she should refuse to honor with her friendship any person, rich or poor, the history of whose life is not clean and the pedigree of whose dollars is not stainless, the future of our offices and officeholders, the honor of our government and the purity of our judicial ermine would be safe.

This, then, is the lesson of this day. The kind of official action which will emanate from the walls of this new building will depend upon the character of the citizenship of this county. The stream never rises higher than its source and public servants are seldom more virtuous than their masters.

We lay here to-day something besides a mere material block of senseless stone. We also commence to erect an unseen but none the less substantial temple of human character, which is more stable than the strongest ramparts the cunning workmanship of man can build. In the unseen structure every man and woman of this county must fill his own place. We lay its invisible corner

stone on the broad foundation of respect of law. We bind it fast to the bed-rock of liberty with the binding cement of love for our fellows and justice in our dealings with them. We dedicate it to the great God above, whose government is mercy and peace, wisdom, justice and righteousness.

The watchful care of this community will attend the erection of the material building. The welfare of the unseen structure rests upon the heart and conscience of every man and woman in this county. If they have lighted the altar-fires of consecration to the duties of citizenship, the future of the county is safe.

“Build to-day, then, strong and sure  
 With a firm and ample base,  
 And, ascending and secure,  
 Shall to-morrow find its place.”

When completed, may this building be a veritable Temple of Justice. Here may the important business of the county be carefully and honestly transacted. May no spot soil the ermine of the judges nor stain mar the verdict of the juries within these walls; but may evenhanded justice be promptly and fearlessly administered. May wrongdoing here meet swift and condign punishment, and honesty and virtue receive their just reward. Here may wisdom here find her welcome home and the revolving years see naught by the purest good issue from these walls.

The ceremonies attending the laying of the corner stone of Van Buren county court house were now at an end and the vast multitude of Van Buren county's citizens dispersed.

This report is respectfully submitted and signed by the building committee.

W C WILDEY,  
 E A CHASE,  
 P J DILLMAN,  
 GEO T WABER,  
 CHAS W BYERS,  
 Building Committee.

COST OF PRESENT COUNTY BUILDINGS

The new court house was first occupied in February, 1903, the first case tried in the circuit court after such occupancy being an action for damages begun by William Culver against the South Haven & Eastern Railroad Company for damages on account of the loss of both legs by being drawn beneath the wheels of a freight car, and which became a *cause celebre* in the state, resulting, after every legal recourse was exhausted by the railroad company and its surety, in a judgment in favor of the plaintiff for the sum of \$25,000, which was eventually paid.

At a session of the board of supervisors held on the 9th day of February, 1903, the contractors submitted the following itemized bill which was allowed and ordered paid:

Contract price for court house.....	\$54,500.00
Contract price for jail.....	22,700.00



COUNTY JAIL AND SHERIFF'S RESIDENCE, PAW PAW



COUNTY HOUSE, HARTFORD

Finishing entire basement of court house complete and placing tile roofing on court house and jail instead of slate .....	\$3,000.00
Changing cornice and other galv. iron work on court house and jail to 16 oz. copper.....	3,175.00
Wiring basement duct and attic C. H.....	200.00
4479 lbs. galv. iron pipe ventilating attic court house and jail at 20c put up.....	895.80
Cove base for marble wainseoting.....	175.00
Extra foundation in jail 22 perch, excavating included at \$3.00 .....	66.00
Carving bust .....	25.00
Lowering coal and boiler room.....	900.00
Changing iron door from register of deeds office to new court house .....	11.50
Carving gables .....	250.00
One dry well and connections from cistern at jail.....	33.00
Oiling floor .....	37.50
Building cistern, dry well and connecting same C. H....	195.00
Building wall and finishing same, public toilet closet basement court house .....	87.00
Putting in cement steps jail to duct.....	11.50
Building stone porch, jail.....	235.00
Marble thresholds .....	100.00
Extra work on mantels.....	50.00
Extra copper globe ventilator on west side court house..	35.00
Enlarging one on east side.....	20.00
Building new stack complete.....	971.50
Cutting strips in floor account gas pipe.....	37.50
Copper ventilator in jail, complete.....	273.00
Taking down and rebuilding boiler room smoke stack..	220.00
Lettering corner stone .....	35.00
Speaking tube from clerk's office to judge's desk.....	15.00
Lumber for judge probate's platform desk.....	4.40
Five steel shutters put up complete, basement.....	125.00
Changing food opening in jail.....	20.00
Changing juvenile female hospital cell and cutting additional slots in wall.....	50.00
Drilling holes for clock dial.....	20.00
Extra for gilding iron stairways and railings and railing around well hole.....	43.50
One cess pool for sewer connection.....	25.00
Piping and heating basement court house, plumbing and urinals, bronzing radiators, painting pipes, etc.....	688.12
Building duct from court house to jail.....	1,400.00
Total.....	<u>\$90,630.32</u>

This sum included only the cost of the unfurnished buildings. The furniture cost \$5,000, the architect was paid \$600 and the site cost about \$10,000, in addition to which was the expense of electric lighting, water works, sewers, grading of the court house yard, putting down cement walks and other miscellaneous and unavoidable items which made the total cost of the new buildings and their surroundings about \$120,000.

For many years Van Buren had been pointed out as having about the poorest public buildings of any county in Michigan, but she then became possessed of one of the finest and most up-to-date court houses and jails in the state, and which are excelled only by the public buildings of some of the larger cities. And not a hint of graft or tinge of dishonesty attached to anybody or anything from the time the plan was originated until all was complete, which is more than can be said of the construction of many public buildings.

And the county seat war in Van Buren county is forever ended and while some were disappointed, which was inevitable, all are proud of the new buildings and the prestige which they give the county as being one of the front-rank counties of the Peninsula state.

The old court house, removed from the proud position it once occupied, stands on the main street of the village reduced to the humble status of a feed and seed store. It is likely to last many more years, a testimonial to the substantial manner in which the buildings of a former generation were constructed. The old jail, removed to another street, has been converted into a dwelling and boarding house. What harrowing tales it could relate, if it were endowed with a voice to utter them!

## CHAPTER VII

### BENCH AND BAR

STATE SUPREME AND CIRCUIT COURTS—COUNTY COURTS—FIRST CIRCUIT JUDGE—SUCCESSORS OF JUDGE RANSOM—JUDGE FLAVIUS J. LITTLEJOHN—THIRTY-SIXTH CIRCUIT CREATED—PROBATE JUDGES—VAN BUREN COUNTY BAR.

The first constitution of Michigan vested the judicial authority in a supreme court and such other courts as the legislature might from time to time establish.

The judges of the supreme court were nominated and appointed by the governor, by and with the advice and consent of the senate. This court consisted of one chief justice and three associate justices. Their term of office was seven years. The terms of this court were held at different places, as follows: Twice a year at Detroit, twice at Ann Arbor, once at Kalamazoo and once at Pontiac. When in session at Kalamazoo the supreme court exercised appellate jurisdiction in all cases originating in the counties of Branch, St. Joseph, Cass, Berrien, Van Buren, Kalamazoo, Calhoun and Allegan.

#### CIRCUIT COURTS

This constitution also provided for a separate court of chancery, the powers and authority of which were vested in the chancellor. There were three chancery circuits in the state, Van Buren being in the third circuit, together with the counties of Branch, Cass, St. Joseph, Berrien, Kalamazoo, Kent, Ionia and Allegan. The sittings of this court for the third circuit were held twice each year, at Kalamazoo.

The state was further divided into four judicial circuits for the purpose of holding the circuit courts. The statute provided that each of the justices of the supreme court, twice in each year, should hold a term of circuit court in each of the counties designated in his appointment, with this peculiar exception, that in certain counties (Van Buren among the number), a second term need not be held "unless the sheriff and county clerk of any or either of said counties shall, at or before the time fixed by law for the

drawing of jurors, determine that it is necessary." While holding the circuit courts, the supreme justices were by statute designated circuit judges.

In 1848 the legislature increased the number of judges of the supreme court to five and directed them to divide the state into five circuits, and again, in 1851, the number of circuits was by legislative act increased to eight in number, Van Buren being in the fifth circuit with Calhoun, Kalamazoo, Eaton and Allegan.

In 1867 a partial reorganization of the judicial circuits of the state took place, the number being increased to fourteen and the counties of Allegan, Van Buren and Kalamazoo being placed together in a circuit numbered as the ninth. This arrangement continued until 1873, when a new arrangement of circuits was made, Allegan county being placed in another circuit (the twentieth), leaving Kalamazoo and Van Buren as the ninth. In-so-far as Van Buren county is concerned that arrangement continued until 1899, when it was joined with Cass county, the two composing the thirty-sixth circuit. The number of circuits in the state has been increased from time to time as the population increased until at the present time there are thirty-nine circuits in the state.

The constitution of 1850 made the circuit judges elective and provided that for a term of six years, and thereafter until the legislature should otherwise provide, the judges of the circuit courts should constitute the supreme court of the state. In 1857 the legislature enacted a statute creating a supreme court, to consist of one chief justice and three associate justices, entirely separate and distinct from the circuit court, the office of justice of such court being made elective. This system still continues, except that the number of justices has been increased to eight, the one whose term of office soonest expires always filling the position of chief justice.

The circuit courts, as at first constituted consisted of the presiding supreme court justice and two associate judges by the voters of each county, but who were more ornamental than useful, for the decisions of the presiding judge were invariably coincided in by his associates on the bench.

The revised statutes of 1846 contain the following provisions: "The several circuit courts of this state shall be courts of chancery within and for their respective counties, the powers of which shall be exercised by the circuit judges thereof."

"The court of chancery as now established by law is hereby abolished."



## COUNTY COURTS

Prior to the adoption of the constitution of 1850, there was also a county court in each county, which was a court of record with limited jurisdiction, being an intermediate court between the justice courts and the circuit courts, but that constitution provided that "The judicial power is vested in one supreme court, in circuit courts, in probate courts and justices of the peace. Municipal courts of civil and criminal jurisdiction may be established by the legislature in cities," and such has continued to be the judicial system of the state. The date when the constitutional provisions concerning the changes made in the judicial system should go into effect was fixed in the schedule of the then new constitution as January 1, 1852.

The bar of Van Buren county has always been composed of men who were an honor to their profession and seldom, indeed, has there been any just cause for criticism, either as to ability, probity, or faithfulness to the ethics of the profession.

The men who have sat upon the judicial bench of the county have been men who were learned in the law and who have been an honor to themselves and a credit to their constituents.

## FIRST CIRCUIT JUDGE

The first judge to hold a circuit court in Van Buren county was Hon. Epaphroditus Ransom, who was subsequently governor of Michigan, having been elected to that office at the general election in 1848. The first entry made upon the journal of the court was made on the 6th day of June, 1837, and reads as follows:

"State of Michigan, Van Buren County, ss.: Be it remembered that at a session of the circuit court of the state of Michigan, within and for the county of Van Buren, begun and held pursuant to law at the court in La Fayette in said county on the first Monday (being the sixth day) of June, in the year of our Lord, one thousand eight hundred and thirty-seven; present Hon. Epaphroditus Ransom, Cir. Judge, Wolcott H. Keeler and Jay R. Monroe, Esqrs, associate judges.

"The grand jury being called, the following persons appeared and answered to their names, to-wit: Peter Gremps, Jeremiah H. Simmons, Joseph Woodman, Rodney Hinckley, Joshua Bangs, Edwin Barnum, John Reynolds, John D. Freeman, George S. Reynolds, Dexter Gibbs, Joseph Luce, Asa G. Hinckley and Enoch L. Barrett.

"Peter Gremps was appointed by the court as foreman of this grand jury and authorized to issue subpoenas for and to administer oaths to witnesses. The grand jurors having been sworn and having received the charge of the court, retired to consider the business before them.

"The grand jury having been a short time absent, came into court and informed the court that they had no business before them and knew of none for

their consideration; whereupon they were discharged from further attendance at this term of court.

“Rule—Ordered by the court that in all cases now pending in this court and not at issue, declaration shall be filed within forty days from the present term and pleas within forty days from the time limited for filing declaration, and all causes appealed from the judgment of justices of the peace shall be deemed at issue at the first term after the appeal so taken, unless otherwise ordered by the court in particular cases.

“There appearing to be no further business, the court then and there adjourned without day.

“Read, corrected and signed in open court this sixth day of June, 1837.

“EPAPHRO. RANSOM,

“Presiding Judge.”

Judge Ransom’s signature being rather unusually long, it was his custom to abbreviate his Christian name to “Epaphro.”

The files and records of the court, prior to 1844, are so imperfect and incomplete that it is impossible to ascertain the titles of the first suits that were begun, either law, criminal or chancery.

The first civil case tried in the circuit court was at the December term, 1837, and was an appeal from the justice’s court (Robert Nesbitt, plaintiff, and George S. Reynolds, defendant), in which the jury rendered a judgment of sixteen dollars and forty-two cents with costs, to be taxed in favor of the plaintiff.

The first criminal case tried was that of the People vs. Nathan Mears, at the same term of court, the respondent being charged with assault and battery. The jury in this case returned a verdict of “not guilty.”

Judge Ransom continued to preside over the circuit court of the county for the first ten years of its existence, his last term being held in April, 1847.

#### SUCCESSORS OF JUDGE RANSOM

The next term of the circuit court for the county was held in March, 1848, and was presided over by Hon. Sanford M. Green, associate justice of the supreme court of the state. Judge Green is best remembered by the legal profession as the author of “Green’s Practice,” a work that was of great value in its day to both bench and bar, and which has recently been revised and brought down to date.

Three terms of the court were held during the years 1849 and 1850, at which Judge Charles W. Whipple, circuit judge and associate justice of the supreme court presided. Judge Whipple was the first speaker of the house of representatives of the state after it was admitted into the Union. Very little legal business was transacted, either by Judge Green or Judge Whipple.

In-so-far as the journal shows, there was no session of the circuit

court during the year 1851, the next entry after the close of Judge Whipple's record, October 3, 1850, being on the second day of March, 1852, when Judge Abner Pratt, another associate justice of the supreme court, began his administration as judge in the Van Buren circuit and continued to officiate in that capacity for the succeeding five years.

Judge Pratt was succeeded on the circuit bench of the county by Judge Benjamin F. Graves, who was elected to office of circuit judge by the electors of the fifth judicial circuit, to which Van Buren was at that date attached. Judge Graves' bold signature, characteristic of the man, adorned the records of the court for the next nine years, he being re-elected in the spring of 1863 for another six years but resigned before the expiration of his term of office. Judge Graves was a man of much more than ordinary ability and the people of the state, recognizing that fact, promoted him to the supreme bench in the spring of 1867, where he became known to fame and to the legal profession throughout the entire country as one of the "big four" of the Michigan supreme court, which was composed of Justices Graves, Cooley, Christiancy and Campbell. Judge Graves was succeeded on the circuit bench by Judge George Woodruff, who was elected at a special election held July 14, 1866, to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Judge Graves.

The county of Allegan had been in the fifth circuit with Van Buren and other counties, but the reorganization of the circuits of the state in 1851 placed that county in the ninth circuit, while Van Buren remained in the fifth. In 1867 the ninth circuit was made to consist of the counties of Allegan, Kalamazoo and Van Buren.

#### JUDGE FLAVIUS J. LITTLEJOHN

By this legislative action Van Buren ceased to be a part of the circuit presided over by Judge Woodruff and came under the jurisdiction of Judge Flavius J. Littlejohn of Allegan county. Judge Littlejohn was the presiding judge of the Van Buren circuit court until 1869. He was a gentleman of the old school, the very personification of dignity when on the bench, genial and companionable when off duty.

It was the good fortune of the writer to serve under this fine old gentleman, learned lawyer and upright judge during a portion of his term of office as clerk of the court, and he can see him even now as he ascended the bench and took his seat on the wool-sack at the opening of the court in the morning and hear him say, with all due solemnity, as soon as proclamation of the opening of court had been made "Mr. Clerk, read the journal." Being at

that time a young man entirely without knowledge or experience in court proceedings or other legal affairs, it was with great diffidence that the duties of clerk of the court were assumed by him, and he feels that right here he should acknowledge the great kindness and courtesy with which "His Honor" bore with his inexperience, instructed him in the modus operandi of conducting the proceedings of a court of justice and initiated him into the mysteries of the law, laying for him the foundations of a profession which he has followed with more or less assiduity for over forty years. No more upright, honorable man than Judge Flavius J. Littlejohn ever graced the judicial bench of Michigan.

Judge Littlejohn was succeeded by Judge Charles R. Brown, who was elected at the April election in 1869 and who presided over the Van Buren circuit until the summer of 1874, when he resigned the office and was succeeded by Judge Darius E. Comstock, who was appointed by Governor John J. Bagley to fill the unexpired term of Judge Brown. There was another vacancy in this office before the expiration of the term caused by the death of Judge Comstock who died on the third day of February, 1875, but a few months after his appointment. Judge Comstock was the first Van Buren county man to occupy the circuit bench. He was succeeded by Judge Josiah L. Hawes, who was elected at the April election of 1875.

Two years prior to this election, Allegan had been taken from the ninth judicial circuit and placed with Ottawa county, forming a new circuit and leaving the ninth composed of Kalamazoo and Van Buren. Both these counties were strongly Republican, but owing to a difficulty between the two counties as to which should furnish the Republican candidates, two Republicans were nominated—Judge Geo. W. Lawton of Van Buren, and Hon. Dwight May of Kalamazoo. This so divided the Republican strength that Hon. Josiah L. Hawes of Kalamazoo, the Democratic candidate, won an easy victory. However, the people lost nothing by this, as Judge Hawes was a competent, able and upright judge. He served his full term of six years and was succeeded by Hon. Alfred J. Mills of Paw Paw, the second Van Buren county man to be honored by a seat on the judicial bench of the circuit court.

Judge Mills was elected in the spring of 1881 by the closest vote ever cast in the circuit and it was not until the official count from every voting precinct had been received that the result was known. The manner in which he discharged the duties of his important office fully justified the choice of the voters, as he was one of the most efficient judges that ever served the county.

Hon. George M. Buck, of Kalamazoo, was elected in the spring

of 1887 as the successor of Judge Mills. The people of the circuit showed their appreciation of the manner in which he administered his office, reelecting him to a second six-year term in the spring of 1893.

#### THIRTY-SIXTH CIRCUIT CREATED

Judge Buck served the people of Van Buren county for a little more than five years of his second term, when a new judicial circuit was formed by detaching the county from the ninth circuit and uniting it with Cass county, thus forming a new circuit, the thirty-sixth, which is still unchanged. There being no judge resident within the boundaries of either county of the new circuit, Hon. Hazen S. Pingree, then governor of Michigan, appointed Hon. Harsen D. Smith of Cassopolis, to the judgeship until such time as the position should be filled by election.

At the first election held in the new circuit on the first Monday of April, 1899, the rival candidates for the office were Hon. Benjamin F. Heckert of Van Buren county and Hon. John R. Carr of Cass, the former being a Republican and the latter a member of the Democratic party. Judge Carr was chosen, served for the full term of six years and was a prominent candidate for another term, his opponent being Hon. L. Burget Des Voignes, of Cass county, who was elected to the office at the April election of 1905 and is now serving the last year of the term. That the people are well satisfied with his administration of justice is evinced by the fact that at the April election of 1911 he was chosen for a second term by a nearly unanimous vote, his only opponent being the candidate of the Socialists.

No county in the state, perhaps, has been represented on the judicial bench by a more able, upright and learned judiciary than has our own Van Buren. Those who still survive are Judges Mills, Buck, Carr and Des Voignes.

#### PROBATE JUDGES

The several probate judges of Van Buren county have been as follows:

Jeremiah Simmons,	two terms,	1837 to 1844.
Frederick Lord,	one term,	1844 " 1848.
Elisha Durkee,	two terms,	1848 " 1856. •
Augustus W. Nash,	two terms,	1856 " 1864.
Chandler Richards,	one term,	1864 " 1868.
George W. Lawton,	two terms,	1868 " 1876.
Alfred J. Mills,	one term,	1876 " 1880.
Orrin N. Hilton,	two terms,	1880 " 1888.

Benj. F. Heckert, two terms, 1888 " 1896.

James H. Johnson, two terms, 1896 " 1904.

David Anderson, two terms, 1904 " ———.

Judge Anderson is still serving on his second term which will expire on the 31st day of December, 1912. Judges Mills, Hilton, Johnson and Anderson, are the only ones living.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY BAR

The bar of the county, for the first twenty years after the admission of the state and prior to 1860, consisted of the following named gentlemen, as nearly as can now be ascertained from the records of the court, which, for those earlier years, is somewhat incomplete: John R. Baker, A. W. Broughton, S. H. Blackman, Nathan H. Bitely, Hiram Cole, Elisha Durkee, S. N. Gantt, J. W. Huston, Frederick Lord, Joseph Miller, Chandler Richards, T. H. Stephenson, J. B. Upton, William N. Pardee. None of these gentlemen is now living.

Since 1860, the following named attorneys have been members of the bar of the county. Those marked by a star are still members and those marked (d) are deceased.

E. R. Annable (d)	B. F. Chase*
David Anderson*	Thos. Dorgan
Horace H. Adams*	Andrew Donovan
Isaac E. Barnum (d)	David Dillon
W. Scott Beebe	Cenius H. Engle*
Wm. C. Buchanan	G. M. Eggleston
Geo. E. Breck (d)	Newton Foster (d)
John I. Breck	Oscar Field (d)
Wm. J. Barnard*	Chas. L. Fitch
W. G. Bessey	A. Lynn Free*
Earl L. Burhans*	D. F. Glidden
C. W. Benton*	Oliver A. Goss (d)
D. E. Comstock (d)	Ashbel H. Herron (d)
Edgar A. Crane (d)	T. E. Hendrick (d)
Calvin Cross (d)	Orrin N. Hilton
Jerome Coleman (d)	Samuel Holmes (d)
F. C. Cogshall*	Chas. A. Harrison
J. E. Chandler*	Harry M. Huff (d)
Hiram T. Cook*	Benj. F. Heckert (d)
A. H. Chandler*	Austin Herrick
Wm. N. Cook (d)	W. W. Holmes*
T. J. Cavanaugh*	Jas. H. Johnson*
R. M. Chase	Albert Jackson
B. H. Cockett	John Knowles

Geo. W. Lawton (d)	Chas. Shier
Geo. L. Linder	John J. Sherman
O. C. Lathrop	J. C. Spencer (d)
H. M. Lillie	F. W. Smith
Suaby Lawton	Arthur Stevens
L. J. Lewis*	Jos. L. Sturr*
Eugene W. Lawton	Wm. H. Tucker (d)
Melanethon Millard	Lincoln H. Titus
Wm. H. Mason*	Lester A. Tabor (d)
Arthur L. Moulton*	W. P. Traphagen
W. S. McKinney	Albert H. Tuttle*
Geo. W. Merriman*	W. E. Thresher
Harry L. McNeil*	A. P. Thomas (d)
Chas. J. Monroe*	C. M. Van Riper*
S. B. Monroe*	Guy J. Wicksall (d)
Alfred J. Mills	J. J. Wilder
J. G. Parkhurst (d)	Thos. O. Ward (d)
L. Myrl Phelps*	F. E. Withey
Oran W. Rowland*	Glenn E. Warner*

The foregoing list presents an array of legal talent that would compare favorably with any county in the state.

## CHAPTER VIII

### POLITICS OF THE COUNTY

GENERAL ELECTIONS—THE PARTIES IN THE COUNTY—COUNTY OFFICERS—MEMBERS OF THE STATE LEGISLATURE—CHAIRMEN OF THE BOARD OF SUPERVISORS—OTHER IMPORTANT OFFICIALS FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY—CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTIONS—PROPOSED CONSTITUTIONAL AMENDMENTS—VAN BUREN COUNTY AND THE LIQUOR TRAFFIC.

In the earlier years of the history of Van Buren county, and prior to the organization of the Republican party in 1854, under the historic oaks in the city of Jackson, Michigan, the political parties, Democratic and Whig, were rather evenly divided, the Democrats being slightly in the lead and gaining on their opponents as the population of the county increased. Since that event the county has invariably cast its vote in favor of the Republican candidates. So strongly entrenched has been that party that, with only two exceptions, no county official has been chosen from any other organization, and it long ago passed into an axiom that a nomination on the Republican ticket in Van Buren county was equivalent to an election.

#### GENERAL ELECTIONS

It will, perhaps, be a matter of interest to note the total vote cast at each general election, a fair indication of the growth of the county.

1837	90	1847	868
1838	256	1848	979
1839	320	1849	897
1840	433	1850	954
1841	402	1851	716
1842	438	1852	1476
1843	454	1854	1542
1844	669	1856	2776
1845	569	1858	2744
1846	814	1860	3478



1862	3151	1886	7170
1864	3640	1888	8247
1866	3880	1890	6245
1868	5930	1892	7045
1870	4501	1894	5859
1872	5654	1896	8724
1874	4832	1898	7067
1876	7155	1900	8443
1878	6253	1902	6241
1880	7287	1904	7246
1882	6627	1906	4519
1884	7609	1908	7228
		1910	4626

#### THE PARTIES IN THE COUNTY

Prior to the adoption of the constitution of 1850, there was an annual general election held in November; subsequently the elections were biennial. The principal partisan political contests in the county since 1854 have been between the Republicans and the Democrats, with the former constantly in the ascendency, but it has not always been a majority party. At two general elections, 1878 and 1890, the candidates of the Republicans had only a plurality of the votes cast, not a majority. This was occasioned by the great political upheaval over the whole country over the currency question, greenbackism and free silver. In 1876 and 1878 the Greenback party was at its zenith and in the latter year actually became the second party in the county in point of numbers, polling double the number of votes that were cast for the Democratic candidates.

In 1890 the Republican party again cast only a minority of the entire vote, its candidates being elected, but only by a plurality. A new organization, under the name of the Industrial party, appeared on the scene of action and polled nearly a thousand votes in the county.

The Prohibition party made its appearance as a political factor in 1882, polling about a hundred votes. In 1890 this party cast 542 votes, since which date its vote has been gradually decreasing until at the last general election, in 1910, it was less than one hundred.

The Democratic People's Union Silver party as a successor of the Greenback party, became an important factor in the politics of the county, and in 1896 polled 3,976 presidential votes, reducing the regular Democratic vote to less than 100, and practically supplant-

ing that party for the time being, but the course of events has again narrowed the contest to a fight between the former political foes, Republicans and Democrats, although there have been a number of other political organizations seeking the support and the votes of the people. Besides the parties already mentioned there are now, or have heretofore been, the Socialist party, Peoples' party, National party, Social Democrat party, Independent party and the Social Labor party, but none of these has, as yet, attained sufficient prominence to exercise any appreciable influence on the political situation in Van Buren county.

#### PRESIDENTIAL VOTE IN THE COUNTY

- 1840—Harrison, Whig, 182; Van Buren, Democrat, 251.  
 1844—Clay, Whig, 275; Polk, Democrat, 350.  
 1848—Taylor, Whig, 353; Cass, Democrat, 508.  
 1852—Scott, Whig, 683; Pierce, Democrat, 771.  
 1856—Fremont, Republican, 1710; Buchanan, Democrat, 1031.  
 1860—Lincoln, Republican, 2175; Douglas, Democrat, 1274; Bell Const. Union, 26.  
 1864—Lincoln, Republican, 1985; McClellan, Democrat, 1400 (a).  
 1868—Grant, Republican, 3662; Seymour, Democrat, 2256 (b).  
 1872—Grant, Republican, 3549; Greeley, Liberal Democrat, 1805; O'Connor, straight Democrat, 162.  
 1876—Hayes, Republican, 4046; Tilden, Democrat, 2599; Cooper, G. B., 509; Smith, Prohibition, 2.  
 1880—Garfield, Republican, 4131; Hancock, Democrat, 2004; Weaver, Greenback, 1062; Dow, Prohibition, 10.  
 1884—Blaine, Republican, 4219; Cleveland, Democrat, 2933; Butler, Greenback, 845; St. John, Prohibition, 361.  
 1888—Harrison, Republican, 4783; Cleveland, Democrat, 2986; Streeter, Union Labor, 13; Fisk, Prohibition, 458.  
 1892—Harrison, Republican, 3788; Cleveland, Democrat, 2182; Weaver, People's, 635; Bidwell, Prohibition, 403.  
 1896—McKinley, Republican, 4510; Bryan, Silver Democrat, 3982; Palmer, Gold Democrat, 93; Bentley, National, 24; Levering, Prohibition, 73.  
 1900—McKinley, Republican, 4892; Bryan, Democrat, 3235; Debs, Social Democrat, 21; Wooley, Prohibition, 151; Maloney, Social Labor, 30; Barker, People's, 2.

(a) Exclusive of Soldiers' vote in the field.

(b) The vote of Van Buren county for this year, 1868, was not included in the official canvass of the state for the reason that it was not returned to the state canvassing board within the time required by law.

1904—Roosevelt, Republican, 5254; Parker, Democrat, 1634; Debs, Socialist, 71; Swallow, Prohibition, 217; Watson, People's Party, 45; Corrigan, Social Labor, 9.

1908—Taft, Republican, 4531; Bryan, Democrat, 2313; Debs, Socialist, 124; Chafin, Prohibition, 193; Gilhaus, Social Labor, 13; Hisgen, Independent, 36.

#### COUNTY OFFICERS

Following is a list of the principal county officials chosen by the electors of the county since its organization.

Associate judges of the Circuit Court: 1837, Wolcott H. Keeler and Jay R. Monroe; 1840, Evert B. Dyckman and John R. Haynes; 1842, Henry Coleman; 1844, Wolcott H. Keeler and Daniel Van Antwerp.

County Judges: 1846, Aaron W. Broughton, first judge, John R. Haynes, second judge; 1847, Frederick Lord, second judge; 1850, Jason A. Sheldon, first judge, and Lyman G. Hill, second judge.

County Commissioners—Under the territorial laws of Michigan a board of three county commissioners was appointed by the governor of the territory whose duty it was to have charge of the financial concerns of their respective counties. This system was continued after the admission of Michigan as a state until the duties of such board were conferred upon the board of supervisors and the office of county commissioner was abolished by statute. After the state was admitted this office became elective instead of appointive, and the following named persons were chosen as commissioners by the electors of the county: 1838, Wolcott H. Keeler, Peter Gremps and Morgan L. Fitch; 1839, Jay R. Monroe; 1840, Andrew Longstreet; 1841, Lyman G. Hill.

Probate judges: 1837, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1840, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1844, Frederick Lord; 1848, Elisha Durkee; 1852, Elisha Durkee; 1856, Augustus W. Nash; 1860, Augustus W. Nash; 1864, Chandler Richards; 1868, George W. Lawton; 1872, George W. Lawton; 1876, Alfred J. Mills; 1880, Orrin N. Hilton; 1884, Orrin N. Hilton; 1888, Benjamin F. Heckert; 1892, Benjamin F. Heckert; 1896, James H. Johnson; 1900, James H. Johnson; 1904 and 1908, David Anderson. Of the before named probate judges Messrs. Mills, Hilton, Johnson and Anderson are living.

Sheriffs: 1837, Samuel Gunton, resigned; 1837, Andrew Longstreet (to fill vacancy); 1838, Andrew Longstreet; 1840, John McKinney; 1842, William Hill; 1844, John Smolk, Jr.; 1846, William Hill; 1848, Henry C. Clapp; 1850, William Hill; 1852, Henry C. Clapp; 1854, William Hill; 1856, Noble D. Richardson; 1858, John H. Stoddard; 1860, Calvin Durkee; 1862, Calvin Durkee; 1864, Noble D. Richardson; 1866, Edwin R. Farmer; 1868, William R.

Sirriner; 1870, William R. Sirrine; 1872, John E. Showerman; 1874, John E. Showerman; 1876, Nathan Thomas; 1878, Nathan Thomas; 1880, Aaron Van Auken; 1882, Aaron Van Auken; 1884, John G. Todd; 1886, John G. Todd; 1888, Hulett P. McFarlin; 1890, Nathan Thomas; 1892, Nathan Thomas; 1894, Charles A. Lamberson; 1896, Charles A. Lamberson; 1898, Wesley J. Thomas; 1900, Wesley J. Thomas; 1902, John H. Britton; 1904, John H. Britton; 1906, Charles C. Chappell; 1908, Charles C. Chappell, and 1910, Byron L. Sowle, the present incumbent. Of the before named gentlemen Messrs. Sirrine, Nathan Thomas, Van Auken, Todd, Lamberson, Wesley J. Thomas, Britton, Chappell and Sowle are living.

County clerks: 1837, Nathan B. Starkweather; 1838, Edward Shultz; 1840, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1842, Joseph Gilman; 1844, James B. Crane; 1846, Lyman Fitch; 1848, S. Tallmadge Conway; 1850, S. Tallmadge Conway; 1852, Franklin M. Manning; 1854, Stillman F. Breed; 1856, Stillman F. Breed; 1858, S. Tallmadge Conway; 1860, Martin Ruggles; 1862, Martin Ruggles, resigned; 1864, Ashbel H. Herron, to fill vacancy; 1864, Ashbel H. Herron; 1866, Ashbel H. Herron; 1868, Oran W. Rowland; 1870, Oran W. Rowland; 1872, Samuel Holmes; 1874, Samuel Holmes; 1876, Henry S. Williams; 1878, Henry S. Williams; 1880, Charles E. Heath; 1882, Charles E. Heath; 1884, George W. Myers; 1886, George W. Myers; 1888, A. Throop Anderson; 1890, A. Throop Anderson; 1892, Harley E. Squier; 1894, Harley E. Squier; 1896, Joseph S. Buck; 1898, Joseph S. Buck; 1900, Frank N. Wakeman; 1902, Frank N. Wakeman; 1904, William C. Mosier; 1906, William C. Mosier; 1908, William C. Mosier; 1910, Harry A. Cross, the present incumbent. Of the aforesaid county clerks, Messrs. Rowland, Myers, Anderson, Squier, Buck, Wakeman, Mosier and Cross, at this date are living.

Registers of deeds: 1837, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1838, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1840, Fitz H. Stevens; 1842, Fitz H. Stevens; 1844, Emory O. Briggs; 1846, Elisha C. Cox; 1847, John Smolk, Jr., vacancy; 1848, Joseph Cox, Jr.; 1850, William H. Hurlbut; 1852, Eusebius Mather; 1854, Edwin A. Thompson; 1856, Samuel H. Blackman; 1858, Thomas B. Irwin; 1860, Thomas B. Irwin; 1862, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1864, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1866, E. Parker Hill; 1868, Don C. Rogers; 1870, Milan U. Richardson; 1872, Kirk W. Noyes; 1874, Kirk W. Noyes; 1876, Samuel Ellis; 1878, Samuel Ellis; 1880, Samuel Ellis; 1882, Samuel P. Wilson; 1884, Samuel P. Wilson; 1886, Joel D. Monroe; 1888, Joel D. Monroe; 1890, Thomas C. Tyner; 1892, Thomas C. Tyner; 1894, Thomas M. Harvey; 1896, Thomas M. Harvey; 1898, John F. Taylor; 1900, John F. Taylor; 1902, Milton L. Decker; 1904, Milton L. Decker; 1906, John Mutchler; 1908, John Mutchler; 1910, Henry E. Shaefer, the present in-

cumbent. Of the above named gentlemen Messrs. Noyes, Tyner, Decker, Mutchler and Shaefer are in the land of the living.

County treasurers: 1837, Daniel O. Dodge; 1838, Joshua Bangs; 1840, Frederick Lord; 1842, John McKinney; 1844, John McKinney; 1846, Theodore E. Phelps; 1848, Emory O. Briggs; 1850, Emory O. Briggs; 1852, Emory O. Briggs; 1854, Alexander H. Phelps; 1856, John M. Ridlon; 1858, John M. Ridlon; 1860, Aaron S. Dyckman; 1862, Aaron S. Dyckman; 1864, Samuel H. Blackman; 1866, Edwin Barnum; 1868, Edwin Barnum; 1870, Edwin Barnum; 1872, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1874, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1876, Hannibal M. Marshall, resigned; 1878, Stephen W. Duncombe; 1880, Samuel H. Blackman; 1882, John C. McLain; 1884, John C. McLain; 1886, Charles H. Butler; 1888, Charles H. Butler; 1890, Hiram K. Wells; 1892, Hiram K. Wells; 1894, Gilbert Mitchell; 1896, Gilbert Mitchell; 1898, John Marshall; 1900, John Marshall; 1902, Daniel M. Allen; 1904, Daniel M. Allen; 1906, Frank H. Fuller; 1908, Frank H. Fuller; 1910, Warner M. Stoughton, the present incumbent. Of the above named gentlemen the following are yet living: Ridlon (aged 93 years), H. M. Marshall, McLain, John Marshall, Allen, Fuller and Stoughton.

Prosecuting attorneys: \*1850, Frederick Lord; 1852, William N. Pardee; 1854, Frederick Lord; 1856, Nathan H. Bitely; 1858, Chandler Richards; 1860, Chandler Richards; 1862, Hiram Cole; 1864, Hiram Cole; 1866, John B. Upton; 1868, John B. Upton; 1870, John B. Upton; 1872, Darius E. Comstock; 1874, Benjamin F. Heckert; 1876, Benjamin F. Heckert; 1878, Benjamin F. Heckert; 1880, Oran W. Rowland; 1882, Alonzo H. Chandler; 1884, Alonzo H. Chandler; 1886, Alonzo H. Chandler; 1888, John I. Breck; 1890, Oliver A. Goss (died in office); 1891, Edward R. Annable (appointed to fill vacancy); 1892, Lincoln H. Titus; 1894, Lincoln H. Titus; 1896, James E. Chandler; 1898, James E. Chandler; 1900, David Anderson; 1902, David Anderson; 1904, Russell M. Chase; 1906, Russell M. Chase; 1908, Glenn E. Warner; 1910, Glenn E. Warner, the present incumbent. Eight of the above named gentlemen are living—Messrs. Rowland, A. H. Chandler, Breck, Titus, J. E. Chandler, Anderson, Chase and Warner.

Circuit Court Commissioners: 1852, John R. Baker; 1854, Nathan H. Bitely; 1856, Nathan H. Bitely; 1858, Samuel H. Blackman; 1860, Hiram Cole; 1862, John B. Upton; 1864, Joseph W. Huston; 1866, George W. Lawton; 1868, Ashbel H. Herron; 1870, William H. Tucker and John Knowles; 1872, Benjamin F. Heckert and John J. Sherman; 1874, Oran W. Rowland and John J. Sherman; 1876,

\*This office did not become elective until the adoption of the constitution of 1850.

Albert Jackson and James Manry; 1878, John Knowles and John J. Sherman; 1880, James H. Johnson and John J. Sherman; 1882, James H. Johnson and John J. Sherman; 1884, Arthur L. Moulton and Samuel Holmes; 1886, John I. Breck and Samuel Holmes; 1888, Oran W. Rowland and John I. Beck; 1890, James E. Chandler and Lincoln H. Titus; 1892, James E. Chandler and Stephen B. Monroe; 1894, Oran W. Rowland and Stephen B. Monroe; 1896, Guy J. Wicksall and Oran W. Rowland; 1898, David Anderson and Guy J. Wicksall; 1900, Oran W. Rowland and Russell M. Chase; 1902, Fred C. Cogshall and Oran W. Rowland; 1904, Fred C. Cogshall and Oran W. Rowland; 1906, Fred C. Cogshall and Oran W. Rowland; 1908, L. Myrl Phelps and Oran W. Rowland; 1910, L. Myrl Phelps and Oran W. Rowland, the present incumbents. Of the gentlemen who have filled this office Messrs. Knowles, Rowland, Johnson, Moulton, Breck, Chandler, Titus, Monroe, Anderson, Chase, Cogshall and Phelps are still living.

The revised Statutes of 1846 provided for the appointment of a circuit court commissioner in each organized county of the state, and in 1852, the office, by provision of law, became elective. Each circuit court commissioner is vested with judicial powers, not exceeding the power of a circuit judge at chambers. No person but an attorney of the supreme court of the state is eligible to this office. Since 1868 the county, by virtue of the statute, has been entitled to two circuit court commissioners.

County Surveyors: 1835, Humphrey P. Barnum; 1838, John D. Compton; 1840, Eleazer Keeler; 1842, Alonzo Crane; 1844, Samuel H. Blackman; 1846, Samuel H. Blackman; 1848, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1850, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1852, Jeremiah H. Simmons; 1854, William H. Harrison; 1856, Samuel A. Tripp; 1858, Samuel A. Tripp; 1860, Orville S. Abbott; 1862, Peter J. Speicher; 1864, Charles J. Monroe; 1866, Charles D. Lawton; 1868, Almon J. Pierce; 1870, Almon J. Pierce; 1872, Augustus J. Teed; 1874, Almon J. Pierce; 1876, Almon J. Pierce; 1878, Almon J. Pierce; 1880, Charles D. Lawton; 1882, Albert Fosdick; 1884, Albert Fosdick; 1886, Albert Fosdick; 1888, Albert Fosdick; 1892, F. Percy Lawton; 1894, F. Percy Lawton; 1896, George Mutchler; 1898, George Mutchler; 1900, George Mutchler; 1902, Warren Goss; 1904, Warren Goss; 1906, Warren Goss; 1908 and 1910, Whitfield V. Ackley, the present incumbent. There are living of the aforesaid gentlemen Messrs. Monroe, Pierce, F. Percy Lawton, Mutchler, Goss and Ackley. Fosdick was murdered and his slayer was never brought to justice.

County Commissioners of Schools: 1893, John A. O'Leary; 1895, John A. O'Leary; 1897, Wells G. Brown; 1899, Wells G.

Brown; 1901, Elmer A. Aseltine; 1903, Elmer A. Aseltine; 1907 and 1911, Volney A. Hungerford, the present incumbent.

The office of school commissioner was made elective by statute in 1893. By legislative enactment in 1895, the term of this office was extended to four years.

#### MEMBERS OF THE STATE LEGISLATURE

Representatives: Henry Coleman, Fernando C. Annable, John Andrews, Philotus Haydon, Josiah Andrews, John McKinney, Amos S. Brown, Morgan L. Fitch, Charles P. Sheldon, Joseph Gilman, Elisha J. House, Fabius Miles, Jonathan J. Woodman (speaker), Buell M. Williams, William H. Hurlbut, Samuel H. Blackman, Alexander B. Copley, Emery H. Simpson, William Thomas, James E. Ferguson, E. Parker Hill, George G. B. Yeckley, Harvey H. Howard, Robert L. Warren, John S. Cross, Jonathan G. Parkhurst, Milan Wiggins, Charles S. Eaton, Edwin A. Wildey, Charles C. Phillips, C. Spencer Adams, Nathan F. Simpson, Benjamin F. Heckert (died in office).

Senators: Philotus Hayden, John McKinney, Fitz H. Stevens, Lyman A. Fitch, Samuel H. Blackman, Nathan H. Bitely, George Hannahs, David Anderson, Albert Thompson, William O. Packard, Henry Ford, Charles J. Monroe, George W. Merriman, Jason Woodman and Milan Wiggins, the present incumbent.

The constitution of 1835 provided that the state should be divided into not less than four nor more than eight senatorial districts. In 1838, the legislature placed Van Buren county in the seventh senatorial district, together with the counties of St. Joseph, Berrien and Cass, and assigned two senators to the district. (Laws of Michigan, 1838, pp. 169-170.)

In 1841 a new apportionment was made, Van Buren being placed in the fifth district, along with the counties of St. Joseph, Cass, Berrien, Kalamazoo, Allegan, Barry, Ottawa, Oceana, Kent, Ionia and such other counties as were attached to the counties of Kent, Ionia and Ottawa, and three senators were assigned to the new district. (Laws of Michigan, 1841, p. 147.)

The constitution of 1850 provided that the state should be divided into thirty-two senatorial districts, one senator to be chosen from each district. The state was reapportioned in 1851, Van Buren and Allegan being constituted the twenty-ninth district. (Laws of Michigan, 1851, p. 304.)

The county remained districted with Allegan county until 1871 when it became a district by itself and so remained until 1881, when it was again districted with Allegan county where it has

remained until the present time, the two counties forming the eighth senatorial district.

Prior to 1847 Van Buren and Cass counties constituted a single representative district, after which, and until 1864, the county alone constituted a district. From 1864 to 1892, two representatives were apportioned to the county and it was divided into two separate districts. In 1892, under a new legislative apportionment, it again became a single district, and so remains at the present time. Since the death of Representative Heckert the office has remained vacant.

#### CHAIRMEN OF THE BOARD OF SUPERVISORS

Prior to the abolishment of the board of county commissioners by the legislature of 1842 and the conferring of the duties of that board on the supervisors, there had been occasional and irregular meetings, but the only organization of such body was by selecting one of their number to act as clerk for the time being. The statute of 1842 prescribed the dates at which the meetings of the board should be held and the manner of organization (which was by choosing one of their number as chairman of the board), and also provided that the county clerk should be clerk of the board and should perform his duties as such under its control and direction.

Following is a list of the several chairmen of the board and the townships they represented: 1842, Benjamin F. Chadwick, Lawrence; 1843, Philotus Haydon, Hamilton; 1844, Isaac S. Borden, Antwerp; 1845, John R. Pugsley, La Fayette; 1846, Joshua Bangs, Antwerp; 1847, John McKinney, Porter; 1848, Henry Barnum, Almena; 1849, Charles M. Morrill, Pine Grove; 1850, Fernando C. Annable, Almena; 1851, John McKinney, Porter; 1852, John Andrews, Lawrence; 1853, John Andrews, Lawrence; 1854, John McKinney, Porter; 1855, Philotus Haydon, Hamilton; 1856, L. G. Hill, Keeler; 1857, Edwin Barnum, La Fayette; 1858, Edwin Barnum, La Fayette; 1859, Nelson Rowe, Lawrence; 1860, Nelson Rowe, Lawrence; 1861, Nelson Rowe, Lawrence; 1862, Nelson Rowe, Lawrence; 1863, Nelson Rowe, Lawrence; 1864, E. Parker Hill, Decatur; 1865, E. Parker Hill, Decatur; 1866, E. Parker Hill, Decatur; 1867, Silas Breed, Almena; 1868, Charles Duncombe, Keeler; 1869, John B. Potter, Lawrence; 1870, Kirk W. Noyes, South Haven; 1871, Charles Duncombe, Keeler; 1872, George G. B. Yeckley, Hamilton; 1873, George G. B. Yeckley, Hamilton; 1874, Orsimus Williams, Porter; 1875, Prenett T. Streater, Waverly; 1876, Ransom Nutting, Decatur; 1877, Charles E. Heath, Bangor; 1878, Ransom Nutting, Decatur; 1879, Charles



Rockwell, Lawrence; 1880, Amasa M. Brown, Columbia; 1881, Samuel P. Wilson, South Haven; 1882, Charles W. Young, Paw Paw; 1883, Warren F. French, Almena; 1884, Jefferson D. Harris, Arlington; 1885, Jefferson D. Harris, Arlington; 1886, William Killefer, Bloomingdale; 1887, Peter J. Dillman, Bangor; 1888, Gilbert Mitchell, Geneva; 1889, William K. Van Hise, Decatur; 1890, Thomas C. Tyner, Lawrence; 1891, H. E. Dewey, South Haven; 1892, Harlan P. Waters, Antwerp; 1893, Jacob Gunsaul, Covert; 1894, John Marshall, Porter; 1895, John C. McFellin, Pine Grove; 1896, Adolph Danneffel, Keeler; 1897, E. A. Chase, Waverly; 1898, Varnum H. Dilley, Geneva; 1899, C. W. Byers, Hamilton; 1900, David A. Squier, Decatur; 1901, William C. Wildey, Paw Paw; 1902, George T. Waber, Pine Grove; 1903, John H. Cornish, Porter; 1904, Kirk W. Noyes, South Haven; 1905, John C. Kennedy, Almena; 1906, Jerome C. Warner, Paw Paw; 1907, Milan D. Wiggins, Bloomingdale; 1908, George J. Danneffel, Keeler; 1909, F. G. Cleveland, Arlington; 1910, John McAlpine, Hartford; 1910, John Gault, Waverly\*; and 1911, Shepard H. Shattuck, Covert.

#### OTHER IMPORTANT OFFICIALS FROM VAN BUREN COUNTY

Presidential electors: 1880, Charles Duncombe; 1900, Charles J. Monroe.

Lieutenant governor: 1907 to 1910, Patrick H. Kelley.

Secretary of state: 1855 to 1858, John McKinney.

State treasurer: 1859 to 1860, John McKinney.

Commissioner of state land office: 1901 to 1904, Edwin A. Wildey.

Superintendent of Public instruction: 1905 to 1906, Patrick H. Kelley.

Members State Board of Education: 1892 (six years), Eugene A. Wilson; 1901, Patrick H. Kelley (a).

Regent of University: 1898 to 1905, Charles D. Lawton.

President pro tem state senate: 1887, Charles J. Monroe.

Speakers of house of representatives: 1869 to 1872, Jonathan J. Woodman; 1867, Jonathan J. Woodman pro tem.

Commissioner of insurance: 1911, Marion O. Rowland (b).

Commissioner of mineral statistics: 1885 to 1891, Charles D. Lawton.

\*Appointed, vice McAlpine, who died before the expiration of his term of office.

(a) Appointed to fill vacancy; elected 1902; resigned to accept office of superintendent of public instruction.

(b) Appointed by governor to fill vacancy; resigned to accept presidency of Detroit National Fire Insurance Company.

Adjutant General: 1893 to 1895, Charles L. Eaton.

State salt inspector: 1905 to 1907, Edwin A. Wildey.

Circuit judge, Ninth judicial circuit: 1874, Darius E. Comstock (c); 1882 to 1888, Alfred J. Mills.

#### CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTIONS

The first constitution of Michigan was framed by a convention that convened at Detroit, May 11, 1835, and adjourned June 24, 1835. Van Buren county was not represented at this convention. The proposed constitution was ratified by a vote of the people in October, 1835, the vote being 6,299 yeas and 1,350 nays.

In 1836 congress passed the first act for the admission of Michigan into the Union. This act required the assent of the state to cutting off the city of Toledo and adjacent territory from the southern boundary of the state, assigning it to the state of Ohio and giving what is now the Upper Peninsula of Michigan in exchange therefor, and required the assent of the voters of Michigan before the act of admission should become effective.

A convention of assent met at Ann Arbor, September 26, 1836, and after remaining in session four days rejected the proposed terms of admission. Van Buren was also unrepresented at this convention.

A second convention of assent assembled at Ann Arbor, December 14, 1836, adjourning the next day. This convention ratified the conditions of admission proposed by the act of congress by what appears to have been a unanimous vote. Van Buren's delegate to this convention was Hon. Charles B. Avery of Paw Paw.

The next constitutional convention was held at Lansing from June 3 to August 15, 1850. This convention framed a new constitution which was adopted by a vote of the people in November of that year and it remained in force, with certain amendments, as the supreme law of the state until 1908. Van Buren was represented in this convention by Hon. Isaac W. Willard of Paw Paw.

In 1867 another constitutional convention was held at Lansing from May 15 to August 22. The constitution proposed by this convention was rejected by a vote of the people at the spring election of 1868. Hon. Samuel H. Blackman of Paw Paw and Hon. Charles Duncombe of Keeler, were delegates to this convention from Van Buren county.

A constitutional commission consisting of two members from each congressional district of the state, at which Van Buren was unrepresented, assembled at Lansing, August 27, 1873, and ad-

(c) Died in office.

journed October 16, 1873. This commission submitted a proposed constitution, but the people refused to ratify it when it came before them at the general election held in November, 1874.

On the 27th day of October, 1907, another constitutional convention assembled at the capital city and remained in session until the 3d day of March, 1908. Van Buren was represented in this convention by Hon. Benjamin F. Heckert of Paw Paw, and Hon. Guy J. Wicksall of South Haven, both of whom are since deceased. The constitution proposed by this convention was ratified at the next general election held November 3, 1908, by a vote of 244,705 to 130,783, and is now the supreme law of the state.

#### PROPOSED CONSTITUTIONAL AMENDMENTS

A proposed amendment granting equal suffrage to colored persons was submitted to a vote of the people in November, 1850, and rejected by the following vote: For 12,840, against 32,026. Van Buren's vote on this proposition was: Yes, 183; No, 583.

An amendment providing "that in time of war, insurrection or rebellion, no elector shall be deprived of his right to vote by reason of his service in the army or navy at such time," was proposed and adopted in November, 1866, although there were 13,094 Michigan patriots (?) who voted against the proposition. Van Buren county voted as follows: Yes, 2,433; No, 239. The soldiers of the Civil war, in 1864, had cast their vote in the field, but such was not included in the official canvass of the vote of the state. The soldiers' vote of the state for president cast that year was as follows: For Abraham Lincoln, 9,402; for George B. McClellan, 2,959.

By an amendment submitted and adopted by a vote of the people at the November election in 1869, the word "white" was stricken from section one of article seven of the constitution prescribing the qualifications of electors, thus conferring the right of suffrage on colored citizens under the same rules and restrictions as upon the white voters. Van Buren county voted as follows on this amendment: Yes, 1,810; No, 1,522.

The question of woman suffrage was submitted to a vote of the people at the November election of 1874. This proposition was, in effect, to substitute the word "person" for the words "male inhabitant" in that article of the constitution prescribing the qualification of electors, thus conferring on the qualified female inhabitants of the state the same right of franchise as enjoyed by men. The proposition met with defeat in the state by the following vote: Yes, 40,077; No, 124,034. Van Buren county voted: Yes, 1,166; No, 2,987.

## VAN BUREN COUNTY AND THE LIQUOR TRAFFIC

Van Buren county occupies an unique position in reference to the traffic in intoxicating liquors, having constantly and consistently registered its vote in opposition thereto at every offered opportunity. The first time the voters of the county had occasion to express themselves on this question at the ballot box was in the month of June, 1853, at a special election called for the purpose of ascertaining the will of the people in reference to a prohibitory amendment to the constitution of the state, which was at that time submitted to them for adoption or rejection. The total vote of the county at that election, as shown by the old records, was 1,112: Yes, 707; No, 412; an affirmative majority of 295.

This same question of a prohibitory amendment to the constitution was submitted to a vote in 1868 and again Van Buren registered an affirmative vote, as follows: Prohibition yes, 2,362; prohibition no, 1,982; a prohibition majority of 380. Both of the foregoing proposed amendments met with defeat at the hands of the voters of the state.

The third test of public sentiment on this question was had in November, 1876. A law prohibiting the manufacture and sale of intoxicating beverages had been on the statute books of the state since 1855, but it was not so framed and had not been so enforced as to commend itself to the judgment of a majority of the electors of the state. The constitution of the state then contained the following clause: "The legislature shall not pass any act authorizing grant of license for the sale of ardent spirits or other intoxicating liquors."

The question of striking this clause from the constitution was submitted to the voters of the state at the general election held in November, 1876, the result being that the prohibitory provision was stricken out. The vote of Van Buren county on this occasion was as follows: Yes, 1,044; No, 1,056; a majority of 12 votes in favor of the retention of the prohibitory clause. This was the closest vote ever recorded in the county on the liquor question.

At the April election in 1887 another prohibitory amendment was proposed by the legislature and submitted to the people, and on this amendment Van Buren's vote was as follows: Yes, 5,111; No, 1,549; a majority of 3,562 in favor of the proposition, which failed of adoption only because of the large adverse vote cast in the city of Detroit and Wayne county.

The legislature of 1887 also enacted a local option law, the first of that class of legislation ever attempted in Michigan. Under the provisions of this law, an election was held in Van Buren county as soon as practicable. The vote was as follows: Yes,

3,607; No, 456; a majority of 3,251 in favor of the new law. Before any attempt was made to enforce its provisions the supreme court of the state declared the law to be in conflict with the constitution, thus making it null and void.

Another local option statute which avoided the unconstitutional features of the law of 1887 was enacted by the next legislature in 1889. Under the provisions of this act, an election was held in Van Buren county on the 24th day of February, 1890, which resulted in the adoption of the new law by the following vote: Yes, 2,559; No, 1,320; a prohibitory majority of 1,279, every precinct voting in favor of the law.

This law, by resolution of the board of supervisors, became operative on the first day of May, 1890, and since that date the manufacture and sale of intoxicating liquors has been outlawed in Van Buren county, except as sale is permitted by druggists and registered pharmacists for medicinal, mechanical, scientific and sacramental purposes, and since that date such a thing as an open saloon has been unknown in the county.

Two years later, at a special election called for that purpose, the question was again submitted to the electors of the county and the law was sustained by a vote of 2,918 to 2,450; a majority of 468 in favor of the retention of the statute.

An unsuccessful attempt was made in 1895 and 1896 to have the question again tested by a vote of the electors of the county. However, in 1897, another vote was ordered by the board of supervisors and an election called to be held on the first day of November of that year. Again the law was sustained by the following vote: Yes, 4,158; No, 2,613; a prohibitory majority of 1,545.

Five years elapsed before the question was again submitted, the board of supervisors, in response to petitions presented, ordering an election to be held on the 6th day of April, 1903, to once more test the sentiment of the people in regard to the retention of the law. This election resulted as follows: Yes, 4,476; No, 3,077; thus sustaining the law by a majority of 1,399.

Again, on the 2d day of April, 1906, the question was submitted to a vote of the people, and the law was again sustained by a vote of 4,323 to 3,626; a majority of 677 in favor of its retention.

An attempt was again made in 1908 to submit the matter to a vote. This was unsuccessful and another petition was filed at the January session of the board in 1910. After an examination of the petition the board declared it to be insufficient and refused to order an election. An appeal was made to the circuit court for a writ of mandamus to compel the board to reverse its action, but that court sustained the board and refused to issue the writ

The matter was then appealed to the supreme court which reversed the decision of the circuit court and issued a writ ordering the board to reassemble and call an election according to the prayer of the petitioners. In obedience to this mandate of the court an election was called for the 4th day of April, 1910, and again the voters sustained the law by the following vote: Yes, 4,410; No, 3,600; a majority of 810 in favor of retaining the law.

By the operation of this law, Van Buren county has had legal prohibition for upwards of twenty-one years, and for a major portion of the time there was no other county in the state in which the provisions of the law were operative, although in several counties it had been in force for limited periods. At the present time, however, nearly one-half of the state is under the operation of its provisions

## CHAPTER IX

### CIVIL WAR INFANTRY

SIXTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—TWELFTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—  
THIRTEENTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—STONE RIVER—SEVEN-  
TEENTH MICHIGAN AT SOUTH MOUNTAIN—NINETEENTH MICHIGAN—  
TWENTY-FOURTH REGIMENT—TWENTY-FIFTH MICHIGAN  
INFANTRY—TWENTY-EIGHTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY—SPANISH-  
-AMERICAN WAR.

The military history of Van Buren county really begins with the outbreak of the Civil war in the spring of 1861, although there was here and there a representative of the county in the war with Mexico, 1846 to 1848. It is wholly impracticable to give the name and service of every Van Buren soldier of the great conflict of 1861-5, as such an exhibit would necessitate not only a careful research of the records of every Michigan regiment, but also of numerous companies and regiments from the other northern states of the Union. The most that we can hope to do is to make a fair approximation to accuracy and completeness, and this we believe we have accomplished in the following pages that are devoted to this matter.

When the news was received that Fort Sumter had been fired upon such a wave of patriotism swept over the entire northland as the world had never before witnessed, and Michigan was in-no-wise behind her loyal sister states in her readiness to resent the insult to the flag, and Van Buren county was no whit behind in its readiness to respond to its patriotic duty.

### SIXTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

The first Michigan infantry regiment in which the names of any considerable number of Van Buren county men appear was the Sixth.

Onward then, our stainless banner,  
Let it kiss the stripe and star,  
Till in weal and woe united,  
They forever wedded are.

The Sixth Infantry was organized at Kalamazoo under the command of Colonel Frederick W. Curtenius and was mustered into the service of the United States on the 20th day of August, 1861.

The regiment started from its rendezvous to join the army of the Potomac on the 30th day of August, 1861, having a total enrollment of 944 officers and enlisted men. While this regiment expected to become a part of the Army of the Potomac, the fortunes of war transferred it to the southwest, and the greater part of its service was performed on the Mississippi and the Gulf of Mexico. The regiment was recruited for the infantry arm of the service and served in that capacity until July, 1863, when General Banks converted it into a regiment of heavy artillery.

The regiment is therefore, frequently referred to as the Sixth Heavy Artillery.

The regiment spent the winter of 1861-2 in camp at Baltimore, Maryland, and the following spring was embarked upon steamers for Fortress Monroe, where it arrived February 23, 1862.

Again embarking with other Union troops, it proceeded by sea to Ship Island, Mississippi, and soon after was sent to join General Butler's forces in an attack upon New Orleans, Louisiana, and arrived at the city May 2d, after the fall of Forts Jackson and St. Phillips and the capture of the city. From this point the regiment, as a whole or in detachments, made many excursions into the surrounding country and up and down the Mississippi river, capturing and destroying public property and Confederate supplies, many of the excursions being of extremely hazardous nature.

On August 5, 1862, the Sixth made a brilliant record in assisting to repulse a heavy attack on the Union forces at Baton Rouge, and in a desperate charge upon the enemy's works captured the flag of the Ninth Louisiana battalion. The regiment suffered severely in killed and wounded in this engagement and General Thomas Williams, U. S. A., in command of the Union forces, was killed.

In January, 1863, the regiment participated in an expedition under General Weitzel to Bayou Teche, destroying the rebel gunboat "Cotton" and also took part in the expedition against Ponchatoula in March, where the regiment had nine men wounded, but captured a number of the enemy.

In April the Sixth was engaged at Amite river and Tickfaw river, and made a raid upon the Jackson railroad at Pangipabo, where it captured sixty prisoners and destroyed an immense amount of public property.

From May until July the Sixth was engaged in the siege of Port Hudson, when it received special commendations for its gal-



lantry and daring. It made a desperate charge upon the enemy's entrenchments on the 27th of May and though the works were carried at the point of the bayonet, the attack was unsuccessful by reason of the overwhelming numbers of the Confederates. After the siege of Port Hudson the regiment remained there until March, 1864, when 247 men re-enlisted and started for Michigan on veteran furlough.

The regiment reassembled at its former camp at Kalamazoo after the expiration of the thirty days' furlough and returned to Port Hudson, where it arrived May 11. The Sixth moved to Vicksburg, Mississippi, where it served as engineers, and then moved to White River and soon after to Ashton, Arkansas. The regiment was divided into detachments to serve as heavy artillery and was stationed at Fort Morgan, Fort Gaines, Dauphin island, and Mobile bay.

The regiment performed valuable service under its assignments as heavy artillery until August, when it received orders to return to Michigan. It arrived at Jackson August 30th, and was paid off and discharged September 5, 1865.

The regiment during its term of service met the enemy at Sewell's Point, Virginia, March 5, 1862; Fort Jackson, Louisiana, April 25, 1862; Vicksburg, Mississippi, May 20, 1862; Grand Gulf, Mississippi, May 27, 1862; Amite River, Mississippi, June 20, 1862; Baton Rouge, Louisiana, August 5 and 17, 1862; Bayou Teche, Louisiana, January 14, 1863; Ponchatoula, Louisiana, March 24, 25 and 26, 1863; Baratavia, Louisiana, April 7, 1863; Tickfaw River, La., April 12, 1863; Amite River, Mississippi, May 7, 1863; Ponchatoula, Louisiana, May 16, 1863; Siege of Port Hudson, May 23 to July 8, 1863; Tunica Bayou, Louisiana, November 8, 1863; Ashton, Arkansas, July 24, 1864; Fort Morgan, Alabama, August 23, 1864; Spanish Fort, Alabama, April, 1865; Fort Blakely, Alabama, April, 1865; Fort Huger, Alabama, April, 1865; Fort Tracey, Alabama, April, 1865; siege of Mobile, Alabama, from March 20 to April 12, 1865.

Total enrolment, 1992; killed in action, 45; died of wounds, 25; died in prison, 13; died of disease, 432; discharged for disability (disease and wounds), 327.

Following is a list of the names of the Van Buren county members of the regiment: Ball, James; Company C; enlisted at Schoolcraft; corporal; discharged August 20, 1865.

Davis, Benjamin F.; Company F; enlisted at Kalamazoo, August 20, 1861; died at New Orleans, August 31, 1862, of wounds received in action; buried in National cemetery at New Orleans, grave No. 5601.

Schermerhorn, Cornelius; Company F; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged November 12, 1862, to enlist in regular army.

Sparling, George W.; Company F; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Kalamazoo; corporal; discharged August 23, 1864.

Company D: Alford, George W., Lawton; enlisted August 3, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; died of wounds received in action, at Baton Rouge, July 28, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Baton Rouge, grave No. 2381.

Argabrite, William J.; enlisted August 10, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 20, 1864; reenlisted in Hancock's corps, March 28, 1865, at South Haven; discharged March 27, 1866.

Bankman, Charles K.; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at Baltimore, Maryland, November 21, 1861; buried in London Park National cemetery, at Baltimore.

Broadwell, William; enlisted August 10, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 23, 1864.

Brooks, Bradford; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 23, 1864; died November 15, 1895.

Brown, Silas W.; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 23, 1864.

Coggswell, Alanson H.; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability at Baltimore, October 18, 1861.

Crabb, John H.; enlisted August 11, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 23, 1864.

Culver, Meeker M.; enlisted August 12, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 20, 1865.

Dopp, Harrison H.; enlisted August 11, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 23, 1864; died September 17, 1901; buried at Paw Paw.

Finch, Charles H., Lawton; enlisted August 3, 1861, at Dowagiac; wagoner; died at Port Hudson, Louisiana, November 20, 1863.

Finch, Nathan V., enlisted at Fort Wayne, Indiana, June 19, 1861; corporal, promoted to sergeant; discharged for disability, May 7, 1864; died in 1901, buried at Lawton.

Green, Orsemus; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged September 6, 1865.

Halsey, John; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability, February 10, 1863.

Hawley, William C.; enlisted August 4, 1861, at Dowagiac; killed on steamer "Ceres" by collision with gunboat, May 18, 1862.

Hurlburt, Horace H.; enlisted August 6, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 20, 1865.

Heath, George F.; enlisted August 4, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal, promoted to sergeant; discharged August 29, 1865.

Jackson, Andrew; enlisted August 5, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at Camp Williams, Louisiana, September 4, 1862.

Johnson, Abner L.; enlisted August 2, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 23, 1864.

King, Nathaniel H.; enlisted August 3, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability, October 14, 1862.

Kellogg, William R.; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 20, 1865.

McDonald, William; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 23, 1864.

Morrison, Oscar; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 20, 1865.

Mather, George W.; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged to enter regular army in December, 1862.

Mullen, Samuel D.; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at Baltimore, Maryland, November 21, 1861; buried in London Park National cemetery, at Baltimore.

Palmer, Thomas K.; enlisted August 2, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 23, 1864.

Pease, John W.; enlisted August 1, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at Baton Rouge, Louisiana, July 27, 1862.

Perkins, Charles R.; enlisted August 1, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability March 24, 1862.

Porter, Tobias; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 23, 1864.

Scott, Francis M.; enlisted June 19, 1861, at Fort Wayne, Indiana; corporal; died at New Orleans, Louisiana, August 12, 1862; buried in National cemetery at New Orleans, grave No. 5549.

Steadman, John J., Hartford; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; died June 23, 1863, at Port Hudson, Louisiana, of wounds received in action; buried in National cemetery at Baton Rouge, grave No. 5432.

Stevens, George E., Mattawan; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at Port Hudson, Louisiana, August 2, 1863.

Smith, Joseph, Lawton; enlisted August 8, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at New Orleans, February 22, 1863.

Sweet, Thomas O., Lawrence; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged August 23, 1864; died at Lawrence, August 1, 1911; buried at Lawrence.

Van Ostran, Holley; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability October 22, 1861.

Voorhees, Orlando; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged August 23, 1864.

White, George; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at Baton Rouge, La., June 5, 1862.

Wilcox, Seth D.; enlisted August 7, 1861, at Dowagiac; died at Camp Williams, Louisiana, September 18, 1862.

TWELFTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

We're fighting for the Union,  
 We're fighting for the trust,  
 We're fighting for the land  
 Where sleeps our fathers' dust.

The Twelfth Michigan Infantry was organized at Niles by Colonel Francis Quinn of that city, and was mustered into service March 5, 1862, with an enrolment of 1,000 officers and men.

The regiment left the state, March 18th, going to St. Louis, Missouri, where it embarked for Pittsburg Landing, Tennessee, joining General Prentiss' division of the Army of the Tennessee commanded by General U. S. Grant. The regiment, with others newly organized and wholly without any military experience, was pushed to the front, and on Sunday morning, April 6th, only one month after its organization, received its first baptism of blood in the attack made by the Confederate forces under the command of General Albert Sidney Johnston, in which that brilliant officer lost his life, being succeeded by General Beauregard.

The troops lay upon their arms during the night, and before morning General Buell's army arrived, when the battle was resumed Monday, culminating in driving General Beauregard and his troops from the field. The losses of the Twelfth in this engagement were serious.

The regiment during the rest of the year occupied stations at Bolivar, Tennessee, Iuka, Mississippi, and Metamora, and from November, 1862, to May, 1863, was guarding the Mississippi Central Railroad, with headquarters at Middleburg, Tennessee.

At this place in December a detachment of the regiment was besieged in a block house which was gallantly defended against an attack by General Van Dorn's forces, estimated at 3,000 strong.

Colonel Graves refused to surrender and succeeded after an engagement of two hours and a half with the assistance of a detachment of the Third Michigan Cavalry that came to his relief, in driving off the Confederate forces. The command was complimented by General Grant in General Orders for this brilliant work. The regiment was ordered to Vicksburg, Mississippi, in June, 1863, where it took post at Haynes' Bluff and remained until the fall of Vicksburg.

In July, 1863, the Twelfth comprised a part of the force under General Steele, when he invested Little Rock, Arkansas. At this point the regiment veteranized, 334 reenlisting, and in January, 1864, started for Michigan on veteran furlough. After the expi-

ration of the thirty days' furlough, the Twelfth reassembled at Niles and returned to Little Rock, Arkansas, where it arrived April 1st. The regiment was engaged in long marches and frequent skirmishes with the enemy, and in doing picket and guard duty until October, when it arrived at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas.

The regiment was then separated into detachments, the different companies occupying posts wherever their services were needed until January, 1866, when the detachments were ordered to assemble at Camden, where the regiment was mustered out of service February 15, 1866.

The Twelfth started at once for Michigan, arrived at Jackson the 27th, and was paid off and disbanded the 6th of March.

The Twelfth was engaged with the enemy at Pittsburg Landing, Tennessee, April 6, 7, 1862; Iuka, Mississippi, September 19, 1862; Metamora, Tennessee, October 5, 1862; Middleburg, Tennessee, December 24, 1862; Mechanicsville, Mississippi, June 4, 1863; siege of Vicksburg, Mississippi, June and July, 1863; siege of Little Rock, Arkansas, August and September, 1863; Clarendon, Arkansas, June 26, 1864; Gregory's Landing, September 4, 1864.

Total enrolment, 2357; killed in action, 29; died of wounds, 26; died in confederate prisons, 17; died of disease, 316; discharged for disability (wounds and disease), 221.

Following is a list of the names of the members of this regiment from Van Buren County:

Company A: Alexander, Horace N., Keeler; enlisted February 5, 1864, at Keeler; discharged June 10, 1865.

Brown, Caleb J., Decatur; enlisted November 21, 1861, at Decatur; corporal; discharged February 13, 1866; died December 10, 1895.

Buckley, John; enlisted February 24, 1865, at Geneva; discharged February 15, 1866; died May 7, 1895; buried at Monk, Michigan.

Freelove, Joseph, Hamilton; enlisted March 16, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Horton, Samuel, Columbia; enlisted January 24, 1865, at Columbia; discharged January 24, 1866.

Hess, Calvin, Columbia; enlisted January 24, 1865, at Columbia; discharged January 24, 1866.

Welcher, Albert, Decatur; enlisted November 23, 1861, at Decatur; discharged May 31, 1862.

Welcher, John, Decatur; enlisted November 22, 1861, at Decatur; discharged May 31, 1862.

Company B: Beal, Franklin, Covert; enlisted November 6, 1862; discharged November 11, 1865.

Bucknell, Uriah; enlisted February 14, 1865, at Antwerp, discharged February 15, 1866.

Evans, Robert K., Keeler; enlisted February 5, 1864, at Keeler; discharged February 15, 1866.

Gates, Franklin D.; enlisted March 27, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Hall, James H., Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; sergeant and commissary sergeant, promoted to second lieutenant and to first lieutenant; discharged February 15, 1866; present residence, Lawton.

Matran, Morgan W.; enlisted December 20, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Lamson, William W., Covert; enlisted November 20, 1861, at Covert; died at Camp Prentice, Tennessee, April 21, 1862.

Teachout, Henry, Covert; enlisted November 26, 1862, at Covert; discharged June 20, 1865.

Timmons, Bedient; enlisted December 30, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Company D: Davidson, Andrew L.; enlisted March 6, 1866, at Keeler; discharged February 15, 1866.

Dougherty, George W.; enlisted March 15, 1865, at Hamilton; died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, June 2, 1865.

Keyes, Nathaniel; enlisted March 18, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged for disability, June 12, 1865.

McMillan, John; enlisted March 6, 1865, at Keeler; discharged February 15, 1866.

Smith, Estell H.; enlisted March 7, 1865, at Keeler; discharged February 15, 1866.

Company E: Crippen, David G.; enlisted February 15, 1865, at Antwerp; discharged May 22, 1865.

Company F: Barrett, Charles; enlisted February 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Hamlin, Shadrach; enlisted September 6, 1864, at Hamilton; discharged September 9, 1865.

Johnson, Elias V.; enlisted February 15, 1865, at Antwerp; discharged February 15, 1866.

Smith, Eber A.; enlisted April 4, 1865, at Antwerp; discharged June 20, 1865.

Tryon, Israel D.; enlisted November 3, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died at Washington, Arkansas, July 22, 1865.

Company G: Barnes, Robert; enlisted February 24, 1865, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Bratton, Andrew W.; enlisted December 29, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability July 19, 1865.

Company H: Atkinson, William E., Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; supposed to have been taken prisoner and murdered by guerrillas in May, 1863.

Allen, Owen L.; enlisted February 29, 1864, at Decatur; discharged February 15, 1866.

Andrews, Wallace W., Lawton; enlisted November 29, 1861, at Lawton; discharged February 5, 1865.

Armitage, Richard, Decatur; enlisted November 25, 1861, at Decatur; corporal; died at Washington, Arkansas, August 7, 1865.

Barnes, George, Mattawan; enlisted December 14, 1861, at Lawton; killed in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862.

Baker, Franklin; enlisted February 22, 1865, at Antwerp; discharged February 15, 1866.

Beals, William, Lawton; drummer; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Bitely, Stephen; corporal; enlisted November 1, 1861, at Lawton; promoted to commissary sergeant, commissioned first lieutenant and quartermaster; discharged February 15, 1866.

Bitely, Cyrus, Lawton; enlisted November 26, 1861, at Lawton; corporal, promoted to commissary sergeant; discharged February 15, 1866.

Bowman, James M., Lawton; enlisted October 20, 1861, at Lawton; died April 17, 1862, on hospital boat opposite Cairo, Illinois, of wounds received in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, section 53, grave No. 955.

Brott, William, H., Porter; enlisted August 25, 1862, at Lawton; discharged September 30, 1865.

Burgess, David; enlisted February 18, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Burrell, Joseph; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 15, 1866.

Case, Randall Z., Lawton; enlisted November 1, 1861, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Chase, Jonathan L., Lawton; entered service at Lawton as second lieutenant; resigned May 5, 1862, on account of wounds received in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862.

Cole, Danford D.; enlisted March 15, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Cole, John J., Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; supposed to have been taken prisoner and murdered by guerrillas, in May, 1863.

DeBolt, William H., Decatur; sergeant and first sergeant, promoted to second lieutenant; resigned August 20, 1864; died at Decatur, January 11, 1902.

Dibble, David W., Lawton; enlisted October 28, 1861, at Law-

ton; wounded at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; discharged for disability, July 8, 1862.

Dibble, Charles J., Lawton; enlisted October 28, 1861, at Lawton; died at Little Rock, Arkansas, November 13, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Little Rock, grave No. 171.

Dine, Adam, Lawton; enlisted October 26, 1861, at Lawton; corporal; discharged February 15, 1866.

Dine, Benjamin F., Decatur; enlisted December 19, 1864, at Decatur; discharged February 15, 1866.

Dine, Lewis, Porter; enlisted December 16, 1861, at Porter; discharged November 17, 1865, from Veteran Reserve corps.

Doolittle, Alfred, Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Durden, James E., Keeler, enlisted March 7, 1865, at Keeler; discharged June 20, 1865.

Eggleston, Harvey, Porter; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Lawton; discharged September 30, 1865.

Eastman, George, Porter; enlisted January 8, 1862, at Porter; discharged May 8, 1863.

Farrow, John; enlisted February 24, 1865, at Lawton; discharged for disability, May 3, 1865.

Flanders, Edwin; enlisted March 15, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 25, 1866.

Flanders, Milan; enlisted March 15, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Follett, Luther D., Lawton; enlisted November 7, 1861, at Lawton; died at St. Louis, Missouri, June 6, 1862; buried in National cemetery, Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, grave No. 823.

Fuller, Isaac H., Arlington; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Arlington; died May 14, 1864, at Little Rock, Arkansas; buried in National cemetery at Little Rock, grave No. 451.

Gustin, Clinton J., Keeler; enlisted March 17, 1865, at Keeler, discharged February 15, 1866.

Hall, James H., Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; sergeant and commissary sergeant, second lieutenant Company B and first lieutenant Company C; discharged February 15, 1866.

Hall, Wesley M., Lawton; enlisted October 29, 1861, at Lawton; corporal; wounded at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; discharged for disability August 25, 1862; present residence, Paw Paw.

Harper, Harvey, Lawton; enlisted December 10, 1861, at Lawton, discharged August 18, 1863, for disability.

Hartman, Conrad R., Hamilton; enlisted December 9, 1861, at Hamilton; discharged June 21, 1863.



Hawkins, Daniel, Lawton; enlisted February 1, 1862, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Hincher, Eli J., Decatur; enlisted March 18, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Hopkins, George P.; enlisted February 22, 1864, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Hopkins, Cyrus; enlisted March 31, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866; died July 21, 1903.

Johnson, Gilbert D., Lawton; entered service October 14, 1861, at Lawton, as captain of Company H; wounded in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; resigned October 8, 1862; dead, buried at Lawton.

Johnson, Uriah, Decatur; enlisted February 10, 1862, at Decatur; died June 1, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, section 52, grave No. 912.

Kennard, William, Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability, June 20, 1862.

Kinney, George R.; enlisted March 15, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Kidney, Samuel A.; enlisted January 5, 1864, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Lee, Henry W., Lawton; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Lawton; discharged September 30, 1865.

Leet, Franklin, Porter; enlisted December 30, 1861, at Lawton; died at Pittsburg Landing, April 23, 1862.

Longcor, William H.; enlisted February 13, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

McNeil, Livingston; enlisted February 9, 1864, at Lawton; died at Little Rock, Arkansas, July 21, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Little Rock, grave No. 763.

Mayo, Lyman, Lawton; enlisted October 24, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability October 24, 1862.

Miller, Nicholas, Lawton; enlisted November 8, 1861, at Lawton; died at St. Louis, Missouri, June 1, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Jefferson Barracks, Missouri, section 52, grave No. 878.

Minnick, William, Porter; enlisted November 29, 1861, at Lawton; died at Atlanta, Georgia, June 17, 1862, while prisoner of war.

Monroe, Richard, Lawton; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability, November 10, 1862.

Munger, Alpheus D., Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability, July 18, 1862.

Myers, Alfred, Lawton; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Nash, Samuel D., Hamilton; enlisted November 16, 1861, at

Hamilton; died at Little Rock, Arkansas; July 12, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Little Rock, section 2, grave No. 713.

Nash, William A., Lawton; enlisted October 31, at Lawton; died at Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, July 27, 1862.

Nichols, Joseph; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Decatur; corporal; discharged February 15, 1866.

Parker, Dyer, Porter; enlisted August 13, 1862, at Porter; died at Little Rock, Arkansas, August 17, 1863.

Parker, Ira, Porter; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Porter; discharged for disability, November 23, 1862.

Parker, James; enlisted December 21, 1862, at Kalamazoo; died at Lawton, Michigan, January 11, 1865.

Parker, James M.; enlisted January 5, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died in Michigan, March 25, 1864.

Parsons, Christopher; enlisted March 1, 1862; discharged for disability, July 14, 1862.

Pattingill, Clark, Lawton; enlisted December 26, 1861, at Lawton; discharged September 25, 1862.

Prince, Daniel; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Lawton; died at Lawton; November 21, 1864.

Rice, Edward H., Arlington; enlisted October 26, 1861, at Arlington; sergeant; discharged February 15, 1866.

Robards, Barney S., Hamilton; enlisted November 22, 1861, at Hamilton; wounded in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; discharged March 5, 1864.

Robinson, Lucius K., Lawton; enlisted October 14, 1862, at Lawton; discharged for disability, July 7, 1863.

Robinson, Walter P., Paw Paw; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability, December 11, 1862.

Rough, Uriah W.; enlisted March 15, 1864; discharged February 15, 1866.

Sams, James; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Scott, Thomas J.; enlisted February 17, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, July 26, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Little Rock, Arkansas, section 10, grave No. 407.

Sheldon, Luther D.; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Decatur; died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, November 23, 1864.

Showers, Jacob, Jr.; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged February 26, 1866.

Smith, Allen; enlisted at Kalamazoo, February 9, 1864; discharged February 15, 1866.

Smith, Bennett; enlisted February 9, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Stambrook, Samuel F., Lawton; enlisted October 30, 1861, at Lawton; corporal; discharged February 15, 1866.

Stephens, George, Lawton; enlisted November 7, 1861, at Lawton; died at Pittsburgh Landing, Tennessee, May 11, 1862.

Sternbergh, William, Lawton; enlisted November 2, 1861, at Lawton; discharged August 22, 1865.

Stilwell, Isaiah, Lawton; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Stilwell, James; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Lawton; discharged September 30, 1865.

Tomlinson, Clauson, Lawton; enlisted October 22, 1861, at Lawton; died at Pittsburgh Landing, Tennessee, June 6, 1862.

Tomlinson, James H.; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 26, 1866.

Tyler, James P.; enlisted December 5, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability, October 24, 1862.

Van Hise, Jared P., Decatur; enlisted February 27, 1865; discharged June 17, 1865; died January 11, 1903; buried at Decatur.

Van Hise, Runyan, Lawton; enlisted October 26, 1861, at Lawton; taken prisoner April 6, 1862; returned to company, January 26, 1863; promoted to commissary sergeant and to second lieutenant of Company K, commissioned first lieutenant Company H; resigned December 31, 1864.

Van Hise, William K., Decatur; enlisted December 9, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Vannetten, William, Porter; enlisted November 16, 1861, at Porter; missing in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; no further record.

Vought, Samuel, Decatur; enlisted February 29, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 17, 1865.

Vought, Thomas A., Decatur; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Decatur; discharged February 15, 1866.

Wait, Stephen E.; enlisted April 19, 1864, at Lawton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Wilson, Charles, Lawton; enlisted November 27, 1861, at Lawton; died at De Vall's Bluff, August 23, 1863.

Wilson, William, Lawton; enlisted November 22, 1861, killed in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1861.

Wilson, William; enlisted February 13, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Wright, Adelbert; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Company K: Ames, Roswell, Lawrence; enlisted December 15, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged January 7, 1865.

Blackmer, David C., Keeler; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Keeler; died at Little Rock, Arkansas, September 24, 1863.

Blackmer, John R., Hamilton; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Hamilton; discharged for disability June 1, 1865.

Barnum, Amos; enlisted March 18, 1865, at Hamilton; died at Washington, Arkansas, July 3, 1865.

Barnum, William; enlisted March 18, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Chubbuck, Russell L., Lawrence; enlisted November 4, 1861, at Lawrence; sergeant; discharged February 15, 1866; dead.

Code, John; enlisted March 16, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged February 15, 1866.

Corder, Eli M.; enlisted March 5, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Earl, John T., Decatur; enlisted December 10, 1861, at Decatur; corporal; discharged February 15, 1866.

Earl, Samuel E., Hamilton; enlisted March 15, 1865; discharged February 15, 1866.

Field, Othniel H., Hamilton; enlisted November 13, 1861, at Hamilton; sergeant, discharged February 15, 1866.

Geer, Charles M., Hamilton; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Hamilton; died at St. Louis, Missouri, May 10, 1862.

Geer, William A., Hamilton; enlisted November 16, 1861, at Hamilton; died December 22, 1864, while a prisoner of war at Camp Tyler, Texas.

Hartman, Conrad R., Hamilton; enlisted December 9, 1861, at Hamilton; discharged June 21, 1863.

James, William H., Hamilton; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Hamilton; discharged for disability October 25, 1864.

Jordan, Allen J., Hamilton; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Hamilton; corporal; discharged February 15, 1866.

Luce, Charles C., Arlington; enlisted October 18, 1861, at Arlington; discharged January 7, 1865.

Morrison, John H., Decatur; enlisted November 21, 1861, at Hamilton; discharged for disability, July 18, 1862.

Parker, Henry C.; corporal; discharged February 15, 1864.

Peck, John A., Hamilton; enlisted November 22, 1861, at Hamilton; discharged January 7, 1865.

Pletcher, Daniel E., Keeler; enlisted March 7, 1865; discharged February 15, 1866.

Redding, John D.; enlisted February 16, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 15, 1866.

Rider, William B., Keeler; enlisted December 7, 1861, at Keeler; died at Keeler, July 15, 1862.

Roberts, Russell; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo;

died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, September 1, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Little Rock, Arkansas, section 10, grave No. 373.

Stearns, William W.; enlisted March 15, 1865, at Hamilton; discharged for disability, October 5, 1865.

Sweet, Allen; enlisted February 16, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability, June 12, 1865.

Wilson, Burney O., Hamilton; corporal; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Hamilton; wounded in action at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; died at Paducah, Kentucky, May 30, 1862.

#### THIRTEENTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

Onward, onward, then to Battle,  
For bright Freedom points the way,  
Though the grape shot thickly rattle,  
Onward, onward, to the fray.

The Thirteenth Michigan Infantry was organized at Kalamazoo, under the direction of Colonel Charles E. Stuart of that city, and was mustered into the service of the United States, January 17, 1862, with an enrolment of 935 officers and enlisted men. It left the state February 12th, under command of Colonel Michael Shoemaker (Colonel Stuart having resigned), and proceeded to Nashville, Tennessee, where it was assigned to Wood's division of General Buell's army, and marched to Pittsburgh Landing to reinforce General Grant, arriving just after the two days' battle with the Confederate forces under Generals Johnston and Beauregard.

General Buell moved his headquarters to Dechard, north of Stevenson, on the line of the Nashville and Chattanooga Railway, and left the Thirteenth with a small garrison to hold Stevenson.

The enemy attacked before the Union forces left Stevenson, but were repulsed, and then a long march continued night and day over horrible roads across the mountains until Cowan was reached, where Colonel Shoemaker learned the army had left Dechard. He pressed forward and reached Tullahoma September 2nd, where he joined General Smith's division of Buell's army. Colonel Shoemaker was highly complimented by the commanding general for bringing in all his forces, artillery, and baggage, without loss of either men or equipment. The Thirteenth, with the balance of the army, then fell back to Nashville and joined in the pursuit of General Bragg's army to Louisville, Kentucky. In December the regiment belonged to the Third Brigade, First Division, General Thomas' corps, and joined the army commanded by General Rosecrans on his advance upon Murfreesboro, Tennessee.

## STONE RIVER

The regiment was engaged at Stone River the 30th and 31st of December, 1862, and in January, 1863, where it distinguished itself by its desperate valor and was most warmly commended for the heroic work that checked the onward rush of the Confederate forces.

The brigade of which the Thirteenth formed a part was commanded by Colonel Charles G. Harker, and was detached from its division and sent to the extreme right of the Union line, where the enemy had crushed that wing, when it formed a line in the immediate front of the Confederates and a desperate conflict commenced. The Union forces were steadily pressed back by the enemy, but the Thirteenth held its position until nearly surrounded, when it fell back a short distance and reformed, continually showing a bold front to the enemy. Colonel Shoemaker ordered a bayonet charge and the Thirteenth sprang forward with a yell, driving the enemy from the field in confusion and capturing a large number of prisoners. The regiment lost nearly one third of its strength in killed and wounded in the action on this part of the field. It recaptured two pieces of artillery of the Sixth Ohio Battery, which had been abandoned when the Union forces were driven back by the furious onslaught of the enemy.

The Thirteenth commenced its advance toward Chattanooga in August and marched over the Cumberland mountains, crossed the Tennessee river at Shell Mound and was one of the first regiments to march into Chattanooga on the morning of the 13th of September. It proceeded almost at once to Chickamauga, where it was engaged the 19th and 20th of September, coming in contact with the enemy near Lee and Gordon's Mills, and before the close of the battle lost 107 killed, wounded and missing, out of a total of 217, the number of officers and men the regiment carried into action. Such a record tells how the Thirteenth sustained its part in this historic engagement far more eloquently than words can describe.

After the battle of Chickamauga the regiment was in the trenches about Chattanooga and took part in the movements about Lookout Mountain and Mission Ridge.

In November, 1863, the Thirteenth was organized with other regiments into a brigade of engineers and was attached to the headquarters of the Army of the Cumberland. In January, 1864, it veteranized and returned to Kalamazoo, where it arrived on the 12th and was furloughed for thirty days.

It returned to Chattanooga on the 20th of April with a large number of recruits and was soon engaged in the construction of

military hospitals on Lookout Mountain, and in the pursuit of Forrest's forces until the month of November, when it joined the army under the command of General Sherman, being assigned to the Second Brigade, First Division of the Fourteenth Corps. The regiment marched with Sherman to the sea and reached Savannah on the 16th of December. After the surrender of the city the regiment continued with Sherman's army through South Carolina and North Carolina, meeting with Johnston and Hardee's forces at Bentonville, on the 19th of March, 1865, where it sustained a severe loss. This was the last battle of importance fought by Sherman's army.

After Johnston's surrender the regiment marched to Richmond and thence to Washington, where it participated in the grand review.

On the 9th day of June the regiment proceeded to Louisville, Kentucky, where it was mustered out of the service, proceeding to Jackson, Michigan, where it was paid off and disbanded July 27, 1865.

The Thirteenth participated in the following engagements: Shiloh, Tennessee, April 7, 1862; Farmington, Mississippi, May 9, 1862; Owl Creek, Mississippi, May 17, 1862; siege of Corinth, May 10 to 31, 1862; Stevenson, Alabama, August 31, 1862; Munfordsville, Kentucky, September 14, 1862; Perryville, Kentucky, October 8, 1862; Danville, Kentucky, October 17, 1862; Gallatin, Tennessee, December 5, 1862; Mill Creek, Tennessee, December 15, 1862; Lavergne, Tennessee, December 27, 1862; Stewart's Creek, Tennessee, December 29, 1862; Stone River, Tennessee, December 29, 1862 to January 3, 1863; Eagleville, Tennessee, January 20, 1863; Pelham, Tennessee, July 2, 1863; Lookout Valley, Tennessee, September 7, 1863; Lookout Mountain, Tennessee, September 10, 1863; Chickamauga, Georgia, September 12, 18, and 19, 1863; Chattanooga, Tennessee, October 6, 1863; Mission Ridge, Tennessee, November 26, 1863; Florence, Alabama, October 8, 1864; Savannah, Georgia, December 17 to 21, 1864; Catawba River, South Carolina, February 28, 1865; Averysborough, North Carolina, March 16, 1865; Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865.

Total enrolment, 2092; killed in action, 47; died of wounds, 33; died in Confederate prisons, 7; died of disease; 253; discharged for disability (wounds and disease), 216.

Following are the names of the Van Buren county members of the regiment: Culver, Joshua B., Paw Paw; entered service at organization of the regiment as first lieutenant and adjutant; major, July 4, 1862; lieutenant-colonel, February 26, 1863; colonel, May 26, 1863; commanding brigade July 23, 1864; final discharge July 25, 1865.

Whitcomb, Lewis J., Paw Paw; entered service as chaplain, commissioned August 7, 1863; discharged for disability March 17, 1865; died August 10, 1903; buried at Milford, Michigan.

Company A: Brown, Jesse M., Paw Paw; enlisted August 16, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865; died at Paw Paw, April 14, 1911.

Bush, Philemon, Waverly; enlisted December 20, 1863, at Osh-temo; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Hoyt, Benjamin F., Paw Paw; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Merritt, Charles A., South Haven; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Sturgis; discharged July 25, 1865.

Rice, Orville A.; enlisted February 24, 1864; discharged from hospital, May 23, 1865; present residence, Paw Paw.

Whitford, De Forest A., Waverly; enlisted December 20, 1863, at Osh-temo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Chapman, Dewey D., Columbia; enlisted August 19, 1864, at Columbia; discharged July 25, 1865; died September 5, 1898; buried at Arlington.

Waldron, Frederick; enlisted January 24, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Company B: Collins, Edgar; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865.

Coon, Carlton, Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865.

Coon, Edwin H., Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 21, 1865.

Loveland, George B., Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865.

McGrady, James, Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865.

McVey, James W., Paw Paw; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Jackson; substitute for Joshua Bangs; discharged June 8, 1865.

Smith, Junius, Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865; died April 20, 1891; buried at Paw Paw.

Woodbeck, David; enlisted December 31, 1863, at Waverly; discharged January 31, 1865.

Company C: Austin, William F., Paw Paw; enlisted August 13, 1864, at Paw Paw; died June 29, 1865; buried in National cemetery, Arlington, Virginia.

Arnold, William W., Antwerp; enlisted February 16, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged July 25, 1865.

Butler, William D., Mattawan; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Mattawan; died at Nashville, Tennessee, May 20, 1863; buried in National cemetery, Nashville.



Britton, William H., Mattawan; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Calkins, Orlando W., Mattawan; enlisted December 6, 1861, at Mattawan; died at Mattawan, May 10, 1862.

Covey, Hiram F., Waverly; enlisted April 29, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Savannah, Georgia, March 18, 1865; buried in National cemetery, Beaufort, South Carolina, section 41, grave No. 4655.

Dailey, Ira H., Lawton; enlisted March 29, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Dailey, William S., Lawton; enlisted December 13, 1861, at Porter; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Davis, Andrew J., Hartford; enlisted September 1, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged May 31, 1865.

Dunbar, Edwin G., Decatur; enlisted October 9, 1861; sergeant; second lieutenant May 15, 1862; first lieutenant and quartermaster August 18, 1862; captain January 4, 1864; major August 1, 1865; breveted lieutenant-colonel for gallant services March 13, 1865; discharged November 22, 1865.

Edick, George W., Decatur; enlisted November 2, 1861, at Decatur; musician; discharged July 25, 1865.

Fox, George N., Waverly; enlisted August 24, 1864, at Kalamazoo; sick at Tilton November 1, 1864; no further record.

Fox, Henry, Mattawan; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Mattawan; sergeant, color sergeant; killed in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863.

Greenman, Miles, Decatur; enlisted December 23, 1861, at Decatur; died at Louisville, Kentucky, April 22, 1862; buried in National cemetery, Louisville.

Griffith, Collins D.; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged July 17, 1865.

Hand, Alden S., Decatur; enlisted December 21, 1861, at Allegan; killed in action at Stone River, Tennessee, December 31, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, grave No. 2911.

Huff, Henry, Mattawan; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged July 11, 1865.

Huff, Marion, Mattawan; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 9, 1865.

Johnson, Henry M., Porter; enlisted December 13, 1861, at Porter; died at Danville, Kentucky, November 20, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Lebanon, Kentucky.

Lee, Edward; enlisted October 19, 1861, at Decatur; sick at Nashville, Tennessee; no further record.

Lent, Champlin; enlisted at Antwerp, February 27, 1864; wounded in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; discharged June 20, 1865.

Lynden, Elbridge G., Lawton; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Porter; discharged July 25, 1865.

Nash, Eugene D., Paw Paw; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Waverly; discharged June 8, 1865.

Niles, Augustus; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged August 30, 1865.

Oaks, Samuel E.; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Antwerp; died at Alexandria, Virginia, May 28, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Alexandria.

Pratt, Warren, South Haven; enlisted December 24, 1861, at South Haven; transferred to U. S. Engineers; discharged September 20, 1865.

Price, Andrew A.; enlisted November 6, 1861; discharged for disability July 31, 1862.

Prindle, Lawrence E., Waverly; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Waverly; discharged June 8, 1865.

Stilwell, Ira, Porter; enlisted December 30, 1861, at Porter; wounded in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 20, 1863; discharged January 30, 1865.

Van Wickle, William B.; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Antwerp; taken prisoner at Goldsboro, North Carolina; discharged June 3, 1865.

Varnum, John, Mattawan; enlisted August 21, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 8, 1865.

Welch, John A., Paw Paw; enlisted August 30, 1864; discharged June 15, 1865.

Williams, Cantine R., Mattawan; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Antwerp; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Williams, Smith G., Mattawan; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Mattawan; sergeant; wounded in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863; second lieutenant, March 19, 1864; first lieutenant, May 12, 1865; captain July 5, 1865; discharged July 25, 1865.

Company D: Allen, Anson, Paw Paw; enlisted December 10, 1863, at Bloomingdale; discharged July 25, 1865.

Bell, Ephraim N.; enlisted December 20, 1863, at Bloomingdale; died at Nashville, Tennessee, March 28, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Bush, Sylvanus, Bloomingdale; enlisted December 16, 1863, at Bloomingdale; discharged July 12, 1865.

Cadwell, Levi, Lawrence; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Cooper; discharged June 8, 1865.

Doran, William, Decatur; enlisted November 1, 1861, at Decatur; discharged July 25, 1865.

Foote, Cortes F., Paw Paw; enlisted October 19, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability July 16, 1862.

Howard, Orange F., Paw Paw; enlisted February 3, 1863, at Bloomingdale; died at Lookout Mountain, Tennessee, August 13, 1864; buried in National cemetery, Chattanooga, Tennessee, grave No. 1393.

Joy, Andrew J.; enlisted December 14, 1863, at Waverly, died at Stevenson, Alabama, February 10, 1864.

Lull, Abner, Mattawan; enlisted December 31, 1861, at Mattawan; died at Hillsboro, Tennessee, August 4, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, grave No. 3059.

Northrup, John L., Lawrence; enlisted November 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged for disability, July 12, 1862; died May 7, 1888.

Reynolds, Oscar A., Bangor; enlisted September 7, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 27, 1865.

Reynolds, Simeon, Bangor; enlisted in September, 1864, at Arlington; discharged June 8, 1865; died February 6, 1903.

Stedman, George, Paw Paw; enlisted December 10, 1863, at Waverly; died at Bridgeport, Alabama, January 14, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee, grave No. 10976.

Vanderveer, Oscar D., Paw Paw; enlisted August 31, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged June 28, 1865; died at Paw Paw.

Vandervoort, Clark; enlisted November 21, 1861, at Hartford; died at Nashville, Tennessee, September 4, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Vaughn, George W., Bloomingdale; enlisted December 14, 1863, at Bloomingdale; discharged May 20, 1865.

Company E: Acker, Charles W., Hartford; enlisted January 5, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability July 12, 1862.

Brown, Orra S., Paw Paw; enlisted December 7, 1863, at Waverly; sergeant; discharged July 25, 1865.

Burridge, George W., Keeler; enlisted October 13, 1861, at Hamilton; died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 6, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Cannum, James; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Lawton; transferred to Invalid Corps, September 30, 1863.

Cotton, Joshua, Paw Paw; enlisted February 11, 1862, at Dowagiac; discharged in June, 1863.

Fowler, John R.; enlisted October 22, 1861, at Silver Creek; discharged January 16, 1865.

Henry, William, Lawrence; enlisted December 12, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged September 12, 1862; dead.

Jay, Henry; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Decatur; transferred to Invalid Corps September 1, 1863.

Johnson, Andrew, Jr.; enlisted September 19, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability October 8, 1863.

Lillie, Arthur L., Waverly; enlisted March 27, 1865, at Waverly; discharged July 25, 1865.

McNeil, David; enlisted October 22, 1861, at Keeler; discharged September 14, 1862.

Parrish, Nathaniel C., Paw Paw; enlisted September 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Nashville, Tennessee, April 4, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Robbins, William; enlisted December 5, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged January 18, 1865.

Rogers, Henry A.; enlisted October 6, 1861, at Lawton; musician; discharged October 5, 1862.

Sams, George W.; enlisted at Paw Paw, October 23, 1861; discharged for disability September 27, 1862; reentered service in Company H, Twelfth Infantry; discharged February 15, 1866.

Saxton, Byron; enlisted September 10, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged January 20, 1863.

Slocum, Henry E., Lawrence; enlisted February 11, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability, July 22, 1862.

Tatman, William S.; enlisted October 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Trunbull, Guy E.; enlisted February 11, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability, July 29, 1862.

Tyler, Elisha, Jr., Paw Paw; enlisted September 14, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865; died at Paw Paw, November 3, 1902.

Wilson, James, Paw Paw; enlisted October 19, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; transferred to Invalid Corps, September 30, 1863; discharged January 17, 1865; served in regular army from 1862 to 1867.

Wetherbee, John B.; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died at Savannah, Georgia, December 19, 1864.

Company F: Beaman, Azor; drafted from Hartford, mustered September 24, 1864; died of disease at Savannah, Georgia, January 12, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Beaufort, South Carolina, section 41, grave No. 4648.

Cady, Philo; enlisted April 11, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged May 15, 1865.

Hammell, John H., Hartford; drafted, mustered September 24, 1864; wounded in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; discharged June 29, 1865.

Stratton, Hiram L., Hartford; drafted, mustered September 24, 1864; discharged June 8, 1865.

Company G: Allen, Henry, Waverly; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Waverly; discharged for disability May 16, 1865.

Ashley, William H.; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability October 26, 1864.

Babbitt, William A.; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Belden, George W., Breedsville; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Breedsville; discharged January 16, 1865.

Bell, James, Waverly; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Waverly; discharged July 15, 1865.

Bewley, George W.; enlisted November 16, 1861, at Breedsville; sick at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, March, 1863; no further record.

Bewley, Timothy; enlisted October 26, 1861, at Breedsville; discharged February 25, 1863; died March 14, 1894; buried at Breedsville.

Bogardus, Joseph L., Breedsville; enlisted February 10, 1864, at Columbia; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Bush, Levi, Waverly; enlisted December 14, 1863, at Waverly; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Campbell, Walter H., Waverly; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged May 26, 1865.

Campbell, Willard N., Waverly; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; sick at Goldsboro, North Carolina; no further record.

Cleveland, Lucius, Breedsville; enlisted October 28, 1861, at Breedsville; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Dean, Euberto, Almena; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Almena; killed in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865.

Dean, Marshall, Paw Paw; enlisted August 20, 1864; taken prisoner March 10, 1865; discharged July 29, 1865.

Davis, John H.; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; died at Indianapolis, Indiana, October 24, 1864; buried at Indianapolis.

Fox, James P.; enlisted March 27, 1865, at Waverly; discharged May 15, 1865.

Foster, Simon P.; enlisted October 26, 1861; taken prisoner at Milledgeville, Georgia, November 25, 1864; released February 26, 1865; discharged June 27, 1865.

Hannah, John H.; drafted from Hartford; mustered September 24, 1864; sick June, 1865; no further record.

Hays, Daniel F., Waverly; enlisted December 18, 1863, at Detroit; discharged July 25, 1865.

Hooper, Charles D., Porter; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Howard, James M.; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Columbia; died at Tullahoma, Tennessee, June 16, 1864.

Johnson, George; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Waverly; discharged July 25, 1865.

Johnson, Henry B.; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Johnson, William H.; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Schoolcraft; sergeant; wounded in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863; discharged July 29, 1865.

Joy, Obadiah, Bloomingdale; enlisted December 20, 1863, at Waverly; discharged July 25, 1865.

Kent, George, Waverly; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Waverly; discharged July 25, 1865.

Kidney, Byron H., Porter; enlisted January 13, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability, August 4, 1863.

Lyon, Amasa; enlisted November 6, 1861, at Breedsville; discharged June, 1863; re-entered service in Company C, First Cavalry, January 28, 1864; discharged for disability June 18, 1865.

Murch, William; enlisted September 6, 1861, at Waverly; sergeant, and first sergeant; discharged for disability April 21, 1862; re-entered service January 11, 1864, as second lieutenant; resigned on account of disability May 26, 1864.

Myers, Chauncey A.; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Waverly; died at Jackson, Michigan, May 26, 1864.

Niles, John W.; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Breedsville; discharged January 16, 1865.

Price, Andrew A.; enlisted November 6, 1861; discharged for disability July 31, 1862.

Rice, Charles H.; enlisted December 12, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability, July 8, 1862.

Robinson, John T., Bloomingdale; enlisted December 14, 1863, at Bloomingdale; discharged July 25, 1865.

Rundell, James S., Breedsville; enlisted January 17, 1862; died at Gallatin, Tennessee, December 30, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Smith, John P., Paw Paw; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Jackson; died December 15, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Beaufort, South Carolina, section 48, grave No. 5799.

Taylor, Ezekiel V.; enlisted October 26, 1861, at Breedsville; discharged for disability, October 20, 1862.

Valleau, William, Waverly; enlisted December 22, 1863, at Waverly, died at David's Island, New York, March 8, 1865, buried in National cemetery at Brooklyn, New York, grave No. 2355.

Walker, Robert; enlisted April 10, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged May 15, 1865.

Company II: Abrams, Albert; enlisted August 31, 1864, at Paw Paw; died at Savannah, Georgia, January 10, 1865; buried at Detroit, Michigan.

Barton, Nathan S., Lawrence; enlisted January 1, 1862, at Lawrence; corporal; discharged June 26, 1865, on account of wounds received in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865.

Bennett, James; enlisted at Waverly, February 27, 1864; discharged July 18, 1865.

Bovier, James; drafted from Hartford; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged June 13, 1865; died December 10, 1896.

Brooks, George W., Hartford; enlisted February 10, 1863, at Hamilton, (substitute for Ansel Goodspeed drafted at Hartford, February 12, 1863); discharged July 25, 1865.

Burch, Wilson; enlisted February 18, 1863, at Hamilton, (substitute for Archibald Richardson drafted February 10, 1863, at Bloomingdale); discharged for disability, May 5, 1864.

Clark, Joshua; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; discharged June 16, 1865.

Coon, Edward M., Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Antwerp; taken prisoner near Rockingham, South Carolina, March 8, 1865; confined in prison at Danville, Virginia; discharged June 7, 1865.

Davis, John H.; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; died of disease at Indianapolis, Indiana, October 24, 1864.

De Long, George, Hamilton; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged May 6, 1865.

Dustin, William D.; enlisted February 27, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Dustin, Albert M.; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Dunton, Edwin; enlisted April 6, 1865, at Alma; discharged May 15, 1865.

Edson, Mortimer J., Paw Paw; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Ellison, James; enlisted February 27, 1863, at Hamilton, (substitute for Milo J. Barton; drafted February 14, 1863, at Hamilton); discharged for disability November 15, 1863.

Erkenbeck, Martin V., Mattawan; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged May 25, 1865.

Gibson, Charles; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged July 13, 1865.

Hale, Jerome; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged June 8, 1865; dead; buried at South Haven.

Hill, Henry W.; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; sick, January 31, 1865; no further record.

Hill, Ira M., Paw Paw; enlisted February 22, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 16, 1865.

Holmes, Alvin P., Antwerp; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Antwerp; discharged July 28, 1865.

Holmes, Philemon B., Mattawan; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 8, 1865.

Huey, Enos; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Waverly; died at Millen, Georgia, December 4, 1864.

Hannah, John H.; drafted at Hartford; mustered September 24, 1864; sick, June, 1865; no further record.

Herron, Ashbel; enlisted March 9, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Loveridge, John, Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 8, 1865; died January 15, 1901.

Lane, Irving H.; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865; died November 29, 1900; buried at Paw Paw.

McGregor, Malcolm; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged May 25, 1865; died July 11, 1899; buried at South Haven.

Mather, Spencer; enlisted February 22, 1864, at Paw Paw; died at Lookout Mountain, Tennessee, July 20, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee, grave No. 1300.

Myers, Francis P., Paw Paw; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Bloomingdale; discharged July 25, 1865.

Myers, George W.; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Waverly; discharged July 20, 1865.

Osborne, Eugene; enlisted August 20, 1864, at Paw Paw; died on march through Georgia; buried in National cemetery at Beaufort, South Carolina, section 41, grave No. 4645.

Rhoades, Orrin, Alma; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Riehl, Charles; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Waverly; killed in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865.

Sirrinc, William R., Paw Paw; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Paw Paw; sergeant and first sergeant; commissioned second lieutenant, July 19, 1865; discharged July 25, 1865; present residence Paw Paw.



Soules, George W., Mattawan; enlisted August 24, 1864, at Jackson; discharged June 8, 1865.

Strong, Elijah; enlisted March 3, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Warner, Jerome C., Paw Paw; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; corporal; wounded in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; discharged June 22, 1865; present residence Paw Paw.

Welch, Charles, Waverly; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Waverly; discharged June 8, 1865.

Woodman, Edson, Paw Paw; enlisted August 27, 1864; discharged July 22, 1865, on account of wounds received in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; present residence, Paw Paw.

Wood, George, Paw Paw; enlisted August 20, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 8, 1865.

Company I: Byers, James A.; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged June 8, 1865.

Chapman, Alvin, Arlington; drafted from Alma; mustered September 26, 1864; discharged June 8, 1865.

Cook, Joseph S.; enlisted as substitute for Edwin Olds, (drafted from Hartford); mustered October 7, 1864; no further record.

Culver, Arvis B.; enlisted December 5, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged June 19, 1865.

Fish, Miram; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864, discharged July 10, 1865.

Freeman, David H.; enlisted March 31, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Gorham, Bradford C.; enlisted December 29, 1863, at Keeler; discharged July 25, 1865.

Lee, James F.; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged June 8, 1865; died August 14, 1898.

Kidney, Zenas, Lawton; enlisted February 29, 1864, at Lawton; discharged July 25, 1865.

Kinney, Warren G., Antwerp; enlisted March 9, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 29, 1865.

Martin, James; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died April 23, 1865, of wounds received in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; buried at New Berne, North Carolina.

Company K: Allen, Edmund R.; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Mattawan; sergeant; first sergeant; wounded in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863; discharged January 16, 1865.

Allen, Erastus V.; enlisted February 1, 1862, at Mattawan; discharged for disability, November 15, 1863; died March 5, 1894.

Anderson, George E., Mattawan; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged July 25, 1865.

Anderson, William, Mattawan; enlisted February 12, 1862, at Lawton; corporal, discharged July 25, 1865.

Baker, Alverton, Lawrence; enlisted February 7, 1862, at Lawrence; died at Hamburg Landing, Tennessee, June 26, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Shiloh, Tennessee.

Baker, Charles A.; enlisted February 13, 1865, at Antwerp; discharged July 19, 1865.

Baker, Chester, Mattawan; enlisted March 15, 1862; at Mattawan; discharged July 25, 1865.

Baker, Royal W., Hartford; enlisted December 12, 1861, at Bangor; discharged for disability, July 12, 1862.

Baker, William M., drafted from Hartford, mustered September 24, 1864, wounded and missing in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865, no further record.

Balfour, Harrison, Mattawan; entered service at organization of regiment as second lieutenant. First lieutenant, July 13, 1862; resigned on account of disability, March 5, 1863.

Balfour, Harrison M., Lawrence; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Bangor; corporal; died at Cave City, Kentucky, November 5, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville, Tennessee.

Berzley, Francis A., Pine Grove; enlisted August 22, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 8, 1865.

Berzley, William R., Pine Grove; enlisted February 25, 1863, at Bloomingdale, (as substitute for Starr I. Butler, drafted February 10, 1863, from Bloomingdale); discharged July 25, 1865.

Birge, Washington I.; enlisted December 12, 1861, at Hartford; corporal; discharged for disability May 30, 1863.

Bishop, Joshua, enlisted December 14, 1861, at Mattawan; taken prisoner at Crawfish Springs, Georgia, September 20, 1863; discharged July 1, 1865; died January 13, 1910; buried at Paw Paw.

Blandon, Othniel H., enlisted December 9, 1861, at Bangor; discharged June 9, 1862.

Boss, Andrew J., Antwerp; enlisted November 23, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged for disability June 25, 1865.

Boss, William, Mattawan; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged for disability September 9, 1862; dead; buried at Fairgrove, Michigan.

Bush, Elijah, Waverly; enlisted December 14, 1863, at Waverly; died near Sister's Ferry, Georgia, January 20, 1865.

Butler, Dimick, Mattawan; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged July 25, 1865.

Butler, Ellis, Mattawan; enlisted February 13, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged July 25, 1865.

Byington, Elmore A., Bangor; enlisted November 14, 1861, at Breedsville; sergeant; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, March 22, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Murfreesboro; grave No. 5689.

Brick, Jeremiah; (substitute for Andrew Monroe drafted,) mustered October 7, 1864; discharged June 9, 1865.

Clark, Cyrus F.; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Bangor; discharged for disability March 3, 1863.

Cleveland, William; enlisted December 7, 1861, at Bangor; corporal; discharged January 16, 1865.

Clugston, George; enlisted December 11, 1861, at Mattawan; died March 21, 1865, of wounds received at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865.

Cook, Joseph O., Lawrence; enlisted November 29, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged for disability, July 12, 1862.

Covey, Alphonso, Paw Paw; enlisted December 20, 1863, at Waverly; taken prisoner March 4, 1865; discharged July 20, 1865.

Curtis, Charles L.; enlisted November 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability September 8, 1862.

Daggett, Danford; enlisted December 7, 1861, at Bangor; discharged January 17, 1861; died May 5, 1903.

Dean, William W., Bangor; enlisted December 14, 1861, at Bangor; discharged July 25, 1865.

De Long, Nathan, enlisted December 9, 1861, at Hartford; discharged for disability June, 1863; drafted from Hartford; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged June 8, 1865.

Dyckman, Michael F.; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; died at Savannah, Georgia, February 1, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Brooklyn, New York; grave No. 2388.

Dye, Horace, Mattawan; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 25, 1865.

Earle, Adelbert T., Mattawan; enlisted December 15, 1861, at Mattawan; killed in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863.

Earle, Albert, Arlington; enlisted December 13, 1861, at Arlington; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 25, 1865.

Earle, James L., Mattawan; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Mattawan; killed in action at Chickamauga, Georgia; September 19, 1863.

Fitch, De Witt C., Mattawan; entered service at organization of regiment as captain; promoted to major, September 22, 1862; resigned on account of disability April 12, 1864; died at Paw Paw.

Gilpin, William T.; enlisted December 7, 1861, at Breedsville; corporal; wounded in action September 19, 1863; discharged January 18, 1865.

Griffin, Alexander; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 8, 1865.

Hamlin, Amos M., Lawrence; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged July 11, 1865.

Hamlin, Frederick J. D., Paw Paw; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Hamlin, Julius P., Lawrence; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Paw Paw; died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, November 25, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga; grave No. 1477.

Hamlin, William C.; enlisted December 13, 1861, at Arlington; corporal; missing in action at Chickamauga, Georgia; September 19, 1863; no further record.

Handyside, Reuben; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged for disability November 8, 1862.

Hoppin, Franklin; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Mattawan; wounded in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863; discharged April 4, 1865.

Hosner, Sylvester, Mattawan; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Antwerp; wounded in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; discharged July 18, 1865; dead; buried at Geneva, Michigan.

Hudson, Charles; enlisted December 24, 1863, at Almena; discharged July 25, 1865.

Hudson, Joel, Mattawan; enlisted December 13, 1861, at Mattawan; wounded in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Hurlbut, Chester, Lawrence; enlisted August 27, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died at De Camp hospital, New York harbor, March 7, 1865; buried in Cypress National cemetery, Brooklyn, New York.

Jackson, Joshua; enlisted November 23, 1861, at Mattawan; corporal; taken prisoner at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 10, 1863; discharged March 10, 1865.

Johnson, Aaron H.; enlisted December 4, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged September 27, 1862.

Johnson, William O., Bangor; enlisted November 22, 1861, at Bangor; died at Nashville, Tennessee, June 7, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Kemp, Solomon, Hartford; enlisted February 25, 1863, at Hartford (substitute for John Travis, drafted from Hartford); died at Nashville, Tennessee, June 30, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Ketchum, Oliver, Almena; enlisted December 10, 1861, at Mattawan; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Ketchum, John; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 26, 1865.

Kidder, James F.; enlisted December 19, 1861, at Arlington; corporal; discharged March 10, 1865.

Kidder, Moses L., Lawrence; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; wounded in action December 28, 1864; taken to hospital at Savannah, Georgia; no further record.

Kidder, Sherburne, Lawrence; enlisted December 13, 1861, at Arlington, corporal; promoted to sergeant and to first sergeant; discharged July 25, 1865.

King, Samuel J., Mattawan; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Mattawan; died at Pittsburg Landing, Tennessee, April 22, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Shiloh, Tennessee; grave No. 597.

Layton, Harvey E., Arlington; enlisted November 26, 1861, at Arlington; died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 1, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Lett, Aquilla, Paw Paw; enlisted September 1, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865; died February 20, 1902.

McManigal, William H., Mattawan; enlisted December 10, 1861, at Mattawan; died at Kalamazoo, February 21, 1862.

McPherson, William; enlisted November 18, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged for disability August 20, 1862.

Marcellus, Andrew, Bangor; enlisted November 18, 1861, at Bangor; discharged July 25, 1865.

Marshall, Nelson S.; enlisted December 12, 1861, at Bangor; discharged June 14, 1862.

Miller, George F., Antwerp; enlisted November 15, 1861, at Mattawan; died at Lookout Mountain, May 17, 1864, buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee; grave No. 1199.

Miller, Jeremiah, Mattawan; enlisted November 14, 1861, at Mattawan; corporal; discharged July 25, 1865.

Monroe, Richard, Mattawan; enlisted February 10, 1863, at Hamilton (substitute for James Comley, drafted from Hamilton); discharged August 9, 1865.

Nelson, Francis M., Lawrence; enlisted February 7, 1862, at Lawrence; died at Nashville, Tennessee, August 5, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Nichols, Edmond, Mattawan; enlisted December 2, 1861, at Mattawan; died October 19, 1863, of wounds received in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Nightingale, Anthony; enlisted December 10, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged June 1, 1862.

Palmer, Alfred B.; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Reynolds, Oscar G., Hartford; enlisted August 30, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 27, 1865.

Robinson, William H. H., Breedsville; enlisted Nov. 12, 1861, at Mattawan; died at New Albany, Indiana, November 9, 1862; buried in National cemetery at New Albany; grave No. 1151.

Rooker, Myron D.; enlisted November 20, 1861, at Breedsville; discharged October 6, 1862.

Rowe, Rufus M., Lawrence; enlisted December 2, 1861, at Lawrence; corporal; promoted to sergeant and to first sergeant; discharged January 16, 1865.

Samson, Edwin O., Lawrence; enlisted February 7, 1862; discharged for disability July 25, 1862.

Shaver, Isaac, Arlington; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Arlington; musician; died at Nashville, Tennessee, September 12, 1862; buried in National cemetery, at Nashville.

Shulters, David H., Mattawan; enlisted November 14, 1861, at Mattawan; killed in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865.

Smith, Robert C.; enlisted December 6, 1861, at Arlington; discharged for disability October, 1862.

Smith, Samuel H., Lawrence; enlisted January 25, 1862, at Bangor; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 25, 1865.

Spencer, Charles F.; enlisted December 6, 1861, at Bangor; discharged June 20, 1862.

Story, Edgar; Mattawan; enlisted December 13, 1861, at Mattawan; died October 18, 1863, at Chattanooga, Tennessee, of wounds received in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 1863.

Story, Lorenzo D., Pine Grove; enlisted December 9, 1861, at Mattawan; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 25, 1865.

Story, William R.; enlisted December 9, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged for disability January 26, 1864.

Stover, Martin, Antwerp; enlisted November 21, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged for disability June 25, 1865.

Sumner, Noble, Lawrence; enlisted November 21, 1861, at Lawrence; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, March 9, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Murfreesboro; grave No. 7.

Stanton, John L.; enlisted April 12, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged May 15, 1865.

Taplin, George A., Lawrence; enlisted November 21, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged June 30, 1865.

Vandervoort, Nathan G. Hartford; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Hickory Corners; died at Savannah, Georgia, January 18, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Beaufort, South Carolina, section 41, grave No. 4652.

Van Ostrom, Hawley; enlisted February 7, 1862, at Hartford; discharged December 15, 1862.

Van Sickle, Benjamin, Lawton; enlisted December 9, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 25, 1865.

Waite, Amos, Paw Paw; enlisted December 2, 1861, at Mattawan; discharged July 25, 1865.

Wallace, Henry C., Lawrence; enlisted August 29, 1864, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865; died at De Camp hospital, New York Harbor, May 29, 1865; buried in Cypress Hill cemetery, Brooklyn, New York.

Ward, Abram R., Mattawan; enlisted November 12, 1861, at Mattawan; died at Town Creek, Alabama, June 27, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Corinth, Mississippi.

Welker, John, Lawrence; enlisted November 29, 1861, at Bangor; killed in action at Stone River, Tennessee, December 31, 1862.

West, Hopkins; enlisted August 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865.

White, James, Jr., Lawrence; enlisted November 21, 1861, at Hartford; discharged for disability July 12, 1862.

Williams, Daniel F.; enlisted November 30, 1861, at Mattawan; mustered January 17, 1862; no further record.

Unassigned: Cannum, James; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Lawton; transferred to Invalid Corps, September 39, 1862.

Harris, George W.; enlisted August 27, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged May 6, 1865.

Heffron, Eugene; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Paw Paw; mustered same date; no further record.

#### SEVENTEENTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

Then up with the Banner, let Southern breezes fan her,  
It shall float o'er Columbia evermore,  
In glory we'll sustain her, in battle we'll defend her,  
With heart and with hand like our fathers before.

The Seventeenth Infantry, the celebrated "Stonewall Regiment," rendezvoused at Detroit in the spring of 1862 and started for Washington on the 27th day of the succeeding August under command of Colonel William H. Withington, with an enrolment

of 982 officers and enlisted men, was at once assigned to the First Brigade, First Division, Ninth Army Corps, and continued to form a part of this celebrated corps during its entire period of service.

#### AT SOUTH MOUNTAIN

Perhaps no other Michigan regiment had such a serious test of its patriotism, courage and soldierly qualities so soon after arriving in the field as the Seventeenth. Scarcely two weeks after it left the state it participated in one of the severest engagements of the war, considering the numbers engaged—the battle of South Mountain, Maryland, where the Ninth Corps attempted to cross the mountain through Turner's gap and drive the Confederates from the summit.

The Seventeenth had been so recently organized and was so inexperienced in actual warfare that the men did not realize the desperate task they were assigned until the enemy's shot and shell were crashing through their ranks.

Almost at a moment's notice the regiment was plunged into the horrible realities of a pitched battle. On the crest of the mountain, behind stone walls, the enemy awaited the advance of the Union forces. The orders came for the Seventeenth to charge, when with wild cheers the regiment rushed through a storm of lead, drove the enemy from his stone defences and sent him retreating down the slope of the mountain.

In this charge the Seventeenth secured the title of the "Stone-wall Regiment," which clung to it as an honorable distinction during the war. The regiment carried approximately 500 men into this engagement and lost 140 in killed and wounded.

The Seventeenth had strenuous work during the entire period of its service. Some of the more important battles in which it participated were South Mountain, Antietam, Fredericksburg, siege of Vicksburg, siege of Knoxville, The Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Cold Harbor, Petersburg and Weldon Railroad.

After the battle of the Wilderness, in which the regiment was nearly annihilated, it practically lost its position in the brigade for want of numbers and lack of regimental organization and the few that remained were detailed in the engineer corps and at headquarters. After Lee's surrender, the regiment proceeded to Washington and participated in the Grand Review on the 23d of May, 1865, after which it was ordered to Michigan, arriving at Detroit, June 7th, where it was paid off and disbanded.

Total enrolment, 1,224; killed in action, 84; died of wounds, 48; died in Confederate prisons, 54; died of disease, 84; discharged for disability, wounds and disease, 249.



There were but comparatively few Van Buren county men in the Seventeenth. Following is a list:

Company I: Bailey, Harry, Lawrence; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Lawrence; died at Newport News, Virginia, March 8, 1863.

Brotherton, Frederick, Decatur; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Decatur; died at Washington, District Columbia, September 12, 1862.

Combs, William, Lawrence; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability, September 12, 1862.

Dilts, Hezekiah, Lawrence; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Lawrence; wounded in action at South Mountain, Maryland, September 14, 1862; sergeant; discharged June 3, 1865.

Dunning, John T., Decatur; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Decatur; taken prisoner at Knoxville, Tennessee, November 20, 1863; returned to regiment April 30, 1864; promoted to sergeant; discharged April 20, 1865.

Dexter, Norman; enlisted at Decatur May 29, 1862; discharged.

Flanders, Henry, Paw Paw; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 3, 1865; died March 29, 1882; buried at Paw Paw.

Grey, James, Decatur; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Decatur; died at Camp Nelson, Kentucky, November 11, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Camp Nelson; grave No. 1544.

Griffin, Ross A., Lawrence; enlisted June 7, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability November 5, 1862.

Hodges, Herrick, Lawrence; first enlisted in Company C, Seventieth New York Infantry; discharged for disability October 24, 1861; enlisted in Company I, Seventeenth Michigan Infantry, May 29, 1862, at Lawrence; sergeant; wounded in action at Antietam, Maryland, September 17, 1862; discharged for disability June 1, 1863; present residence, South Haven.

Hodges, Orrin W., Lawrence; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Lawrence; corporal; wounded in action at Antietam, Maryland, September 17, 1862; discharged for disability, April 14, 1863.

Lindsley, Floyd, Lawrence; enlisted July 23, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability, January 5, 1863.

McGann, Porter, Decatur; enlisted August 15, 1862, at Decatur; wounded in action at Sharpsburg, Maryland, September 17, 1862; discharged.

Nichols, John, Lawrence; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Lawrence; taken prisoner at Spottsylvania, Virginia, May 12, 1864; discharged June 3, 1865.

Pritchard, George, Decatur; enlisted July 22, 1862, at Decatur; discharged November 27, 1863.

Robb, John, Lawrence; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Lawrence;

transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; discharged July 17, 1865; died at Paw Paw.

Smith, John Philip, Lawrence; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged December 30, 1862; present residence, Waverly.

Other Companies: Slover, John F. Waverly; enlisted in Company B, July 22, 1862, at Niles; discharged June 3, 1865.

Hadsell, Stephen B., Bloomingdale; drafted February 26, 1863; assigned to Company E; discharged December 16, 1863.

#### NINETEENTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

Come, come, ye braves—aye come!

The battle dawn is nigh;

The screaming trump and rolling drum

Are calling you to die!

The Nineteenth Michigan Infantry was organized at Dowagiac under the direction of Colonel Henry C. Gilbert, and was mustered into service September 5, 1862, with an enrolment of 995 officers and enlisted men. The regiment left its camp for Cincinnati, Ohio, September 14, 1862, and became a part of the First Division of the Army of the Ohio. In January, 1863, it was incorporated into Baird's Division of the Army of Kentucky, subsequently absorbed by the Army of the Cumberland.

The first serious engagement in which the Nineteenth participated was at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, where it displayed those soldierly qualities of heroism and bravery that afterward distinguished it on many a hard-fought field of battle. The division to which the regiment was attached was furiously assaulted by a Confederate force under General Van Dorn, estimated at 18,000 men, and a fierce conflict ensued. The Confederates made three separate charges which were gallantly repulsed, in one of which the Nineteenth captured the colors of a Mississippi regiment. The battle lasted five hours and until the ammunition was exhausted and the overwhelming number of the Confederates made it necessary to surrender. The loss of the Nineteenth in this engagement was 113 killed and wounded. Nor did the Union troops surrender until the enemy had paid dearly for his victory.

After the officers had been exchanged and the enlisted men paroled, the regiment was reorganized at Camp Chase, Ohio, and in June returned to Nashville and took part in the advance upon Tullahoma. The Nineteenth assisted in fortifying McMinnville, Tennessee, in October, and at that time was in the Second Brigade, Third Division, Twentieth Corps.

The regiment was employed on the fortification about McMinnville in building bridges and block houses until May, when it joined General Sherman's army on the Atlanta campaign.

At Resaca, Georgia, May 15, 1864, the Nineteenth made a desperate charge upon the enemy's line and almost in the nature of a forlorn hope gallantly captured a battery, but at a fearful loss of life. Colonel Gilbert was mortally wounded and the regiment lost 80 officers and men killed and wounded. Major E. A. Griffin succeeded to the command of the regiment after the death of Colonel Gilbert, which occurred May 24th, and on the 25th of May, fought a severe engagement at New Hope Church, Georgia, with a loss of over 50 killed and wounded. The Nineteenth took an active part during the entire campaign, engaging the enemy at Golgotha Church, where Major Griffin was mortally wounded, at Culp's Farm and at Peach Tree Creek, near Atlanta, where it was assailed by the enemy and lost 40 in killed and wounded in repulsing the attack. Upon the surrender of Atlanta, the Nineteenth moved into the city and remained until October.

Major Baker succeeded to the command of the regiment and when General Sherman started with his army on his march from "Atlanta to the Sea," the Nineteenth was still a part of the Second Brigade, Third Division, Twentieth Corps, and moved by way of Madison, Louisville, and Millen upon Savannah.

After the fall of Savannah, the Nineteenth, under command of Major Anderson, started on the campaign through the Carolinas. It shared the long marches and vicissitudes of Sherman's army and arrived before Averysboro, North Carolina, January 16, 1865, where the Confederate Generals Johnston and Hardee had thrown up strong works and massed their infantry to oppose General Sherman's farther advance. The brigade of which the Nineteenth formed a part was ordered to storm the works and by a gallant charge carried them, taking many guns and prisoners. This was the last hard fought battle in which the Nineteenth was engaged, as General Lee surrendered the army of Northern Virginia to General Grant, April 9th, and General Johnston surrendered his army to General Sherman a few days later.

The Nineteenth marched from Bentonville to Raleigh, and then to Alexandria, Virginia, and participated in the grand review of Sherman's army at Washington, D. C., May 24th.

The Nineteenth was mustered out of service June 10, 1865, and arrived at Detroit, Michigan, the 13th, when it was paid off and disbanded.

The Nineteenth was in engagements at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; Nashville and Chattanooga Railroad, Tennessee, October 5, 1863; Resaca, Georgia, May 15, 1864; Cassville, Georgia, May 19, 1864; New Hope Church, Georgia, May 25, 1864; Golgotha, Georgia, June 15, 1864; Culp's Farm, Georgia, June 22, 1864; Peach Tree Creek, Georgia, July 20, 1864; siege

of Atlanta, Georgia July 22, to September 2, 1864; Savannah, Georgia, December 11, 18, 20, 21, 1864; Averysboro, North Carolina, March 16, 1865; Bentonville, North Carolina, March 19, 1865.

Total enrolment, 1,206; killed in action, 54; died of wounds, 31; died in Confederate prisons, 7; died of disease, 132; discharged for disability, wounds and disease, 182.

Following is a list of the names of Van Buren county soldiers who served in the Nineteenth:

Company A: Brodhead, Daniel W., Lawrence; enlisted August 24, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 10, 1865.

Freelove, Joseph, Keeler; enlisted August 4, 1862, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability, March 24, 1863.

Larzelere, Reuben B., Hamilton; enlisted at organization as second lieutenant; resigned August 8, 1863; died at Lansing, Michigan, in November, 1902.

Lee, George, Keeler; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Dowagiac; discharged June 10, 1865.

Stever, Charles E., Keeler; enlisted August 2, 1862, at Dowagiac; killed in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863.

Frost, Frank, Lawrence; enlisted August 15, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged June 10, 1865.

Company G: Bailey, Augustus, South Haven; enlisted July 16, 1862, at South Haven; sergeant; promoted to first sergeant; wounded in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, September 5, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Murfreesboro.

Beechner, John, Decatur; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Decatur; died at Lynchburg, Virginia, March 22, 1863; buried at Lynchburg.

Bigelow, Charles W., South Haven; entered service as captain, July 17, 1862, at South Haven; died near Chattanooga, Tennessee, of wounds received in action at New Hope Church, Georgia, May 25, 1864.

Brainard, Clark D.; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Decatur; died at Lexington, Kentucky, December 30, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Lexington; grave No. 186.

Breed, William, South Haven; enlisted July 14, 1862, at South Haven; taken prisoner at Thompson Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; died at Richmond, Virginia, March 19, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Richmond.

Brown, Charles H., South Haven; enlisted July 18, 1862, at South Haven; died at Nicholasville, Kentucky, December 15,

1862; buried in National cemetery at Camp Nelson, Kentucky; grave No. 1574.

Brown, Elijah M., Keeler; enlisted December 15, 1863, at Pontiac; discharged July 19, 1865.

Company I: Brown, Elijah M., Keeler; enlisted November 28, 1863, at Pontiac; discharged July 19, 1865.

Buttrick, William L., Keeler; enlisted January 4, 1864, at Wayne; discharged June 10, 1865.

Klett, John M., Keeler; enlisted December 30, 1863, at Kalamazoo; wounded in action at Altoona, Georgia, May 26, 1864; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; discharged July 23, 1865.

Klett, George, Keeler; enlisted December 30, 1863, at Kalamazoo; died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, of wounds received at Chattanooga River, Georgia, June 10, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga.

Linselmeyer, Christian, Keeler; enlisted January 2, 1863, at St. Joseph; discharged July 19, 1865.

Linselmeyer, William, Keeler; enlisted January 4, 1864, at Keeler; discharged July 19, 1865.

Palmer, John, Keeler; enlisted December 19, 1863, at Pontiac; discharged July 19, 1863.

Brown, Erastus P.; enlisted July 16, 1862, at Pine Grove; discharged for disability November 24, 1863.

Butterfield, Charles A., Paw Paw; enlisted September 12, 1862, at Hartford; wounded in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; corporal; discharged June 10, 1865.

Carroll, Thomas W., South Haven; enlisted July 14, 1862, at South Haven, died at Covington, Kentucky, November 22, 1862; buried in National cemetery, Covington; grave No. 1895.

Chambers, William, Decatur; enlisted August 8, 1862, at Decatur; discharged for disability, June 8, 1863.

Chapman, Newton F.; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Decatur; corporal; promoted to sergeant; wounded in action at Resaca, Georgia, May 15, 1864; discharged June 5, 1865.

Clark, Chester, Decatur; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Decatur; discharged for disability February 25, 1863.

De Long, Silas B., Hartford; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Arlington; discharged August 1, 1865, on account of wounds received in action at Peach Tree Creek, Georgia, July 26, 1864.

Delongay, Henry, Breedsville; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Arlington; discharged June 10, 1865.

Dopp, Cyrus B., South Haven; enlisted August 11, 1862, at South Haven; discharged June 10, 1865.

Dunham, John A., Hartford; enlisted August 1, 1862, at Hartford; died May 17, 1864, of wounds received in action at Resaca,

Georgia, May 5, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Georgia; grave No. 8993.

Eaton, Moses E. F.; enlisted August 2, 1862, at Covert; discharged for disability June 22, 1862.

Evans, Isaac K., Keeler; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability, April 19, 1863; dead; buried at Grand Junction, Michigan.

Evans, Selah I., Keeler; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Keeler; discharged for disability June 17, 1863.

Foster, Jonathan W., South Haven; enlisted August 4, 1862, at South Haven; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged June 10, 1865.

Freeman, Charles, South Haven; enlisted August 7, 1862, at South Haven; corporal; promoted to sergeant; wounded in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; discharged May 19, 1865.

Gilpin, Elias E. Geneva; enlisted July 18, 1862, at Geneva; corporal; wounded July 22, 1864; killed in action at Averysboro, North Carolina, March 16, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Raleigh, North Carolina.

Gowers, George, Keeler; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Keeler; taken prisoner at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; paroled; died at Annapolis, Maryland, April 5, 1863.

Graham, John, Decatur; enlisted August 15, 1862, at Decatur; wounded in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; sergeant and color bearer; second lieutenant, June 15, 1865; dead; buried at Decatur.

Hand, Patrick, Decatur; enlisted August 8, 1862, at Decatur; corporal; no further record.

Harvey, Thomas M., Bangor; enlisted August 1, 1862, at Bangor; corporal; wounded in action at Resaca, Georgia; discharged June 19, 1865; died at Bangor.

Heald, James, Hartford; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Hartford; transferred to Marine Brigade; discharged January 18, 1865.

Hinckley, Gershom, South Haven; enlisted August 11, 1862, at South Haven; died at Nashville, Tennessee, March 20, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Horton, Thomas Arlington; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Arlington; corporal; promoted to sergeant; taken prisoner at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1865; confined in Libby Prison; discharged June 10, 1865.

Hubbard, William H., South Haven; enlisted July 14, 1862, at South Haven; discharged June 12, 1865.

Hughes, James, Arlington; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Arlington; corporal; discharged June 10, 1865.

Hughes, Philip, Keeler; enlisted August 15, 1862, at Keeler; discharged June 10, 1865.

Hugin, Van Rensselaer R., Waverly; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Columbia; sick at Camp Chase, Ohio, June, 1863, re-entered service in Co. H, 13th Infantry, February 25, 1864; discharged July 25, 1865.

Kingston, John W., Breedsville; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Columbia; discharged June 10, 1865.

Kleckner, Frederick, South Haven; enlisted August 7, 1862, at South Haven; wounded in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; wounded in action at Peach Tree Creek, Georgia, July 20, 1864; discharged June 27, 1865.

Lewis, Jacob H., Keeler; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Keeler; discharged June 10, 1865.

McLaughlin, Archibald, Bangor; enlisted July 16, 1862, at Bangor; first sergeant; second lieutenant, January 6, 1863; resigned on account of disability May 25, 1864; died 1890; buried at Goodrich, Tennessee.

McNitt, Manley B.; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Hartford; wounded in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863; wounded in action at Resaca, Georgia, May 15, 1864; promoted to corporal; discharged June 10, 1865.

Messenger, Aaron, Decatur; enlisted July 31, 1862, at Decatur; died at Columbia, Tennessee, March 31, 1863, while a prisoner, of wounds received at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 5, 1863.

Nyman, A. J., Bangor; enlisted August 31, 1862, at Bangor; sergeant; second lieutenant, June 1, 1864; taken prisoner October 27, 1864; paroled; resigned and honorably discharged April 24, 1865.

Olds, Albert J., Hartford; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Hartford; corporal; discharged June 10, 1865.

Olds, Allen O., Hartford; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Hartford; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged June 10, 1865.

Olds, Almon H., Decatur; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 10, 1865.

Page, Ephraim R., South Haven; enlisted August 4, 1862, at South Haven; corporal; discharged June 10, 1865.

Page, James L., South Haven; enlisted August 4, 1862, at South Haven; discharged June 5, 1865.

Page, John, South Haven; enlisted August 4, 1862, at South Haven; died at Nashville, Tennessee, June 14, 1864, of wounds

received in action at Resaca, Georgia, May 15, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Pierce, Almon J., South Haven; enlisted August 15, 1862, at South Haven; transferred to Marine Brigade; discharged January 17, 1865.

Rea, John, Bangor; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Bangor; corporal; wounded before Atlanta, Georgia, August 3, 1864; died April 9, 1898; buried at Taylor, Michigan.

Reams, Uriah, Arlington; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Bangor; discharged for disability July 15, 1863; died at Bellevue, Michigan, March 3, 1904.

Root, Henry D., Porter; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Porter; discharged for disability November 18, 1862.

Sayles, Benjamin C., Decatur; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Decatur; died at McMinnville, Tennessee, May 23, 1864.

Shaff, Andrew J., Geneva; enlisted July 15, 1862, at Geneva; discharged June 10, 1865; present residence, Lawton.

Shearer, John M., enlisted March 4, 1864, at Hamilton; transferred to 10th Infantry; discharged July 19, 1865.

Shepard, Sears J., South Haven; enlisted August 9, 1862, at South Haven; wounded in action at Culp's Farm, Georgia, June 22, 1864; discharged June 10, 1865.

Smith, Charles D., Lawrence; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Lawrence; corporal; discharged June 10, 1865.

Stafford, John A., Decatur; enlisted as second lieutenant at organization of regiment; promoted to first lieutenant; resigned on account of disability July 27, 1863.

Stone, Jerome, Decatur; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Decatur; discharged June 10, 1865.

Stone, Solomon R., Decatur; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Decatur; discharged June 10, 1865.

Stone, William S., Decatur; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Decatur; discharged for disability November 14, 1862.

Stuyvesant, Azariah D., Decatur; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Decatur; discharged June 10, 1865.

Sweet, Aaron, Decatur; enlisted August 8, 1862, at Decatur; discharged for disability April 25, 1863.

Sweet, Lyman S., Decatur; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Decatur; wounded in action at Peach Tree Creek, Georgia, July 30, 1864; discharged June 10, 1865.

Sweet, Samuel L., Decatur; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Decatur; discharged for disability April 23, 1863.

Tittle, George W., Porter; enlisted August 8, 1862, at Decatur; accidentally killed at Porter, Michigan, June 2, 1863.



Todd, Gilmore, Hamilton; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Hamilton; discharged June 10, 1865.

Van Hise, Orlando, Decatur; enlisted July 31, 1862, at Decatur; sergeant; promoted to first sergeant; discharged December 3, 1863, to accept promotion in 17th U. S. colored troops.

Van Horn, Jared, Bangor; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Bangor; died at Nashville, Tennessee, March 12, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Vincent, John W., Decatur; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Decatur; discharged June 10, 1865.

Watson, Phineas F., Geneva; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Geneva; fifer; discharged June 10, 1865.

White, Henry, Columbia; enlisted August 8, 1862, at Breedsville; discharged June 10, 1865.

Wilson, John, South Haven; enlisted July 14, 1862, at South Haven; first sergeant; first lieutenant November 1, 1864; discharged June 10, 1865.

**Other Companies:** Crofoot, Benjamin, Porter; enlisted August, 1862, in Company F, at Schoolcraft; discharged May 26, 1865.

Graham, William A., Decatur; enlisted August, 1862, at Decatur, in Company H; died at Richmond, Virginia, from exposure while a prisoner, April, 1863.

#### TWENTY-FOURTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

Our country! Forever we swear 'neath the blue,  
Thy name and thy fame spotless forever shall be.  
Thine honor we'll guard—hearts and hands ever true—  
Columbia! We owe all and give all to thee.

The Twenty-fourth Michigan Infantry was largely recruited in the eastern part of the state and rendezvoused at Detroit. The regiment was mustered into service on the 15th day of August, 1862, under command of Colonel Henry A. Morrow. Its service was almost wholly in the east and it participated in a large number of battles, notably at Fredericksburg, Port Royal, Chancellorsville, The Wilderness, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Cold Harbor and the siege of Petersburg.

The regiment was eventually ordered to Springfield, Illinois, for special duty and while there acted as escort at the funeral of our first martyred president, the immortal Abraham Lincoln. It was mustered out of the service at Detroit, June 30, 1865.

Total enrolment, 2,104; killed in action, 125; died of wounds, 42; died in Confederate prisons, 28; died of disease, 109; discharged for disability, wounds and disease, 254.

There were but few Van Buren county men in the Twenty-fourth. Their names were as follows: Campbell, David H.; en-

listed in Company F, July 30, 1862, at Detroit; missing in action at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 1, 1863; returned to regiment in August, 1863; corporal, promoted to sergeant; discharged June 30, 1865.

Daniels, Chester, Hamilton; enlisted in Company F, August 25, 1864; discharged June 30, 1865.

Dean, Porter A., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company H, March 21, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged June 30, 1865.

Hawkins, Anthony; enlisted in Company B, March 20, 1865, at Antwerp; discharged June 30, 1865.

Head, Jerome, Decatur; enlisted in Company C, August 22, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 30, 1865.

Parrish, Isaac F., Lawton; enlisted in Company K, February 14, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 30, 1865.

Ward, Richard A., Lawton; enlisted in Company K, February 14, 1865; discharged June 30, 1865.

#### TWENTY-FIFTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

The following named soldiers were members of the Twenty-fifth Michigan Infantry: Bennett, John J., Porter; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Lockport, in Company G; discharged June 24, 1865.

Fitch, De Witt C., Mattawan; major, formerly captain Company K, Thirteenth Michigan Infantry; resigned February 12, 1864, on account of disability.

Kinney, Stephen H., Porter; enlisted April 11, 1862, at Lockport, in Company D; discharged June 10, 1865.

Ridlon, John M., Paw Paw; enlisted August 27, 1862; first lieutenant and quartermaster; discharged June 24, 1865; present residence, Lawrence.

Ryder, Jonathan, Keeler; enlisted August, 1862, at Keeler, in Company C; died of disease at Louisville, Kentucky, February 29, 1864; buried in Cave Hill National cemetery, Louisville.

Snow, Franklin C., Lawton; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Niles; in Co. F; discharged for disability February 5, 1863.

Stevens, Jared A., Almena; enlisted August 13, 1862, at Osh-temo, in Co. H; discharged June 24, 1865.

Vining, Leander O., Arlington; enlisted August 10, 1862, in Company I, at Osh-temo; died at Washington, District Columbia, March 9, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Arlington, Virginia.

## TWENTY-EIGHTH MICHIGAN INFANTRY

Ho! comrades, see the starry flag, broad waving at our head!  
Ho! comrades, mark the tender light on the dear emblem spread!  
Our fathers' blood has hallowed it, 'tis part of their renown,  
And palsied be the caitiff that would pull its glories down.

The Twenty-eighth was organized by consolidating the Twenty-eighth, which rendezvoused at Marshall, and the Twenty-ninth, which rendezvoused at Kalamazoo. The several companies were mustered into service at different dates, and the organization of the regiment was completed at Kalamazoo, October 26, 1864, with an enrolment of 886 officers and men.

The Twenty-eighth left Kalamazoo, October 26th, for Louisville, Kentucky, and upon arrival was sent to Camp Nelson, Kentucky, where it took charge of a wagon train en route for Nashville, Tennessee, where it arrived December 5th, and reported for duty to General Thomas.

The regiment, under command of Colonel Wheeler who had formerly served in the Twenty-third Infantry, took a gallant part in the battle of Nashville Dec. 12th to the 16th, in repelling the Confederates under General Hood, who was defeated with great loss and driven in confusion out of the state.

After the battle of Nashville, the Twenty-eighth was assigned to the Twenty-third Corps, and when at Louisville, Kentucky, was ordered early in January, 1865, to proceed with its corps to Alexandria, Virginia, where it embarked upon transports for Morehead City, North Carolina. It then moved to Newberne and then to Wilmington, to cooperate with General Sherman's army, then marching north through the Carolinas.

At Wise Forks, the Twenty-eighth was engaged for three days, the enemy making determined assaults on the Union lines, but were repulsed in every instance. The Twenty-eighth was in the thickest of the fighting, and lost during the engagements seven killed and thirteen wounded. The regiment then marched inland to Kingston and reached Goldsboro, North Carolina, on the 21st, where it was assigned to duty in guarding the Atlanta and North Carolina railroad.

After General Lee and General Johnston surrendered, the Twenty-eighth was on duty at Raleigh, Charlotte, Wilmington and Newberne until it was mustered out of service, June 5, 1866, at Raleigh, North Carolina. The regiment at once returned to Detroit, Michigan, where it was paid and disbanded, June 8, 1866.

Total enrolment, 980; killed in action, 7; died of wounds, 3; died of disease, 101; discharged for disability (wounds and disease), 47.

The names of Van Buren County soldiers serving in the Twenty-eighth are as follows:

Company G: Allen, Erastus V.; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Hartford; acting sergeant major July, 1865; discharged June 5, 1866.

Andrews, Sherman; enlisted September 1, 1864, at Columbia; killed in action at Wise's Forks, North Carolina, March 10, 1865.

Baldwin, Moses; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Hartford; discharged February 15, 1866.

Bancroft, Daniel J.; enlisted September 24, 1864, at Hartford; died at Alexandria, Virginia, February 14, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Alexandria.

Barnes, James; enlisted September 20, 1864, at Covert; discharged for disability, December 21, 1865.

Bartlett, Andrew; enlisted September 9, 1864, at Hartford; sergeant; discharged April 14, 1866.

Beebe, Eri, Decatur; entered service at organization of regiment as second lieutenant; promoted to captain; resigned September 12, 1865; died at Decatur.

Birge, Washington I.; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 5, 1866.

Blackmer, Daniel R.; enlisted September 15, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 5, 1866.

Butcher, Charles C.; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Lawrence; died at Newberne, North Carolina, March 26, 1865; buried at Newberne.

Cannon, James; enlisted September 7, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 5, 1866.

Clay, William H., Lawrence; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Lawrence; commissary sergeant; discharged Sept 13, 1865; died April 4, 1896; buried at Lawrence.

Cooper, James L.; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Decatur; discharged May 21, 1865.

Cook, Joseph C.; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged May 26, 1865.

De Long, Henry, Hartford; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Kalamazoo; corporal; discharged June 5, 1866.

Doty, Charles, Hartford; enlisted September 19, 1864, at Hartford, discharged June 5, 1866.

Dowzer, John; enlisted September 6, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 5, 1866.

Drake, Israel M., Arlington; enlisted August 31, 1864, at Arlington; discharged June 5, 1866.

Drake, James N., Hartford; enlisted September 1, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged for disability, December 6, 1864.

Draper, Augustus H., Lawrence; enlisted September 20, 1864, at Lawrence; quarter-master sergeant; discharged May 14, 1866; died April 21, 1903; buried at Lawrence.

Dyer, La Rue; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 5, 1866.

Earl, George H.; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 5, 1866.

Easton, Pulaski; enlisted September 12, 1864, at Hartford; discharged May 22, 1866.

Farmer, Edwin R., Decatur; entered service as first lieutenant at organization of regiment; promoted to captain; discharged June 5, 1866.

Fitzpatrick, John; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Hartford; died at Alexandria, Virginia, February 1, 1865; buried at Alexandria.

Foreman, Edward, Lawrence; enlisted September 5, 1864; discharged June 7, 1865.

Gibbs, Amos; enlisted September 14, 1864, at Bangor; died at Pittsburg, Pennsylvania, February 9, 1864; buried in Alleghany cemetery at Pittsburg.

Gray, Charles C.; enlisted October 3, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 5, 1866.

Herrington, Lewis; enlisted September 12, 1864, at Antwerp; corporal; discharged June 5, 1866.

Irish, Justus A., Keeler; enlisted September 21, 1864; discharged June 5, 1866.

Kelly, Charles; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Bangor; corporal; discharged September 13, 1865; died April 14, 1890.

McAllister, Ezra; enlisted September 1, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 5, 1866.

McNitt, Orville F.; enlisted September 13, 1864, at Lawrence; first sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant; discharged June 5, 1866.

Mahard, John, Lawton; enlisted September 13, 1864, at Lawton; sergeant; discharged April 16, 1866; previously served in Company C, Third Michigan Cavalry.

Mahoney, Ned, Lawton; enlisted September 2, 1861, at Antwerp; discharged November 9, 1865; deceased; buried at Dowagiac.

Mance, Henry; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Waverly; corporal; discharged June 5, 1866.

Mason, Marion; enlisted September 20, 1864, at Decatur; discharged November 15, 1864.

Mentor, Russell W.; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 5, 1866.

Nesbitt, Thomas S.; enlisted September 20, 1864, at Porter; discharged June 5, 1866.

Nichols, Tyler; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 14, 1865.

Olcott, Orlin F.; enlisted August 3, 1864, at Hartford; discharged June 12, 1865.

Olds, Ira C.; enlisted September 23, 1864, at Decatur; died at Detroit, March 4, 1865; buried at Detroit.

Page, Wallace H., Lawrence; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Lawrence; corporal; discharged June 5, 1866.

Potter, Harvey; enlisted September 24, at Bangor; discharged May 26, 1865.

Privette, Robert H.; enlisted September 6, 1864, at Porter; corporal; discharged August 25, 1865.

Rhodes, Forice, Bangor; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged September 13, 1865.

Root, Reuben, Lawrence; enlisted September 1, 1864, at Decatur; discharged June 5, 1866.

Root, Stephen; enlisted September 27, at Bangor; discharged June 5, 1866; died September 5, 1889; buried at Bangor.

Russell, Philo M.; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged June 5, 1866.

Ryan, William; enlisted September 5, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 5, 1866.

Salisbury, Joseph; enlisted September 15, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 5, 1866.

Salisbury, Joseph A.; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 5, 1866.

Shaffer, Jefferson D.; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Decatur; discharged May 10, 1865.

Smith, Lyman T.; enlisted September 28, 1864, at Bangor; died on board of transport in New York harbor, August 22, 1865; buried in Cypress Hill cemetery at Brooklyn, New York, grave No. 3161.

Spicer, Daniel, Lawton; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Antwerp; promoted to second lieutenant; discharged May 15, 1865, on account of wounds received in action at Wise's Forks, North Carolina, March 8, 1865; present residence Paw Paw.

Stedman, Morris; enlisted September 2, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged June 8, 1865.

Tillou, James D.; enlisted September 10, 1864, at Antwerp; corporal; discharged June 5, 1866.

Traver, Cassius M. C.; enlisted September 10, 1864, at Hartford; died at Charlotte, North Carolina, August 28, 1865.

Upton, John B., Lawrence; entered service as first lieutenant

and quartermaster at organization of regiment, discharged June 5, 1866; died October 21, 1896; buried at Big Rapids, Michigan.

Van Sickle, John M., Lawton; enlisted September 12, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 5, 1866.

Wells, George W.; enlisted September 19, 1864, at Antwerp; discharged June 13, 1865.

Witter, William; enlisted September 20, 1864, at Porter; discharged May 25, 1865.

Young, John G.; enlisted September 1, 1864, at Decatur; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged June 5, 1866.

Other Companies: Gorham, Allen, Almena; enlisted in Company C, October 4, 1864, at Kalamazoo; sergeant; promoted to first sergeant; discharged June 5, 1866; previously served in Company C, Seventh New York Infantry.

Cook, Joseph A., Lawrence; enlisted in Company A, August 30, 1864; discharged for disability, June 26, 1865.

Conley, Dorey; enlisted in Company D, August 27, 1864, at Columbia; discharged June 5, 1866.

Graham, Isaac, enlisted in Company D, September 3, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died at Louisville, Kentucky, March 30, 1865; buried in Cave Hill cemetery, at Louisville.

Storey, Barker C.; enlisted in Company E, September 15, 1864, at Bloomingdale; discharged for disability February 18, 1865.

Wetmore, Edward M.; enlisted in Company E, September 12, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 5, 1866.

Coburn, Delmont J.; enlisted in Company H, September 10, 1864, at Decatur, first sergeant; discharged June 5, 1866.

Platts, George, Bloomingdale; enlisted in Company H, September 10, 1864, at Decatur; first sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant, aide-de-camp and acting assistant adjutant general; commissioned first lieutenant; discharged June 5, 1866.

Gallegher, Daniel; enlisted in Company I, October 3, 1864, at Bangor; discharged July 13, 1865.

Nichols, William H.; enlisted in Company I, September 12, 1864, at Kalamazoo; corporal; discharged June 5, 1866.

Smith, Abram A.; enlisted in Company I, September 27, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 5, 1866.

Valleau, Freeman, Waverly; enlisted in Company K. September 30, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 5, 1866.

## CHAPTER X

### CIVIL WAR CAVALRY

FIRST MICHIGAN—THIRD CAVALRY—JUSTICE TO CAVALRY REGIMENTS—FOURTH MICHIGAN CAVALRY—CAPTURE OF JEFFERSON DAVIS—NINTH MICHIGAN—CAPTURE OF MORGAN—FIRST AND LAST.

The combat deepens, On, ye brave,  
Who rush to glory or the grave!  
Wave, Michigan, all thy banners wave,  
And charge with all thy chivalry!

The First Michigan Cavalry was organized at Detroit and mustered into the service of the government September 13, 1861, with an enrolment of 1,144 officers and enlisted men.

The regiment left the state September 29, 1861, for Washington, D. C., and went into camp at Frederick, Maryland, at which place it remained for several months. It comprised a part of General Banks' forces and in February, 1862, moved to Harper's Ferry and later entered the Shenandoah valley, advancing as far as Winchester and pushing the enemy before them. The regiment distinguished itself in many skirmishes while advancing up the valley, and made a number of brilliant charges which attracted the attention of the commanding general and which received complimentary mention in orders. Banks had too meager a force to hold his advanced position and so fell back to Williamsport fighting most of the way, as the enemy had succeeded in getting between him and Willamsport and at the same time were pressing his rear with a force that outnumbered his command. In this movement the First Cavalry did brilliant work and only fell back when greatly outnumbered by the Confederate forces.

The regiment remained at Williamsport until June 12th, when it began to take part in General Pope's Virginia campaign. It was in Banks' command when he fought the battle of Cedar Mountain.

The regiment was engaged in the battle of Manassas, August 30, and suffered severely, the brave Colonel Brodhead losing his life on that occasion.

The regiment afterward became a part of the famous Michigan Cavalry Brigade commanded by the brilliant young General Cus-



ter, and remained with that brigade until the close of the war. The regiment participated in Sheridan's celebrated raid in the rear of Lee's army, and took part in the severe fighting that occurred in the advance upon Richmond and upon the return.

After the surrender of the Army of Northern Virginia, the First was ordered to North Carolina, but returned to Washington in time to take part in the Grand Review at Washington on the 23d of May, 1865, after which it was ordered to the then far west and suffered many hardships in a campaign against the Indians. This action on the part of the war department was the subject of severe criticism. The war was ended and the regiment had completed its term of service, which, like all the volunteer troops, was "three years or during the war" and to exact this further service after the brilliant record made by the regiment, was regarded as rank injustice.

The official records show that the First Cavalry participated in seventy different battles and skirmishes with the Confederate forces, some of the principal ones being as follows: Winchester, March 23, 1862; Winchester, May 24, 1862; Cedar Mountain, August 9, 1862; Manassas, August 30, 1862; Gettysburg, July 3, 1863; Culpepper Court House, September 14, 1863; Richmond, March 1, 1864; Wilderness, May 6 and 7, 1864; Cold Harbor, May 30 and June 1, 1864, and again at the same place July 21, 1864; Winchester, August 11, 1864; Appomattox, April 8 and 9, 1865; and with the Indians at Willow Springs, Dakota, August 12, 1865.

The regiment was paid off and disbanded at Salt Lake, Utah, March 10, 1866, after four and one-half years of hard and faithful service.

Total enrolment, 2,490; killed in action, 96; missing in action, 40; died of wounds, 52; died as prisoners of war, 58; died of disease, 172; accidentally killed, 4; drowned, 2; killed by Indians, 1; discharged for disability, 209.

Company D: Boudoin, Cyrus; enlisted January 20, 1864, at Bangor; discharged June 3, 1865.

Cuthbertson, Thomas; enlisted January 15, 1864, at Bangor; discharged June 9, 1865.

Defoe, John; enlisted January 15, 1864, at Bangor; absent without leave October 10, 1865; no further record.

Donahue, Thomas; enlisted January 25, 1864, at Bangor; discharged June 6, 1865.

Keating, Philip; enlisted January 20, 1864, at Bangor; discharged for disability, June 6, 1865.

Company E: Beach, Levi S.; enlisted February 27, 1865; died January 2, 1866; buried at Alexandria, Virginia, grave No. 2949.

Bugby, Alvin M.; enlisted March 2, 1865, at Columbia; died

June 11, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Benton Barracks, Missouri, grave No. 1416.

Burch, William H.; enlisted February 15, 1865, at Porter; discharged March 25, 1866.

Cleveland, Jewett; enlisted February 8, 1865, at Columbia; discharged October 7, 1865.

Cleveland, Zelon; enlisted February 9, 1865, at Columbia; discharged July 17, 1865.

Company I: Bentley, Augustus W., Paw Paw; enlisted September 5, 1861, at Kalamazoo; corporal; killed in action at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 3, 1863.

Eastman, Oscar A., Paw Paw; enlisted August 21, 1861, at Kalamazoo; sergeant; died October 25, 1864, of wounds received in action at Winchester, Virginia; buried in National cemetery at Winchester, lot No. 73.

Hungerford, Lucius E., Paw Paw; enlisted September 5, 1861, at Detroit; died at Washington, D. C., November 1, 1861.

Judson, Lucius L., Paw Paw; enlisted September 4, 1861, at Kalamazoo; corporal; discharged May 11, 1866.

Munger, Ira A., Paw Paw; enlisted August 21, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability.

Munger, Samuel E., Paw Paw; enlisted September 2, 1861, at Kalamazoo; wagoner; discharged August 23, 1864; died at Paw Paw.

Rickard, Edward J., Paw Paw; enlisted September 2, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 30, 1866.

Shaw, Richmond L., Paw Paw; enlisted September 7, 1861, at Detroit, taken prisoner at Trevellian Station, Virginia, June 11, 1864; discharged January 23, 1866.

Skinner, Irving H., Paw Paw; enlisted September 4, 1861, at Kalamazoo; bugler; promoted to quartermaster sergeant; discharged for disability, November 14, 1862.

Whitford, Alexander L., Paw Paw; enlisted September 5, 1861, at Kalamazoo; died at Washington, D. C., July 10, 1862.

Company K: Anger, Abner; enlisted October 31, 1863, at Decatur; taken prisoner at Trevellian Station, Virginia, June 11, 1864; discharged June 16, 1865.

Ayers, Hiram; enlisted November 23, 1863, at Columbia; discharged July 24, 1865.

Bashford, Truman R.; enlisted October 31, 1863, at Decatur; blacksmith; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; discharged August 21, 1865.

Bisbee, Floyd; enlisted February 22, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged March 10, 1866.

Bronson, John G.; enlisted November 21, 1863, at Columbia; discharged May 24, 1865.

Caryl, Charles S., Columbia; enlisted November 23, 1863, at Columbia; discharged June 28, 1865.

Conner, Isaac B., Paw Paw; enlisted February 17, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged March 10, 1866; died at Paw Paw.

Cornell, David A.; enlisted February 22, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged March 10, 1866.

Dailey, Ebenezer; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; discharged March 10, 1866.

Field, Cassius M.; enlisted December 5, 1865, at Decatur; trumpeter; promoted to sergeant; discharged March 10, 1866.

Finley, William, Jr.; enlisted November 6, 1863, at Decatur; promoted to regimental quartermaster sergeant; discharged March 10, 1866.

Flage, Martin; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; discharged July 10, 1865.

Fonger, William; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; died October 7, 1864; buried at Baltimore, Maryland.

Gibbs, Hiram F.; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; corporal; died September 2, 1865; buried at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas.

Green, Clark H., Jr.; enlisted November 11, 1863, at Decatur; died at Andersonville, Georgia; buried in National cemetery at Andersonville, grave No. 6482.

Hammond, Henry M. C., Hartford; enlisted November 26, 1863, at Hartford; discharged June 16, 1865.

Hanna, Hezekiah D.; enlisted November 26, 1863, at Decatur; died at Washington, D. C., July 2, 1864; buried at Arlington, Virginia.

Hayes, Orange, Decatur; enlisted December 10, 1863; discharged for disability, September 27, 1864.

Hoard, Orlando; enlisted November 23, 1863, at Paw Paw, corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged June 30, 1866.

Hudson, Gilbert H.; enlisted November 23, 1863, at Columbia; discharged July 7, 1865.

Huntley, Cadmus C.; enlisted October 21, 1863, at Hartford; corporal; discharged for disability May 3, 1865; died June 8, 1893; buried at Hartford.

Irish, Charles H.; enlisted November 28, 1863, at Hartford; died at Point Lookout, Maryland, July 3, 1864.

Johnson, Irving; enlisted November 21, 1863; mustered December 8, 1863; no further record.

Jones, Joseph W.; enlisted November 26, 1863, at Geneva; discharged June 16, 1865.

June, Benjamin C.; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; discharged March 10, 1866.

Kenney, James; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; discharged July 10, 1866.

Knowles, John; enlisted November 21, 1863, at Columbia; discharged July 7, 1865.

Manuel, Peter; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Lawrence; died at Washington, D. C., July 29, 1864, of wounds received in action; buried in Arlington National cemetery at Washington.

Manuel, William H.; enlisted December 7, 1863, at Decatur; discharged March 10, 1866.

Mather, Charles H.; enlisted November 28, 1863, at Hartford; discharged June 21, 1866.

Meachum, Simeon; enlisted November 23, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged May 18, 1865; died February 3, 1884; buried at Hartford.

Munson, John, Decatur; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Volinia; saddler; promoted to first sergeant, second lieutenant and first lieutenant; discharged March 10, 1866.

Northrup, Theodore G.; enlisted October 29, 1863, at Decatur; quartermaster sergeant; discharged May 19, 1865.

Painter, Samuel H.; enlisted December 14, 1863, at Arlington; died December 1, 1864; buried at Salisbury, North Carolina.

Parmalee, Edward M.; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; corporal; discharged July 10, 1865.

Pierce, Charles H.; enlisted October 29, 1863, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner at Jericho Ford, Virginia, March 18, 1865; discharged June 1, 1865.

Ransom, William W.; enlisted November 17, 1863, at Hartford; corporal; promoted to sergeant; died at Washington, D. C., August 3, 1864, of wounds received in action; buried in Arlington National cemetery at Washington.

Reed, Charles D.; enlisted November 21, 1863, at Columbia; corporal; killed in action August 20, 1864.

Revere, Hiram; enlisted February 27, 1865, at Hartford; discharged August 18, 1865.

Robinson, Walter; enlisted February 24, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged July 29, 1865; died at Paw Paw.

Shaul, Norman; enlisted November 17, 1863, at Decatur; sergeant; discharged June 27, 1865.

Smith, Luther J.; enlisted November 27, 1863, at Hartford; died at Washington, D. C., July 29, 1864.

Smith, Topham; enlisted December 12, 1863, at Hartford; discharged June 16, 1865.

Southworth, Gillespie B.; enlisted November 26, 1863, at Decatur; discharged July 17, 1865. Present residence Paw Paw.

Shattuck, Dewitt C.; enlisted February 17, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged December 5, 1865.

Stephenson, Thomas H., Paw Paw; entered service as first lieutenant; commissioned October 3, 1862; discharged for disability May 28, 1864; died at Paw Paw.

Stoddard, Henry; enlisted March 11, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged March 10, 1866.

Sutter, John; enlisted October 29, 1863, at Decatur; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; discharged November 14, 1865.

Taylor, Isaac; enlisted December 10, 1863, at Decatur; sergeant; died August 30, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Philadelphia, grave No. 293.

Truesdale, Lewis B.; enlisted November 21, 1863, at Geneva; corporal; promoted to sergeant; died at Winchester, Virginia, September 27, 1864, of wounds received in action.

Tucker, William H.; enlisted October 28, 1863, at Decatur; first sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant and first lieutenant; discharged March 10, 1866.

Wescott, James M.; enlisted October 28, 1863, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Hawes' Shop, Virginia, May 28, 1864.

West, John; enlisted December 9, 1863; discharged for disability January 10, 1865.

Williams, Isaac; enlisted November 23, 1863, at Lawrence; killed in action at Yellow Tavern, Virginia, May 11, 1864.

Worix, William; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; killed in action at Yellow Tavern, Virginia, May 11, 1864.

Wilson Charles; enlisted November 30, 1863, at Decatur; taken prisoner at Trevillian Station, Virginia, June 12, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

Company M: Babcock, Henry B., Keeler; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; discharged March 25, 1866.

Bartholomew, Benjamin F., Mattawan; enlisted August 10, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged on account of wounds received in action October, 1862.

Burgher, Matthew B., Decatur; enlisted August 4, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; wounded in action; discharged for disability, March 13, 1863.

Cleland, Thomas; enlisted February 13, 1865, at Decatur; discharged December 5, 1865.

Field, Onslow L., Lawrence; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability October 6, 1862.

Gregory, Stephen A., Keeler; enlisted December 5, 1862, at Keeler; absent sick July, 1865; no further record.

Hungerford, Lester; enlisted February 9, 1865, at Hartford; discharged December 5, 1865.

King, John R., Porter; enlisted October 10, 1862; taken prisoner at Robinson River, September 23, 1863; died February 3, 1864; buried at Richmond, Virginia.

Knight, Daniel, Keeler; enlisted August 15, 1861, at Dowagiac; wounded in action at Winchester, Virginia; discharged June 19, 1862.

McElheny, James S., Mattawan; enlisted August 15, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; promoted to sergeant and to sergeant major; commissioned second lieutenant and promoted to first lieutenant; killed in action at Fairfield Gap, Maryland, July 4, 1863.

Poor, Lorenzo D. F., Decatur; enlisted August 17, 1861, at Dowagiac; quartermaster sergeant; taken prisoner at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania; discharged August 22, 1864.

Sirrine, Ezra, Decatur; enlisted August 16, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability May, 1862.

Shaw, John N., Decatur; enlisted August 16, 1861, at Dowagiac; corporal; taken prisoner at Trevillian Station, Virginia, June 11, 1864; discharged March 25, 1866.

Shilling, Watson N., Decatur; enlisted August 22, 1861, at Dowagiac; taken prisoner at Emmetsburg, Maryland, July 4, 1863; returned to regiment November 3, 1863; promoted to hospital steward; discharged November 7, 1865.

Vincent, Albert, Decatur; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Dowagiac, corporal; taken prisoner at Trevillian Station, Virginia, June 11, 1864; promoted to sergeant; died August, 1865.

Vincent, Gilbert; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability November 1, 1862.

Other Companies: Dailey, David M., Porter; enlisted in Company A, February 22, 1863, at Detroit, substitute for Samuel Whitlock drafted from Hamilton; discharged July 10, 1865; died September 2, 1892.

Mills, William R.; enlisted in Company A, February 27, 1865, at Hartford; discharged February 18, 1866.

Ellenwood, Alonzo; enlisted in Company B, February 24, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged July 10, 1865.

Galligan, Charles E., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company B, February 20, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged August 11, 1865.

Lamb, Charles C., Porter; enlisted in Company B, February 10, 1863, at Detroit; substitute for Ransom J. Olds drafted from Hartford; discharged November 7, 1865.

Hoover, George W., Porter; enlisted in Company C, February 24, 1863; substitute for Pulaski Eaton drafted from Hartford, on detached service, July, 1865; no further record.

Taplin, Nathan; enlisted in Company C, February 27, 1865, at Hartford; discharged December 5, 1865.

Terrill, Walter M., Porter; enlisted in Company C, February 24, 1863, at Hartford; substitute for Webster Goodenough drafted from Lawrence; taken prisoner near Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 4, 1863; returned to regiment October 4, 1863; discharged May 6, 1865.

Amick, Charles; enlisted in Company F, March 2, 1865, at Columbia; discharged July 10, 1865.

Ryan, Michael; enlisted in Company G, February 2, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged January 20, 1866.

Sheldon, Benjamin; enlisted in Company G, February 9, 1865, at Hartford; discharged May 14, 1866.

Clay, John P.; enlisted in Company L, February 23, 1865; discharged December 1865.

Baker, William; enlisted February 27, 1865, at Lawrence; unassigned; discharged July 10, 1865.

Maxam, Horace W.; enlisted February 13, 1865, at Lawton; unassigned; discharged June 12, 1865.

Webster, Anthony; enlisted February 7, 1865, at Decatur; mustered February 7, 1865; unassigned; no further record.

### THIRD MICHIGAN CAVALRY

The squadron is forming, the war bugles play,  
To saddle, brave comrades, stout hearts for the fray.  
Our commander is mounted, strike spurs and away.

The Third Michigan Cavalry was organized at the city of Grand Rapids in September, 1861, and was mustered into the service of the United States, October 4th following, with an enrolment of 1,163 officers and men.

The following named members of the field and staff were from Van Buren County: Dr. Josiah Andrews, of Paw Paw, was the regimental surgeon; Dr. Lucius C. Woodman, of the same place, assistant surgeon; William S. Burton, of South Haven, major of Third battalion.

Dr. Andrews was mustered out of the service and honorably discharged October 24, 1864, and died at Paw Paw, August 29, 1886.

Dr. Woodman was commissioned surgeon of the Eleventh Michigan Cavalry, October 7, 1863; taken prisoner October 2, 1864; confined in Libby prison; exchanged October 29, 1864; mustered out of service and honorably discharged, August 10, 1865. Died April 11, 1883, buried at Paw Paw.

Major Burton resigned and was honorably discharged, December 2, 1864.

The regiment left Grand Rapids November 28, 1861, for St. Louis, Missouri, under command of Lieutenant Colonel Robert H. G. Minty. In March, 1862, the Third was in the army commanded by General Pope, who at that date was operating against Island No. 10, in the Mississippi river, the regiment being located at New Madrid, Missouri, and was constantly under fire for several days. The water at this place was extremely bad, and more sickness was contracted here than at any one period of the four and a half years' service of the regiment, the death rate being very heavy.

Governor Blair commissioned Captain John K. Mizner, U. S. A., colonel of the regiment March 7, 1862, and he immediately assumed command.

Its first engagement was at New Madrid, Missouri, where it began a most creditable career, giving the foe a lively idea of the mettle of the Michigan cavalry boys, of which the southern troops were destined to have a large experience before the close of the war.

After the evacuation of New Madrid and the surrender of Island No. 10 the regiment was sent up the Tennessee river to the battlefield of Shiloh and took part in the siege of Corinth, Mississippi, which lasted until the end of May, and during that time the regiment performed most efficient service and was highly commended by officers in high command.

After the fall of Corinth the Third served under General Rosecrans in the campaign in Mississippi and Alabama, which was directed by General Grant. It bore a conspicuous part in the battle of Iuka, September 19, 1862, and acted so gallantly that General Rosecrans acknowledged its meritorious services in general orders.

One of its hardest fought battles was that of Corinth, Mississippi, October 3 and 4, 1862. For several days some portions of the regiment were in the saddle without intermission day and night. On the retreat of the rebels south the Third Cavalry were constantly on their flanks and rear, capturing many prisoners. This pursuit extended over seventy-five miles into the heart of Mississippi.

During the following months of that year the regiment was constantly on scouting duty, and its marches and engagements with the enemy were continuous and incessant. During this period it was under command of Major Lyman G. Wilcox, Colonel Mizner having been made chief of cavalry for the Sixteenth Army Corps, while Lieutenant Colonel Minty was commissioned colonel of the Fourth Cavalry and returned to Michigan and organized that regiment.

In November the Confederates destroyed telegraphic communications between General Grant and General Sherman, the former at La Grange and the latter at Memphis, Tennessee. It was im-



portant that General Grant should communicate with General Sherman. Captain Cicero Newell, who had been commissioned captain of Company K, April 11, 1862, vice Davis, resigned, was selected, with his company, to carry the dispatches, although the country was held by the enemy in strong force and every road guarded. By persistent effort and marked tact and bravery Captain Newell succeeded in delivering the dispatches and received a complimentary letter from General Sherman for the daring deed. This was only one of the many daring expeditions by the officers and men of this regiment during that momentous period.

The regiment did efficient service in northern Mississippi and Tennessee during the winter of 1863, and took part in a severe engagement at Jackson, Tennessee, in July of that year. In August it was engaged with the enemy at Grenada, Mississippi, and destroyed an immense amount of railroad stock, including sixty locomotives and nearly five hundred cars. During the following months of the year, by continuous marches and fighting, it succeeded in driving from the country the notorious bands of guerrillas that had long infested that section. It met on several occasions the forces under Generals Forrest and Chalmers, and severe engagements took place at Ripley, Orizaba and Ellistown, Mississippi, and at Purdy and Jack's Creek, Tennessee.

#### JUSTICE TO CAVALRY REGIMENTS

A comprehensive history of a cavalry regiment can only be written by recording its daily movements. When not moving with its brigade it is often sent on dangerous and important missions far from its support, and has to depend upon the officer in command for a successful termination, and frequently he finds most exacting and trying conditions confronting him.

The different companies of this regiment were daily sent on dangerous scouting duty, either separately or by detachments, and often secured information that was of vital importance to the commanding general. These separate companies or detachments had to rely upon themselves in critical situations, and they often displayed during the war the genius of generalship that would have distinguished them in history were such circumstances not so frequent or were they written up at the time and made public.

In the movements of a great army the minor movements of regiments and companies are overshadowed and unknown except to those who take part. A regiment of cavalry performs most incessant and arduous service during a campaign, but its reconnaissances and scouts, its skirmishes and charges, are only a part of the main army and are seldom mentioned with the importance

they deserve. The frequent charges, marches, battles and skirmishes of a cavalry regiment cannot be recorded with justice in a brief outline of its history.

In January, 1864, the Third, was at La Grange, Tennessee, where the regiment reenlisted and was sent to Michigan on veteran furlough. The reputation it had attained drew a large number of recruits to its ranks at this time, and at the termination of the thirty-day furlough the regiment reassembled at Kalamazoo and again, under command of Colonel Mizner, returned to St. Louis, Missouri, where, in May, 1864, it was sent to Little Rock, Arkansas, and was soon engaged in scouting and driving General Shelby and the Confederates he commanded beyond the Arkansas river.

From November, 1864, to February, 1865, the headquarters of the Third were at Brownsville Station, Arkansas, and many marches and scouts were made in the surrounding country, securing large supplies for the Union army, thus immeasurably crippling the Confederates, whose resources were constantly being curtailed.

In March, 1865, the Third was transferred to the Military Department of the Mississippi commanded by General Canby, to operate against Mobile. After the fall of that city it marched across Alabama and Mississippi to Baton Rouge, Louisiana. When General Sheridan was sent west to command the Military Department of the Southwest the regiment was ordered to report to him for duty, and immediately joined the expedition to San Antonio, Texas, where it arrived August 2nd, after a long and fatiguing march. Here it was employed in guarding the Mexican border, where it performed garrison duty and engaged in constant scouting. Its headquarters were at San Antonio, Texas, until February 15, 1866, when it was dismounted and marched to Indianola, where it took a steamer for Cairo, Illinois, via New Orleans.

On its return to Michigan, March 10, 1866, the regiment was rendezvoused at Jackson, where it was paid off and disbanded. The veterans of 1861 in this organization saw four years and six months' service and a great majority of its recruits served well and faithfully for over three years. Its members, both officers and enlisted men, came from all sections of the state, and in a short time after their muster out could be found at their former avocations, the better citizens for having been good soldiers. Their long and arduous service added luster to the lasting reputation won by the cavalry regiments from Michigan.

From March, 1862, until December, 1863, the regiment took part in the following engagements and skirmishes: New Madrid, Missouri, March 13, 1862; siege of Island No. 10, Missouri, March

14 to April 7, 1862; Farmington, Mississippi, May 5, 1862; siege of Corinth, Mississippi, May 10 to 31, 1862; Spangler's Mills, Mississippi, July 26, 1862; Bay Springs, Mississippi, September 10, 1862; Iuka, Mississippi, September 19, 1862; Corinth, Mississippi, October 3 and 4, 1862; Hatchie, Mississippi, October 6, 1862; Holly Springs, Mississippi, November 7, 1862; Hudsonville, Mississippi, November 14, 1862; Lumkin's Mill, Mississippi, November 29, 1862; Coffeeville, Mississippi, November 29, 1862; Oxford, Mississippi, December 2, 1862; Coffeeville, Mississippi, December 5, 1862; Brownsville, Mississippi, January 14, 1863; Clifton, Mississippi, February 10, 1863; Panola, Mississippi, July 20, 1863; Grenada, Mississippi, August 14, 1863; Byhalia, Mississippi, October 12, 1863; Wyatt's Ford, Mississippi, October 13, 1863; Ripley, Mississippi, November 29, 1863; Orizaba, Mississippi, November 30, 1863; Ellistown, Mississippi, December 3, 1863; Purdy, Mississippi, December 22, 1863; Jack's Creek, Tennessee, December 24, 1863.

Shortly after the engagement at Jack's Creek the regiment returned to Michigan on veteran furlough, and on its return to the front was closely identified with the skirmishes and battles in the southwest, including the battle at Mobile, and at the surrender of the last rebel troops under General Richard Taylor. It is the record of the regiment that it did active service in ten states, occupying more territory and marching more miles than any regiment that left the state. The official records show that the regiment actually marched a distance of 10,800 miles exclusive of marches by separate companies and detachments.

Volumes could be written from the few statistical lines recorded beneath, every figure of which represents an individual part taken by some soldier in the great War of the Rebellion.

Total enrolment, 2,264; killed in action, 24; died of wounds received in action, 9; died in Confederate prisons, 8; died of disease contracted in the service, 333; discharged for disability (wounds and disease), 319.

Company A: Baughman, Homer; enlisted September 9, 1861; saddler; discharged February 12, 1866.

Bridges, Benjamin F., Bloomingdale; enlisted September, 1861, at Bloomingdale; discharged February 12, 1866.

Brown, Charles M.; enlisted August 31, 1861; discharged for disability December 9, 1862.

Brown, Cyrus, Waverly; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Waverly; discharged, February 3, 1863.

Brown, Lorenzo, Bloomingdale; enlisted October 3, 1861, at Bloomingdale; discharged for disability July 25, 1862.

Clark, Marcus F., Bloomingdale; enlisted September 9, 1861, at Allegan; discharged for disability, July 13, 1862.

Colwell, Edwin A., Bloomingdale; enlisted September, 5, 1861, at Bloomingdale; on duty with Ninth Illinois Cavalry from January 31 to May 30, 1864; discharged October 24, 1864.

Coon, Charles M., Bloomingdale enlisted September 6, 1861, at Bloomingdale; discharged December 1, 1864.

Coy, Daniel, Bloomingdale; enlisted September 3, 1861, at Bloomingdale; discharged July 24, 1861.

Fowler, George, Bloomingdale; enlisted September 9, 1861, at Bloomingdale; died at St. Louis, Missouri, May 17, 1862; buried in St. Louis National cemetery, grave No. 979.

Holbrook, William A.; enlisted September 3, 1861; corporal; discharged for disability, July 25, 1862.

McMeeken, William, Bloomingdale; enlisted September 5, 1861, at Bloomingdale; discharged for disability March 28, 1864; died at Petoskey.

Miller, James H., Bloomingdale; enlisted September 4, 1861, at Bloomingdale; promoted to sergeant; discharged February 12, 1866.

Moore, John, Bloomingdale; enlisted August 25, 1863, at Bloomingdale; died July 30, 1864.

Parsons, Francis M., Bloomingdale; enlisted September 4, 1861, at Bloomingdale; discharged for disability.

Quint, Obed W., Bloomingdale; enlisted September 25, 1861, at Bloomingdale; on duty with Ninth Illinois Cavalry from January 31 to May 30; discharged October 24, 1864.

Richard, John, Pine Grove; enlisted February 29, 1864, at Pine Grove, died at St. Louis, Missouri, November 6, 1864; buried in National cemetery at St. Louis, grave No. 3140.

Robinson, William A.; enlisted September 3, 1861, at Allegan; discharged for disability January 20, 1863.

Scott, Aaron; enlisted August 31, 1861, at Allegan; discharged February 12, 1866.

Smith, Marion M.; enlisted August 15, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged June 2, 1865.

Whaley, Ezra, Bloomingdale; enlisted October 7, 1862, at Bloomingdale; promoted to corporal and to sergeant; discharged February 12, 1866; dead; buried at Charlotte, Michigan.

Company C: This company was, in the first place, wholly made up of Van Buren county men, although there were numbers of recruits from other parts of the State. There were over two hundred men in its ranks during its period of service.

The following list contains the names of those from Van Buren County: Hudson, Gilbert J., Paw Paw; first captain of the com-

pany, commissioned major November 1, 1862; honorably discharged, June 6, 1865; died at Paw Paw, December 19, 1881.

Rowland, Oran W., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; appointed sergeant at organization of company; subsequently promoted to first sergeant; commissioned second lieutenant Company E, April 29, 1863; first lieutenant Company I, October 24, 1864; acting assistant adjutant general at brigade headquarters, January, February and March, 1865; captain Company C, November 17, 1864; honorably discharged, June 6, 1865; present residence, Paw Paw.

Dyckman, Barney H., South Haven; entered service as second lieutenant Company C, at South Haven, September 17, 1861; promoted to first lieutenant January 13, 1862; captain Company A, May 25, 1862; resigned and honorably discharged October 31, 1864; died November 25, 1890.

Huston, Joseph W., Paw Paw; entered service as first lieutenant September 17, 1861; resigned January 12, 1862; major Fourth Michigan Cavalry September 1, 1862; resigned and honorably discharged, August 25, 1863; died at Boise City, Idaho.

Thompson, Albert H., Lawton; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawton; first sergeant and sergeant major; second lieutenant Company C, January 13, 1862; resigned and honorably discharged, October 12, 1862; died at Lawton.

Chatfield, Henry, South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; promoted to quartermaster sergeant; second lieutenant September 22, 1864; first lieutenant November 7, 1864; honorably discharged on account of disability, June 12, 1865; died at South Haven, August 20, 1906.

Abbott, John, Bangor; enlisted December 21, 1863, at Bangor; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, South Haven.

Baker, Orson M., Lawrence; enlisted February 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability, October 7, 1864; dead.

Bates, Isaac L., Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter, as corporal; promoted to sergeant, January 19, 1864; discharged October 5, 1865; present residence, Andover, South Dakota.

Beardsley, Eli, Lawrence; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Lawrence; died at DeVall's Bluff, Arkansas, August 14, 1864.

Beaver, Watson H., Bangor; enlisted October 16, 1862; discharged October 15, 1865; present residence, Bangor.

Bedell, Edward R.; enlisted January 1, 1862; taken prisoner August 24, 1864; returned to regiment January 2, 1865; discharged February 12, 1866.

Benjamin, Marion D., Lawrence; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Big Rock, Illinois, January 27, 1908.

Blaisdale, John, Arlington; enlisted as corporal; September 17, 1861, at Arlington; discharged for disability November 22, 1862; died at Arlington, May 1, 1902.

Bonesteele, John Q., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Evart, Michigan, March 5, 1907.

Bowman, Walter, Lawton; enlisted June 20, 1863, at Lawton; missing in action at La Grange, Tennessee; reported prisoner of war; no further record.

Branch, Charles, Lawrence; enlisted August 16, 1862, at Paw Paw; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; died at Washington, D. C., March 24, 1865.

Branch, Frank, Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; corporal January 1, 1865; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Lawrence.

Branch, Luther, Lawrence; enlisted September 16, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Yaquina, Oregon.

Bridges, George W., Bangor; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Bangor.

Bridges, James, South Haven; enlisted February 15, 1864, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1864; dead.

Bunnell, Jabe C., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence, as saddler; discharged for disability, May 9, 1863; dead.

Buss, Horace B., Paw Paw; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Evart, Michigan, September 25, 1907.

Buys, Cornelius, South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, South Haven.

Camp, Daniel S., Arlington; enlisted September 7, 1863, at Arlington; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Bangor.

Chandler, John D., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; corporal; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence soldiers' home, Orting, Washington.

Chubbuck, John F., Arlington; enlisted February 20, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged October 5, 1865; dead. This soldier was in the South at the breaking out of the civil war and was conscripted into the southern army, but availed himself of the first opportunity to escape and join the northern forces.

Churchill, George W., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner November 2, 1863; died at Andersonville; buried in Andersonville National cemetery, grave No. 5686.

Cochrane, Andrew M., Bangor; enlisted February 29, 1864, at

Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Bangor.

Cross, Burrill A., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; on duty with Ninth Illinois Cavalry, January 21 to May 30, 1864; discharged October 24, 1864; dead.

Cross, George A., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Lawrence.

Cross, Orrin W., Bangor; enlisted as corporal, September 17, 1861, at Bangor; discharged September 26, 1863, to accept commission in Sixty-first Colored Troops; died September 26, 1865; buried at Bangor.

Dailey, Andrew, Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; killed by guerrillas at Corinth, Mississippi, November 14, 1863; buried in Union National cemetery, Corinth, grave No. 2552.

Daskam, Charles S., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, at Paw Paw; promoted to corporal; quartermaster sergeant; first sergeant; second lieutenant Company F, November 17, 1864; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Albion, Michigan, February 14, 1904.

De Haven, David, Arlington; enlisted at Paw Paw, August 14, 1862; wounded and died at Memphis, Tennessee, January 31, 1864; buried in National cemetery, Memphis.

Dolson, John H., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; died 1876; buried near Covert.

Donovan, Andrew, Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Bangor.

Dopp, Amos, Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged December 29, 1862; died at Lawrence, February 12, 1908.

Dow, Joseph, South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; died of wounds received in action near Corinth, Mississippi, April 29, 1862; the first man killed in the regiment; buried in Union National cemetery at Corinth, Mississippi, grave No. 2555.

Durkee, William H., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; taken prisoner at Corinth, November 12, 1863, released December 16, 1864; discharged March 3, 1865; died at soldiers' home, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1911, buried at Paw Paw.

Earl, Roswell A., Bangor; enlisted at Bangor, September 17,

1861; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Wexford, Michigan, February 23, 1904, buried at Wexford.

Ecklar, Wallace, Arlington; enlisted August 15, 1862, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner at Corinth, November 2, 1863; died August 14, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Andersonville.

Ewers, Ebenezer, Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Coloma, Michigan.

Ewers, William, Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; missing in action at Brownsville, Arkansas; supposed to have been killed by guerrillas.

Ewing, Benjamin F., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; sergeant; discharged for disability, November 30, 1863; died at Bangor.

Ferguson, Philo N.; enlisted at Paw Paw, September 17, 1861; bugler; discharged October 3, 1864; died May 17, 1891; buried at Harbor Springs, Michigan.

Finley, William W.; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; farrier; discharged July 9, 1865; dead.

Fassett, James S., Lawrence; enlisted August 17, 1863, at Lawrence; died at Corinth, Mississippi, November 8, 1863; buried in Union National cemetery, number of grave unknown.

Foster, Abram F., Columbia; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Columbia; discharged for disability, March 28, 1864; dead.

Fuller, Daniel P., Decatur; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Decatur; discharged January 2, 1866; died at Charlotte, Michigan, 1898.

Fuller, Solon P., Decatur; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Decatur; died at Detroit, October 14, 1862.

Gage, Delos, Lawrence; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability, November 1, 1864; died at Lawrence.

Geiser, Ernest, Lawton; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability, June 1863; died at Lawton, January 21, 1903.

Gilbert, James, Arlington; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability February 6, 1863; died at Bangor, March 9, 1901.

Goodell, Oliver E., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged October 24, 1864; dead.

Goss, John P., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Bangor.

Greenman, Columbus; enlisted July 10, 1864, at Lawton; discharged May 26, 1865; no further record.

Harris, James; enlisted at Paw Paw, September 17, 1861; discharged for disability, November 8, 1862; dead.



Harvey, Samuel P., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; promoted to corporal, sergeant and first sergeant; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Bangor.

Hennesey, James, Paw Paw; enlisted August 15, 1862, at Paw Paw; on duty with Ninth Illinois Cavalry from January 31 to May 30, 1864; discharged June 2, 1865; dead.

Hilliard, Charles, Lawrence; enlisted August 17, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Hartford.

Hilliard, Harris W., Lawrence; enlisted February 29, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Lawrence.

Hogmire, Charles, Arlington; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Portland, Michigan.

Hogmire, Edwin S., Arlington; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged June 2, 1865; present residence, Breeds-ville.

Hogmire, Mitchell H., Arlington; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Paw Paw; promoted to corporal and to sergeant; discharged June 2, 1865.

House, Frederick A., Paw Paw; enlisted February 9, 1864; discharged July 5, 1865; dead.

Howe, Martin A., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; wagoner; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Michigan City, Indiana.

Hoxie, Orville C., Lawrence; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Lawrence; died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, August 16, 1864.

Hunt, Isaiah F., Arlington; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability December 31, 1862.

Hurlbut, Albert F., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; corporal; discharged February 21, 1866; present residence, Paw Paw.

Hurlbut, Spencer N., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; commissioned first lieutenant, Eleventh Cavalry; unassigned; discharged, special order war department, dated December 1, 1863. Died in California.

Huston, William H. II., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; promoted to sergeant and sergeant major; second lieutenant, Company B, October 3, 1864; first lieutenant, Company B, December 7, 1864; captain same company, July 4, 1865; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, San Antonio, Texas.

Ives, Charles, Arlington; enlisted August 17, 1863, at Lawrence,

discharged October 5, 1865; present residence, Hesperia, Michigan.

Johnson, Freeman G., Bangor; enlisted May 29, 1862, at Jackson; discharged June 2, 1865; subsequently served in Company C, Seventeenth United States Infantry.

Kelly, Franklin N., Lawrence; enlisted August 17, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged June 9, 1865; died at Lawrence, April 21, 1897.

Kelly, Julius H., Lawrence, enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Lawrence, March 20, 1906.

Kinney, John R., Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; promoted to sergeant and quartermaster sergeant; discharged February 12, 1866.

Kidney, Marvin N., Porter; enlisted November 16, 1863, at Porter; discharged February 14, 1865; present residence, Kenosha, Wisconsin.

King, Charles O., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; promoted to corporal, sergeant and regimental commissary sergeant; second lieutenant, Company I, November 6, 1865; discharged February 12, 1866; dead.

Lamont, Hans, Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw, discharged for disability June 14, 1863; died at Paw Paw.

Lamphear, Dempster, Lawrence; enlisted February 17, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 19, 1865; present residence, Olivet.

Lamphear, Otis E., Lawrence; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; no further record.

Lamphear, Loren E., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Lawrence, January 12, 1911.

Lamphear, Truman R., Lawrence; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged October 5, 1865; dead.

Lamphear, Truman, Lawrence; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability November 19, 1865; died at Lawrence, October 21, 1904.

Lewis, William H., Arlington; enlisted August 17, 1863, at Lawrence; died at Corinth, Mississippi, October 31, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Corinth, grave No. 255.

Luce, Joseph W., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability November 7, 1862; present residence, Dwight, Kansas.

Lutz, Samuel, South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; discharged for disability October 22, 1865; dead.

Mallory, Lemuel C., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; discharged February 12, 1866; no further record.

Mahard, John, Lawton; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawton; discharged August, 1862; subsequently served in Twenty-eighth Michigan Infantry from 1864 to 1866. Present residence Lawton.

Martin, Oscar D., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; on duty with 9th Illinois Cavalry from January 31 to May 30, 1864; discharged October 24, 1864; present residence Lawrence.

Marshall, Jerome B., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged for disability July 20, 1862; died at Lawrence.

McDonald, John; Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal and sergeant; discharged February 12, 1866; dead.

McDonald, Ronald, South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1866; died at San Antonio, Texas, February 3, 1889; buried same place, National cemetery, grave No. 851.

McNeil, Minard, Lawton; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawton; discharged October 24, 1864; died at Lawton.

Miller, Henry H., Lawton; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawton; discharged to accept appointment second lieutenant, Company H, Fourth United States Heavy Artillery, colored, August 17, 1864; honorably discharged at Little Rock, Arkansas; present residence, Marshall, Michigan.

Mitchelson, Shortis, Paw Paw; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Antwerp, May 16, 1899.

Monroe, Ebenezer, Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; corporal; on duty with Ninth Illinois Cavalry, from January 31 to May 30, 1864; discharged October 24, 1865; present residence, Schoolcraft.

Moon, Eugene F., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability July 19, 1863; no further record.

Moses, Andrew F., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Hamburg, Tennessee, May 27, 1862.

Moses, Judson J., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability November 8, 1862; died at Arlington, May 17, 1909.

Moon, William H., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability April 16, 1862; dead.

Musson, Thomas G., Lawrence; enlisted August 14, 1863, at Lawrence; died at Corinth, Mississippi, October 16, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Corinth; number grave unknown.

Murch, Ford, Paw Paw; enlisted February 16, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Mattawan.

Nyman, R. C., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; prisoner of war from May to October, 1863; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Bangor.

Ormsby, Edwin B., Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; corporal; discharged February 7, 1865; present residence, Greenville.

Osborn, Ozias, Lawrence; enlisted December 28, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; dead.

Parrish, James, Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; discharged for disability, December 16, 1863; dead.

Parker, James; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Kalamazoo; died May 30, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Memphis, Tennessee, grave No. 4130.

Patterson, William; enlisted February 16, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; no further record.

Peabody, George W., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; saddler; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Hartford, July 7, 1909; buried at Lawrence.

Pease, Enoch M., Geneva; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Geneva; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Grand View, South Dakota.

Pierce, Franklin M., Lawrence; enlisted September 10, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability January 10, 1863; dead.

Randall, Hiram A., South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; discharged for disability June 17, 1864; dead.

Rhodes Fernando C.; Arlington; enlisted August 17, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Lawrence, December 29, 1908.

Richardson, Milan U., Arlington; enlisted at Lawrence, August 1, 1863; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Paw Paw, December 26, 1896.

Richardson, Noble D., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; discharged for disability, April 6, 1862; died January 8, 1895; buried at Paw Paw.

Richmond, Andrew J., enlisted February 22, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; dead.

Rogers, Henry A., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; promoted to quartermaster sergeant and first sergeant, second lieutenant Company H, December 11, 1862; resigned and honorably discharged August 13, 1863; died at Paw Paw.

Royal, Hiram L., enlisted September 17, 1861, at Antwerp; discharged February 1, 1866; dead.

Russell, Clark G., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Ban-

gor; discharged to accept promotion in United States Colored Troops, September 16, 1864; assisted in the organization of a regiment of Kentucky State militia; seriously wounded April, 1865; present residence, Lansing, Michigan.

Russell, Lyman S., Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861; discharged to accept promotion in regiment of colored troops; assisted in organizing first colored soldiers; first sergeant Company A, Sixty-first United States Colored Troops; sergeant major one year, second lieutenant and acting adjutant, October 30, 1864; discharged May 23, 1865; died at Lansing, Michigan.

Shaver, Talcott A, Lawrence; enlisted August 14, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence, Benton Harbor.

Showers, John, Lawton; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawton; discharged for disability September 8, 1862; dead.

Sinclair, Otis, Covert; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Covert; died at St. Louis, Missouri, August 19, 1862, of small pox; buried at St. Louis.

Smith, Hudson D., Bangor; enlisted December 30, 1863, at Bangor; discharged February 12, 1866; removed to Missouri; no further record.

Smith, John B., South Haven; enlisted August 15, 1863, at South Haven; discharged February, 1866. No further record.

Smith, William J., enlisted December 19, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability October 1, 1864; dead.

Southwell, Silas J., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; died at St. Louis, Missouri, January 12, 1862.

Stearns, Stacy N., Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged for disability October 30, 1862; died at Lawrence, March 21, 1879.

Stickney, Daniel M., Paw Paw; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; dead.

Swan, John, Arlington; enlisted August 15, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability, January 11, 1863; dead.

Travis, James B.; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; died at New Madrid, Missouri, April 6, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Memphis, Tennessee.

Tucker, George M. D., Arlington; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Arlington; bugler; discharged February 12, 1866; dead.

Utley, Urijah, Lawrence; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged for disability July 1, 1862; dead.

Van Draiss, Frederick, Lawrence; enlisted September 17, at Lawrence; transferred to Ninth Illinois Cavalry, January 31, 1864; no further record.

Van Dusen, Henry, Paw Paw; enlisted August 18, 1862, at

Paw Paw; discharged for disability, April 21, 1863; no further record.

Van Dyke, Joseph G., South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; discharged March 28, 1864; died at South Haven, March 11, 1890.

Voorhees, Augustus, South Haven; enlisted September 17, 1861, at South Haven; on duty with Ninth Illinois Cavalry from January 31, to May 30, 1864; discharged October 20, 1864; died at South Haven, October 20, 1901.

Ward, David M., Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Lawton.

Ward, John C., Porter; enlisted August 5, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Paw Paw.

Ward, William H. H., Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; killed in action near Corinth, Mississippi, November 15, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Corinth, grave No. 2555.

Wells, Henry A., Lawrence; enlisted August 12, 1863, at Lawrence; promoted to regimental quartermaster sergeant, commissioned second lieutenant Company D, October 17, 1865; discharged February 12, 1866; present residence Soldiers' Home; Grand Rapids.

Wells, Hiram K., Lawrence; enlisted August 12, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866; died July 20, 1893; buried at Lawrence.

Widner, James, Lawrence; enlisted February 22, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Lawrence, March 9, 1908.

Wood, Daniel, Bangor; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; died at Bangor, April 24, 1862; buried with military honors.

Worralo, William H.; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Bangor; discharged for disability, July 23, 1862; died at Bangor in 1866.

Wright, Claudius D., Porter; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Porter; died at Rienzi, Mississippi, July 27, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Corinth, Mississippi, grave No. 2564.

Company M: Brott, Charles, Geneva; enlisted February 13, 1864, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1866; died January 26, 1905, at Geneva.

Burnham, Gifford, Covert; enlisted December 16, 1863, at Kalamazoo; died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, July 4, 1864, buried in National cemetery at Little Rock, Arkansas, grave No. 143.

Buys, Redford, South Haven; enlisted February 22, 1864, at South Haven; died at Brownsville, Arkansas, November 30, 1864.

Camp, Edgar N., Lawrence; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Kalamazoo; died April 3, 1864, in Michigan.

Crakes, William, Geneva; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Geneva; discharged February 12, 1866.

Hoag, Orrin S., Geneva; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Geneva; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Lacota, Michigan, January 5, 1904.

Hess, James S., South Haven; enlisted February 27, 1864, at South Haven; died at St. Louis, Missouri, March 28, 1864.

Ingram, Alfred T., Paw Paw; enlisted February 22, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged January 21, 1866; dead.

Jones, James; South Haven; enlisted February 11, 1864; corporal; died at Brownsville, Arkansas, August 29, 1864.

Long, Achilles, South Haven; enlisted February 11, 1864, at South Haven; died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, July 12, 1864; buried in National cemetery, Little Rock, Arkansas; grave No. 211.

McDonough, John, Geneva; enlisted February 15, 1864; discharged February 12, 1866.

McPherson, Hugh, Paw Paw; enlisted March 2, 1864, at Kalamazoo, discharged October 5, 1865; died at Paw Paw, September 20, 1906.

Matthews, Billings W., South Haven; enlisted February 16, 1864; discharged February 12, 1866.

Newman, Nicholas, South Haven; enlisted at Geneva, February 18, 1864; died at De Vall's Bluff, July 20, 1864.

Orr, Robert, Paw Paw; enlisted February 16, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866.

Parker, William S., South Haven; enlisted at South Haven, February 15, 1864; discharged February 12, 1866.

Paul, Jay, Lawrence; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Lawrence; died at De Vall's Bluff, Arkansas, August 8, 1864; buried at same place.

Pease, Henry, South Haven; enlisted February 15, 1864, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1866.

Pike, Silas B., South Haven; enlisted February 11, 1864, at South Haven; wounded in action May 15, 1865; discharged February 12, 1866.

Rathburn, Adrian, Lawrence; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged February 12, 1866.

Seeger, Lorenzo, Columbia, enlisted February 23, 1864, at Columbia; died in Michigan, May 25, 1864.

Shepard, William M., Paw Paw; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Paw Paw.

Shoemaker, William W., South Haven; enlisted February 15, 1864, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1866.

Swick, William R., Paw Paw; enlisted February 24, 1864, at

Paw Paw; died at New Orleans, April 19, 1865; buried in New Orleans National cemetery.

Van Tassell, Jason D., South Haven; enlisted February 26, 1864, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1866; died November 19, 1896.

Walker, Absalom, Bloomingdale; enlisted August 20, 1861, at Bloomingdale; discharged February 12, 1866.

Other Companies: Hamilton, Julius, South Haven; Company F; enlisted December 12, 1863, at South Haven; discharged February 12, 1866.

Koons, John, Lawton, Company F; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged May 5, 1865.

Mills, Lyman, Paw Paw, Company F; enlisted September 30, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability August 24, 1862.

Glidden, Harrison W., Paw Paw, Company H; enlisted February 9, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged February 12, 1866; died at Antwerp, November 20, 1907.

Stanton, Lyman, Lawrence; Company I; enlisted August 27, 1863, at Lawrence; died of wounds received in action, at Memphis, Tennessee, February 12, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Memphis, grave No. 4163.

Carpenter, William, South Haven, Company K; died in Michigan, September 14, 1864.

Sisson, Benjamin A., Decatur, Company E; enlisted at Decatur, February 20, 1864; discharged February 12, 1866.

Harmon, Asa, Paw Paw; enlisted September 15, 1861, at Paw Paw, in Company I, Second Michigan Cavalry; transferred to Third Cavalry, hospital steward; discharged for disability May 30, 1862; reentered service December, 1862, as chaplain; discharged February 12, 1866.

#### FOURTH MICHIGAN CAVALRY

Let the flag of our country be flung to the sky;  
 Our arm shall be bared for the glorious fight,  
 As freemen we'll live, or like freemen we'll die!  
 Our Union and Liberty, and God save the right.

The Fourth Michigan Cavalry was authorized about July 1, 1862, and rendezvoused at Detroit on July 29th. It was mustered into the service of the United States just a month afterward under command of Colonel Robert H. G. Minty. It left the state for Louisville, Kentucky, September 26th, fully armed and equipped, with 1,233 officers and enlisted men on its rolls. Colonel Minty, its commanding officer, had been a major in the Second Cavalry and lieutenant colonel of the Third Cavalry. He commanded the brigade, of which the Fourth formed a part, for



the greater part of the time it was in service, the command being known as "Minty's Brigade," which became as famous in the west as was the Michigan Cavalry Brigade in the east.

The first real engagement in which the regiment participated was with the Confederate General Morgan, at Stanford, Kentucky, which resulted in a Union victory. From that time to the end of the year the Fourth was constantly on duty, taking the advance of the Union forces from Nashville, and making reconnaissances and scouts in every direction, meeting the enemy almost daily, and invariably was victor when not overwhelmed by superior numbers.

During these months of active service the regiment as a whole, or by detachments, made a number of saber charges with brilliant success, or fought on foot with the facility of veteran infantry when occasion required. It routed the enemy on many a field and captured prisoners and destroyed vast amounts of public property which the south could ill afford to lose.

In January, 1863, though the weather was severe and the roads almost impassable and rations scarce, the regiment started from Murfreesboro, met Forrest's and Wheeler's Cavalry and drove them back with considerable loss of killed, wounded and prisoners.

The following month the regiment was in pursuit of Wheeler and Forrest near Fort Donelson. During this march of two hundred and eighty miles in snow, sleet and rain the regiment captured 145 prisoners and 14 commissioned officers.

On the 22d day of May, 1863, the regiment, with its brigade, marched to Middleton, and the Fourth charged through the town and a mile beyond, where it met the First Alabama. Quickly dismounting and advancing on the camp with their repeating rifles, the Confederates fled and the Fourth took possession, capturing the flag of the First Alabama and destroying a large amount of small arms, ammunition, saddles and clothing. The flag, by resolution of the regiment, was presented to the governor of Michigan and is now deposited in the Military Museum at the capitol.

In April, 1864, the Fourth marched across the Cumberland mountains to the vicinity of Chattanooga and then crossing Lookout mountain and Taylor's ridge attacked the enemy at Rome, Georgia, on the 15th, where it routed a Confederate brigade. Joining in the Atlanta campaign with the army under General Sherman, the Fourth led the advance of the infantry and took part in all the engagements of the campaign in and around Atlanta.

The regiment formed a part of General Kilpatrick's force of 2,500 men in a raid south of Atlanta, and when the Union troops reached Flint river they found the enemy behind formidable en-

trenchments, but dismounted and, fighting on foot, charged him into Jonesboro.

Kilpatrick then marched for Lovejoy's Station to destroy the Macon railroad. Here the Union forces were surrounded and, being outnumbered five to one, were in a critical situation.

Minty's Brigade was then massed by regiments and with drawn saber cut its way through the enemy's line, thereby securing the safety of the balance of the command.

After the fall of Atlanta, the Fourth was engaged in scouting, and detachments of the regiment had several severe encounters with the enemy. In October, when General Hood commenced his march north with the intention of taking Nashville, Tennessee, the Fourth, with its brigade, followed in pursuit, and marching through Rome, Kingston and Resaca, Georgia, met Wheeler's cavalry at Little River, Alabama, on the 20th and drove the Confederates five miles, killing and capturing a large number.

Early in March, 1865, the regiment started on a long raid through Alabama, meeting the enemy at numerous places, capturing guns and supplies, and arrived before Selma, April 2d, which was strongly fortified and defended by Forrest's men, estimated at 9,000.

The Fourth, with its brigade, was dismounted and assaulted the works, losing heavily in the advance, but, undaunted by the terrific fire, scaled the breastworks and with the balance of the command captured the city and 25 pieces of artillery, a large amount of ammunition and stores, besides 2,800 prisoners.

The Fourth then marched through Montgomery to Macon, Georgia, and the Union troops here received the surrender of Major General Howell Cobb, with his entire Confederate force of 380 officers, 2,000 men and 62 pieces of artillery, with all the arsenals, foundries and machine shops in the city.

It was here that the commanding general of the Union forces received the news of the surrender of Generals Lee and Johnston, which terminated hostilities east of the Mississippi.

It was soon learned that Jefferson Davis, president of the so-called southern Confederacy, was trying to make his escape to the Atlantic coast.

Lieutenant Colonel Pritchard was directed by Colonel Minty to proceed with the Fourth to the Ockmulgee river and try to learn the whereabouts of Davis. Colonel Pritchard learned that Davis was moving towards Irwinsville, Georgia, and, selecting 150 of his best mounted troopers, started in rapid pursuit. He found Mr. Davis encamped in the woods with members of his family and friends, and all were soon made prisoners.

## CAPTURE OF JEFFERSON DAVIS

The story of the capture of the Confederate chieftain is an interesting one. We give it substantially as related by the chief participants.

At Irwinsville, Georgia, Colonel Pritchard learned that a train which probably belonged to the fleeing president of the fallen Confederacy was encamped but a short distance away. Moving out into the vicinity of the camp, he sent Lieutenant Purinton with a small detail of men to wait on the other side of it. At the break of day Pritchard advanced and arrived within a few rods of the camp without being discovered, and then dashed forward and placed a chain of guards around it before the astonished inmates fairly realized the situation.

While this was being done, Corporal George Munger of Company C, Fourth Cavalry, a resident of Schoolcraft, Michigan, and Corporal James F. Bullard of the same company, then of Paw Paw, Michigan (now a resident of St. Cloud, Fla.), observed two persons, each dressed in feminine garb, moving rapidly away from one of the tents.

"That ought to be attended to," said one of them.

"Yes," replied the other, and Munger, closely followed by Bullard, rode in front of them and commanded them to halt.

"This is my mother-in-law," said one of them. "Can't you let her pass? She is going to the spring for some water." Her companion, a tall, stooping person, wrapped in a woman's waterproof, with a shawl over the head and a pail in one hand, said nothing.

"No, you can't pass," was the reply.

Seeing that further concealment would avail nothing, the pseudo mother-in-law straightened up, dropped the waterproof and shawl revealing a tall man, with gray hair and whiskers and with but one eye. At first, no one recognized the fugitive as the president of the played-out Confederacy. Mrs. Davis (for the other party was the wife of the fleeing president), threw her arms around her husband's neck exclaiming "Don't shoot him! Don't shoot him!"

"Let them shoot," said Davis. "Let them shoot, if they choose. I may as well die here as anywhere."

But it was not customary for Union soldiers to shoot prisoners of war, and there was no one who had the slightest inclination to slay the ex-Confederate president.

Upon being questioned, Mrs. Davis admitted the identity of her companion, saying to Bullard: "Mr. Davis is a very reverend man. I hope he will not be insulted."

"I shall not insult him, if he behaves himself," was the curt reply.

Meanwhile Colonel Pritchard had gone to the assistance of Lieutenant Purinton, in whose front heavy firing was heard. The fight proved to be a most unfortunate occurrence. A detachment of the First Wisconsin Cavalry, which was also in pursuit of Davis, had met Purinton's advanced guard and began firing on them before ascertaining their identity. In this lamentable affair several men were killed and wounded.

As Colonel Pritchard rode up on his return to the camp he was accosted by Davis, who inquired if he was the commanding officer. The colonel replied in the affirmative and asked by what name he should address his interlocutor.

"Call me whatever you please," was the reply.

"Then I shall call you Davis," said Pritchard, and after a moment's hesitation, the prisoner admitted that was his name.

Then, assuming an attitude of great dignity, he said to Pritchard "I suppose you consider it bravery to charge a train of defenseless women and children; but it is theft; it is vandalism."

Without inquiring whether his distinguished prisoner considered himself a woman or a child, the colonel at once set out for Macon, joining the rest of the command on the way.

As to attacking a camp of women and children, there were with the captured party, two of Davis' aides-de-camp and several other Confederate officers, the entire party consisting of about thirty persons.

The official records show that during its period of service the Fourth Cavalry met the enemy in nearly a hundred different battles and skirmishes, some of the principal ones being as follows: Stone River, Tennessee, December 31, 1862; McMinnville, Tennessee, April 21, 1863; Shelbyville, Tennessee, June 27, 1863; Chickamauga, Georgia, September 19, 20 and 21, 1863, Chattanooga, Tennessee, November 17, 1863; Mission Ridge, Tennessee, November 25, 1863; Rome, Georgia, April 15, 1864; Atlanta, Georgia, August 1 to 14, 1864; Lovejoy's Station, Georgia, August 20, 1864; Macon, Georgia, April 20, 1865.

The regiment left Macon at the close of the war and reached Nashville, June 17, 1865. On the first of July it was mustered out of service and returned to Detroit where it was paid off and disbanded.

Total enrolment, 2,006; killed in action, 30; died of wounds, 15; died while prisoners of war, 7; died of disease, 283; discharged for disability, 230.

The following is a list of the Van Buren county soldiers who served in the Fourth Cavalry.

Company C: Anderson, Return T., Porter; enlisted July 8, 1862, at Porter; discharged July 1, 1865; deceased; buried at Porter.

Austin, Benjamin F., Paw Paw; enlisted July 25, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged May 30, 1865.

Barker, Wesley T., Porter; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Porter; discharged July 1, 1865; present residence, Porter.

Barnes, Charles W., Arlington; enlisted July 24, 1862, at Arlington; died December 29, 1862; buried in Cave Hill National cemetery at Louisville, Kentucky.

Bennett, John, Decatur; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Decatur; corporal; promoted to commissary sergeant and to first sergeant; taken prisoner at Flint Hill church, July 10, 1864; commissioned second lieutenant and assigned to Company B; brevet first lieutenant, United States Volunteers, for meritorious services in the capture of Jefferson Davis; discharged July 1, 1865.

Bierce, James M., Arlington; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Arlington; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 28, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Bryant, John R., Porter; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Porter; discharged July 1, 1865.

Buck, B. Franklin, Keeler; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Keeler; discharged for disability April 28, 1863.

Buck, R. Mortimer, Paw Paw; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Paw Paw; first sergeant; subsequently commissioned as second lieutenant, first lieutenant and captain; discharged July 1, 1865; died December 9, 1902; buried at Paw Paw.

Buckley, James M., Lawrence; enlisted August 2, 1862, at Lawrence; corporal; wounded in action near Fairburn, Georgia, August 19, 1864; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 1, 1865.

Bullard, James F., Paw Paw; enlisted August 2, 1862, at Paw Paw; corporal; was one of the immediate captors of Jefferson Davis and one of the detail of guards that accompanied him to prison; discharged July 1, 1865; present residence, St. Cloud, Florida.

Burns, Robert, Paw Paw; entered service at organization of the regiment as first lieutenant; appointed adjutant, commissioned captain and acting assistant adjutant general, brevet lieutenant colonel United States Volunteers for gallant conduct during an assault on the enemy's works at Selma, Alabama; discharged July 1, 1865.

Burrell, Charles, Arlington; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Arlington; discharged July 1, 1865.

Carr, Peter, Paw Paw; enlisted July 20, 1862, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner at Columbia, Tennessee, April 17, 1865; no further record.

Clark, Edwin L., Paw Paw; enlisted July 19, 1862, at Paw Paw; died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 13, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Colburn, Stephen A., Paw Paw; enlisted July 11, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability December 27, 1862; re-entered service in Company C, Thirteenth Michigan Infantry, August 15, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 8, 1865.

Collins, George W., Hamilton; enlisted August 1, 1862, at Hamilton; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, February 17, 1863.

Conklin, Luman, Porter; enlisted July 26, 1862, at Porter; discharged for disability August 6, 1863; deceased; buried at Lawton.

Crandall, James C., Hartford; enlisted July 21, 1862, at Hartford; sergeant; discharged January 26, 1863, by reason of accidental wounds.

Crane, Edgar A., Paw Paw; enlisted July 5, 1862, at Paw Paw; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 1, 1865; died, 1911; buried at Kalamazoo.

Crane, James M., Paw Paw; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability October 31, 1863.

Crawford, Lester B., Arlington; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Arlington; discharged July 1, 1865.

Curry, David Q., Decatur; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Decatur; corporal; discharged July 1, 1865.

Dake, Hiram P., Paw Paw; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged June 10, 1865.

Darling, Gilbert H., Antwerp; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Antwerp; taken prisoner November 12, 1862; paroled; discharged July 1, 1865.

Davern, Timothy, Antwerp; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Porter; discharged for disability February 3, 1863; died January 16, 1902.

Davis, Benajah M., Waverly; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Waverly; discharged July 1, 1862.

Dean, E. Rolla, Hamilton; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Hamilton; discharged for disability March 8, 1863.

Delano, Harvey, Paw Paw; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Waverly; died July 30, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville, Tennessee.

Denton, John, Lawrence; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Lawrence; wounded in action October 21, 1862; discharged June 5, 1865; died at Lawrence March 27, 1885; buried in Prospect Lake cemetery.

Dickinson, Egbert O., Antwerp; enlisted July 12, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 1, 1865.

Dillon, David, Paw Paw; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Paw Paw;

corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 1, 1865; present residence Paw Paw.

Dolson, Elon G., Lawrence; enlisted July 21, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability, September 30, 1863.

Dopp, James, Lawrence; enlisted July 31, 1862, at Lawrence; sergeant; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, January 18, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Stone River, Tennessee, grave No. 4413.

Eastman, Norman W., Paw Paw; enlisted July 21, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability, March 25, 1863.

Ecklar, Daniel, Columbia; enlisted July 30, 1862; discharged July 1, 1865.

Engle, Allen, Paw Paw; enlisted August 12, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged June 13, 1865.

Farrow, John; enlisted February 4, 1863, at Keeler; discharged August 15, 1865.

Fernam, August, Hartford; enlisted July 20, 1862, at Hartford; discharged for disability, June 21, 1864, on account of wounds received in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 18, 1863.

Field, William A., Lawrence; enlisted July 22, 1862; transferred to Invalid Corps November 1, 1863.

Fisk, George W., Lawrence; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Lawrence; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 26, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Harrington, Russell, Columbia; enlisted July 23, 1862, at Columbia; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, March 12, 1863.

Harrison, George P., Antwerp; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Antwerp; corporal; taken prisoner September 30, 1863; discharged July 1, 1865.

Hayes, Jeremiah C., Antwerp; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Porter; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 18, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Hazard, Elijah C., Arlington, enlisted July 24, 1862, at Arlington; discharged for disability July 1, 1863; died February 27, 1890; buried at Arlington cemetery.

Holly, Henry A., Arlington, enlisted August 5, 1862, at Arlington; discharged for disability July, 1864.

Horton, Charles D.; drafted from Pine Grove; mustered November 4, 1863; died at Columbia, Tennessee, May 20, 1864.

Howard, Hosea L., Lawrence; enlisted July 31, 1862, at Lawrence; died at Nashville, Tennessee, February 2, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Howe, Harry T., Paw Paw; enlisted August 10, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability February 25, 1863.

Huston, Joseph W., Paw Paw; entered service in Company C,

Third Michigan Cavalry, as first lieutenant; resigned January 12, 1862; re-entered service in Fourth Cavalry as adjutant, August 8, 1862, at Detroit; promoted to major, September 1, 1862; resigned and honorably discharged on account of disability, August 23, 1863; died at Boise City, Idaho.

Irwin, William G., Antwerp; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged for disability July 18, 1863.

Ismon, Aaron F., Paw Paw; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Paw Paw; quartermaster sergeant; promoted to first sergeant; commissioned second lieutenant; resigned on account of disability, December 16, 1863; died December 21, 1863.

Jaquays, Oliver, Porter; enlisted July 29, 1862, at Porter; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 5, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Jenkins, George, Arlington; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Arlington; died at Ooltewah, Tennessee, February 28, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee, grave No. 10844.

Jenkins, Marcus D., Paw Paw; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Paw Paw; transferred to Invalid Corps, December 15, 1863; discharged June 6, 1865.

Jones Allen, Antwerp; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged for disability September 30, 1863.

Lane, Edward J., Arlington; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Arlington; discharged July 1, 1865; died at Lawrence.

Lanphear, Byron W., Lawrence; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Lawrence; taken prisoner near Nashville, Tennessee, November 2, 1862; paroled; killed in action at Latimer's Mills, Georgia, June 26, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Marietta, Georgia, grave No 2208, section C.

Lawton, George W., Antwerp; entered service at organization as second lieutenant, July 8, 1862, at Porter; commissioned first lieutenant and captain; wounded in action at Dallas, Georgia, May 24, 1864; brevet major United States Volunteers for gallant and meritorious conduct at Dallas, Georgia; discharged July 1, 1865; died at Lawton; buried in the Lawton cemetery.

Leathers, Charles L., Columbia; enlisted July 30, 1862, at Columbia; corporal; promoted to sergeant and to commissary sergeant; discharged July 1, 1865; present residence Kalamazoo.

Leonard, William, Decatur; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Decatur; died at Nashville, Tennessee, December 9, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Loveland, Henry J., Paw Paw; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Paw Paw; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 1, 1865; died at Paw Paw, July 9, 1908.

McKinney, Thomas J., Porter; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Por-



ter; commissary sergeant; wounded at Latimer's Mills, Georgia, June 20, 1864; promoted to quartermaster sergeant; discharged July 1, 1865.

McLain, John C., Porter; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Porter; wounded in action at Winchester, Tennessee, September 30, 1863; corporal; discharged July 1, 1865; present residence in South Dakota.

Melchor, Thaddeus W., Paw Paw; entered service as captain at Paw Paw, July 8, 1862; resigned on account of disability March 31, 1863; died at Paw Paw.

Merriman, Alfred M., Paw Paw; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Paw Paw; transferred to Invalid Corps, September 1, 1863; discharged as sergeant June 29, 1865.

Merriman, Henry, Paw Paw; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Paw Paw; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, November 22, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Stone River, Tennessee.

Moore, William, Columbia; enlisted July 23, 1862, at Columbia; corporal; promoted to sergeant; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, February 17, 1863.

Munson, Stephen B., Columbia; enlisted July 26, 1862, at Columbia; paroled prisoner January 11, 1863; discharged July 1, 1865.

Niles, Austin D.; enlisted August 5, 1864, at Kalamazoo; substitute for Edmund Hewitt; discharged July 1, 1865.

Niles, Gideon P., Columbia; enlisted July 23, 1862, at Columbia; discharged May 24, 1865.

Page, John F., Columbia; enlisted July 28, 1862, at Columbia; discharged July 1, 1865.

Palmerton, Reuben, Hamilton; enlisted August 1, 1862, at Hamilton; corporal; discharged July 1, 1865.

Pierce, George W., Lawrence; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Lawrence; saddler; discharged May 13, 1865.

Place, Howland, Lawrence; enlisted July 31, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability May 27, 1863.

Prince, John Jr., Antwerp; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Antwerp; transferred to Invalid Corps; discharged July 5, 1865.

Prince, Pomeroy, Geneva; enlisted August 11, 1862, at Geneva; discharged July 1, 1865.

Pritchard, Philo, Antwerp; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 1, 1865.

Pugsley, John S., Paw Paw; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Paw Paw; regimental quartermaster sergeant; promoted to first lieutenant and commissary, acting assistant brigade quartermaster; discharged July 1, 1865.

Rawson, Silas M., Decatur; enlisted August 5, 1862, at Decatur; veterinary surgeon; discharged July 1, 1865.

Rediker, George B., Porter; enlisted July 28, 1862, at Porter; wagoner; discharged July 1, 1865; deceased; buried at Porter.

Rickard, Charles E., Bangor; enlisted August 18, 1862, at Bangor; killed in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 18, 1863.

Riggs, Ranselaer, Porter; enlisted August 28, 1862; discharged for disability August 11, 1863; re-enlisted in same company August 18, 1864; discharged July 1, 1865.

Rockwell, Jerome, Columbia; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Columbia; discharged July 1, 1865.

Russ, Isaac P., Arlington; enlisted August 7, 1862; transferred to Invalid Corps.

Ryan, John, Lawrence; enlisted August 7, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged July 1, 1865; died at Lawrence, May 7, 1909.

Sherwood, Henry, Columbia; enlisted July 23, 1862, at Columbia; wounded in action at Latimer's Mills, Georgia, June 20, 1864; honorably discharged.

Smead, Thomas D., Antwerp; enlisted July 16, 1862, at Antwerp; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 1, 1865.

Smith, Charles H., Decatur; enlisted August 9, 1862, at Decatur; discharged July 1, 1865.

Smith, William J., Antwerp; enlisted August 8, 1862, at Porter; farrier; discharged June 3, 1865.

Stevens, Fitz E., Paw Paw; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Paw Paw; sergeant major; discharged July 1, 1865; present residence Paw Paw.

Warner, Oliver W., Paw Paw; drafted; mustered November 4, 1863; killed in action at Lovejoy Station, Georgia, August 20, 1864.

Wilcox, Reuben O., Antwerp; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 1, 1865.

Woolsey, William F., Hartford; enlisted July 21, 1862, at Hartford; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 13, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Worthey, George, Arlington; enlisted August 6, 1862, at Arlington; wounded in action at Latimer's Mills, Georgia, June 20, 1864; discharged July 1, 1865; died at Paw Paw, June 5, 1906.

Other Companies: Baty, John; drafted from Hartford; mustered October 14, 1863; assigned to Company A; discharged August 15, 1865.

Moon, Josiah B.; drafted from Decatur; mustered November 4, 1863; assigned to Company A; discharged August 15, 1865.

Moon, Rodolphus; drafted from Columbia; mustered November 4, 1863; assigned to Company A; died at Cartersville, Georgia, June 7, 1864.

Cobb, Dennis H., Columbia; enlisted in Company F, August 11, 1862, at Adrian; taken prisoner at Kingston Georgia, May 18,

1864; died in prison at Florence, South Carolina, November 1, 1864.

Cross, Ira F.; drafted from Paw Paw; mustered November 4, 1863; assigned to Company G; discharged December 27, 1864.

Ward, John W.; drafted from Antwerp; mustered November 4, 1863; assigned to Company G; in hospital at Edgefield, Tennessee, July, 1865.

Driskil, Noah, Porter; enlisted in Company I, August 11, 1862, at Dowagiac; discharged April 2, 1863.

Lewis, Francis F., Porter; enlisted in Company I, August 11, 1862, at Dowagiac; wounded in action at Lavergne, Tennessee, December 26, 1862; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 11, 1865.

Morton, Charles L., Porter; enlisted in Company I, August 11, 1862, at Dowagiac; discharged for disability February 27, 1863.

Orr, Hugh; enlisted in Company I, March 14, 1864, at Decatur; discharged July 26, 1865.

Armstrong, Worden; drafted from Antwerp; mustered November 4, 1863; assigned to Company E; died at Nashville, Tennessee, March 3, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Derby, John L., Bloomingdale; enlisted August 1, 1862, in Company L, at Allegan; died at Nashville, Tennessee, February 16, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Burdette, Abraham; drafted from Hamilton; assigned to Fourth Cavalry, mustered November 4, 1863; no further record.

Dyer, Andrew J.; drafted from Lawrence; assigned to Fourth Cavalry; mustered November 4, 1863; no further record.

Finley, Andrew M.; drafted from Geneva; assigned to Fourth Cavalry; mustered November 4, 1863; no further record.

Labadie, Joseph; drafted from Almena; assigned to Fourth Cavalry; mustered November 4, 1863; no further record.

Lawhorn, Henry; drafted from Porter; mustered November 4, 1863; assigned to Fourth Cavalry; no further record.

Nash, Albert H., Paw Paw; joined regiment October 10, 1862, as sergeant major; commissioned as second lieutenant; resigned on account of disability, February 17, 1863.

#### NINTH MICHIGAN CAVALRY

Rally, valiant soldiers, rally,  
'Tis the time for you and me,  
We will stand by one another,  
Round the standard of the free.

The Ninth Cavalry was organized at Coldwater in 1862 under the supervision of Colonel James I. David and was mustered into the United States service in May, 1863. The total enrolment at organization was 1,073 officers and enlisted men.

Many of the officers of this regiment had seen service in the field with other regiments and their experience in military duties and discipline was of great advantage and served to place the Ninth on a war basis much sooner than would have been possible under other circumstances. The regiment was splendidly equipped when it took the field, being armed with the Spencer carbine, a magazine gun that could be fired seven times without stopping to reload—the best cavalry weapon of that date.

#### CAPTURE OF MORGAN

The Ninth was also furnished with fine mounts when it left the state and the personnel of the different companies was excellent. Ten companies of the regiment left Coldwater in May for Cincinnati, Ohio, and its first camp in the field was at Covington, Kentucky. In June it was ordered to Mt. Sterling, Kentucky, in pursuit of a band of guerrillas and its first engagement with the enemy was at Triplett Bridge, where it routed Everett's guerrillas and wounded and captured a number of them. The Confederate General John Morgan was in Kentucky at the time the Ninth was sent in pursuit, but Morgan eluded his foes although the Ninth captured his chief of staff and a number of his men. The regiment returned to Danville, Kentucky, July 6, where all the cavalry present was placed under the command of Colonel W. T. Saunders of the Fifth Kentucky.

In the meantime the Confederate General Morgan had crossed the Ohio river into Indiana and made his celebrated raid through that state and Ohio, destroying property, burning bridges, looting villages, taking provisions for his men and capturing horses, spreading consternation along his march.

The regiment soon assembled at Cincinnati, Ohio, and reported to General Burnside whose headquarters were in the city. Reports were so conflicting as to the location of Morgan that the regiment was divided, companies A, B, F, L, C, and K eventually overtaking the enemy at Buffington Island, where a sharp engagement followed, resulting in a complete rout of Morgan's forces, capturing 500 prisoners, a large quantity of small arms and three pieces of artillery.

Companies C, D, E, H, I, and K left Cincinnati on the Little Miami Railroad, and arrived at Mingo Junction, Ohio, on the 25th and marched immediately to Steubenville. On the 26th Morgan was pressed into an engagement near Salineville, Ohio, by a charge of the detachment of the Ninth in which the Confederates were routed with a loss of 23 killed, about 50 wounded and 250 prisoners. General Morgan was driven from the field and in his flight

ran into the forces of General Shackleford, who was marching on the same road Morgan was retreating, and the Confederate General surrendered to General Shackleford. General Morgan and staff were taken to Salineville where they were placed in a coach and sent to Columbus, Ohio.

The Ninth took part in the expedition against Cumberland Gap and that stronghold surrendered to the Union forces, with 2,500 men and 13 pieces of artillery. Then followed the East Tennessee campaign which probably was unequalled for hardships during the war on account of the severity of the climate, the want of clothing and tents, and the scarcity of rations. The Ninth was constantly on duty and was in frequent contact with the enemy's cavalry, as the Confederate General Longstreet encamped his corps in the valleys of Tennessee during the winter. The hardships imposed upon the horses by constant marches and the want of forage finally dismounted most of the companies, the men being obliged to see their faithful horses die of hunger, while they themselves were often on the verge of starvation.

In the spring of 1864, the regiment, having lost most of its horses, returned to Nicholasville, Kentucky, to remount and secure new equipments. The first of June found the regiment supplied with fine mounts and well equipped. On the 12th the regiment confronted the Confederate General John Morgan (who had escaped from prison) once more, this time at Cynthiana, Kentucky. The Ninth attacked in a splendid charge, driving the enemy into the Licking river and capturing about 300 prisoners and a large supply of stores and small arms.

#### FIRST AND LAST

The Ninth joined General Sherman's army on the Atlanta campaign, and before the fall of Atlanta was a part of the force under General Kilpatrick in a raid south of Atlanta on the Montgomery railroad. The Ninth formed a part of the Cavalry Corps commanded by General Kilpatrick, and marched with Sherman from "Atlanta to the Sea," being engaged in frequent combats with General Wheeler and General Wade Hampton's Cavalry. At Waynesboro, Georgia, the Ninth made a brilliant charge upon the forces of General Wheeler, driving the enemy in confusion and capturing 100 prisoners. This charge was especially mentioned by General Kilpatrick in his dispatch to the war department. When the regiment arrived at Savannah, Georgia, it was selected by General Kilpatrick as his escort to march to St. Catherine's Sound on the Atlantic coast and open communication with the federal fleet. This gave the regiment the prestige of being the first regiment of Sherman's army to reach the coast.

The cavalry division started from Savannah, Georgia, on the Carolina campaign the 27th of January, 1865. It marched on the flanks in advance and in the rear of Sherman's army, whenever the enemy's cavalry might appear. The regiment met the enemy at many points as it moved through the states of South Carolina and North Carolina, and was at Chapel Hill, North Carolina, when the news of General Lee's surrender was received. In a skirmish with the Confederate General Johnston's forces just before the news of General Lee's surrender and the order came to "cease firing," it is asserted that the Ninth fired the last hostile shot of the war east of the Mississippi. The regiment was at Chapel Hill, North Carolina, when General Johnston surrendered to General Sherman.

The official records show that the Ninth Cavalry was engaged in sixty battles and skirmishes, the following being some of the principal ones: Cumberland Gap, Tennessee, September 9, 1863; Zollicoffer, Tennessee, September 23, 1863; Knoxville, Tennessee, December 5, 1863; Fair Garden, Tennessee, January 24, 1864; siege of Atlanta, August 1 to September 3, 1864; Stone Mountain, Georgia, September 13, 1864; Lovejoy Station, Georgia, November 16, 1864; Macon, Georgia, November 21, 1864; Cypress Swamp, Georgia, December 7, 1864; Averysboro, North Carolina, March 14 and 15, 1865; Raleigh, North Carolina, April 12, 1865.

The regiment was mustered out of service at Concord, North Carolina, and immediately started for Michigan, arriving at Jackson, July 30, 1865, where it was paid off and disbanded.

Total enrolment, 1,213; killed in action, 32; died of wounds, 8; died in Confederate prisons, 32; died of disease, 110; discharged for disability (wounds and disease), 59.

Van Buren County soldiers in the Ninth Cavalry were as follows.

Company E: Banks, Will H. S., Lawton; captain Company H. Twelfth Infantry, September 17, 1861; resigned February 20, 1862; re-entered service as second lieutenant Company E, Ninth Cavalry, at organization; promoted to first lieutenant and to captain; discharged July 21, 1865.

Bilby, George, Antwerp; enlisted January 12, 1863, at Antwerp; taken prisoner February 4, 1864; died at Andersonville, Georgia; buried in National cemetery at Andersonville.

Bliss, Merritt, Antwerp; enlisted January 2, 1863, at Antwerp; taken prisoner at Dandridge, Tennessee, January 16, 1864; died April 16, 1864; buried at Annapolis, Maryland.

Bradford, Calvin P., Porter; enlisted December 13, 1862, at Porter; discharged July 21, 1865.

Brott, Aaron, Antwerp; enlisted December 14, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 21, 1865.

Brown, Charles W., Almena; enlisted December 5, 1862, at Almena; commissary sergeant; discharged June 7, 1865.

Brown, William, Almena; enlisted November 28, 1862, at Almena; corporal; taken prisoner in March, 1865; paroled in June, 1865; discharged July 12, 1865.

Buchanan, William, Columbia; enlisted January 2, 1863, at Jackson; discharged March 14, 1863.

Clark, John, Almena; enlisted December 8, 1862, at Almena; died at Camp Nelson, Kentucky, June 2, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Camp Nelson, grave No. 1432.

Clark, Joseph, Antwerp; enlisted December 15, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 21, 1865.

Cook, Willis C., Lawton; enlisted in Company D, Thirteenth Infantry, November 18, 1861; discharged for disability November 3, 1862; enlisted in Company E, Ninth Cavalry, April 15, 1863, at Antwerp; farrier; discharged July 21, 1865.

Covey, Alphonso, Waverly; enlisted December 9, 1862, at Waverly; discharged February 27, 1863.

Earl, David, Pine Grove; enlisted December 19, 1862, at Pine Grove; taken prisoner at Wadesboro, South Carolina, March 4, 1865; paroled in June, 1865; discharged June 23, 1865.

Ellison, Joseph, Antwerp; enlisted December 18, 1862, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner in March, 1865; paroled; discharged August 5, 1865; deceased.

Finch, Alfred, Pine Grove; enlisted December 18, 1862, at Pine Grove; corporal; discharged July 21, 1865; died December 5, 1889.

Finch, Edward E., Pine Grove; enlisted December 18, 1862, at Pine Grove; taken prisoner at Atlanta, Georgia, August 28, 1864; paroled June 15, 1865; discharged July 1, 1865.

Goff, Dewitt C., Porter; enlisted January 10, 1863, at Porter; discharged July 21, 1865.

Hill, George B. A., Antwerp; enlisted December 27, 1862, at Antwerp; sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant and to first lieutenant; discharged July 21, 1865; died at Worcester, Massachusetts, August 8, 1896.

Hinchey, John J., Antwerp; entered service at organization of regiment as captain; discharged July 21, 1865.

Holden, Elmore, Antwerp; enlisted December 8, 1862, at Antwerp; died at Knoxville, Tennessee, March 1, 1864; buried at Knoxville.

Holden, Orrin, Antwerp; enlisted December 17, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 21, 1865; died July 2, 1903.

Holden, Samuel E., Antwerp; enlisted December 17, 1862, at

Antwerp; discharged July 21, 1865; deceased; buried at Lawton, Michigan.

Lewis, Frederick L., Paw Paw; enlisted December 11, 1862, at Paw Paw; veterinary surgeon; taken prisoner December 14, 1863; died at Andersonville, Georgia, June 12, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Andersonville, grave No. 1882.

Magoon, Edward; Lawton; enlisted April 7, 1863, at Battery L, First Light Artillery; transferred to Ninth Cavalry; discharged July 21, 1865.

McKay, Henry M., Porter; enlisted July 22, 1862, at Detroit; substitute for James V. Campbell; no further record.

McLain, Hamilton H., Porter; enlisted January 12, 1863, at Porter; discharged July 21, 1865.

Markillie, Jacob, Antwerp; enlisted December 5, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged February 4, 1864; died at Alma, Michigan.

Markillie, John G., Alma; enlisted December 5, 1862, at Alma; corporal; discharged July 21, 1865.

Marsh, James G., Antwerp; enlisted December 27, 1862, at Antwerp; corporal; discharged July 21, 1865; deceased; buried at Newburg, Michigan.

Morse, Manley M., Pine Grove; enlisted December 18, 1862, at Pine Grove; corporal; discharged June 12, 1865.

Niles, Thomas L., Waverly; enlisted December 5, 1862, at Waverly; corporal; discharged May 18, 1865.

Phelps, Edwin T., Pine Grove; enlisted December 20, 1862, at Pine Grove; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged August 5, 1865, from Veteran Reserve Corps.

Rider, Truman, Antwerp; enlisted December 9, 1862, at Antwerp; sergeant; taken prisoner at Dandridge, Tennessee, January 16, 1864; died while prisoner of war, at Richmond, Virginia, April 4, 1864; buried at Richmond.

Sheldon, Joseph F., Pine Grove; enlisted December 10, 1862, at Pine Grove; discharged July 21, 1865.

Simmons, Ellis D., Antwerp; enlisted December 8, 1862, at Lawton; first sergeant; discharged for disability June 9, 1865.

Smith, Daniel W., Keeler; enlisted February 10, 1863, at Keeler; discharged July 13, 1865.

Smith, Eugene E.; enlisted in Company D, Sixth Infantry, June 19, 1861; discharged for disability June 25, 1863; re-entered service in Company 3, Ninth Cavalry, at organization as first lieutenant; discharged for disability December 28, 1863.

Smith, Silas A., Paw Paw; enlisted March 6, 1863, at Paw Paw; first sergeant; discharged July 21, 1865; deceased; buried at Paw Paw.



Stevens, Thomas, Antwerp; enlisted December 9, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 21, 1865.

Tillou, John B., Antwerp; enlisted December 26, 1862, at Antwerp; died at Camp Nelson, Kentucky, August 10, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Camp Nelson, grave No. 1533.

Tuttle, George L., Paw Paw; enlisted January 10, 1863, at Paw Paw; sergeant; discharged May 18, 1865; present residence, Paw Paw.

Tuttle, Grant W., Paw Paw; enlisted December 19, 1862, at Paw Paw; quartermaster sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant; acting regimental quartermaster; resigned November 24, 1864; present residence, Kalamazoo.

Tyler, John B., Antwerp; enlisted January 2, 1863, at Antwerp; died at Camp Nelson, Kentucky, August 20, 1863.

Tyler, Kimball, Antwerp; enlisted January 2, 1863, at Antwerp; discharged November, 1863.

Veley, William, Pine Grove; enlisted December 17, 1862, at Pine Grove; discharged July 21, 1865.

Waldo, Uriah, Antwerp; enlisted December 26, 1862, at Antwerp; discharged July 21, 1865.

Williams, Daniel, Antwerp; enlisted January 12, 1863, at Antwerp; taken prisoner May 10, 1865; discharged June 20, 1865.

Other Companies: Blakely, Truman G.; enlisted May 6, 1864, in Company K, at Bangor; discharged July 21, 1865.

Linfear, George; enlisted May 6, 1864, in Company K, at Bangor; discharged July 21, 1865.

Quinn, Martin; enlisted May 6, 1864, in Company K, at Bangor; corporal; discharged July 21, 1865.

Sowers, Peter; enlisted May 12, 1864, in Company K, at Bangor; taken prisoner in March, 1865; discharged June 12, 1865.

White, Owen C.; enlisted May 8, 1864, in Company K, at Bangor; corporal; discharged June 8, 1865.

Baxter, Edward, Pine Grove; enlisted August 15, 1864, in Company C, at Kalamazoo; discharged May 3, 1865.

Root, Maurice T., Keeler; enlisted in Company L, January 1, 1863, at Keeler; sergeant; transferred to Invalid Corps; discharged August 30, 1865.

## CHAPTER XI

### OTHER COMMANDS

FIRST MICHIGAN ENGINEERS AND MECHANICS—FIRST REGIMENT  
MICHIGAN LIGHT ARTILLERY—VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN  
OTHER MICHIGAN REGIMENTS—BIRGE'S WESTERN SHARPSHOOTERS  
—COMPANY C, SEVENTIETH NEW YORK INFANTRY—OTHER COM-  
PANIES OR REGIMENTS.

Stand by the flag, all doubt and treason scorning;  
Believe with courage strong and faith sublime,  
That it will float until the eternal morning  
Pales in its glories, all the lights of time.

The organization of the Michigan Engineers and Mechanics was especially authorized by the war department. The authority to raise it, with the sanction of Governor Blair, was delegated to Colonel William P. Innes, a practical engineer of Grand Rapids.

The regiment rendezvoused at Marshall, was mustered into the service on the 29th of October, 1861, and left for the front on December 17th following: It was divided into four detachments and assigned to duty with the four divisions of General Buell's army.

The service rendered by this regiment was very important and valuable. Ten of the companies were with Sherman on his memorable march from Atlanta to the sea and were required to keep pace with the army, moving at the rate of some twenty miles per day, and at the same time tearing up miles of railroad track, twisting the rails, burning bridges in the rear of the army, repairing and making roads in advance, laying pontoons and building bridges across the streams.

After the surrender of Generals Lee and Johnston, the regiment proceeded to Washington where it participated in the Grand Review after which it was sent to Nashville where, on the 22nd day of September, 1865, it was mustered out of service and proceeded to Jackson, Michigan, where it was paid off and disbanded, October 1, 1865.

During its four years of service the regiment was engaged at Mill Springs, Kentucky; the siege of Corinth, Mississippi; Perryville, Kentucky; La Vergne, and Chattanooga, Tennessee; sieges

of Atlanta and Savannah, Georgia, and Averysboro, and Bentonville, North Carolina.

Total enrolment, 2,920; killed in action, 2; died of wounds, 4; died in Confederate prisons, 2; died of disease, 280; discharged for disability (wounds and disease), 270.

Following is a list of the names of the Van Buren County men who served in the Engineers and Mechanics corps.

Company A: Coons, George H., Columbia; enlisted December 29, 1863, at Columbia; died at Bridgeport, Alabama, June 22, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee, grave No. 10974.

Coons, John T., Columbia; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Columbia; died at Adairsville, Georgia, August 24, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Atlanta, Georgia.

Grow, Benjamin J., Columbia; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Columbia; died at Bridgeport, Alabama, June 23, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee.

Keeling, Thomas; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Columbia; discharged September 22, 1865.

Peterson, Harvey G.; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Columbia; discharged September 22, 1865.

Silkworth, Cyrus, Columbia; enlisted December 29, 1862, at Columbia; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged September 22, 1865.

Smith, William H., Columbia; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Columbia; died at Cartersville, Georgia, July 18, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Marietta, Georgia, grave No. 1726.

Sparks, Tolbert W., Columbia; enlisted December 28, 1863, at Columbia; discharged June 30, 1865.

Whiting, Price; enlisted in December, 1863, at Columbia; discharged January 1, 1865.

Whitney, Asaph; enlisted December 23, 1863, at Columbia; discharged for disability, April 9, 1864.

Company G: Allen, Forbes, Waverly; enlisted August 25, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 6, 1865.

Allen, Reuben H.; enlisted November 26, 1861, at Waverly; corporal; discharged October 31, 1864.

Austin, Alexander; enlisted October 30, 1862, at Waverly; discharged September 22, 1865.

Austin, Darius F., Waverly; enlisted October 10, 1861, at Waverly; wounded in action at La Vergne, Tennessee, January 1, 1863; corporal; discharged for disability, July 23, 1863.

Brewer, Clark K.; enlisted September 28, 1861, at Kalamazoo; artificer; discharged October 31, 1864.

Brown, Barnabas, Waverly; enlisted December 16, 1861, at

Marshall; died at Nashville, Tennessee, October 30, 1862; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Brown, Daniel D., Waverly; enlisted October 17, 1861, at Waverly; discharged October 31, 1864.

Brown, James C.; enlisted October 10, 1861, at Waverly; artificer; discharged for disability, August 18, 1862.

Bush, Eli; enlisted September 6, 1861, at Waverly; artificer; discharged for disability, April 3, 1862.

Brown, Cyrenus, Waverly; enlisted October 9, 1861, at Waverly; died at Louisville, Kentucky, March 13, 1862.

Carr, William H., Waverly; enlisted November 1, 1862, at Waverly; artificer; discharged September 22, 1865.

Colburn, Eliphalet V., Waverly; enlisted August 15, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 6, 1865.

Dyer, Sylvester, Almena; enlisted October 18, 1861, at Kalamazoo; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged October 31, 1864.

Fosmire, Ezra H.; enlisted September 20, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged October 31, 1864.

Gaines, Franklin J., Paw Paw; enlisted December 10, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 22, 1865.

Gault, David H.; Waverly; enlisted September 6, 1861, at Kalamazoo; sergeant; discharged for disability July 12, 1863.

Gault, Truman H., Bloomingdale; enlisted December 15, 1863, at Kalamazoo; died at Ringgold, Georgia, August 5, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee, grave No. 10369.

Gobel, Eliel P.; enlisted September 20, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 16, 1862.

Haydon, Edmond N., Almena; enlisted September 12, 1861, at Kalamazoo; corporal; died at Louisville, Kentucky, March 22, 1864.

Hayes, Alva; enlisted September 14, 1861, at Lawton; reported sick in hospital at Nashville, Tennessee, June 11, 1863; no further record.

Jennings, Henry H., Antwerp; enlisted August 25, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 6, 1865; died at Paw Paw.

Libbe, Alonzo; enlisted October 19, 1861, at Marshall; discharged July 24, 1862; died March 9, 1895; buried at Paw Paw.

Murch, Edwin A.; enlisted September 21, 1861, at Waverly; discharged October 31, 1864.

Nash, Newland; enlisted September 11, 1861, at Kalamazoo; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged October 31, 1864.

Palmer, John M., Waverly; enlisted September 6, 1861, at Waverly; artificer; discharged October 31, 1864.

Reed, William, Almena; enlisted September 6, 1861, at Kalama-

zoo; died at Murfreesboro, Tennessee, April 23, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Stone River, Tennessee.

Richardson, John; enlisted October 31, 1861, at Alma; artificer; discharged October 31, 1864.

Rogers, Lucius A., Paw Paw; enlisted January 4, 1864, at Kalamazoo; artificer; discharged September 22, 1865.

Root, James H.; enlisted September 21, 1861, at Waverly; discharged October 31, 1864.

Root, Stephen V.; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Waverly; artificer; discharged for disability June 23, 1862.

Smith, David H., Waverly; enlisted August 25, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 6, 1865.

Stanton, Bradley W.; enlisted September 10, 1861, at Kalamazoo; sergeant; discharged October 31, 1864; deceased; buried at Paw Paw.

Stephens, Eliphay; enlisted October 10, 1861, at Lawton; no further record.

Stephens, Uriah; enlisted September 14, 1861, at Lawton; died at Nashville, Tennessee; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Stevens, Jesse; enlisted August 25, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 6, 1865.

Van Tassell, Daniel S., Waverly; enlisted October 7, 1861, at Waverly; artificer; corporal; discharged September 22, 1865.

Van Tassell, David F., Waverly; enlisted January 4, 1864, at Columbia; died February 16, 1864.

Vosburg, John M., Alma; enlisted October 19, 1861, at Marshall; died at Nashville, Tennessee, October 21, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Wescott, Martin A.; enlisted September 17, 1861, at Kalamazoo; artificer; discharged October 11, 1864; re-entered service in Company G, Thirteenth Infantry; final discharge May 15, 1865.

Whipple, John A., Pine Grove; enlisted September 12, 1861, at Kalamazoo; died in Tennessee, February 8, 1864.

Other Companies: Scott, George, Decatur; enlisted in Company D, August 27, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 6, 1865.

Palmer, Hiram, Paw Paw; enlisted in Company H, August 22, 1864, at Kalamazoo; artificer; discharged June 6, 1865.

Chappell, Giles R., Decatur; enlisted in Company M, August 29, 1863, at Bedford; corporal; died at Normandy, Tennessee, April 12, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Nashville, Tennessee.

## FIRST MICHIGAN SHARPSHOOTERS

The First Michigan Sharpshooters under command of Colonel C. V. DeLand of Jackson, took the field in July, 1863. Van Buren county was not, numerically, largely represented in this organization, following being a list of her soldiers.

Company D: Berridge, John, Bangor; enlisted December 29, 1862, at South Haven; sergeant; wounded in action June 15, 1864; promoted to sergeant major, to first lieutenant and to captain; discharged July 28, 1865.

Bonfoey, Charles R., Antwerp; enlisted January 3, 1863, at Antwerp; taken prisoner at Petersburg, Virginia, July 30, 1864; returned to company April 29, 1865; discharged June 29, 1865; deceased; buried at Alma, Michigan.

Briggs, Charles G., Porter; enlisted November 20, 1862, at Porter; discharged August 11, 1865.

Earl, Alvin P., Geneva; enlisted January 12, 1863, at Geneva; discharged July 28, 1865.

Meachum, David R., Geneva; enlisted February 7, 1863, at Geneva; discharged June 27, 1865.

Noyes, Kirk W., South Haven; enlisted December 27, 1862, at South Haven; wounded in action at Spottsylvania, Virginia, May 31, 1863; promoted to first lieutenant, Company K; again wounded in action and taken prisoner at Peebles Farm, Virginia, September 30, 1864; paroled February 22, 1865; promoted to captain, Company B; discharged July 28, 1865; present residence South Haven, Michigan.

Reynolds, John, Antwerp; enlisted December 29, 1862, at Antwerp; absent (sick) September, 1864; no further record.

Storey, Nelson A., Alma; enlisted February 11, 1863; at Alma; missing in action at Petersburg, Virginia, June 17, 1864; died on board transport at Hilton Head, South Carolina, November 26, 1864.

Taylor, Augustus E., Antwerp; enlisted December 8, 1862, at Grand Haven; discharged July 8, 1865.

Waite, Levi H., Antwerp; enlisted December 29, 1862, at Antwerp; killed in action at Petersburg, Virginia, June 17, 1864.

Watson, Daniel W., Geneva; enlisted December 29, 1862, at Geneva; corporal; discharged July 28, 1865.

Willey, George M., Mattawan; enlisted March 14, 1863; sergeant; discharged July 7, 1865.

Other Companies: Guiley, Henry, Paw Paw; enlisted in Company A, July 9, 1863, at Paw Paw; died at Andersonville, Georgia, September 1, 1864.

Tozer, Webster E., Antwerp; enlisted in Company B, August

23, 1863; died at Washington, D. C., June 13, 1864, of wounds received in action at Spottsylvania, Virginia, May 12, 1864.

Tuthill, Francis H. Lawton; enlisted September 6, 1861, at Jackson; discharged for disability October 24, 1862; reenlisted in Company E, same regiment, October 20, 1864; discharged July 28, 1865.

Drake, Francis W., Columbia; enlisted in Company E, February 4, 1863, at Jackson; assigned to Company G, discharged July 5, 1865.

#### FIRST REGIMENT MICHIGAN LIGHT ARTILLERY

Then shook the hills with thunder riven,  
Then rushed the steeds to battle driven,  
And louder than the bolts of heaven,  
Far flashed the red artillery.

The First Michigan Light Artillery consisted of twelve batteries, organized at different dates and assigned to duty in different localities, some being on duty with the Western armies and others with the armies of the east.

Regiments of infantry and cavalry ordinarily are kept together as a unit and serve as a single organization, but such is not usually the case with an artillery regiment, each battery being attached to some distinct army, post or regiment, and it is seldom, if ever, that the regiment is all assembled together at one place.

The several batteries of this regiment were engaged in many different battles and skirmishes in all parts of the Southern Confederacy and some of the gunners developed a degree of marksmanship that would be creditable, even in these days, of such greatly improved guns and gunnery. The writer once was an eye witness to an example of this on the field of battle in the state of Mississippi. A running cavalry fight between the Federal and Confederate cavalry forces had been in progress for several days, the Federals gradually forcing their opponents to retreat southward, although their progress was stubbornly contested. Coming to a valley something like a half mile wide, as the Union soldiers were descending the northern slope, the Confederates suddenly and most unexpectedly uncovered a field gun and opened up with a rapid and vigorous fire of grape and canister. Battery C, of the First Light Artillery, was with the Union cavalry, but had not been called into action. However, one of its guns was speedily unlimbered and gunner Chandler Hamlin, a Van Buren county soldier, told to send a solid shot across the valley, which he speedily did, his first shot striking the enemy's gun full in its muzzle and putting it entirely out of commission, resulting in a considerable degree of demoralization in the ranks of the retreating foe. And this was but

a fair example of the skill with which the guns of this regiment were handled.

Total enrolment of the regiment, 3,090; killed in action, 29; died of wounds, 13; died in prison, 4; died of disease, 207; discharged for disability, 390.

Van Buren county was represented in the First Light Artillery as follows.

Battery A: Carr, Jacob, Waverly; enlisted February 12, 1863, at Hartford (substitute for Huston Taylor, drafted from Hartford); discharged July 28, 1865; present residence, Paw Paw.

Garrison, Daniel S., Hartford; enlisted February 12, 1863, at Hartford (substitute for Clark Sampson, drafted from Hartford); wounded in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, in September, 1863; discharged for disability July 22, 1864.

Hill, Micajah, Porter; enlisted February 27, 1863 (substitute for Daniel Shein, drafted from Prairieville); killed in action at Chickamauga, Georgia, September 10, 1863.

Hyde, Franklin W.; enlisted February 25, 1863, at Hartford; discharged July 28, 1865.

Lemon, John; enlisted September 6, 1864, at Hamilton; discharged July 28, 1865.

Lemon, William; enlisted September 6, 1864, at Hamilton; discharged July 28, 1865.

Munger, Ira A., Paw Paw; enlisted February 14, 1863, at Hamilton; (substitute for George W. Nesbitt, drafted from Hamilton); transferred to Invalid Corps, April 10, 1864.

Battery B: Austin, George D.; enlisted January 5, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 14, 1865.

Beach, James, Antwerp; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability, June 26, 1862.

Brown, Roswell W., Antwerp; enlisted October 15, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; taken prisoner at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; confined at Macon, Georgia; promoted to quartermaster sergeant; discharged June 14, 1865.

Charles, William S., Bangor; enlisted October, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal, promoted to sergeant and to second lieutenant; taken prisoner at Shiloh, Tennessee, confined at Macon, Georgia; discharged June 14, 1865; present residence, Bangor.

Deremo, Earl, Paw Paw; enlisted August 26, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged June 14, 1865.

Freeman, Albert H., Paw Paw; enlisted January, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged June 14, 1865.

Freeman, Brad. G.; enlisted at Paw Paw, January 9, 1864; discharged June 14, 1865.



Holmes, Wesley, Antwerp; enlisted October 23, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged June 14, 1865.

Mills, Lucius W., Antwerp; enlisted October 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability October 25, 1862.

Plumb, Nelson, Almena; enlisted October 25, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; taken prisoner at Shiloh; confined at Macon, Georgia; discharged June 14, 1865.

Plumb, Winfield S.; enlisted December 21, at Paw Paw; discharged June 14, 1865.

Shepard, Elijah L., Paw Paw; enlisted October 13, 1861, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner at Shiloh, Tennessee; confined at Macon, Georgia, and other prisons for six months; corporal; discharged June 14, 1865.

Teed, Lowell C., Antwerp; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; in prison at Memphis, Tennessee, Mobile and Tuscaloosa, Alabama, Atlanta, Georgia, and Chattanooga, Tennessee; released May 30, 1862; promoted to second lieutenant and to first lieutenant; discharged June 14, 1865.

Thayer, Ransom O., Antwerp; enlisted October 8, 1861, at Paw Paw; taken prisoner at Shiloh, Tennessee, April 6, 1862; discharged for disability January 4, 1863; present residence Paw Paw.

Tillou, Charles H., Antwerp; enlisted October 12, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; discharged December 24, 1864.

Battery C: Griffin, James E., Paw Paw; enlisted October 7, 1861, at Grand Rapids; farrier; discharged April 20, 1862.

Hamilton, Chandler, Arlington; enlisted September 3, 1861; corporal; discharged for disability, February 4, 1864.

Percival, George W., Paw Paw; enlisted October 7, 1861, at Grand Rapids; discharged June 22, 1865.

Percival, Stephen, Decatur; enlisted November 25, 1861, at Grand Rapids; discharged June 22, 1865.

Ripley, Sterne L., enlisted October 7, 1861, at Grand Rapids; died at St. Louis, Missouri, October 10, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Benton Barracks, Missouri, grave No. 2827.

Battery F: Barker, John P., Porter; enlisted August 27, 1862, at Coldwater; corporal; discharged June 9, 1865.

Higbee, Charles O.; enlisted December 30, 1861, at Coldwater; discharged for disability February 20, 1863.

Battery G: Dunham, Caspar; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Bloomingdale; discharged August 6, 1865.

Killefer, William, Bloomingdale; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Kalamazoo; substitute for James C. Clement; discharged August 6, 1865; present residence, Paw Paw.

Battery H: Kinney, Elijah M., Porter; enlisted August 15, 1864, at Porter; discharged July 2, 1865; died November 21, 1889.

Sherman, Lewis; enlisted November 28, 1861, at Decatur; discharged for disability, June 2, 1862.

Battery I: Carr, Moses, enlisted December 24, 1863, at Paw Paw; died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, May 19, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, grave No. 1377.

Cash, Stephen, Lawrence; enlisted August 1, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged July 14, 1865; died at Lawrence.

Clay, William H., Lawrence; enlisted August 24, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability January 24, 1863; died at Lawrence.

Delong, Henry; enlisted August 24, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability January 30, 1863; died April 14, 1896; buried at Arlington, Michigan.

Delong, John, Arlington; enlisted September 15, 1862, at Arlington; died at Detroit, Michigan, December 14, 1862; buried at Detroit.

Hurd, Eben C., Lawrence; enlisted August 24, 1862, at Lawrence; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged July 14, 1865.

Rathbun, James L., Lawrence; enlisted August 24, 1862, at Lawrence; died at Annapolis, Maryland, August 17, 1863.

Skelton, Joseph, Lawrence; enlisted August 24, 1862, at Lawrence; corporal; promoted to sergeant; died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, July 19, 1864, of wounds received in action July 13, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, grave No. 1760.

Battery M: Hare, William; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Bloomingdale; discharged August 1, 1865.

High, Charles W., enlisted July 20, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged on account of being a minor.

#### VAN BUREN COUNTY SOLDIERS IN OTHER MICHIGAN REGIMENTS

Onward, then, our stainless banner.

Let it kiss the stripe and star,

Till in weal and woe united.

They forever wedded are.

We will plant them by the river.

By the gulf, and by the strand.

Till they float, to float forever,

O'er a free united land.

First Michigan Infantry: Abbott, Howard; enlisted in Company H, October 3, 1861, at Marshall; killed in action at Fredericksburg, Virginia, December 13, 1862.

Buss, William; drafted from Bangor. June 10, 1864; assigned to Company D; died at Jeffersonville, Indiana. July 27, 1864.

Gravrott, Abraham P.; drafted from Geneva; mustered June 10, 1864; assigned to Company B; corporal; discharged June 9, 1865.

Redner, Charles E., Columbia; enlisted in Company K, September 14, 1861, at Ann Arbor; musician; discharged for disability, March 10, 1863.

Strong, John J.; enlisted in Company K, October 3, 1861, at Marshall; killed in action at Gaines' Mill, Virginia, June 27, 1862.

Swartout, Louis; drafted from Covert; mustered June 22, 1864; assigned to Company D; discharged for disability June 13, 1865, by reason of wounds received in action at Fort Steadman, Virginia, March 5, 1865.

Wilson, Isaac W.; drafted from Geneva; mustered June 10, 1864; discharged July 9, 1865.

Second Michigan Infantry: Colvin, Stephen G.; enlisted in Company I, April 22, 1861, at Kalamazoo; killed in action at the Wilderness, Virginia, May 6, 1864.

Moody, Oscar L.; enlisted in Company I, April 22, 1861, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 21, 1864.

Snell, Theodore W.; enlisted in Company K, May 25, 1861, at Kalamazoo; taken prisoner at Petersburg, Virginia, October 27, 1864; died of starvation, while a prisoner of war, in December, 1864.

Third Michigan Infantry: Munson, David A., Antwerp; enlisted in Company D, August 28, 1862, at Lawton; discharged for disability August 8, 1863.

Fifth Michigan Infantry—Company A: Bachelder, Carlos C.; enlisted August 10, 1861, at Fort Wayne; sick in Michigan in May, 1862; no further record.

Burger, James; enlisted August 10, 1861, at Fort Wayne; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862; absent (sick) July, 1862; no further record.

Everetts, Russell; enlisted August 10, 1861, at Fort Wayne; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862; discharged for disability September 23, 1862.

Gallagher, Peter W.; enlisted August 16, 1861, at Fort Wayne; taken prisoner at Spottsylvania Court House, Virginia, May 12, 1864; no further record.

Haven, Herman R.; enlisted August 16, 1861, at Fort Wayne; wounded in action May 16, 1864; discharged July 5, 1865.

Nesbitt, William; enlisted June 19, 1861, at Fort Wayne; corporal; discharged August 28, 1864.

Rockwell, James D.; enlisted August 14, 1861, at Fort Wayne; discharged August 27, 1864.

Sherman, James; enlisted August 9, 1861; died at Camp Michigan, Virginia, February 19, 1862; buried at Alexandria, Virginia.

Spencer, Myron T.; enlisted August 10, 1861, at Fort Wayne; discharged for disability September 14, 1862.

Vandecar, Henry; enlisted August 5, 1861, at Fort Wayne; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862; in general hospital, September, 1862.

Vought, Frank M.; enlisted August 18, 1861, at Fort Wayne; corporal; discharged October 21, 1864.

Seventh Michigan Infantry: Daniels, Julius W.; enlisted February 21, 1863, at Bloomingdale; wounded in action at Ream's Station, Virginia, August 25, 1864; discharged July 5, 1864.

Eighth Michigan Infantry: Morrison, John H., Decatur; enlisted February 24, 1863; unassigned; substitute for Seneca H. Abbott, drafted; no further record.

Mouser, John W., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company C, August 30, 1862, at Flint; discharged for disability, March 14, 1863.

Munson, John M., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company A, October 3, 1862, at Paw Paw; transferred to Invalid Corps; discharged August 11, 1865.

O'Brien, John; enlisted in Company G, December 14, 1864, at Kalamazoo; substitute for Andrew G. Coombs; drafted; discharged July 30, 1865.

Ninth Michigan Infantry: Clark, James W.; enlisted in Company I, August 15, 1861; discharged August 6, 1862.

Lee, Reuben, Covert; drafted from Covert; mustered September 24, 1864; discharged for disability March 14, 1865.

Place, James N., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company D, August 18, 1864; substitute for Peter Smith; discharged June 20, 1865.

St. Clair, James; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; assigned to Company I; died at Chattanooga, Tennessee, October 26, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, grave No. 1958.

Saxton, Hiram G., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company C, April 27, 1861, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862, and at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 2, 1863; discharged April 27, 1864; reentered service September 30, 1864, in Company H; substitute for Edwin M. Eaton, drafted; discharged June 20, 1865.

Swift, Le Grand E., Decatur; enlisted in Company B, August 20, 1861, at Niles; corporal; died at Nashville, Tennessee, January 9, 1863.

Tuthill, Francis H., Lawton; enlisted in Company C, September 6, 1861, at Jackson; discharged for disability October 24, 1862.

Tenth Michigan Infantry: Arms, Christopher (substitute for John Campbell, Jr.), Alma; mustered March 22, 1865; unassigned; discharged May 15, 1865.

Findley, Andrew, South Haven; enlisted in Company H, January, 1864, at South Haven; discharged June 19, 1864.

Panard, Frederick; drafted from Arlington; mustered October 22, 1864; assigned to Company E, January 1, 1863.

Parsons, Johnson, Decatur; substitute for Peter Brinder, drafted; mustered February 6, 1862; corporal; promoted to hospital steward; discharged July 19, 1865.

Reynolds, Ansel E.; drafted from Hartford; mustered March 21, 1865; unassigned; discharged May 23, 1865.

Trowbridge, Silas M., Geneva; drafted; mustered March 21, 1865; unassigned; discharged May 15, 1865; present residence, South Haven.

Van Scoy, George W.; substitute for George Drake, Hartford; enlisted April 8, 1865; unassigned; discharged May 15, 1865.

Young, William, Geneva; drafted; mustered March 21, 1865; unassigned; discharged May 15, 1865.

Eleventh Michigan Infantry: Bronson, Elisha C., South Haven; enlisted in Company G, July 8, 1861, at Flowerfield; died at Bardstown, Kentucky, January 30, 1862.

Brown, Loren W.; enlisted in Company G, July 8, 1861, at Flowerfield; discharged for disability January 24, 1863.

Clark, John; enlisted in Company C, January 17, 1865, at Detroit; discharged September 16, 1865.

Clement, Allen E.; enlisted in Company F, March 14, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 17, 1865.

Crandall, Charles N.; enlisted in Company F, March 6, 1865, at Hartford; discharged September 16, 1865; died April 14, 1886; buried at Hartford.

Crandall, Edwin R.; enlisted in Company F, March 6, 1865, at Hartford; discharged August 29, 1865.

Freeman, A. I.; enlisted in Company G, July 14, 1861, at Waverly; discharged September 30, 1864.

Horning, Jacob; enlisted in Company G, February 20, 1865, at Jackson; discharged September 17, 1865.

Rice, Charles H.; Lawrence; enlisted in Company D, January 23, 1865, at Lawrence; discharged September 16, 1865.

Webb, James P.; enlisted March 8, 1865, at Pine Grove; mustered March 15, 1865; unassigned; no further record.

Terrill, George T.; enlisted in Company K, February 20, 1865, at Geneva; discharged September 16, 1865; died June 2, 1895; buried at Geneva.

Wright, Alfred G.; enlisted in Company E, August 24, 1861, at Three Rivers; discharged September 30, 1864.

Fourteenth Michigan Infantry: Austin, Harvey H., Breedsville; enlisted in Company B, November 25, 1861, at Breedsville; cor-

poral; promoted to sergeant; wounded in action March 16, 1865; discharged July 20, 1865.

Barnes, Merrill W.; drafted from Arlington; mustered September 24, 1864; assigned to Company D; discharged July 18, 1865; deceased; buried at Arlington.

Freeman, Asa, Waverly; enlisted in Company B, February 1, 1862, at Waverly; died August 6, 1862; buried at Evansville, Indiana.

Goodale, Hiram M.; enlisted in Company B, January 4, 1862, at Cheshire; discharged for disability April 16, 1862.

Jonkerman, Johannes; substitute for James Ellsworth, drafted from Arlington; mustered October 3, 1864; assigned to Company A; discharged May 31, 1865.

Stewart, James A.; enlisted in Company B, January 5, 1862, at Columbia; corporal; wounded in action March 16, 1865; discharged July 16, 1865.

Fifteenth Michigan Infantry: Adams, John, Porter; drafted; mustered October 22, 1864; assigned to Company D; discharged August 13, 1865.

Blass, Jesse C.; substitute for James Hogmire, drafted from Arlington; mustered October 12, 1864; discharged August 13, 1865.

Britten, Joseph N.; drafted from Geneva; mustered April 3, 1865; discharged August 13, 1865.

Chatfield, Darius; drafted from Hartford; mustered September 24, 1864; assigned to Company G; discharged May 30, 1865.

Chuguimer, Peter; drafted from Geneva; mustered September 24, 1864; assigned to Company D; discharged May 30, 1865.

Coleman, John; enlisted in Company A, May 26, 1864, at Hamilton; discharged August 13, 1865.

Cook, William, Bangor; drafted; mustered March 21, 1865; discharged July 29, 1865.

Disbrow, Lodwick; drafted from Bangor; mustered March 21, 1865; assigned to Company G; discharged May 21, 1865.

Eaton, Moses E. F.; drafted from Bangor; mustered March 21, 1865; assigned to Company G; discharged August 15, 1865.

Fitzsimmons, Henry; enlisted in Company A, May 23, 1864, at Hamilton; discharged August 13, 1865.

Fleming, James; drafted from Lawrence; mustered March 21, 1865; discharged August 16, 1865.

Goetz, Joseph; substitute for Eli Ruggles, drafted from Hartford; mustered November 2, 1864; discharged September 11, 1865.

Gruber, Peter; drafted from Arlington; mustered October 22, 1864; assigned to Company A; no further record.

Hancock, George; drafted from Porter; mustered October 26, 1864; assigned to Company E; discharged August 13, 1865.

Ingersoll, Daniel S.: drafted from Bangor; mustered March 21, 1865; assigned to Company G; discharged August 11, 1865.

Kingsbury, Lemuel: substitute for Lafayette Meachum, drafted; mustered April 1, 1865; discharged June 20, 1865.

Kochey, Stephen; drafted from Hartford; mustered September 26, 1864; assigned to Company E; discharged May 30, 1865.

Lores, Eli; substitute for Hiram Hale, drafted from South Haven; mustered December 1, 1864; assigned to Company F; no further record.

McGowan, George; drafted from Hartford; mustered March 21, 1865; assigned to Company F; discharged August 13, 1865; died October 17, 1895.

May, John S.: substitute for William H. H. Olds, drafted from Hartford; mustered October 18, 1864; assigned to Company I; died at Baltimore, Maryland, June 23, 1865; buried in London Park National cemetery, Baltimore.

Merrill, Portius: drafted from Paw Paw; mustered March 21, 1865; no further record.

Merriman, Burse: drafted from Bangor; mustered March 21, 1865; assigned to Company G; discharged August 13, 1865; present residence Bangor.

Russell, Carlton: drafted from Paw Paw; mustered March 21, 1865; no further record.

Snyder, Henry; substitute for Edwin DeLong, drafted from Arlington; mustered March 28, 1865; discharged August 13, 1865.

Webb, Robert: substitute for David Massey, drafted from Arlington; mustered October 13, 1864; no further record.

Whipple, Thomas J.: drafted from Arlington; mustered October 22, 1864; assigned to Company C; discharged August 13, 1865.

Sixteenth Michigan Infantry: Brown, George W., Pine Grove; enlisted in Company K, February 26, 1863, at Otsego; substitute for Nier Nies, drafted; discharged November 21, 1863.

Carr, James; enlisted in Company I, February 9, 1864, at Bangor; corporal; discharged July 8, 1865.

Cole Levi; enlisted in Company G, March 23, 1865, at Pine Grove; substitute for Charles Goodwin, drafted from Pine Grove; discharged July 8, 1865.

Cole, Nelson H.; enlisted in Company G, March 23, 1865, at Pine Grove; substitute for Chauncey Wise, drafted from Pine Grove; discharged July 8, 1865.

Kennicot, Henry S., Keeler; enlisted in Company I, March 20, 1862, at Keeler; killed in action at Manassas, Virginia, August 30, 1862.

Niles, Jerome R.; enlisted in Company I, March 15, 1865, at Kalamazoo (substitute for Abner Lewis); discharged July 8, 1865.

Smith, William; enlisted in Company H, February 21, 1865, at Paw Paw; substitute for Dela M. Lewis, drafted; discharged July 8, 1865.

Sirrine, Peter, Geneva; enlisted in Company D, Lancers, November 4, 1861; transferred to Company I, Sixteenth Infantry; discharged for disability June 20, 1862.

Van Scoy, William E. P.; enlisted in Company G, March 28, 1865, at Arlington, substitute for Miles Monroe, drafted from Arlington; discharged July 8, 1865.

White, Charles; enlisted January 4, 1865, at Arlington; substitute for Philip Nicholas, drafted from Arlington; no further record.

Dyggert's Sharpshooters, attached to the Sixteenth Michigan: Beiber, George W.; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Detroit; corporal; discharged October 15, 1864.

Botsford, Robert G.; enlisted March 18, 1862, at Detroit; discharged October 22, 1862.

De Bolt, Henry S.; enlisted March 18, 1862, at Detroit; transferred to Invalid Corps, November 16, 1863.

Dick, Frank J.; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Detroit; sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant; discharged July 8, 1865.

Farmer, Edwin R.; enlisted October 14, 1861, at Detroit; sergeant; discharged October 28, 1862.

Long, James B.; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Detroit; discharged October 15, 1864.

Minnis, Frederick E., Decatur; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Detroit; corporal; wounded in action May 6, 1864; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; discharged July 24, 1865.

Vought, John C., Decatur; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Detroit; died at Washington, D. C., March 2, 1863.

Wenner, Michael; enlisted March 18, 1862; brigade saddler and corporal; discharged July 8, 1865.

Twenty-first Michigan Infantry: Dedrick, Philip; enlisted September 3, 1864, at Kalamazoo; unassigned; discharged for disability November 13, 1864.

Hilliard, George W., Lawrence; enlisted in Company B, July 25, 1862, at Grand Rapids; corporal; discharged June 8, 1865.

Shepard, Daniel, Paw Paw; enlisted September 5, 1864, in Company B, at Paw Paw; died January 2, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Chattanooga, Tennessee, grave No. 1563.

Thirtieth Michigan Infantry: Gregory, Guy H.; enlisted December 17, 1864, in Company B, at Waverly; discharged June 30, 1865.

Veder, Louis C.; enlisted December 23, 1864, in Company H, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 23, 1865.



Michigan Provost Guard: Barnard, John, Lawrence; enlisted December 9, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged May 9, 1865.

Burt, Elijah G., Paw Paw; enlisted December 9, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Chapin, Hiram A., Paw Paw; enlisted at Paw Paw, December 10, 1862; discharged May 9, 1865; present residence, Paw Paw.

Culver, Asahel B., Paw Paw; enlisted December 9, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Dunning, George A., Paw Paw; enlisted at Paw Paw, October 26, 1863; discharged May 9, 1865.

Dunning, Lester D., Paw Paw; enlisted October 26, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Francis, Simeon L., Paw Paw; enlisted December 4, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged May 8, 1865.

Frazer, Jacob S., Paw Paw; enlisted December 17, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Glidden, Orson J., Paw Paw; enlisted December 10, 1862, at Paw Paw; furloughed.

Hayes, Ira, Paw Paw; enlisted December 15, 1862, at Paw Paw; detailed in Army of the West.

Hennesey, John, Paw Paw; enlisted December 2, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Hurlbut, Spencer N., Paw Paw; enlisted January 4, 1863, at Flint; originally in service in Company C, Third Michigan Cavalry, detailed at Annapolis, Maryland.

Johnson, Thomas, Columbia; enlisted February 21, 1863, at Columbia; discharged May 9, 1865.

McCollum, Charles, Lawrence; enlisted October 24, 1863, at Lawrence; discharged May 9, 1865.

Mather, Joseph, Paw Paw; enlisted October 24, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

North, Joseph W., Paw Paw; enlisted December 22, 1862, at Paw Paw; corporal; absent (sick).

Parsons, Christopher, Paw Paw; enlisted December 10, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Rawson, Fayette, Paw Paw; enlisted January 12, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability October 29, 1863.

Salisbury, Joseph L., Paw Paw; enlisted December 10, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability March 23, 1863.

Stoddard, William H., Decatur; enlisted October 24, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Stoughton, Frederick F., Paw Paw; enlisted December 17, 1862, at Paw Paw; discharged May 9, 1865.

Waldorff, Aaron, Antwerp; enlisted October 22, 1863, at Antwerp; discharged May 9, 1865.

Second Michigan Cavalry: Brotherton, Albert; drafted from South Haven; mustered November 4, 1863; assigned to Company K; discharged August 15, 1865; died at Bloomingdale, Michigan.

Caldwell, Oscar; enlisted in Company I, September 1, 1861, at Cooper; sergeant; discharged for disability May 18, 1862.

Freeman, James F.; drafted from Waverly; mustered November 3, 1863; assigned to Company K; discharged August 17, 1865.

Lamkin, Frank H., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company I, September 11, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; died at Boonville, Mississippi, June 30, 1862; buried in Union National cemetery at Corinth, Mississippi.

Lamkin, Reuben R.; enlisted in Company I, September 25, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; died March 29, 1863, at Nashville, Tennessee, of wounds received in action at Thompson's Station, Tennessee, March 4, 1863; buried in National cemetery at Nashville.

Stewart, George L.; enlisted in Company I, September 7, 1861, at Texas, Michigan; corporal; promoted to commissary sergeant; discharged May 17, 1865.

Fifth Michigan Cavalry: Babcock, Edwin J.; enlisted in Company D, March 20, 1865, at Paw Paw, died at Fort Leavenworth, Kansas, September 17, 1865.

Foote, Cortes, Paw Paw; enlisted in Company L, August 22, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged April 15, 1863.

Martin, Lawrence, Antwerp; enlisted in Company D, March 20, 1865, at Antwerp; corporal; discharged March 10, 1866; died at Paw Paw.

Rawson, Coleman P., Paw Paw; enlisted March 13, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged March 10, 1866; died at Paw Paw, February 26, 1902.

Skinner, Hiram H., Paw Paw; enlisted in Company L, August 22, 1862, at Kalamazoo; discharged for disability April 30, 1863.

Eighth Michigan Cavalry: Bell, Asa; enlisted in Company L, August 1, 1864, at Kalamazoo (substitute for Russell M. Stickney of Hartford); transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; discharged September 18, 1865.

Brown, Rinaldo, Hamilton; enlisted in Company F, November 25, 1862, at Hamilton; taken prisoner on raid to Macon, Georgia, August 3, 1864; returned to company April 28, 1865; discharged September 26, 1865.

Chamberlain, James H.; enlisted in Company I, April 7, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 22, 1865.

Cook, John C.; enlisted in Company M, February 23, 1865, at Bangor; discharged September 22, 1865.

Crandall, Leonard; enlisted in Company D, April 11, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 22, 1865; present residence Antwerp, Michigan.

Davis, Loudon H.; enlisted in Company D, April 8, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 22, 1865.

Elliott, Martin; enlisted in Company H, February 2, 1865; at Bangor; discharged September 22, 1865.

Flanders, Hiram, Paw Paw; enlisted in Company D, April 7, 1865, at Coe; discharged September 22, 1865.

Galligan, John; enlisted in Company L, April 7, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged May 6, 1865.

Leonard, George; enlisted in Company H, March 21, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 22, 1865.

Martin, James M.; enlisted in Company H, April 13, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 22, 1865.

McDowell, Helon, Paw Paw; enlisted in Company I, December 12, 1862, at Paw Paw; missing on raid to Macon, Georgia, August 3, 1864; returned to regiment January 14, 1865; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged September 22, 1865.

McElheny, William D., Mattawan; enlisted in Company F, December 22, 1862, at Prairie Ronde; sergeant; promoted to first lieutenant; missing on raid to Macon, Georgia, August 3, 1864; discharged July 20, 1865.

McIntyre, John; enlisted in Company I, April 7, 1865, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 22, 1865.

Perry, George; enlisted in Company L, April 6, 1865, at Kalamazoo; returned from missing in action May 10, 1865; discharged September 22, 1865.

Powers, Richard; enlisted in Company D, April 4, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged September 22, 1865.

Price, James; enlisted in Company B, April 4, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged September 22, 1865.

Randall, William H., Kendall; enlisted in Company B, August 11, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged June 10, 1865.

Rose, John H., Decatur; enlisted; unassigned; discharged for disability March 21, 1863.

Smith, Augustus; enlisted in Company A, March 14, 1865, at Pine Grove; discharged September 22, 1865.

Van Brunt, Nicholas J.; enlisted in Company H, March 20, 1865, at Kalamazoo; died at Edgefield, Tennessee, April 1, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Nashville, Tennessee.

Van Sickle, Harmon; enlisted in Company L, April 2, 1863, at Porter; discharged September 22, 1865.

Willerton, John, Columbia; enlisted in Company F, November 22, 1862, at Columbia; missing on raid to Macon, Georgia, August 3, 1864; no further record.

Tenth Michigan Cavalry: Dedrick, Philip C.; enlisted in Company B, February 20, 1865, at Decatur; discharged July 7, 1865.

Knight, William; enlisted in Company A, January 20, 1865; discharged November 11, 1865.

Lewis, Jesse; enlisted in Company A, January 20, 1865; discharged September 16, 1865.

Manly, Collins D.; enlisted in Company A, March 2, 1865; discharged November 11, 1865.

Ormsby, Edwin D.; enlisted in Company B, February 25, 1865, at Decatur; discharged November 7, 1865.

Ormsby, Newton F.; enlisted in Company B, February 22, 1865; discharged November 7, 1865.

Osborn, John H.; enlisted in Company C, February 22, 1865, at Decatur; discharged November 22, 1865.

Osborne, Rodolphus B.; enlisted in Company A, February 24, 1865, at Decatur; discharged September 23, 1865.

Rooker, Chester E.; enlisted in Company F, February 16, 1865, at Columbia; discharged November 11, 1865.

Ryan, Michael; first enlisted in Company C, Seventieth New York Infantry, at Paw Paw, May 22, 1861; transferred to Second United States Cavalry; discharged December 6, 1864; enlisted in Company B, February 22, 1865, at Decatur; discharged November 7, 1865.

Sweet, Samuel S.; enlisted in Company B, February 23, 1865, at Decatur; discharged November 11, 1865.

Sherwood, Fred E., Breedsville; enlisted in Company F, February 16, 1865, at Columbia; discharged November 11, 1865.

Vought, Jeremiah S.; enlisted in Company A, February 24, 1865, at Decatur; discharged November 11, 1865.

Eleventh Michigan Cavalry: Anderson, John W. Covert; enlisted September 19, 1863, at Kalamazoo; first sergeant; discharged September 22, 1864, to accept commission in colored regiment, captain Company A, Fifth United States Colored Cavalry.

Bush, George W.; enlisted in Company E, May 12, 1864, at Paw Paw; discharged September 22, 1865.

Canning, Thomas; enlisted in Company I, September 19, 1863, at Lawton; discharged August 24, 1865.

Colton, Thomas; enlisted in Company I, October 8, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged September 22, 1865.

Courtright, John T.; enlisted in Company I, October 7, 1863, at Lawton; discharged for disability July 15, 1865.

Donaldson, James E.; enlisted in Company B, October 11, 1863, at Pine Grove; died at Mount Sterling, Kentucky, February 12, 1865.

Elliott, John; enlisted in Company G, October 12, 1863, at Waverly; killed in action at Clinch River, Virginia, December 6, 1864.

George, William H., Decatur; entered service at organization of regiment as captain; promoted to major; discharged August 10, 1865.

Huey, Eli; enlisted in Company G, October 12, 1863, at Waverly; discharged September 22, 1865.

Lampson, Benoni; enlisted in Company G, November 3, 1863, at Waverly; discharged July 20, 1865; died December 15, 1898.

Plopper, Riley L.; enlisted in Company I, October 23, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged May 22, 1865.

Randall, Stephen; enlisted in Company I, October 6, 1863, at Lawton; sergeant; taken prisoner at Sandy Ridge, Virginia, October 4, 1864; discharged for disability May 26, 1865.

Reams, Zephaniah; enlisted in Company G, August 22, 1863, at Porter; died at Bowling Green, Kentucky, February 20, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Nashville, Tennessee.

Shears, James H.; enlisted in Company G, October 24, 1863, at Waverly; discharged September 22, 1865.

Silkworth, George, Lawton; enlisted in Company A, September 3, 1863; discharged July 20, 1863.

Harvey, Henry W., Antwerp; enlisted in Company H, September 23, 1863; discharged September 22, 1865; present residence Antwerp.

Skinner, James A.; enlisted in Company G, October 13, 1863, at Waverly; died at Lexington, Kentucky, February 13, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Lexington, grave No. 524.

Van Ostrand, Holly; enlisted in Company G, August 27, 1863, at Hartford; discharged September 22, 1865.

Waber, James; enlisted in Company I, October 12, 1864, at Pine Grove; taken prisoner at Pendleton, South Carolina, May 1, 1865; returned to regiment June 6, 1865; discharged July 15, 1865.

Wigent, John; enlisted in Company G, November 3, 1863, at Waverly; discharged September 2, 1865.

Woodman, Lucius C.; surgeon of regiment; first entered service as assistant surgeon of Third Cavalry; died at Paw Paw.

Thirteenth Michigan Battery: Parker, Samuel; enlisted November 15, 1863, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1865.

Fourteenth Michigan Battery: Crowley, Patrick; enlisted October 13, 1863, at Kalamazoo; blacksmith; discharged for disability April 16, 1865.

Coon, Robert; enlisted September 28, 1863, at Kalamazoo; died at Camp Barry, District of Columbia, March 18, 1864; buried in Military Asylum cemetery, District of Columbia.

Drake, Benjamin; enlisted October 13, 1863, at Volinia; discharged July 1, 1865.

Welcher, John; enlisted September 28, 1863, at Decatur; mustered October 7, 1863; no further record.

First Michigan Colored Infantry: Bowlin, James; drafted from South Haven; mustered November 4, 1864; assigned to Company G; discharged September 30, 1865.

Gayton, Allen, Arlington; enlisted in Company B, October 21, 1863, at Kalamazoo; died at Annapolis Junction, Maryland, April 24, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Baltimore, Maryland.

Gayton, Nicholas, Arlington; enlisted in Company B, October 21, 1863, at Kalamazoo; discharged September 30, 1865.

Hill, Stephen C.; enlisted February 25, 1863, at Decatur; unassigned; no further record.

Lett, Emanuel; enlisted in Company G, February 16, 1864, at Waverly; corporal; discharged September 30, 1865.

Lewis, Cassius M.; enlisted in Company H, March 2, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged September 30, 1865.

Maxwell, Foster H.; enlisted in Company D, November 14, 1863, at Kalamazoo; sergeant; discharged October 27, 1865; present residence Paw Paw.

Miller, James L.; enlisted in Company D, March 6, 1865, at Paw Paw; discharged September 30, 1865.

Robinson, James, Bloomingdale; enlisted in Company C, March 28, 1865, at Jackson; discharged September 30, 1865.

Russell, John; drafted from South Haven; mustered September 24, 1864; assigned to Company B; discharged September 30, 1865.

#### BIRGE'S WESTERN SHARPSHOOTERS

Whether on the scaffold high,  
Or in the battle's van,  
The finest place for man to die,  
Is where he dies for man.

In September, 1861, a company of sharpshooters was enlisted in Van Buren and Berrien counties. It offered its services to General Fremont and was by him ordered to Benton Barracks, Missouri, where it was assigned to the above named regiment, which was afterward designated as the Sixty-sixth Illinois. Company D was the only Michigan company in the organization.

The accoutrements of this regiment were not of a kind prescribed by the army regulations, but consisted of a bullet pouch of bear-skin covering and a powder horn or flask. In the bullet pouch was a compartment where the soldier carried screw driver, bullet mould and patch cutter—singular implements for a soldier—but Birge's men moulded their own bullets, greased and patched them with as much care as would the most expert hunter and used them with the same effect, every man among them being an expert with

the use of the rifle. The guns that these men carried were not of the regulation army pattern, but were hunters' rifles of the very best that could be had—muzzle loaders of course, as were the best guns of that day—and each soldier selected such a weapon as best suited his judgment or fancy.

It had been the intention of General Fremont to dress this regiment in a complete hunters' garb, but General Halleck, his superior officer, would not permit it to be so done and the only peculiar thing about the uniform worn by the men was the hat, which was a gray sugar-loaf shaped affair adorned by three squirrel tails peculiarly draped over the crown, by which feature they came to be known by both friend and foe as the "Squirrel Tails."

The regiment was in service nearly four years, during which time it was actively engaged in various battles and engagements in the states of Missouri, Mississippi, Tennessee, Georgia, South Carolina and North Carolina.

Following is a summary of the service of the Michigan company: Total enrolment, 197; killed in action, 17; died of wounds, 2; died of disease, 17; discharged for disability, 40.

The following named members of Company D were from Van Buren county: Andrews, John H., Hartford; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Hartford; sergeant; promoted to first sergeant, first lieutenant and captain; died at Allatoona, Georgia, June 24, 1864; from wounds received in action at Dallas, Georgia, May 27, 1864.

Arbour, James M.; enlisted September 24, 1861, at Keeler; sergeant; discharged for disability, January 13, 1862.

Arner, Benjamin W.; enlisted at Keeler, September 21, 1861; corporal; discharged June 20, 1862.

Baird, Omer A., Hartford; enlisted October 2, 1861, at Hartford; discharged on account of wounds in September, 1864.

Baird, Walter A., Hartford; enlisted October 2, 1861, at Hartford; wounded in action at Pittsburg Landing, Tennessee; discharged for disability August 3, 1862.

Balfour, James, Lawrence; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Keeler; killed in action at Corinth, Mississippi, October 4, 1862.

Barnes, Harlow G., Lawrence; enlisted November 9, 1861, at Lawrence; corporal; discharged for disability, October 8, 1862.

Bidlac, George, Decatur; enlisted November 16, 1862, at Hamilton; wounded in action near Rome Cross Roads, Georgia, May 16, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

Bigelow, George M., Keeler; enlisted November 16, 1862, at Hamilton; killed in action at Corinth, Mississippi, October 4, 1862.

Bliss, George M., Geneva; enlisted September 28, 1861, at Geneva; taken prisoner by guerrillas December 11, 1862; released October 19, 1863; discharged July 7, 1865.

Branch, Vine; enlisted October 12, 1861, at Hartford; discharged for disability July 9, 1862, on account of wounds received while doing picket duty May 14, 1862, at Monterey, Tennessee.

Breese, Hiram T. Keeler; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Keeler; corporal; discharged September 16, 1864.

Brewster, Samuel F., Keeler; enlisted September 21, 1861, at Keeler; died July 24, 1862, while home on sick leave.

Brewster, Dallas, Hartford; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Keeler; discharged July 7, 1865.

Bridgeford, George M., Keeler; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Keeler; corporal; wounded in action at Resaca, Georgia, May 9, 1864; discharged June 7, 1865.

Bridgeford, Henry, Keeler; enlisted February 15, 1864, at Keeler; died at Rome, Georgia, October 21, 1864.

Burnett, Albert, Hartford; enlisted February 14, 1864, at Hartford; discharged July 7, 1865.

Burton, James, Columbia; enlisted October 28, 1862, at Columbia; corporal; discharged July 7, 1865.

Camp, Charles H., Lawrence; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged for disability July 5, 1862.

Carris, Henry A., Lawrence; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged September 17, 1864; died July 17, 1904.

Caryl, Watson, Columbia; enlisted October 28, 1862, at Columbia; discharged July 7, 1865.

Chatfield, Isaac, Hartford; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Hartford; discharged July 7, 1865.

Cheney, Aaron D., Keeler; enlisted November 4, 1864, at Keeler; musician; discharged July 7, 1865.

Combs, John, Arlington; enlisted August 13, 1862, at Arlington; discharged June 2, 1865; died October 15, 1884.

Cook, Charles, Lawrence; enlisted August 16, 1862, at Detroit; discharged June 2, 1865.

Crobaugh, William, Geneva, enlisted September 28, 1861, at Geneva; discharged July 7, 1865.

Darraha, John; Hamilton; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 7, 1865.

Dedrick, Philip C., Lawrence; enlisted September 28, 1861, at Lawrence; first sergeant; wounded in action at Fort Donelson, Tennessee, February 14, 1862; promoted to second lieutenant; resigned April 3, 1863.

Disbrow, Edward J., Bangor; enlisted November 2, 1862, at Bangor; discharged July 7, 1865.

Dix, Franklin M., Decatur; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Decatur; discharged July 6, 1865; died April 6, 1879.



Doyle, Patrick, Hartford; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Hartford; killed in action near Atlanta, Georgia, May 27, 1864.

Draper, Willard E., Lawrence; enlisted March 11, 1862, at Dowagiac; discharged April 4, 1865; died February 14, 1903; previously in three months' service.

Duncombe, Stephen W., Keeler; entered service September 16, 1861, as second lieutenant; promoted to first lieutenant; resigned July 16, 1862.

Dowd, Jefferson S., Hartford; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Hartford; wounded in action at Shiloh, Tennessee; discharged September 17, 1864.

Ellis, Daniel, Decatur; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Decatur; discharged July 7, 1865.

Erwin, John T., Hartford; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Hartford; discharged July 7, 1865; died January 25, 1870.

Foster, Morris B., Keeler; enlisted September 24, 1861, at Keeler; discharged September 17, 1864.

Foster, Newton T.; enlisted October 15, 1861, at Keeler; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged for disability May 20, 1862.

Goodenough, Calvin C.; enlisted October 11, 1861, at Hartford; discharged for disability February 5, 1862; died January 27, 1890.

Goodenough, Daniel E., Hartford; enlisted October 11, 1861, at Hartford; corporal; killed in action at Corinth, Mississippi, October 4, 1862.

Gore, Albert; entered service at organization of company, September 16, 1861, at Keeler, as first lieutenant; resigned on account of disability, June 11, 1862.

Gould, Edwin G., Decatur; enlisted February 22, 1864, at Decatur; taken prisoner near Laurel Hill, South Carolina; discharged August 4, 1865; died October 28, 1900.

Grimes, Milford D., Decatur; enlisted February 25, 1864, at Decatur; discharged July 7, 1865; died June 27, 1896.

Gilson, Alonzo D.; enlisted September 20, 1861, at Hartford; corporal; wounded in action at Atlanta, Georgia, August 1, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865; died December 2, 1889.

Hammond, Luther H.; enlisted October 5, 1861, at Hartford; discharged for disability May 24, 1862; died May 30, 1862.

Hard, Bartholomew, Columbia; enlisted November 1, 1862, at Columbia; discharged July 7, 1865.

Hardy, Eben, Hartford; enlisted February 27, 1864, at Kalamazoo; wounded in action near Dallas, Georgia, May 27, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

Harris, Charles A., Lawrence; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Lawrence; discharged July 6, 1865.

Hazard, Asa D., Lawrence; enlisted March 10, 1862, at Lawrence; discharged for disability July 13, 1862; deceased.

Henry, William; enlisted September 26, 1861, at Arlington; wounded in action at Corinth, Mississippi, October 4, 1862; discharged for disability, May 13, 1863; deceased.

Hill, Oscar P., Keeler; enlisted September 24, 1861; at Keeler; died at Owl Creek, Tennessee, April 29, 1862.

Hurlbut, Albert D., Hartford; enlisted February 18, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 7, 1865.

Irish, Robert D., Hartford; enlisted October 11, 1861, at Hartford; corporal; discharged July 7, 1865; died February, 1900.

Jones, Francis M.; enlisted September 18, 1861, at Geneva; corporal; discharged for disability October 8, 1862; deceased.

Jones, George W., Geneva; enlisted September 21, 1861, at Geneva; died near Corinth, Mississippi, August 1, 1862.

Jones, Orrin, Decatur; enlisted February 10, 1864, at Hartford; corporal; discharged July 7, 1865.

Kennedy, James H., Hartford; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Hartford; discharged July 7, 1865; died May 31, 1888.

Long, William W., Keeler; enlisted February 22, 1864, at Keeler; killed in action at Peach Tree, Georgia, July 22, 1864.

Mather, William, Hartford; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Hartford; died at Marietta, Georgia, September 14, 1864.

Mead, Gilbert E., Decatur; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Decatur; wounded near Atlanta, Georgia, August 11, 1864; discharged July 7, 1864.

Miller, Martin, Keeler; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Keeler; corporal; died March 14, 1862, on board steamer Lancaster, between Metal Landing and Pittsburg Landing, Tennessee.

Nelson, Marcus S., Lawrence; enlisted March 10, 1862, at Dowagiac; killed in action at Corinth, Mississippi, October 4, 1862.

Noble, Henry W., Decatur; enlisted February 23, 1864, at Decatur; killed in action near Dallas, Georgia, May 27, 1864.

Northrup, Orrin M., Decatur; enlisted February 26, 1864, at Decatur; discharged July 7, 1865.

Payne, George, Arlington; enlisted October 26, 1861, at Arlington; discharged July 7, 1865.

Phelps, Henry, Lawrence; enlisted August 14, 1862, at Detroit; taken prisoner by guerrillas January, 1863, returned to company October 14, 1863; discharged June 2, 1865; killed by cars in 1884.

Polmancier, Seth; enlisted September 24, 1861, at Keeler; discharged for disability June 20, 1862.

Prater, Giles W., Paw Paw; enlisted August 16, 1862, at Detroit; corporal; discharged June 2, 1865.

Prosser, Henry L., Arlington; enlisted September 26, 1861, at

Arlington; corporal; died near Corinth, Mississippi, July 20, 1863.

Riley, George, Decatur; enlisted December 15, 1862, at Decatur; wounded in action at Dallas, Georgia, left leg amputated; discharged June 5, 1865; died February 13, 1888.

Ritter, Philip, Jr.; enlisted October 14, 1861, at Hartford, wagoner; discharged for disability February 23, 1862.

Robinson, Alfred D., Hartford; enlisted September 24, 1861, at Hartford; corporal; promoted to sergeant; discharged September 16, 1864; died August 20, 1899.

Root, Milo, Bangor; enlisted November 11, 1862, at Bangor; wounded May 9, 1864; transferred to Veteran Reserve Corps; died March 7, 1876.

Rossmann, Hiram; enlisted October 11, 1861, at Hartford; transferred to secret service December 11, 1862.

Rupert, William, Keeler; enlisted September 16, 1861, at Keeler; killed in action near Dallas, Georgia, May 27, 1864.

Rupert, John, Keeler; enlisted September 24, 1861, at Keeler; died in hospital at Owl Creek, Tennessee, April 26, 1862.

Sanborn, Leander, Hartford; enlisted February 16, 1864, at Kalamazoo; discharged July 7, 1865.

Simmons, Hiram P., Hartford; enlisted February 24, 1864, at Hartford; discharged July 7, 1865; died at Lawrence, April 25, 1904.

Smith, James, Keeler; enlisted November 4, 1861, at Keeler; wounded in action near Decatur, Georgia, July 22, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

Stowe, Freeman, Hartford; enlisted October 3, 1861, at Hartford; wounded in action near Dallas, Georgia, May 27, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

Sutton, Luther; enlisted at Hartford, September 30, 1861; corporal; discharged for disability May 20, 1862; died at Hartford, October 5, 1903.

Thompson, Albert C., Keeler; enlisted September 23, 1861, at Keeler; corporal; promoted to sergeant and to first sergeant; taken prisoner near Dallas, Georgia, May 31, 1864; discharged February 11, 1865.

Tyler, Enos W., Hartford; enlisted October 17, 1861, at Hartford; discharged September 17, 1864; died August 24, 1903.

Tyler, Humphrey P., Hartford; enlisted October 21, 1861, at Hartford; discharged July 7, 1865.

Van Auken, John L., Hartford; enlisted November 2, 1862, at Bangor; discharged July 7, 1865; died March 30, 1897.

Van Ostrand, John G.; enlisted October, 1861, at Hartford; discharged for disability October 25, 1862; deceased.

Van Brunt, Robert W., Lawrence; enlisted September 26, 1861, at Lawrence; discharged September 17, 1864; died August 10, 1904.

Vermette, Mason M., Hartford; enlisted September 24, 1861, at Keeler; taken prisoner at Corinth, Mississippi, October 3, 1862; returned to company March 21, 1863; wounded in action at Atlanta, Georgia, August 9, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

Vincent, Horace L., Columbia; enlisted October 8, 1862, at Columbia; wounded near Atlanta, Georgia, July 31, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

Vincent, Theodore C., Breedsville; mustered December 2, 1862; no further record.

Webster, Charles J., Bangor; enlisted November 2, 1862, at Bangor; killed in action near Decatur, Georgia, July 22, 1864.

Whipple, Elias, Hartford; enlisted February 18, 1864, at Hartford; discharged July 7, 1865; died in 1900.

Whipple, Simeon W., Hartford; enlisted February 12, 1864, at Hartford; discharged February 17, 1864.

Wygent, William H., Hartford; enlisted December 2, 1862, at Bangor; wounded at Dallas, Georgia, May 31, 1864; discharged July 7, 1865.

#### COMPANY C, SEVENTIETH NEW YORK INFANTRY

To arms! the voice of Freedom calls,  
 Nor calls in vain:  
 Up from the fields, the shops, the halls,  
 The busy street, the city walls,  
 Rush martial men.

Company C, Seventieth New York Infantry, was organized at Paw Paw and was the first military organization of the Civil war from Van Buren county. A number of Paw Paw young men, in 1859, organized themselves into a military company under the name of the LaFayette Light Guard, the township of Paw Paw being at that time called LaFayette.

Early in 1861, shortly after the outbreak of hostilities, they sought to enter the service in some Michigan regiment, but were not accepted, because, forsooth, Michigan needed no more troops. And so they offered their services to and were accepted by the state of New York; became a part of the celebrated Sickles' Brigade, commanded by General Daniel E. Sickles, and were mustered into the service in what was afterward called the Seventieth New York Infantry. Thus the state of Michigan lost one of the finest companies that was organized anywhere during the entire Civil war, and the state military authorities shortly afterward

discovered that they needed, not only such a company as this, but a good many more like it.

The Company left Paw Paw for New York City, June 13, 1861, from which place it was sent to Staten Island and there mustered into the United States service June 30, 1861. The company remained on Staten Island until July 23, 1861, at which time it received orders to leave for Washington, where it arrived July 24, 1861. The regiment then went into camp on Meridian Heights.

On April 16, 1862, it took part in the siege of Yorktown and on the evacuation of that city by the enemy it was ordered to Williamsburg, Virginia, where it arrived May 5, 1862, and immediately became engaged with the enemy, suffering very severely and losing eight men killed and 23 wounded and missing.

It participated in the engagement at Fair Oaks, again losing very heavily. It then remained in front of the White House, doing picket duty and skirmishing with the enemy until June 26, 1862, when it was again ordered to the front, taking part in the Peninsular campaign and serving gallantly in the several engagements. The regiment was very badly cut up at Bristow Station and Bull Run and took part in Burnside's disastrous attack on Fredericksburg December 15, 1862, after which it received orders to follow General Lee, who was then moving northward through Maryland. It arrived at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, in time to participate in the three days' fighting near that place, being attached to the Second Brigade, Second Division, Third Army Corps, commanded by Major General D. E. Sickles. It remained with this corps until April, 1864, when, on consolidation of the Third and Second Corps, it became a part of the Second Brigade, Fourth Division, Second Army Corps.

It took part in the battles of Wapping Heights, Kelly's Ford, Mine Run campaign, and Locust Grove, Virginia.

May 6, 1864, it entered upon the Grant campaign, being engaged at the Wilderness, May 5, 6 and 7; Spottsylvania, May 8, to 21; North Anna river, May 22 to 26; Tolopotomy, May 27 to 31; Cold Harbor, June 1 to 12; siege of Petersburg to July 7, 1864, when it was mustered out of service, the veterans and recruits being assigned to the Eighty-sixth Regiment, New York Infantry.

Total number enrolled, 112; killed in action, 14; died of wounds, 3; died of disease, 6; discharged for disability, 27.

The following list comprises the name of the Van Buren county members of this company: Abrams, James E., Paw Paw; enlisted May 14, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to second United States Cavalry.

Alden, Justin V., Breedsville; enlisted May 2, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Staten Island, New York, June 29, 1861.

Barber, John W.; enlisted May 5, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 6, 1865.

Barnum, Alfred H., Paw Paw; enlisted May 13, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Barnum, John H., Decatur; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability November 7, 1862.

Branch, Elam, Lawrence; enlisted April 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; discharged July 24, 1862, on account of wounds received in action.

Briggs, David, Hamilton; enlisted May 15, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1864.

Brown, Henry R.; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; wagoner; discharged June 27, 1865.

Brown, Stephen F., Waverly; enlisted September 18, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged June 6, 1865.

Bullard, William H., Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; drummer; transferred to Invalid Corps; present residence, Niles, Michigan.

Burnham, Horatio, Lawton; enlisted April 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Wooster, Ohio, August 15, 1863.

Butler, Cyrus H., Decatur; enlisted April 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability March 15, 1862.

Carney, Edward, Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1864.

Canoll, William H., Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; second lieutenant; resigned November 20, 1861.

Case, Harvey S., Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged in July, 1864.

Chaffee, Thomas J., Waverly; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; brevet second lieutenant and first lieutenant; discharged July 20, 1864. Died at Paw Paw, December 30, 1910.

Chamberlain, Henry, Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; promoted to first lieutenant; killed in action at the Wilderness May 5, 1864; buried in National cemetery at Fredericksburg, Virginia, grave No. 330.

Chevalier, John F., Decatur; enlisted April 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; discharged July 1, 1864.

Clark, James, Almena; enlisted October 18, 1861, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Wapping Heights, Virginia, July 23, 1863; discharged December 10, 1864.

Constable, William, Paw Paw; enlisted May 14, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged December 31, 1862, on account of wounds received in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Coon, Carlton, Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability, January 5, 1862.

Covey, Armand, Waverly; enlisted April 27, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Fair Oaks, Virginia, June 25, 1862.

Covey, Hiram F., Waverly; enlisted April 26, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability January 20, 1863; re-entered service in Company G, Thirteenth Infantry; died at Savannah, Georgia, March 18, 1865; buried in National cemetery at Beaufort, South Carolina, grave No. 4655.

Crandall, Henry, Keeler; enlisted May 14, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to United States Cavalry, October 28, 1862.

Craw, Joseph W., Hartford; enlisted April 26, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Mill Creek, Virginia, July 22, 1862, of wounds received in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Cockett, Charles S., Decatur; enlisted May 14, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; promoted to commissary sergeant; discharged July 11, 1864.

Crofoot, Edward J., Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged October 4, 1864.

Cummings, Adelbert W., Paw Paw; enlisted May 2, 1861, at Paw Paw; fifer; discharged for disability, January 22, 1862; re-enlisted in Company H, Twelfth Infantry, September 2, 1864; discharged May 6, 1865; present residence Paw Paw.

Dedrick, Philip C., Lawrence; enlisted April 29, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability August 3, 1861.

Dolliver, David, Paw Paw; one of the original Company; no record.

Dutton, Leonard, Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Bull Run, Virginia, August 29, 1862; discharged July 1, 1864.

Emerling, Anthony, Paw Paw; enlisted October 28, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged October 7, 1864.

Emery, John, Paw Paw; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged June 27, 1865; deceased.

Fertig, Andrew N.; enlisted April 23, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1864.

Fitzsimmons, Philip; enlisted May 13, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Spottsylvania Court House, Virginia, May 12, 1864.

Fitch, James, Decatur; one of original Company; no record.

Garver, Samuel, Lawton; enlisted April 27, 1861, at Lawton; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia; transferred to Second United States Cavalry.

Gorham, Allen, Almena; enlisted October 18, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability August 23, 1862; re-entered service in Company K, Twenty-eighth Infantry; first sergeant; discharged June 5, 1866.

Harrison, Alexander M., Paw Paw; enlisted April 25, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; discharged for disability July 26, 1862; died at Bangor.

Hathaway, W. H., Waverly; one of original Company; no record.

Hartman, Jeremiah, Hamilton; enlisted May 15, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged October 26, 1864, on account of loss of left arm in action at Salem Church, Virginia, May 31, 1864.

Hayes, Richard, Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; absent wounded at muster out of Company. Died at Paw Paw.

Hinckley, Gilman, Antwerp; enlisted November 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged June 27, 1865.

Hodges, Herrick, Lawrence; enlisted April 29, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability, October 24, 1861; re-enlisted in Company I, Seventeenth Infantry; wounded in action at Antietam, Maryland, September 17, 1862; discharged for disability June 1, 1863; gunshot wound through lung and left leg; present residence South Haven, Michigan.

Holt, Benjamin, Paw Paw; enlisted October 28, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability March 4, 1863; died at Paw Paw.

House, Edward E., Paw Paw; enlisted May 15, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability, July 10, 1861.

Hugo, William H., Paw Paw; entered service as captain June 21, 1861, at Paw Paw; promoted to major; transferred to Twenty-fifth Infantry.

Hulbert, Nathan, Waverly; enlisted October 18, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; discharged June 27, 1865.

Kilburn, William H., Paw Paw; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; promoted to second lieutenant; killed in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Lamphere, Albert, Paw Paw; enlisted May 6, 1861, at Paw Paw; died November 21, 1862.

Lewis, William H., Hartford; enlisted May 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania; detailed at Harwood hospital, Washington, D. C.; no further record.

Longwell, James M., Paw Paw; entered service at organization as first lieutenant; promoted to captain; resigned November 21, 1862; died at Paw Paw.

McDonald, William, Decatur; enlisted May 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1864.

McGhan, Porter H., Decatur; enlisted April 29, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged January 21, 1863, on account of wounds received in action at Antietam, Maryland.



McGill, Florence; enlisted May 25, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability November 1, 1862.

Melvin, Frederick, Bloomingdale; enlisted April 12, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Williamsburg Road, Virginia, June 25, 1862.

Miner, Charles W., Paw Paw; enlisted April 26, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 2, 1863.

Moon, Alvah F., Decatur; enlisted April 26, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; killed in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Loveland, Andrew, Paw Paw; one of original Company; no record.

Moore, Charles W., Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1864.

Myers, Henry B., Decatur; enlisted April 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862; discharged June 27, 1865.

Newcomb, Seth B., Almena; enlisted October 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; died July 28, 1864.

Parliman, Byron, Paw Paw; enlisted April 27, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability January 26, 1863.

Parrish, Herman S., Lawton; enlisted May 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to Invalid Corps.

Patrick, Dexter D., Almena; enlisted April 2, 1861, at Paw Paw; died June 3, 1862, of wounds received in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Perry, Stephen, Decatur; enlisted April 27, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged June 27, 1865.

Price, William H., Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; died May 22, 1862, on account of wounds received in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Place, Willard, Hamilton; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1864.

Priest, Albert, Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability March 15, 1862.

Putnam, Ira W., Hamilton; enlisted May 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged May 20, 1863.

Ransom, Albert H., Lawton; one of original Company; no record.

Reese, Henry, Porter; enlisted April 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to Second United States Cavalry.

Remalia, Stephen, Almena; enlisted November 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; drowned at Harrison's Landing, Virginia, August 8, 1862.

Rickard, John, Paw Paw; enlisted October 16, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability February 14, 1863; died at Paw Paw.

Robb, Elias, Lawrence; enlisted May 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability October 14, 1862.

Robinson, Lyman, Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to Second United States Cavalry.

Rogers, Don C., Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; promoted to first lieutenant; discharged April 9, 1864, on account of wounds received in action.

Roundy, Averill J., Lawrence; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged October 2, 1862, on account of wounds received in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, June 25, 1862; present residence Paw Paw.

Rowe, Daniel W., Lawrence; enlisted May 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Williamsburg Road, Virginia, June 25, 1862.

Ryan, Michael, Lawrence; enlisted May 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; sergeant; transferred to Second United States Cavalry; discharged December 6, 1864; re-entered service in Company B, Tenth Cavalry; discharged November 7, 1865; present residence Kalamazoo.

Saunders, Silas, Paw Paw; enlisted October 30, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Falmouth, Virginia, February 4, 1863.

Saxton, Hiram G., Paw Paw; enlisted April 27, 1861, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862 and at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 2, 1863; discharged April 27, 1864; re-entered service in Company H, Ninth Infantry; discharged June 20, 1865.

Sherman, Walter L., Decatur; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; died at Gettysburg, Pennsylvania, July 2, 1863.

Sirrinc, Art, Paw Paw; enlisted April 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to Second United States Cavalry.

Sirrinc, John, Paw Paw; enlisted April 25, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to Second United States Cavalry; wounded in action at Winchester, Virginia, September 19, 1864; discharged for disability December 13, 1864; present residence Paw Paw.

Story, Parker, Almena; enlisted May 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability January 20, 1863.

Swift, Francis M., Decatur; enlisted April 20, 1861, at Paw Paw; transferred to Sixteenth United States Infantry.

Teale, Charles W.; enlisted July 13, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged February 10, 1862.

Timmons, Lewis G., Keeler; enlisted May 1, 1861, at Paw Paw; wounded in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, June 22, 1862; discharged July 1, 1864.

Tucker, Augustus B., Breedsville; enlisted May 3, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Williamsburg Road, Virginia, June 25, 1862.

Van Fleet, William, Lawrence; enlisted May 6, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged for disability September 29, 1862.

Van Ostran, Clare E., Hartford; enlisted April 24, 1861, at Paw Paw; corporal; discharged July 1, 1864.

Walrath, Byron, Paw Paw; enlisted October 17, 1861, at Paw Paw; killed in action at Williamsburg, Virginia, May 5, 1862.

Whitehead, William; enlisted July 7, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged August 15, 1861.

Williams, John W., Paw Paw; enlisted April 22, 1861, at Paw Paw; discharged July 1, 1864.

Wright, Alfred G., Paw Paw; member of original Company; no record.

#### OTHER COMPANIES OR REGIMENTS

Forty-second Illinois Infantry: Mabury, James D., Paw Paw; corporal; Company E; enlisted July 26, 1861; died at Nashville, Tennessee, September 20, 1863.

Miller, Jesse, Paw Paw; enlisted Company E, July 26, 1861; discharged December 5, 1862.

Mills, Andrew J., Hartford; assistant surgeon; enlisted August 11, 1863; discharged April 16, 1865.

Tanner, John, Mattawan; Company H; enlisted August 23, 1861; wounded and taken prisoner at Stone River, Tennessee, December 31, 1862; discharged September 10, 1864.

Forty-fourth Illinois Infantry: Andrews, George B., Lawrence; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; discharged September 15, 1864.

Bennett, John A., Columbia; Company H; enlisted September 1, 1861; discharged September 25, 1865.

Benton, Sylvester, Antwerp; Company H; enlisted September 1, 1861; discharged for disability June 2, 1862.

Bliss, John, South Haven; Company H, August 1, 1861; discharged September 25, 1865.

Garver, Martin, Lawton; enlisted August 1, 1861; discharged September 25, 1865.

Graham, Wells, Pine Grove; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; died at Rolla, Missouri, January 20, 1862.

Harris, Ira K., Pine Grove; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; discharged September 25, 1865.

Harris, James H., Waverly; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; died at Rolla, Missouri, February 18, 1862.

Harris, James W., Hamilton; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; died of wounds, September 20, 1863.

Johnson, Job, Columbia; Company H; enlisted September 1, 1861; discharged February 28, 1865.

Knowles, Charles, Columbia; Company H; enlisted September

1, 1861; corporal; discharged for disability, June 14, 1865; gun shot wound.

Meachum, Calvin, Arlington; Company H; enlisted September 1, 1861; discharged September 25, 1865.

Munson, Alfred, Columbia; enlisted March 31, 1864; corporal; discharged September 25, 1865.

Orvette, Alvah, Decatur; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; died at Rolla, Missouri, March 7, 1862.

Patterson, George C., Covert; Company B; enlisted September 3, 1861; discharged for disability, March 31, 1863.

Pitts, George W., Decatur; Company H; corporal; enlisted August 1, 1861; supposed to have been killed by guerrillas, at Forsyth, Missouri, April 18, 1862.

Regan, Christopher, South Haven; Company H; enlisted September 1, 1861; discharged for disability, February 6, 1863.

Sickendick, George D., Columbia; Company H; enlisted September 1, 1861; discharged September 25, 1865.

Thompson, George H., Arlington; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; killed in action at Stone River, Tennessee, December 11, 1862.

Tibbitts, Eugene D., Pine Grove; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; discharged September 25, 1865.

Van Fleet, Samuel N., Lawrence; Company H; enlisted August 1, 1861; discharged for disability February 28, 1862. Subsequently became entirely blind as a result of his service.

#### MISCELLANEOUS REGIMENTS

Andrews, Isaac B., Hartford; Company G, Thirty-ninth Illinois Infantry; enlisted September 10, 1861; killed in action at Drury's Bluff, Virginia, May 16, 1864.

Bardwell, Joseph H., Paw Paw; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; sergeant; enlisted February 10, 1862; discharged July 26, 1865.

Beddo, Horace, Paw Paw; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; enlisted February 19, 1862; discharged July 26, 1865.

Campbell, William W., Paw Paw; Twenty-first Indiana Battery; enlisted September 9, 1862; discharged June 10, 1865.

Dunham, Hiram G., Hartford; Company G, Thirty-ninth Illinois Infantry; enlisted August 19, 1861; died at Cumberland, Maryland, February 23, 1862.

Magoon, Edward M., Paw Paw; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; enlisted February 21, 1862; discharged for disability July 11, 1862.

Mitchelson, Thomas F., Paw Paw; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; enlisted February 10, 1862; died at Pittsburg Landing, Tennessee, July 11, 1862.

Moon, O. F., Decatur; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; enlisted February 6, 1862; no further record.

Pierce, Charles J., Decatur; corporal; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; enlisted February 12, 1862; discharged July 6, 1865.

St. John, George, Hartford; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; enlisted January 29, 1862; died at Moscow, Tennessee, July 2, 1862.

Smith, George, Decatur; Battery I, First Illinois Artillery; enlisted February 6, 1862; discharged July 26, 1865.

O'Dell, Barnabas, Paw Paw; enlisted in United States navy, March 1, 1865; served on United States steamers, Collier and Great Western; discharged August 20, 1865. Present residence, Paw Paw.

Teed, Augustus, Almena; enlisted United States navy, March 1, 1865.

Foster, Ebenezer; enlisted in Ninth United States Colored Heavy Artillery, August 13, 1864, at Decatur; mustered August 13, 1864; no further record.

Fowler, Galpin; enlisted in Ninth United States Colored Heavy Artillery; mustered August 13, 1864, at Decatur; no further record.

Good, Horace; enlisted in Ninth United States Colored Heavy Artillery, at Decatur; mustered August 13, 1864; no further record.

During this great struggle for the life of the nation the state of Michigan furnished to the government something over 90,000 troops, of whom nearly 15,000 lost their lives by sickness or in battle. Van Buren county furnished 1,884 men. When we remember that the total population of the county in 1860 was only 15,224; that the total enrolment of men liable for military duty in December, 1864, was only 1,540; that the war tax of the county was \$155,637 and that nearly \$100,000 was paid by the county for the relief of soldiers' families, we get some faint idea of the great sacrifices demanded and cheerfully made. Soldiers from Van Buren county were found in seventy regiments from Michigan and other states.

But neither figures of arithmetic, nor figures of speech, can record the sacrifices and the suffering, nor the deep underlying current of patriotism that was the dominant spirit in those days that tried men's souls. That this great nation is once more united, that sectionalism and strife no longer exist, that all are animated by the spirit of patriotism that knows no north, no south, no east, no west, is sufficient cause for our everlasting gratitude and thankfulness.

We sometimes feel that faith in the perpetuity of our free institutions that was manifested by the little lad when, during the

Civil war, he saw a rainbow spanning the eastern heavens. "Mother, mother, oh! mother!" he exclaimed, pointing upward with his innocent little hands, "God is a Union man. I know he is a Union man because I saw his flag in the sky, and it was red, white and blue."

#### SPANISH-AMERICAN WAR

Van Buren county was well represented in the Spanish-American war. Perhaps no county in the state sent a greater number of young men, in proportion to population, to free the Cubans from Spanish oppression, than did Van Buren. Some were in Cuba, some were in the Philippines and some did not get beyond the borders of their own country. The author regrets that after diligent search, he has been wholly unable to procure a list of the names of the Van Buren county boys who volunteered in that struggle. There seemed to be no way in which a complete list could be procured, as the state has not, as yet, made any compilation of the names of its soldiers who participated in that contest as it did of those who served in the Civil war. Rather than mention a few names picked up here and there, it was thought best not to mention any.

## CHAPTER XII

### GEOLOGY OF COUNTY

THE CAMBRIAN—ORDOVICIAN—THE SILURIAN AGE—DEVONIAN—  
LOWER CARBONIFEROUS—THE PLEISTOCENE (LAST CHAPTER).

*By R. A. Smith, B.A., M.A., Assistant Geologist Michigan Geological and Biological Survey*

In order to understand the geological history of Van Buren county, one must know the geological history of the rock formations of Michigan itself, for Michigan may be considered as a geological unit of which Van Buren county is but a small and inseparable part. If the thick screen of unconsolidated sands, gravels, and clays which, almost everywhere, form the surface deposits of the state, could be removed, the bed-rock formations would appear lying one within the other like a pile of very shallow but gigantic basins. The rims of the outer basins are exposed in northern Michigan, on the western side of Green Bay, in northern Illinois, in Ohio, and on the eastern side of Georgian bay in Canada. The rims of the smaller basins occur successively toward the center in a more or less concentric manner, until the smallest basin, the Saginaw coal basin, lies wholly in lower Michigan and almost in its exact geographical center. These beds or formations are sedimentary deposits of sandstones, conglomerates, shales, limestones, etc. Obviously, the lowest bed was deposited first and each successively higher bed followed in order, so that the oldest rocks are the lowest and the youngest are at the top.

#### THE CAMBRIAN

For a long time previous to the deposition of the lowermost paleozoic sediments, the region extending from the Arctic ocean to the Gulf of Mexico appears to have been land. Through geological forces, it was slowly depressed from the southwest and the sea slowly came in over Texas following the continued sinking of the land to the northeast, until all of the Mississippi valley and most of the Great Lakes region was occupied by a vast interior or epicontinental sea, which persisted all through Palaeozoic times to

the end of the Carboniferous,—a period equal to half the time scale since the Algonkian. This sea was, in the main, shallow, for the deposits were largely those of sands and gravels, which are the marks of wave action, shore currents and rivers. This period is known as the Cambrian. At the close of this period of encroachment by the sea, Michigan was covered by a shallow sea with probable land to the north and east of Georgian bay and to the north of Lake Superior.

Since Michigan was the last region to sink beneath the water, only the upper beds of the Cambrian are found in Michigan. They are for the most part red sandstones and are known as the Lake Superior or Potsdam sandstone, of which the Pictured Rocks on the south shore of Lake Superior furnish a most picturesque example. These sandstones, if present at all under Van Buren county, must lie buried beneath several thousand feet of later sediments.

#### THE ORDOVICIAN

The Cambrian period was one of steady encroachment of the sea from the southwest. The Ordovician age which followed was one of continued general depression with wider and clearer seas yet shallow and warm, so that, in Middle Ordovician time, enormous deposits of limestone were laid down, now called the Trenton limestone. Naturally, the Lower Ordovician deposits are those of transition from the sandy shore deposits of Cambrian time to those of limestone in Middle Ordovician and show evidences of local emergences, represented by the Calciferous and St. Peters sandstones. The St. Peters is a true emergence sandstone, present in Wisconsin and Minnesota, but unfortunately it is hard to distinguish it in Michigan from other underlying sandstones that are known to belong to the uppermost Cambrian. We find it present at Rapid river in the Upper Peninsula, but nothing definite is known concerning it in lower Michigan.

The deposition of limestone was ended in Middle Ordovician time, however, by the raising up of a long low arch or anticline, extending northward from Nashville and Cincinnati through Ohio. This is known as the Nashville and Cincinnati anticline. In western Ohio this arch divides into two branches, one passing northward into western Ontario and southeastern Michigan, and the other northwestward into Indiana. This anticline, together with the "Wisconsin Island" and the ancient Archean highland on the north and northeast, tended to make a great gulf over Michigan running northwest to southeast, thus separating the Michigan basin from the more open sea to the southwest in the Mississippi valley. This emergence resulted in the deposition of muds now represented



by the Utica, Lorraine and Richmond shales. The Utica shales in Michigan are black, while the others are mainly blue.

The elevation of the Nashville and Cincinnati anticline was only an expression of a more or less general upward movement of the continent as a whole until the deposits were largely above water and exposed to the agents of erosion, so that when the land again sank below the water the six hundred feet of Utica, Lorraine and Richmond muds of lower Michigan were deposited unconformably upon an eroded and worn down surface. Little is known of this pre-Richmond emergence in lower Michigan, as very little is known of Ordovician formations as a whole in the Lower Peninsula. They are all so deep that no wells in Van Buren county or in the southwestern part of the state have positively reached them, though borings further from the center of the Michigan basin, as at South Bend, Indiana, at Cheboygan and at Manitoulin island, Lake Huron, indicate the Lorraine to be fairly uniform in thickness and persistent throughout the Lower Peninsula. The Trenton, the great oil horizon of Ohio, has been sought by oil prospectors in all parts of the state, but probably it has not been reached in the southwestern counties.

#### THE SILURIAN

The emergence at the end of the Richmond ended the Ordovician and the succeeding submergence of the land and encroachment by the sea was the beginning of the Silurian age. The sea gradually became clearer until the muds, now the Medina, Clinton and Rochester shales—the latter often dolomitic—gave place to the thick (270-600 feet) deposits of dolomites and limestones of Niagaran age.

During the period from the Richmond to the Medina and Clinton, there was an abundance of iron in the muddy sediments, especially in the Clinton, which from New York to Alabama and in Wisconsin has an iron content that makes it locally of considerable commercial importance. In the southwestern part of the state, some of these ferruginous shales do not appear to have been deposited. These formations, though often more than 2,000 feet below the surface, are much better known, as drillings at Kalamazoo and in many parts of the state have pierced them.

As the Trenton marks the period of the greatest transgression of the sea upon the land in the Ordovician, so the Niagaran marks a similar period in the Silurian. All of Michigan seems to have been covered by the great sea, which extended from the Gulf of Mexico across the Arctic zone and southward into Europe. Vast as the Niagaran sea was, it was still a shallow sea with a fauna

characteristic of clear, shallow, warm water. The Niagara is one of the thickest and most extensive deposits of coralline limestone known in any age. It forms the shore of western and northern Lake Michigan and of northern and eastern Lake Huron, and the precipice over which the waters of the Niagara river tumble. Its outcrops in Alabama, Iowa, Alaska, Greenland, Spitzbergen, Great Britain, Scandinavia, Russia, China and Southern Europe give an idea of the enormous extent of the Niagara limestone. Wells in the southwestern part of the state show that the Niagara limestone occurs from about one thousand to nearly two thousand feet below the surface.

Following the great limestone age, there came one of excessive aridity. The Michigan sea was nearly, if not quite, enclosed by land, so that great deposits of salt, anhydrite, and limestone were laid down. These form the Salina (or Lower Monroe) of the Middle Silurian age, which carries most of the beds of rock salt in the southeastern part of the state. No rock salt occurs in the strata under Van Buren county and the Monroe is much thinner than it is in the eastern part of the state. This suggests the possibility that the western part of the state may have been out of water for a time, so that there may have been an erosion instead of a deposition of sediments. This western Michigan bar appears to have divided the Michigan sea into two parts,—a closed eastern sea like Great Salt lake, in which both gypsum and salt were deposited, and an open western one in which obviously conditions necessary for the deposition of gypsum or salt could not obtain. Toward the end of Silurian time, normal conditions gradually returned with a corresponding gradual transition upward in the deposits from salt and anhydrite to limestones, now the Lower Monroe dolomite.

#### THE DEVONIAN

At the very end of the Silurian age or at the beginning of Devonian time, a very pure white sandstone, the Sylvania, was laid down. This bed is so pure that it is used for glass manufacture in some states. Toward the north, in Michigan, the bed grades into calcareous sand or into limestone. Above this bed, lie the limestones of the Middle and Upper Monroe formations. These carry beds of anhydrite or gypsum, indicative of the recurrence of arid and Mediterranean conditions. An emergence at the end of the Upper Monroe occurred, as shown by the superposition of the Dundee limestone unconformably upon the eroded surface of the former. This is significant in the explanation of the deposits of salt and anhydrite in the Middle Monroe, as just such an emer-

gence would cause the Michigan gulf to become a closed or Mediterranean sea.

Middle and Upper Devonian rocks are mainly alternating beds of heavy limestones and shales, indicative of a somewhat variable character of the age as a whole, though the heavy limestone show that stable conditions existed for part of the period. The three divisions of these sediments are the Dundee limestones, the Traverse formation of limestones and shales, and the black Antrim shales. The latter have often been mistaken by the oil drillers for the black shales just above the Trenton. This error has been made in drillings in the southwestern part of the state. The Trenton horizon probably has never been penetrated in Van Buren county, nor in any of the southwestern counties.

#### LOWER CARBONIFEROUS

The Berea grit at the base of the Mississippian or Lower Carboniferous, is another very pure sandstone. It is indicative of a general emergence of the land, as it is so widespread in Ohio and Michigan. The brines, which it contains, are extremely salt, so that Mediterranean conditions must have obtained for a time, but the concentration was not carried to such an extent that salt was deposited. This bed, the Berea, is found all along the eastern side of the state in wells but it gradually disappears toward the west, so that it has not been recognized in western Michigan.

Very muddy seas prevailed for a long time after the deposition of the Berea as nearly one thousand feet of shales lie above it. These are the Coldwater shales, which everywhere underlie the loose surface deposits of Van Buren county. These shales, in the western part of the state, are really shaly limestones rather than shales. The western part of the Michigan sea therefore seems to have been clearer, thus favoring the deposition of calcareous sediments.

#### THE PLEISTOCENE (LAST CHAPTER)

If other deposits were laid down upon the Coldwater shales of Van Buren county, they were afterwards eroded away so that no trace of them remains. At the end of the Carboniferous period, the land east of the Mississippi was elevated above water and Michigan was never covered by the sea again. Thus, during the enormous period elapsing between the end of the Carboniferous and the beginning of the Pleistocene, or Ice Age, a period represented by nearly half the time scale since the Algonkian, the land surface of Michigan was exposed to the agents of erosion, so that it may have been much eroded and worn down to base level by great river systems, which must have existed in what is now the Great Lakes

region. Probably a thick mantle of soil had accumulated, but of this we know little or nothing, for in the Pleistocene or Ice age, great continental ice sheets from Canada invaded the whole region north of the Ohio and the Missouri rivers and removed the loose surface accumulations from nearly the whole region. One of the sheets spread from a center west of Hudson bay, and another from Labrador. The ice advanced in the form of tongues or lobes. The basins of Lake Michigan, Green Bay, Lake Huron, Lake Erie, Saginaw Bay, etc., were each occupied by one of these lobes which not only scoured their respective basins deeper but scraped the soil mantle clean from the adjacent lands. The bed rocks were also much ground and worn away. Their surfaces, where exposed, are nearly always found to be smoothed and polished, with grooves or striae cut in them, showing the direction of the ice movement. The ice movement in Van Buren county was chiefly from the northwest, as the ice moved radially outward from the Lake Michigan lobe. The hills in general were rounded off and, while valleys as a rule were worn deeper, some were filled up with loose materials such as clays, sands, and gravels.

With the melting away of the ice sheet, the glacial materials beneath and within the ice were left in irregular masses, or in more or less level sheets, sometimes six hundred feet or more in thickness. In Van Buren county, the glacial drift is not nearly so thick, being sometimes less than one hundred feet, and rarely much more than three hundred feet in thickness. The irregular hilly tracts, the accumulation of glacial materials along the melting ice front, are called *moraines*, while the level or gently undulating tracts, the accumulations of glacial debris beneath the ice, are the *till plains*. The latter are mainly composed of clay, except where running water from the melting ice has more or less worked over the glacial material or drift, so that we have beds of sands and gravel. The till plains of clay form the finest of soils and the basis of much of the farming in Michigan.

Wherever the water was for a time ponded in front of the ice or in the depressions we have lake sands and clays. A large lake called Lake Chicago occupied the southern end of the Lake Michigan depression, being ponded in front of the ice border to the north. The lake stood at so high a level that its waters flowed through an outlet near Chicago into the Mississippi. The waters of this lake covered much of Van Buren county and in the western part of the county near Lake Michigan there remains an area of the resulting lake clays and, in the northern and northwestern, there are considerable areas of the light lake sands. Large streams from the melting ice front worked over a large part of the glacial material or drift and, in the eastern part of the county, spread it

out into gravelly or sandy plains called *outwash aprons*. Most of the material in the central and western parts of the county is a boulder clay, or *till*, as it is called, and was a direct deposit under the ice. In places, it has been partially worked over by streams, giving rise to sandy or gravelly strips.

The long range of irregular hills running north and south through the western part of the county and an irregular hilly area in the central and northern part are morainic accumulations in front of the ice margin, when the latter remained stationary for a considerable time—that is, the ice advanced just about as fast as it was melted away. Thus a great deal of glacial debris would be left in irregular masses, forming a line of hills running parallel to the ice front for hundreds of miles. The moraine, or the range of hills mentioned above, extends from Muskegon county through Van Buren county and around the southern end of Lake Michigan into Wisconsin. It marks the position of the ice front in one of its many halts during its retreat. The materials of these deposits are mainly clays, sandy loams, clay loams, etc., and form good soils, but their hilly character often renders them less adapted to ordinary farming than the till plains.

With the deposition of this material from the retreating ice sheet, and its partial reworking by water, the last chapter in the geological history of Michigan was closed.



ORCHARDS IN BLOOM



CORN FROM RECLAIMED SWAMP LAND

## CHAPTER XIII

### AGRICULTURE AND HORTICULTURE

WESTERN VAN BUREN—LAKE MICHIGAN, A BENEFACTOR—FRUIT RAISING AT SOUTH HAVEN—FRUIT BELT WIDENS—COOPERATION THROUGH SOCIETIES—“MASTER L. H. BAILEY”—A. S. DYCKMAN AND T. T. LYON—CROPS OF THE COUNTY—SEMI-AGRICULTURAL INDUSTRIES—AGRICULTURE IN EASTERN VAN BUREN—“OAK OPENINGS” FIRST CULTIVATED—PIONEER FARM IMPLEMENTS—AFTER THE CIVIL WAR—LIVE STOCK—GOLDEN ERA (1865-90)—THE LEAN YEARS OF THE NINETIES—DEVELOPMENT OF THE GRAPE INDUSTRY.

Fruit has been grown on a commercial scale in the western part of Van Buren county for over fifty years.

The first orchards in this section were set sixty years ago, and for the greater part of those six decades fruit-raising has been its chief industry. It has always been more important in this section than either grain-farming or stock-raising, and this is increasingly true as one approaches Lake Michigan.

Except for the earlier years of the community, from its first settlement to the close of the Civil war, during which period the timber industry in its various branches was the leading one, the fruit industry has held undisputed sway as the chief interest and principal support of this thriving and prosperous community.

#### LAKE MICHIGAN, A BENEFACTOR

Natural causes brought about this condition. Chief among them was the proximity of Lake Michigan which acts as a vast regulator of temperatures. The lake modifies the extremes of heat and cold all through this region; it protects the fruit trees by checking a premature development of their buds in spring, and by retarding their growth in the fall; it prevents in a large degree frosts in spring and fall, and in times of drought is a great reservoir for disseminating needed moisture.

During the earlier days of the fruit industry, and particularly

in the decade of the seventies during which it forged to the front, these influences of the lake were carefully observed and records kept that showed the advantages derived from that body of water. And Van Buren county, situated as it is at the eastern edge of the broadest part of the lake, gains the fullest measure of benefit from this source.

Contour of the land for favorable water and air drainage and suitable soil have also been elements contributing largely to the development of the fruit industry, and a no less potent factor has been the nearness and accessibility to markets, particularly the magic city of Chicago, which not only consumes vast quantities of the fruit and other farm products from this section, but affords a center for the speedy and economical distribution of the surplus to sub-centers serving millions of people in the middle west, northwest, southwest and south, and even east and southeast.

#### FRUIT RAISING AT SOUTH HAVEN

Orcharding at South Haven dates from 1852 when Stephen B. Morehouse and Randolph Densmore set out apple orchards, and the former also set out a peach orchard.

Mr. Morehouse came to South Haven from Albion for the purpose of engaging in the fruit business. His peach orchard stood in what is now the business district of South Haven city, in the block bounded by Center and Phoenix streets and the main ravine. His apple orchard was on the property now owned by E. B. Ketcham along North Shore Drive, and many of the original trees are still standing and in bearing. The orchard set by Mr. Densmore was just south of that, its southern boundary being about where Wells street now runs.

These orchards were set only two or three years after the old Parmelee orchard of seven acres at St. Joseph, so that the birth of the industry in the two localities was nearly simultaneous. It grew more rapidly at St. Joseph for the first few years because of the greater extent there of lands already cleared and ready for trees and vines, while around South Haven were the forests that had first to be removed.

Among the other early orchardists of this section were James L. Reid, Joseph Dow, S. G. Sheffer and C. M. Sheffer. The first vineyards were set in 1858—one and one-half acres by Orris Church and one acre by A. S. Dyckman—and Aaron Eames was another early grape grower. Mr. Dyckman was also among the pioneer peach growers, having set an orchard of four acres in 1857.

In 1855 and 1856 L. H. Bailey set out the apple orchard that is notable not only as one of the first and one of the largest in this



section but as the school in which his son, Liberty H. Bailey, Jr., received the practical training that started him on the way to becoming the foremost authority on horticulture in this country if not in the world.

From these beginnings along and near the lake shore have spread the orchards and vineyards that cover so large a portion of the western part of the county. As the forests receded before the axe of the lumberman and the settler, fruit trees and vines sprung up to replace them and to provide the means through which the settlers should derive so much of their sustenance from the soil that had long been given over to the "forest primeval."

#### FRUIT BELT WIDENS

Receding from the lake the proportion of fruit to grain and stock lessened steadily. This was due in large measure to the belief in the earlier years that the beneficent influence of the lake only extended over a narrow strip, estimated by some to be as narrow as two miles in width, but with the gradual dispelling of this notion and the continuing prosperity of the fruit growers, the "Fruit Belt" has been increasing in width until it is now fair to say that the fruit industry is the leading one of the western half of the county.

It was just about the close of the Civil war that the fruit industry began to compete with the timber business for supremacy in this section, and for a few years they kept on fairly even terms. But with the fruit steadily gaining and the other standing still or falling behind, it was only a few years before the former and securely established itself in the van where it has since remained.

Previous to 1865 the lands were mainly purchased for the timber and the majority of the residents were more or less directly concerned in the various branches of the timber industry. Many of the small clearings made in the pursuit of the timber trade were set to fruit trees and vines, and as these came into bearing with their luscious and profitable crops, attention was turned to the possibilities of their culture. The example of the pioneers who have been named in a preceding paragraph was followed by scores of others, and the beginnings of permanent settlement really occurred in this period of the community's history.

Large tracts of land, particularly the cut-over parcels were purchased and set to fruit, mainly to peaches which have since been the leading crop, though in recent years the apple has closely pressed its less hardy sister fruit for first place in extent of orcharding, volume of product and profits derived. The peach has a record of more than half a century of annual crops, except for

two or three years. Aside from the freeze of October 10, 1906, there has never been any loss of trees by severe cold, except from preventable causes, like poor drainage, over-fertilization, late cultivation, and the like, and no loss of trees or fruit by extreme cold in winter, or by spring or fall frosts, when the air current has been off Lake Michigan which has tempered the winds before they reached the orchards and vineyards.

#### COOPERATION THROUGH SOCIETIES

Cooperation has, from the outset, been a dominant principle of the fruit-growing interests of this section. Possibly no one factor outside of the natural conditions previously mentioned, has contributed so much to the rapid and healthy growth of this industry in this community as the willingness of the growers to share with each other the lessons learned by experience and observation and the study of successful methods in other fruit sections.

The existence of this spirit of cooperation led to the organization in December, 1870, of the South Haven Pomological Society, now known as the South Haven and Casco Pomological society.

This society extends its influence and benefits not alone over the townships mentioned in its title but over a wide section of the western portions of Van Buren and Allegan counties. It has an unbroken record of holding weekly meetings part or all of the year for the forty-odd years of its life, to its discussions have contributed the foremost fruit growers of this section, many of whom can justly claim a like preeminence in state and nation, and it is fair to say that the story of the society is the history of the fruit industry in the section from which the society draws its members and over which it spreads its benefits.

Concerning the purposes of the society and the record of its first year, let us quote from the report made by its secretary, C. T. Bryant, in December, 1871, to the secretary of the State Pomological Society. Mr. Bryant says: "By way of introduction, it falls to me to write briefly of our organization and its work. Convinced that our superior advantages of climate and soil for growing fruit and facilities for shipping to the best markets, indicated that fruit culture was to be the principal business of this community and justified us in striving for the highest attainments and in expecting the greatest possible success and profit in this branch of agriculture as a reward for well directed effort, those interested, in December, 1870, organized the South Haven Pomological Society; the specific object of which is, 'to develop facts, promulgate information as to the best methods of growing the best varieties of fruits for our vicinity, and for our own profit and improvements.'

"This society has steadily increased in members and interest. The meetings are well attended; the discussions are spirited; the expressions of opinion, and statements of experience, candid; the feeling harmonious; and we are more and more assured that our interests are mutual and that the greatest obstacles in the way of making fruit growing a constantly profitable business may be overcome by cooperation."

Such a paragraph as the last night be written is summarizing each year the efforts of the members to carry out the concisely stated but comprehensive purposes set forth in the preceding paragraph.

The first officers of the society were: President, Norman Phillips; vice president, C. H. Wigglesworth; secretary, C. T. Bryant; treasurer, C. J. Monroe; executive committee, I. S. Linderman, John Williams, H. E. Bidwell and J. Lannin.

From the formation of the society South Haven and its tributary territory took increasing prominence in the field of horticulture. Among the features that contributed toward making the society and its efficiency and energy well-known throughout this state and to a considerable extent over the nation was the meeting at South Haven of the State Pomological Society September 3 and 4, 1872.

Within two weeks the local society raised the funds and built complete the hall in which the meeting was held, an example of energy and enterprise that received much comment from the visitors in their addresses and discussions at the sessions, and was complimented in the resolutions adopted at the close of the meeting.

#### "MASTER L. H. BAILEY"

Just a year later to a day, the State Society again met at South Haven and at that meeting there was read an essay on "Birds" by "Master L. H. Bailey, a lad of fifteen years," as noted in the reports of that meeting. This was probably the first appearance before the state society of this young man who was to become so great an authority on horticulture. His essay is published in full in the annual reports of the state society, and it shows throughout the combination of the practical and the poetic that has so characterized his work as gardener, farmer, educator, lecturer, author and adviser. In recognition of his interest in horticulture and particularly in the relation of birds thereto, the local society elected "Master" L. H. Bailey as its Ornithologist in 1873. The discussions of the local society for 1873, as recorded by the secretary, are published in full in the report of the state society for that year, the only instance of the kind in which any local body has been thus honored in the history of the state organization.

The society and its members have taken awards at many of the international exhibitions, commencing with the Centennial in 1876, and continuing through the Paris exposition to its triumphs at the more recent exhibitions.

#### A. S. DYCKMAN AND T. T. LYON

Space forbids individual mention of the many persons who have contributed so much to the development of the fruit industry and to the work and influence of the society. But no sketch of the industry and society would be complete that did not pay tribute to the service of A. S. Dyckman and T. T. Lyon.

Mr. Dyckman was, as has been seen, one of the pioneers in the business, and was for many years the most extensive grower and shipper of this section. He served the state and local societies as president and in many other capacities.

Before coming to Van Buren county from Wayne county, Mr. Lyon had won a national reputation as a pomologist, and that reputation he greatly enhanced during the years that he dwelt in Van Buren. He, too, served the state society as president, and that for a period of fifteen years, through successive annual re-elections. He was the first director of the sub-experiment station established at South Haven in 1889 by the State Board of Agriculture, and arranged its facilities and organized its work on the practical, scientific basis that has enabled the station, despite inadequate space, to be of the greatest benefit to the fruit growers of Michigan.

#### CROPS OF THE COUNTY

Over one hundred staple products of farm, orchard, garden and forest have been raised in Van Buren county with remarkable regularity for many years, a considerable number of them for fifty or sixty years. The leading crops are thus summarized and classified in a late official report:

**Fruit Products:** Apples, peaches, pears, plums, cherries, other tree fruits, strawberries, raspberries, blackberries, currants, gooseberries, other fruit and grapes.

**General farm products:** Hay, corn, wheat, oats, barley, rye, buckwheat, clover seed, grass seed, potatoes, beans, peas, other crops, maple sugar, maple syrup, sugar beets, other roots, cabbage, tomatoes, sweet corn, onions, cucumbers, celery, melons, poultry sold, eggs sold, honey and wax, flowers, vegetable seeds, nursery products, wood, logs and other timber products.

The state census of 1904, the latest official figures yet available, gave some interesting statistics about some of the crops that might

be deemed of minor importance. For instance, on six and one-quarter acres of flowers and foliage plants, there was produced in the year preceding, the value of \$8,091, or at the rate of \$1,293 per acre. The "busy bees" with 1,544 swarms, valued at \$6,187, produced in honey and was \$6,379. To this every fruit grower would add a very liberal percentage for their services in aiding the fertilization of the fruit blossoms. Poultry valued at \$72,801, produced eggs worth \$136,360, and poultry sold amounted to \$105,654, or the total product worth nearly three and one-third times the value of the "producing plant."

#### SEMI-AGRICULTURAL INDUSTRIES

Indicative of how largely Van Buren county is devoted to agricultural pursuits, the state census of 1904, above mentioned, contains no statistics of any manufacturing establishments within the county. Since that time there have been started at South Haven two piano factories, a wood-working factory, and a pipe organ factory, now in process of erection.

There are within the county many industrial concerns whose products directly relate to the agricultural and horticultural interests of the county. Included among these are canning and preserving plants; crushed fruit, grape juice, cider and vinegar factories; pickle factories; basket and package factories; butter and cheese factories and creamery stations; plants for making spraying outfits and preparing spray materials; grist mills, saw-mills, planing mills, sash and door factories; manufactories of cement blocks, fence posts, brick and tile; also shops for blacksmithing and the mending of all sorts of farm and orchard tools, wagons, carriages; besides packing houses, warehouses, depots and docks, with special equipment of cars and boats for handling the various products amounting annually to hundreds of thousands of dollars and giving employment to thousands of men, women and children.

The compiler is pleased to acknowledge his indebtedness to Hon. Charles J. Monroe, one of his associate editors, for the foregoing able and interesting article on the agricultural and horticultural interests of Van Buren county. No man is better qualified to speak authoritatively concerning these important industries than Mr. Monroe.

#### AGRICULTURE IN EASTERN VAN BUREN

*By Jason Woodman*

Very few, if any, of the counties of Michigan can show so great a diversity of soil and timber as the county of Van Buren. Beautiful "oak openings," heavy timbered lands, pine lands, thousands

of acres of fat black muck, clay and loam, sand and gravel, with all the varying types of soils composed of these materials; plains, hills and valleys; lakes, streams and woodlands, give an infinite variety to the landscape and furnish the foundation for as diversified an agriculture as can be found anywhere in the United States.

On the plains east and north of the village of Paw Paw, the pioneers found unmistakable evidences of fields or "gardens" that had once been cultivated, although again grown up with forest timber. The real agricultural history of the county, however, begins with the spring of the year 1829, on the northern boundaries of Little Prairie Ronde, section thirty-five of the township of Decatur. There, eighty-three years ago, settled Dolphin Morris; on lands still owned by his descendants he turned the first furrow and raised the first crop ever grown in the county by a white man. For two or three years Mr. Morris enjoyed the distinction of being the only settler in the county; but the years 1833, 1834 and 1835 witnessed the beginning of the tide of immigration from the east.

#### "OAK OPENINGS" FIRST CULTIVATED

The new comers found a broad, well-beaten Indian trail, running diagonally across the townships of Almena, Antwerp, Paw Paw, Lawrence, Hamilton and Keeler. The old Territorial road, when first laid out, generally speaking followed this trail, and along its course the tide of immigration flowed. Nearly all the way, this road ran through oak openings.

According to the accounts of early settlers, these openings, in a state of nature, were beautiful beyond description. The surface of the land was level, or gently rolling. The trees grew scattering, some in groups, others standing alone, with wide "openings" or vistas between. The timber was mostly of the various varieties of oak, with low broad-spreading tops. There was little or no undergrowth, and one could see for many rods in any direction. The ground was carpeted with grass and, during the summer months, sprinkled over with flowers. These "openings were great natural parks," wrote one of the early pioneers. Another said: "Coming from the bleak New England hills, the country looked to our eyes like the Garden of Eden."

The land was easily cleared and had natural underdrainage. It was fertile and produced abundantly, and twenty years from the time the first settlers made their appearance, while the heavily timbered portions of the county were yet sparsely settled the "oak openings" were dotted over with well improved farms and with substantial, well built, commodious farm houses and barns.

## PIONEER FARM IMPLEMENTS

The farm operations of those early days were primitive. Hay was mown, raked and gathered by hand. Wheat was cut with a "cradle," bound by hand and threshed with a flail, or the grain trodden out underneath the feet of cattle or horses. The first threshing machine made its advent about 1850, and was operated by David Woodman. It is described by his son, Edson Woodman, who in his boyhood worked with this machine many days, as "a cylinder mounted on a platform and operated by horse-power." The bundles of grain were fed through the cylinder; the straw was raked from the rear of the machine by hand, while the grain and chaff were shoveled to one side, to be afterwards run through a fanning-mill, thus separating the grain from the chaff. Later, a device for separating the grain was attached to the cylinder and this was considered a great improvement. This threshing outfit was used, not only in this county, but in Kalamazoo and Cass counties as well; being for years the only implement of its kind in this immediate part of the state. It was last operated on the farm of the late J. J. Woodman about the year 1861, where it was broken by a too violent pull on the part of a team of fractious horses and never repaired. It was succeeded by a new and improved machine, owned and operated by Mr. A. R. Wildey, the father of E. A. and W. C. Wildey. This new threshing outfit was considered remarkable because of the fact that a bundle of wheat could be run through it whole, with the band uncut, and not stop the machine.

## AFTER THE CIVIL WAR

With the close of the Civil war, Van Buren county agriculture entered upon a new era. In 1864 the population of the county, mainly agricultural, numbered about eighteen thousand, an increase of ten thousand in ten years. The giant forests that covered the heavier, more fertile lands of the county, were rapidly disappearing before the woodman's axe; the age of American invention was on and modern agricultural machinery was replacing the primitive implements of husbandry. Mowers, horse hayrakes and horse forks, grain drills and reapers, improved machines for threshing grains and hulling clover, radically changed the methods of the husbandman. All farms were fenced into fields and carried livestock; clover grew abundantly, furnishing hay and pasture; the farmer sold wheat, wool, mutton, beef and pork. For many years, it is said, more wheat was shipped from Decatur than from any other station on the line of the Michigan Central Railroad between the cities of Chicago and Buffalo. Many thousand pounds of wool

were marketed by the farmers every spring, and the annual shipment of sheep, cattle and hogs amounted to hundreds of carloads.

#### LIVE STOCK

Aside from the practice, usual on practically every farm, of fattening home-grown stock for the market, during the three decades following the close of the Civil war a considerable stock feeding industry was built up. John and William Lyle and Albert R. Wildey were the pioneers in this business. Others followed after and the feeding of sheep and cattle purchased for that purpose became common. A large portion of this stock came from the west and many thousands of bushels of "Chicago corn" were consumed every year in addition to the hay and grain grown on the "feeders'" farms. In 1892 seventy-three carloads of stock in car lots were fed for the market within three miles of the writer's home. In the main this business was profitable and the acres of the stock-feeding farmer grew more and more fertile.

During the years from 1876 to 1890, Van Buren county became one of the great horse breeding sections of the state. In the former year Mr. Edson Woodman purchased the "Duke of Perche," one of the first six Percheron stallions imported by M. W. Dunham of Illinois. The "Duke" proved to be a remarkable foal-getter and while he was owned by Mr. Woodman sired about 1,700 colts. The uniform excellence of his progeny did much to popularize the Percheron breed in this part of the state. Other breeds of horses also had their advocates, and the introduction of many stallions and pure bred mares, of the Percheron and other breeds, followed. Thousands of colts were raised by the farmers. This industry, for many years, was a most profitable one, and the county became famous for its fine horses. Like the sheep and cattle industry, the raising of horses not only added materially to the income of the farms but also aided in maintaining them in the highest condition of fertility.

#### GOLDEN ERA (1865-90)

As one looks back on the eighty years of the history of Van Buren county, this period, from 1865 to 1890, seems to stand out as the "golden era" of its agriculture. The soil was fertile and the farm methods practiced tended to maintain its fertility. Clover grew, blossomed and matured its seed, unhampered and unimpaired by insect enemies. As compared with the cost of production, the prices received for farm products were profitable. There was an abundance of competent and reliable farm help. The more profitable city industries, paying rates of wages with which the farmer



could not compete, had not yet drawn the larger part of competent, skilful young men away from the rural neighborhoods; large numbers of farmers' sons, well trained by industrious fathers, when not needed at home, worked by the day or month for neighboring husbandmen. The intelligent, steady-going, hardworking "hired men" of the sixties, seventies and eighties, not only earned substantial profits for their employers, but, in very many cases, laid for themselves the foundations of future substantial competence. Many of those, who are today among our most successful farmers, professional and business men, were farm laborers in those days.

#### THE LEAN YEARS OF THE NINETIES

It is said that misfortunes never come singly. Beginning with 1890, excepting the year 1892 Van Buren county farmers suffered from a series of disastrous droughts. Year after year they saw their crops shortened or destroyed by rainless weather. In 1893 came the clover seed midge and the clover root borer, and a little later the clover leaf beetle, which in the spring destroyed the young clover plants. This latter insect was especially disastrous to young spring seedings. For years, there were practically no clover fields, and as a consequence the soil rapidly deteriorated. During the same years the prices of farm products fell to a ruinous level. Wheat sold as low as forty cents per bushel, wool at eight cents per pound, fat wethers at seventy-five cents per head and hogs at \$2.40 per hundred. The best heavy horses sold for from seventy-five to one hundred dollars per head, and in 1896 corn of the best quality sold for seventeen cents per bushel of seventy-five pounds. The prices of other staple crops dropped to the same level; good agricultural lands were offered at from twenty to forty dollars per acre, with few sales even at those prices. The breeding of horses ceased, the fattening of stock for the market came to a sudden termination, while sheep and beef breeds of cattle practically disappeared from the farms.

After a time, however, the situation began to improve; the rainfall increased, parasites preyed on the clover insect enemies and clover again grew on well managed farms, although not with its old-time luxuriance; prices of farm produce improved, but livestock farming has never regained its former importance, nor, as a rule, its former profit.

#### DEVELOPMENT OF THE GRAPE INDUSTRY

Out of the hardships of the lean years was born the great grape-growing industry. It is true that for years prior to 1890 the grow-

ing of grapes and other fruits in what is known as the Lawton district was a business of some magnitude, but the carloads shipped each year were numbered by the score and not by the thousand. In 1868 A. B. Jones of Lawton set out a plantation of one hundred grape vines, Concords and Delawares. That year, or the next, N. H. Bitely, planted a small vineyard. Mr. Jones made the first shipment of grapes, sending them to Lansing, where they sold from twelve to fifteen cents per pound. These grapes, after being picked, were "wilted" for twenty-four hours, picked over and packed with great care. Mr. Jones, in speaking of his second crop, said: "The grapes were put up in three-pound baskets and crated, twelve baskets to the crate." This fruit was also shipped to Lansing and sold as high as nine dollars per crate. The soil and climatic conditions proved to be exceptionally favorable for producing good crops of finely flavored grapes, and as their culture was found profitable the industry steadily extended. In 1890 there was a considerable acreage devoted to vineyards. This area rapidly increased during the years immediately following. The introduction of the eight-pound basket and of refrigerator cars widely extended the market.

In the latter part of the nineties the great majority of the growers were getting substantial incomes from their vineyards. Then it was that hundreds of the farmers of the eastern part of the county, suffering from the low prices of the "lean years," turned their attention to this new industry. Thousands of acres of grapes were planted. The years of low prices and hard times were passing, and the first crops from their new vineyards were very profitable. Then came the "boom;" men with no experience in farming and having no knowledge of agriculture, bought vineyards "set out to sell," or bought land and planted vineyards of twenty, thirty or forty acres in extent. On lowlands and highlands, on table-lands and in valleys and frost holes, on steep side hills, on sand and on the best of beech and maple timbered lands, grapes were set by enthusiastic amateurs. A new era of prosperity, greater than the old, seemed to have set in.

And then the inevitable happened. Men who tried to raise grapes at long range found it impossible to hire sufficient numbers of men, skilled in the details of grape growing. Spring frosts cut short the crops on land that lacked air drainage; the great freeze of October, 1906, completely destroyed a large portion of that year's crop and, to a great extent, killed the buds that should have produced the crop of 1907. The cut-worm, the rose bug and other insects exacted a heavy toll and, to crown all, the dreaded "black rot" overspread the grape growing district. Many men who had so enthusiastically rushed into the industry found it wise to get

out. Hundreds of acres of vineyards were pulled and many others have been woefully neglected. The greater number of the growers, however, have stuck manfully to their task. They have learned to handle spraying machinery; they have mastered the chemistry of sprays and the method of their proper and effectual application. The great yields of 1908, 1909 and 1911 have demonstrated the ability of Van Buren county vineyardists to grow grapes, but the problem of marketing crops that are numbered by the thousands of car-loads, in such manner as shall leave a profit for the producer, is yet to be solved

Van Buren county, because of its proximity to great markets, its varied soils, and its especially favorable climatic conditions, will always be a great fruit-producing region. The grape, the peach and the apple grow to a degree of perfection not surpassed in any portion of the country. The great muck beds, once the home of the fragrant peppermint, about which a chapter might be written, are rapidly being utilized for less exhaustive and, in the long run, more remunerative crops, while the great diversity of upland affords the opportunity for an equally varied system of agriculture. The disadvantages of the rural home are being gradually eliminated by modern inventive genius; country life is becoming more desirable, and when the time shall come, as it will, that the profits of agriculture equal those of other industries, then the population will flow toward the farm, instead of away from it. When that time comes, men better educated and better trained than we are, working in the light of greater knowledge, will develop systems of agriculture that will enrich rather than deplete the soil and, at the same time, will continue to provide ample supplies of food for the people.

## CHAPTER XIV

### TALES OF THE OLDEN DAY

DECATUR WAR SCARE—SNOW NOT TURNED TO OIL—FIGHT WITH A WOLF PACK—WOLF BOUNTIES—WOODS FULL OF “PAINTERS” —MRS. RICE’S REMINISCENCES—NARROW ESCAPE OF EDWIN MEARS—INDIAN MOUNDS IN LAWRENCE TOWNSHIP—JOSEPH WOODMAN LOCATES AT PAW PAW (1835)—STORIES BY MRS. NANCY (HICKS) BOWEN—“GOOD TIMES” OF THE OLDEN DAY.

It is related that just after the breaking out of the Civil war, a meteor fell on the south side of the great Decatur swamp, with a loud explosion, and which was the occasion of a good deal of excitement. One valiant and brave citizen of the village, it is said, was sure that the commotion was occasioned by the advance of a column of the enemy on the peaceful village of Decatur. He rushed into his home in great excitement shouting “The rebels are shelling us, the rebels are shelling us!” and proceeded to barricade the doors and windows, put his family under arms, and, seizing his trusty fowling piece, he declared that he was ready for them and that he would guarantee to whip a dozen rebels single handed. His misunderstanding of the cause of the explosion was the occasion of much merriment and “joshing” at his expense.

#### SNOW NOT TURNED TO OIL

During the “hard winter” of 1842-3 a considerable number of the inhabitants in some parts of the county became much exercised over the predicted approaching “end of the world.” This was the time when “Millerism” was rampant and great numbers of people in different parts of the country so firmly believed the prediction that they gave away their property and prepared their “ascension robes.” The idea of some of the people who placed credence in Miller’s prophecies was that the great body of snow that had fallen would, by some miraculous power, be turned to oil and set on fire, thus destroying the entire world. It is certain that this notion became so prevalent as to cause no little uneasiness in the minds of superstitious people, which was only dispelled when the warm

spring rains and the soft southern breezes turned the snow to water instead of oil.

#### FIGHT WITH A WOLF PACK

Wolf stories without number are related by the earlier settlers of the county. The following incident was told by the late Robert Nesbitt, one of the earliest pioneers of Hamilton and who made the first entry of government land in that township. Coming home on foot from Kalamazoo and while passing through the forest about night-fall, he was attacked by a pack of ravenous wolves. He lost no time in climbing a tree. He was only about a mile from his home, and from the tree-top he could plainly see the light in his cabin. The wolves surrounded the tree and, with savage howls, waited for him to descend. The weather was bitterly cold and Mr. Nesbitt soon realized that it was up to him to "get a move on," as there was no possibility of any outside aid. Being wholly unarmed, he cut a heavy club and determined to make a fight for life. He descended rapidly and made such a vigorous onslaught on the hungry pack that they fell back. Taking advantage of the opportunity, he ran to another tree and braced himself for battle, with his enemies, which had returned to the charge. In this manner he fought his way to the shelter of his cabin, which he reached in safety, although nearly exhausted with the strenuous fight and the attending excitement.

#### WOLF BOUNTIES

During the earlier years after the organization of the county both the county and the state paid a bounty on wolves. At their first meeting the board of supervisors "voted to pay five dollars per head for each wolf and panther which may be killed during the ensuing year." The state, at the same time, was paying a bounty of eight dollars, so that wolves (dead ones) were worth thirteen dollars apiece. The following named hunters received such bounties during the year: Luther Branch, four wolves; John Condon, three; Joseph Butler, one; Calcah, an Indian, one. In 1838 the county bounty was raised to eight dollars, but the next year it was reduced to four. Bounties were paid for twenty-four wolves during that year. From 1840 to 1847, inclusive, bounty was paid on sixty-eight slaughtered wolves and wolf whelps. The breeding of wolf whelps seems to have been a growing industry, and in 1844 the supervisors reduced the bounty on baby wolves to the meager sum of \$2.40, which seemed to put a quietus on what promised to be a remunerative occupation. There is no record of the payment

of any bounty for killing a panther. Evidently those savage beasts were not very abundant.

#### WOODS FULL OF "PAINTERS"

Apropos of panthers, the following amusing story related by one Abe Norwood, who was knowing to the circumstances, may not be out of place. Two young men, Will Shutter and Zade Rosebrook, brothers-in-law, many years ago planned to have a little sport at the expense of the good people of the township of Hamilton. They took a tin can and punched a hole in the bottom, and through this hole passed a stout linen string, which was then well resined. To operate the machine the string was held taut and drawn back and forth through the hole. It required some practice to get the best effect. The result was a noise resembling the growl of some savage beast or the scream of a panther (They used to call them "painters" in those early days). When everything was in readiness, one of the boys went to the house of one of the residents and said he had heard an awful strange noise as he was passing through the woods and that he thought it must be made by some wild beast. Going out of doors they listened, and sure enough they could hear the sound, but it was hard to locate, sometimes seeming near and the next minute far away. Next day all the people in the vicinity knew about the exciting news, and it was planned to put an end to the "panther," as the people believed it to be. They did not succeed in finding the beast although they heard it first in one direction and then in another. Night after night the thing went on. Although the creature was so timid that no one could get near enough to see it, the people were as timid as the supposed wild animal and went armed when they had to pass through the haunted neighborhood.

The narrator of the incident says: "I remember one night a wagon load of armed men drove up to a squad of hunters who were listening to the growler. They did not get out of the wagon. They could hear just as well in it. Besides, if the beast should make a charge, those in the wagon would be in the safer position. They could fight just as well and in case of being compelled to make a speedy retreat they would save the time required to clamber into the vehicle and would be in less danger of being left at the mercy of the fierce growler.

"Rosebrook's wife being in the secret, told a chum and she told her husband and he in turn told another man and they each made a "panther" and went into the forest to help the boys carry on the farce. And so it seemed as though the woods were full of wild animals. It was several weeks before the secret of the scare was

revealed and then there were a lot of mad fellows. Some were so angry that they threatened to prosecute the originators of the affair and actually went to see the public prosecutor in regard to the matter. After listening to their story he laughed at them and told them to go home and let the boys alone, for they had hurt nobody and that he thought it a pretty good joke.

#### MRS. RICE'S REMINISCENCES

Mrs. Allen Rice, of Lawrence, says: "I think I am the oldest person that has lived in Lawrence since 1837. (I am inclined to think she is the only one.—Editor.) My father moved his family to Lawrence in 1837, when I was in my fourteenth year.

"My father, Uriel T. Barnes, was the first settler between Lawrence and Breedsville, and in comfortable weather there were very few nights that we were not called upon to entertain people going to or returning from Paw Paw, which was the nearest place where supplies could be obtained, and settlers from the north and east could not make the trip in a single day. The usual reward for the entertainment was 'Thank you, Uncle Barnes. When you come our way, call on us.' The pioneers were poor, but were glad to help each other.

"The general election of 1840 was held at my father's house and my mother and I cooked dinner for the town board and as many of the voters as cared to partake.

"Thanksgiving evening of the second autumn of our wilderness life, we were surprised to see a group of eight men emerging from the woods. They were the captain and crew of a schooner wrecked at the mouth of Black river (now the city of South Haven). Guided by their compass, they had found their way to the 'Barnes Place,' where they were entertained over night, when they went their way hoping to find some conveyance to St. Joseph.

"After the road was opened from Lawrence to Breedsville, a postoffice was established at Lawrence and John R. Haynes was appointed postmaster. It was the custom that whoever went to Paw Paw on Friday should bring in the mail. That was the day that we expected to receive the weekly mail. Letters cost twenty-five cents apiece, payable by the receiver. There was no talk of 'penny postage' in those days. On one occasion James Gray, who lived a mile or so east of the postoffice, brought in the mail. Three young girls, of whom I was one, called at his place and Mr. Gray jestingly remarked 'now you girls can carry the mail and save me the journey.' We took him at his word and thought it a great lark. We hung the mail on a stick and a girl at each end carried it along. It wasn't very heavy.

“The first Fourth of July celebration took place, I think, in 1839. (Mrs. Rice evidently has too early a date. See Mrs. Bowen’s allusion to this same event.—Editor.) Some of the women thought we should have a celebration and decided to undertake it. They would invite all the settlers to join with them. Two of the ladies planned to put the milk of their cows together and make a cheese which would be ripened sufficiently to be eaten by the time of the celebration. The pioneers were pleased with the plan and joined in heartily. A table was set in the woods near where the Shultz store now is and spread with such dainties as the times afforded. Pies made from huckleberries and wild gooseberries, cakes made with maple sugar, chickens and partridges, and to cap the climax, a young man named De Long brought in a deer roasted whole, with head and horns still on and a knife and fork stuck in its back. It was braced so that it stood up on its feet as in life. The people assembled in the schoolhouse where patriotic exercises were held. The Declaration of Independence was read, a young man sang ‘The Star-Spangled Banner,’ and John Mellen, the blacksmith, furnished his anvil, and considerable powder was burned—the first time the surrounding forest was ever awakened by the echoes of a patriotic celebration of the birthday of Freedom.”

Mrs. Rice relates how young Allen Rice, afterward her husband, met with a pack of wolves in the forest, in the winter of 1837. The trees were too large to climb and he was some distance from home. He armed himself with a cudgel and made the best time possible out of the woods, escaping with nothing, more serious than a bad scare. She says: “The first sheep were brought into the township in 1841 or 1842 by Nelson Marshall. My father bought six and I bought two with money I had earned teaching. Late the next fall all of father’s sheep, except the buck, were killed by wolves, while they spared mine, and so my sheep became the basis of the flock which my father afterward raised.

“Those pioneer days were not free from tragedies. I recall one as I write. It was in the fall of 1841. The weather was very dry and the leaves were falling and forest fires were burning. Warren Van Fleet had harvested his first crop of wheat, which was stacked a few rods from the house. His wife was alone with her babe, just old enough to sit alone. Fearing that the fire would reach the wheat, she placed the child in a place that she thought was entirely safe and began to rake back the leaves to prevent the flames from reaching the stack. Suddenly she heard the screams of the little one and saw it enveloped in flames. The wind had carried a burning leaf to the straw where the child sat. The poor little thing lived but a short time and died in great agony.

“In 1840 Norman Bierce, ‘Uncle Norman’ as he was afterward



familiarly known, came to Lawrence and set up a turning lathe and began the manufacture of chairs, bedsteads and spinning wheels. I have now in my possession a wheel on which I have spun yarn to make many yards of flannel, specimens of which I still retain, also several chairs, a rolling pin and a neat wooden cup holding about half a pint, all of Uncle Norman's' make."

#### NARROW ESCAPE OF EDWIN MEARS

About the year 1836, Edwin Mears, a young man living in Paw Paw, with a half dozen or so companions, set out on a hunting expedition. Young Mears became separated from his companions and could neither find them nor could he find his way home. He wandered in the forest for four days and nights, suffering terribly with cold and hunger. At the end of the fourth day he found himself on the shore of Lake Michigan, many miles from home. He had about made up his mind that he would surely perish, when he heard voices and was rescued by a searching party that had set out to find him. He was so nearly dead that it was feared for a time that he would not recover from the effects of his terrible experience, but he survived the ordeal and lived for many a long year thereafter.

#### INDIAN MOUNDS IN LAWRENCE TOWNSHIP

There were well defined traces of what were called "Indian mounds" in the township of Lawrence, especially on sections seven and eighteen. Just north of Sutton's lake were three of these mounds, each about four feet in height. They were located in the form of a triangle and were about ten feet apart. Other smaller mounds were found on section eighteen. A hunter opened one of these mounds in 1843 and discovered human bones, arrow heads, etc. At that time trees a foot and a half in diameter were growing on some of the mounds. The Indians had no tradition concerning them and it is generally thought that they were the burial places of some prehistoric race. This is all the more probable from the fact that although the Indians used these arrow heads when they became possessed of them, they did not, themselves, make them.

#### JOSEPH WOODMAN LOCATES AT PAW PAW (1835)

Joseph Woodman, one of the early settlers of the township of Antwerp, related the following experience: "I landed at Detroit," said Mr. Woodman, "in the spring of 1835, and made my way to

Kalamazoo, through mud and mire, with two teams, a span of horses and a yoke of oxen, and I often had to double up my teams in order to get through. I frequently met stages, with the passengers on foot, carrying rails or poles with which to pry the vehicles out of the mud holes. They said it was hard fare and that the driver wanted them to carry two rails apiece, but they couldn't see it that way.

"I started alone from Kalamazoo for Paw Paw, eighteen miles distant. I was told that I could not get through that night; that I would be eaten by wolves, but being young and vigorous I pushed on and, without mishap, reached a cabin known as Dodge's tavern standing upon the site of the now flourishing village of Paw Paw. The next day, Saturday, in company with Silas Breed, I went land-viewing and returned to the tavern that evening. I asked Dodge if they had Divine worship, and was answered in the negative. I told him we had a minister in our party—Mr. Woodman was himself a clergyman—and that we would have a meeting Sunday, which we did, holding it in a slab shanty. The next day, I went out on the Territorial road and located my land. I brought my family on from Kalamazoo—wife and six children—and established them in a blacksmith shop, Rodney Hinckley's shop in Paw Paw. I built a log house into which I moved on the 10th of May, 1835. I went to clearing land, plowed seven acres with a wooden plow, and raised a fine crop of corn, potatoes and other vegetables."

STORIES BY MRS. NANCY (HICKS) BOWEN

Mrs. Nancy (Hicks) Bowen has told of some of her interesting pioneer experiences. She says: "We came from the state of New York in 1845. Our first home was in the township of Arlington. There were twenty acres cleared on the place; the rest was heavy timbered land and the forest reached for miles around. We had one neighbor, a mile and a half distant. Myself and husband and a little one year old girl constituted our family. It was useless to think of fruit. I made mince pies, using pumpkin instead of apples, and venison instead of beef. I well remember my uncle calling on me one time on his way home. He was tired and hungry and I gave him a lunch. When he came to his pie he said 'Why, Nancy, where did you find apples?' He could hardly believe me when I told him what I had used. Our house was of logs, with a chimney in the center which supported three fire-places. I did my baking in a tin oven placed before the fire, or in a bake kettle. (The present generation will need to go to their grandmothers to find out what a tin oven was, or how their ancestors baked in a

bake kettle.—Editor.) I was ironing one evening and stepped out of doors to get some wood. I noticed a black log lying by the wood pile and wondered that I had not noticed it before. The next morning the 'log' was gone. It was a bear. We soon found that the bears would come in the night and try to get our pigs out of the pen. There were a good many hogs running in the woods, and sometimes there would come a drove of them near the clearing with their shoulders and sides torn and bleeding where the bears had bitten them. The woods were full of bears, deer, wolves, foxes, wildcats, wild turkeys and many other kinds of game. My husband and Mr. De Long once sat up all night to roast a deer they had killed. They took it to the first Fourth of July celebration held at Brush Creek (now Lawrence) where they arranged it to stand on the table, as it stood in life.

"We then had two children, and all the latter part of the fall they were both sick. The little boy had the ague for a long time and the little girl had erysipelas. Her father thought he'd better take her to Paw Paw to see a doctor. He had to go on horseback, a distance of about eight miles, or else with a yoke of oxen and a lumber wagon—there were no carriages in those days. So he got ready, with a pillow in his lap for the little girl, Mertice, to sit on. The doctor readily told him the trouble and also gave him some medicine for the boy. We had something of a task in those days to care for our children and do the work that had to be done.

"One winter there was a good deal of excitement about the Indians. It was said that they were going to Canada to prepare to fight the people of Michigan. Indians and snakes were my greatest fears of life in the wilderness. One night we were aroused from sleep by a noise and a light shining through the window. There were several Indians at the door who wanted to come in and stay for the night. It was cold and rainy and Mr. Bowen let them in. They built a fire and lay down in front of it, but it was little sleep I got the remainder of that night.

"In the spring of 1848 Mr. Bowen rented the place and we packed up our things intending to go back east, but when we got to Paw Paw Judge Dyckman prevailed on Mr. Bowen to abandon the eastern trip and go to Pine Grove, and so, on the 2d day of July, we went there into what was to be a boarding house. It was an unfinished log house, without doors or windows, and the floor was laid down just as the boards came from the mill. Three days afterward twelve men came to work and the family numbered from that to twenty until the last of the next March. During the summer a number of families came there to live and we had a good neighborhood there in the woods. The next nearest settlement was two miles distant, with 'blazed' trees to mark the way.

“That spring Mr. Bowen was elected justice of the peace. He married one couple and took venison for pay. During the early part of that summer the youngsters thought they would have a little sport with a newly married couple, just across the way from our house, by giving them a little music, what would now be called a charivari. Accidentally a gun was fired into the crowd. The charge struck Jim Clark, passing through his lungs. It was six weeks before he could be removed to his home, but he eventually recovered from the wound.

“In 1851 Mr. Bowen bought a farm a little east of Paw Paw. We moved there in January of that year. All the next summer the children and I used to work days and nights until eleven or twelve o’clock, clearing up brush and the roots that were plowed up. In 1853 we had four children, two girls and two boys, and they were all taken sick with scarlet fever. My mother came down to stay with us one Wednesday night. She went home at noon and died before sundown. Our youngest daughter died on Tuesday evening following and our little boy the next Saturday. The other two were not expected to live, but by the mercy of the Heavenly Father they were spared and eventually became established in homes of their own. Mr. Bowen sold his place and we went east, but we returned to Michigan the following year and bought another place on which we made our home.”

These reminiscences were written by Mrs. Bowen in 1902. She concluded them by saying: “I have been a widow over ten years and now am nearly eighty years old.” But recently she passed into the “Great Beyond.”

#### “GOOD TIMES” OF THE OLDEN DAY

These reminiscences might be multiplied indefinitely, but enough has been written to show the hardships that those hardy pioneers of this beautiful and fertile county had to bear; the trials and tribulations they had to undergo, that we who have succeeded to the result of their labors might enjoy the fair heritage they left behind them. After all, it is likely that they enjoyed life equally as well as do their descendants. They knew nothing of many things that we think are indispensable, but, on the other hand, there were many things that contributed to their happiness that we, their successors, know nothing of except by hearsay.

We must not think that they or their children were without the means of enjoying themselves in those primitive days. Think of a load of fifteen or twenty young people piled into the box of a double sleigh, half filled with bright, clean straw, and drawn by a yoke of oxen, going for miles through the crisp winter air to a

spelling school, or a debating school—the two were quite generally combined—and returning in the “wee sma hours” of the morning, making the forests ring with their merry shouts, laughter and songs. Be honest now, you grandfathers and grandmothers—wasn’t it pure and unadulterated fun? And wouldn’t you like to try it just once more before you shuffle off this mortal coil? I would.

And in the summer time there were parties and country dances at which we all gathered. We didn’t have any orchestra, not even a violinist; only just a fiddler; and how he could play “Money Musk” and the two or three other tunes that he knew! No written score for him. He didn’t play “by note”—not he; his fiddle and his bow and a piece of “rosin” were all he needed, and he could and would play from early in the evening until daylight in the morning. And the way he could “call off” was simply delightful. We can hear him yet: “All join hands and circle to the left;” “right and left all;” “change partners;” “grand right and left,” and so on throughout the quadrille—we called them cotillons—and every girl and boy was sorry when the end of the figure was reached and the call came “seat your partners;” and every one was ready for the floor for the next dance. And we did not dance on waxed floors in elegantly furnished ball rooms, but in private houses. It was no uncommon thing for a merry party of girls and boys to take possession, uninvited, and pull up the home-made carpets, if any such thing there happened to be, and proceed with the festivities.

And the boys were as much addicted to athletic games as are the youths of the present day. They could run races, wrestle—they called it rassling—play “pom-pom-pullaway,” and ball (“one old cat” and “two old cat”)—yes, and even base ball; but the latter was not the highly developed, scientific game of today. It was not played by “hired men,” but by both youths and “grown-ups” for the pure enjoyment of the game, and it was “lots of fun.”

Let no one think for a moment that the young people of those primitive days did not have as many “good times,” as do the youths of the twentieth century. It is indeed a far cry from the ox sled to the automobile, from the log cabin to the stately mansion, from the once-a-week mail to the daily free delivery, from the spelling-book to the Carnegie library, but none of these modern luxuries of life—we have grown to call them necessities—were needed that life might be pleasant and enjoyable. But the times are changed, and we are changed with them.

## CHAPTER XV

### FINANCIAL AND OTHER INSTITUTIONS

FIRST NATIONAL BANK, PAW PAW—THE PAW PAW SAVINGS BANK—FIRST NATIONAL BANK, SOUTH HAVEN—THE CITIZENS STATE BANK, AND FIRST STATE BANK, SOUTH HAVEN—BANKS OF DECATUR—HARTFORD BANKS—WEST MICHIGAN SAVINGS BANK, BANGOR—THE PEOPLES BANK OF BLOOMINGDALE—AT GOBLEVILLE, COVERT, LAWRENCE AND LAWTON—SOUTH HAVEN LOAN AND TRUST COMPANY—VAN BUREN COUNTY FARMERS MUTUAL FIRE INSURANCE COMPANY—TELEGRAPH AND TELEPHONE LINES.

There are fourteen institutions in Van Buren county that do a general banking business. Two of them are located in Paw Paw, two in South Haven, two in Decatur, two in Hartford, one in Covert, one in Lawrence, one in Lawton, one in Gobleville, one in Bloomingdale and one in Bangor. The combined paid-up capital of these institutions is upwards of \$400,000, besides undivided profits and surplus amounting to about \$250,000. The combined commercial and savings deposits in these fourteen banking institutions amount to about \$2,700,000.

#### FIRST NATIONAL BANK, PAW PAW

The first organized bank in the county was the First National of Paw Paw. The articles of association of this solid institution bear date March 30, 1865, and its charter, No. 1,521, was granted on the 11th day of the ensuing August. The bank was first opened for business on Monday morning, August 21, 1865. For about two years the First National was the only banking institution of any kind in the county, but for several years before there had been a private banking house in the town under the name of Stevens, Holton & Company, successors to Stevens, French & Company.

The First National was started with a paid-up capital of \$50,000. Its first board of directors were Thomas L. Stevens, Thomas H. Stephenson, Alonzo Sherman, James Crane, Emory O. Briggs, Charles S. Maynard and Nathaniel M. Pugsley. The first officers were Alonzo Sherman, president; James Crane, vice-president;

Joe A. Hollon, cashier. In 1871 the capital of the bank was increased to \$100,000. Edmund Smith was elected president in 1883 and was succeeded by Horace M. Olney in 1894. Emory O. Briggs was appointed cashier in 1867, followed by F. E. Stevens in 1874. E. F. Parks was appointed cashier in January, 1886. The vice presidents of the institution have been Emory O. Briggs, Gilbert J. Hudson, E. A. Park, Charles Bilsborrow, Nathaniel M. Pugsley, William R. Hawkins, Edward R. Annable and George M. Harrison. The present officers are Horace M. Olney, president; Geo. M. Harrison, vice-president; E. F. Parks, cashier; W. H. Longwell, assistant cashier.

The capital stock of the bank remains at the sum of \$100,000, which is double that of any other bank in the county. It has at the present time deposits in the sum of \$250,000.

This institution is not only the oldest, but it is one of the best and strongest banks in the county. In 1903, it erected a handsome block on Main street and had the ground floor fitted up especially for its headquarters, so that it occupies one of the finest, most convenient and modern suite of banking offices in the county. No expense was spared in order to safeguard the funds that might be intrusted to its custody.

#### THE PAW PAW SAVINGS BANK

The Paw Paw Savings Bank was organized in 1886. Its articles of association bear date on the 27th day of March of that year. Its charter was granted just one month later. Its capital stock was originally \$35,000, but has since been increased to \$40,000. Its doors were first opened for business on the 10th day of May, 1886. (By special request of the president of the bank, we here state that Capt. O. W. Rowland was the first depositor). The first board of directors were Daniel Lyle, John Lyle, F. W. Sellick, John W. Free, William Lyle, Edgar A. Crane, Edwin Martin, William J. Sellick and Jonathan J. Woodman. The first officers were F. W. Sellick, president; Edgar A. Crane, vice-president; John W. Free, cashier. The present officers are John W. Free, president; W. R. Sellick, vice-president; C. A. Wolfs, cashier; W. R. Sellick, Edwin A. Wildey, A. Lynn Free, Howard B. Allen, H. Y. Tarbell, Daniel Morrison and John W. Free, board of directors.

The gentlemen who have filled the office of president of the bank are: F. W. Sellick, William J. Sellick, Milton L. Decker and John W. Free; the vice presidents have been: Edgar A. Crane, J. J. Woodman and W. R. Sellick; cashiers, John W. Free, J. B. Showerman and C. A. Wolfs.

The present financial condition of the bank is as follows: Cap-

ital stock, \$40,000; undivided profits and surplus, \$10,000; deposits, \$285,000. This bank was organized under the state banking law and developed into one of the leading financial institutions of the county. It is located at the corner of Main and Kalamazoo streets, the two principal streets in the town; occupies commodious and convenient rooms for the transaction of its constantly increasing business, and has all the modern accessories for safeguarding the funds entrusted to its care.

#### FIRST NATIONAL BANK, SOUTH HAVEN

The second bank to be organized in the county was the First National Bank of South Haven. Silas R. Boardman and Charles J. Monroe started a private bank in 1867 and the business transacted by them showing the necessity of a permanent organization, they joined with other citizens and organized the First National Bank. Judge Jay R. Monroe was the first man who signed the articles of association. Some of the other signers were Augustus Haven, of Bloomingdale; D. B. Allen, Dawson Pompey and the Packards, of Covert; Timothy McDowell and M. H. Bixby, of Casco; C. P. Ludwig, George Hannahs, Marshall Hale, George C. and H. W. Sweet of South Haven; and Henry E. Boardman of Rochester, New York. The bank had \$50,000 capital, which was a large sum for those early days, but with the limited deposits, it was needed to carry on the business of the town. When the National charter expired, it was deemed best to reorganize under the general banking law of the state, on account of such organization offering a better opportunity for savings depositors and also permitting the loaning of moneys on real estate security. The capital of the bank remains at the same figure as when it was first started, though, on account of the large surplus and undivided profits, the actual working capital is about \$125,000. The "Bank Register" for 1911 gives the following figures: Capital stock, \$50,000; surplus and undivided profits, \$75,000; deposits, \$456,000.

Charles J. Monroe remains the active head of the bank. Volney Ross is the vice president and Charles F. Hunt is cashier. M. H. Bixby is still one of the board of directors and S. R. Boardman remains a customer of the bank, but has no active part in its management. All others who were in the first list of directors have joined the great majority on the other side of the "River of Time." The institution has at the present time (January, 1912) over half a million of dollars on deposit, which is a good indication of the growth and prosperity of the section of Van Buren county that it serves, as well as a mark of the confidence of the people in the honor and integrity of those citizens who have built up this solid financial institution.



## CITIZENS STATE BANK, SOUTH HAVEN

One of the substantial banking institutions of the county—in fact, of this section of the state—and one which owes its satisfactory growth and success largely to the energies, good judgment and business standing of the men back of it, is the Citizens State Bank of South Haven.

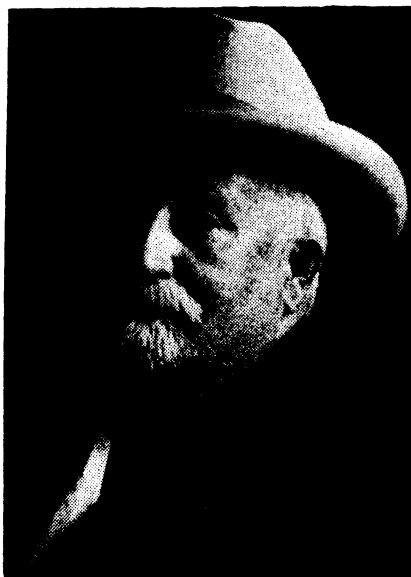
Organized in the fall of 1892, the bank opened its doors to the public in January, 1893, and, with a capitalization of \$50,000 and the confidence of the public as a primary asset, began its career. Today, with a record of nineteen years back of it, this bank has over a half million dollars assets, a surplus and undivided profits of \$40,000, and is paying a semi-annual dividend of five per cent to stockholders, as well as the taxes. It numbers among its depositors and business clientage many of the more prominent fruit growers and merchants of this section and occupying one of the handsomest bank buildings in the city, situated on a prominent corner of the down town district, is referred to with pride, not only by those directly interested in it in a financial way but citizens of South Haven and vicinity generally.

The personnel of the organizers, directors and officials is worthy of more than passing notice. G. N. Hale, head of the Hale & Company stores of South Haven, was the first president; C. J. Hempstead, vice president, and L. E. Parsons cashier. In 1897 Mr. Hale retired and W. S. Bradley was made president of the institution. The present officers are as follows: W. S. Bradley, president; R. T. Pierce, vice president; L. E. Parsons, cashier; R. J. Madill, assistant cashier; R. T. Pierce, L. A. Spencer, S. M. Trowbridge, O. M. Vaughn, C. W. Williams, L. E. Parsons, J. C. Merson, T. A. Bixby, W. S. Bradley, J. K. Barden and L. F. Otis, directors.

President W. S. Bradley is an excellent type of the New England "Yankee," of keen, sound business acumen, honesty of purpose and determination which go to spell success for any man. A native of Massachusetts, he served in the Civil war three years, and after being mustered out went to Cedar Rapids, Iowa, where he engaged successfully in the leather, hides and rubber belting business, remaining in the Iowa town fifteen years. He then went to Chicago, where he opened offices and continued in the same line of business with continued success.

In 1884 Mr. Bradley came to South Haven and, purchasing a then barren tract of land near the city limits, proceeded to convert it by hard work and intelligent effort into a model fruit farm which today stands as a monument to his energy and good judgment. Mr. Bradley, when he assumed the presidency of the Citi-

zens State Bank of which he was one of the first directors and organizers, brought to it the training which comes from an active and successful business life, a pleasing, honest personality and the business confidence which is the natural heritage of the man with continuity of purpose and "a square deal" as his motto. A good common school education, sound judgment and a perfect knowledge of business situations here and in the surrounding country combine to happily fit him for the important position as head of this banking institution.



W. S. BRADLEY

L. E. Parsons, cashier of the Citizens State Bank and one of its organizers, is well equipped for his position. Mr. Parsons "grew up in a bank" (to use the expression) and his knowledge of the details of the business comes from experience. He is a native of Union City, Michigan, and was identified with the Farmers' National Bank of that city from 1885 to 1892, when he came to South Haven, flatteringly introduced by the president of the Union City banking institution where he had been employed. He took an active part in the organization of the Citizens State Bank here and his energies and interests are united in the one object, viz: continuing the Citizens State Bank in its present success and on its firm foundation of reliability and business confidence.

In R. J. Madill, assistant cashier, Mr. Parsons has an able assistant and a man who devotes his time and attention to the duties which fall to him. Mr. Madill came to South Haven from Creemore, Ontario, in 1883, and for thirteen years was employed as clerk in the John Mackey hardware store. He accepted a position as teller in the Citizens State Bank in 1896 and in 1908 was made assistant cashier. He has twice been elected city treasurer and is a thorough accountant and bookkeeper, his early education in Belleville Commercial college, Belleville, Ontario, and subsequent experience as a school teacher, giving him practical knowledge, which is a valuable asset in his present business occupation.



L. E. PARSONS

Two South Haven high school young men of more than ordinary ability, C. E. Dilley and Clell Krugler hold positions in the bank as bookkeepers. Mr. Dilley was born at Lacota, but has lived much of his life here and is a young man of clean character, excellent ability and energetic in the discharge of his duties.

The bank directors could not have been more happily chosen. In this, a fruit country, where large amounts of money are handled, naturally patrons of a bank are pleased that men of unquestioned knowledge of conditions be identified with it. In the directorate are prominent and influential fruit growers of this section, all men high in the confidence of their fellows and successful in their own business affairs.

With nineteen years of marked success and a steadily increasing business as an indication of public confidence and satisfaction in the conduct of the bank and with the excellent personnel of officers, directors and clerical force referred to, the future of the Citizens State Bank of South Haven seems in the hands of the right men.

The deposits in the two banks of South Haven (the Citizens and First State) are not far short of a million dollars, a fine showing for the banks as well as for the city which, according to the last Federal census, had a population of a little less than 4,000. Both of the South Haven banks are centrally located and have fine, con-



R. J. MADILL

venient quarters, fitted up with all the modern appliances for the safe keeping of the funds in their custody and for their protection against loss either by fire or burglary.

#### BANKS OF DECATUR

Like the towns of Paw Paw and South Haven, the village of Decatur also has two strong, solid banking institutions—the first State and the Citizens. Previous to 1870, the only banking facilities possessed by the village were such as were afforded by the private banks of John Tarbell and Joseph Rogers. On the 15th day of October of that year the First National Bank of Decatur was

chartered with a capital of \$75,000, which was afterward reduced to \$50,000. The first board of directors were Charles Duncombe, Charles W. Fisk, Alexander B. Copley, Levi B. Lawrence, E. Parker Hill, O. S. Abbott and A. S. Hathaway. Mr. Copley was chosen president and Mr. Hill cashier. This bank was afterward reorganized under the general banking law of Michigan and has since been a state institution. Its capital stock, at the present time, is \$30,000. The "Bank Register" for 1911 places the surplus and undivided profits at \$19,000 and the deposits at \$262,000. The present officers are as follows: President, E. B. Copley; vice president, Arthur W. Haydon; cashier, L. Dana Hill.

The Citizens, also organized under the state banking law, has a capital stock of \$30,000. Its president is George T. Pomeroy; vice president, James Dunnington; cashier, F. C. Stapleton. From the same source as above given, we find the surplus and undivided profits of the institution to be \$6,300, and the deposits amount to \$153,000. Both banks are doing a flourishing and profitable business, are carefully and conservatively managed and are possessed of the confidence and enjoy the support of the business men of the town and surrounding country. Perhaps no town of its size in Michigan has better banking facilities.

#### HARTFORD BANKS

The village of Hartford also has two banking institutions—the Olney National and the Hartford Exchange banks, the latter being a private institution which has been in operation for a considerable number of years. It was established by Hon. George W. Merriman, who has continued ever since as its manager. It was, until a little more than a year ago, the only bank in the town, has always transacted a large and profitable business and possesses the fullest confidence of the people.

The Olney National Bank was organized in 1910, and was first opened for business on the 27th day of September of that year. The first year's business proved to be very successful and satisfactory to its stockholders. The officers of the bank are as follows: President, Horace M. Olney; vice president, Jacob Oppenheim; cashier, J. Ingalls. The board of directors consists of the following gentlemen: Jacob Oppenheim, M. C. Mortimer, E. R. Smith, O. M. Vaughan and Horace M. Olney. Mr. Olney is also president of the First National of Paw Paw. The paid up capital of the bank is \$25,000. The deposits, as given in the "Bank Register" published last July, were the sum of \$84,000. The institution is located in what is called the Postoffice block, a new structure erected by President Olney and finished in modern style,

steam-heated, electric-lighted and with all the appliances and conveniences of present-day business requirements. In the bank offices, especially, great pains was taken and no expense spared to make it an ideal place for conducting the business for which it was intended. No finer banking house can be found in the county.

#### WEST MICHIGAN SAVINGS BANK, BANGOR

The West Michigan Savings Bank, another of the solid, prosperous financial institutions of the county, is located in the village of Bangor. The first banking institution in this place was established by E. M. Hipp in 1872 and managed by him for a couple of years, when it was purchased by Messrs. J. E. Sebring & Company, who conducted its affairs for about three years, doing a prosperous business. The bank then passed into the possession of N. S. Taylor, who retained Mr. Sebring as his cashier and general manager. The institution was afterward known as the Monroe Bank and was under the same general management as the First National of South Haven. The present bank, organized under the state law and known as "The West Michigan Savings Bank," was instituted on the 16th day of April, 1880, taking the place of the Monroe Bank, and commenced business on the first day of the succeeding July, with a capital stock of \$20,000. The original trustees of the bank were C. J. Monroe, Alvin Chapman, Thompson A. Bixby, William Packard, Anson Goss, J. G. Miller, D. K. Charles, Stephen W. Duncombe and John Scott. The first officers were C. J. Monroe, president; Alvin Chapman, vice president; A. B. Chase, treasurer. The present officers are J. E. Sebring, president; William Broadwell, vice president; J. E. Sebring, cashier. Mr. Sebring took charge of the bank in 1892. At that time the amount of deposits was in the neighborhood of \$65,000, that figure fairly indicating the economic condition of the town and the country around.

At the present time the deposits are in excess of \$400,000, which may be taken as a fair index to the financial progress of the community during the past twenty years, as the radius of territory over which the bank extends its usefulness has not materially changed. This progress is but an earnest of what may reasonably be expected in the next twenty years, as capital and energy shall be expended in the development of the rich and fertile section of country in which the town is situated. The latest figures in the "Bank Register" place the capital of the bank at \$25,000, with an undivided surplus of \$8,000.

## THE PEOPLES BANK OF BLOOMINGDALE

The Peoples Bank of Bloomingdale is one of the prosperous private banks of the county, instituted and managed by Hon. Milan D. Wiggins. It has been in successful operation and has possessed the confidence of the community where it is situated for a considerable number of years. Mr. Wiggins is its president and Ellis Simon its cashier. According to the "Register," it has a capital of \$25,000, a surplus of the same amount and deposits of \$150,000. As there is another bank in the same township, these figures point to a great degree of prosperity in the community tributary to the bank.

## AT GOBLEVILLE, COVERT, LAWRENCE AND LAWTON

In the village of Gobleville, five miles east of Bloomingdale, is located another private bank, called the Gobleville Exchange, which is also doing a flourishing and profitable business. This bank is under the management of Stanley Sackett, its president, assisted by his brother, Frank Sackett, who is its cashier. The "Bank Register" gives the amount of deposits in this institution as \$65,000.

"The Bank of Covert," as its name indicates, is situated in the thriving little village of Covert. This bank is likewise a private institution, but has a very efficient organization. George C. Monroe is president and A. B. Chase cashier, both good business men and experienced in the intricacies of banking. This bank was reported by the same authority as that above mentioned as having a paid-up capital of \$10,000 and an undivided surplus of \$2,700. It amply provides for the banking requirements of the community, which, especially at the time of the fruit harvest, is quite heavy. paying annually over \$100,000 on fruit checks alone.

The village of Lawrence is provided with the needed banking facilities by another private institution called the Farmers and Merchants Bank. The officers of this enterprise are as follows: J. H. Baxter, president; J. H. Clark, vice president; J. L. Welch, cashier. It has been in operation for quite a number of years and gives the community ample banking facilities and satisfaction. The reported capital of the bank is \$10,000, with deposits of \$53,000.

The banking house of Juan McKeyes & Company is situated in the village of Lawton. Juan McKeyes is the active manager of the business and Frank McKeyes, his son, is the cashier. This institution does a very large business, especially during the grape harvest, at which season it disburses the funds to pay for thousands of carloads of that delectable fruit, situated as it is in the

very midst of Van Buren's famous "grape belt." The "Bank Register" reports the capital of this firm at \$10,000, with a surplus of \$5,000 and deposits of \$150,000. The institution has been in operation for a number of years and has been uniformly successful since beginning business.

#### SOUTH HAVEN LOAN AND TRUST COMPANY

Another financial institution of importance is the South Haven Loan and Trust Company (not incorporated), which is composed of W. P. Breeding, Mrs. L. S. Monroe, C. J. Monroe and C. O. Monroe, and represents a financial responsibility of upwards of \$200,000. The business of the company consists principally of making loans on real estate and investments in bonds for the proprietors and other parties. W. P. Breeding, president and general manager, is the active member of the firm. He is the son-in-law of the late Lyman S. Monroe and succeeded to his interests, having been connected with him prior to his death. He is also a director of the First State Bank and vice president and secretary of the Monroe Realty Company.

Mrs. L. S. Monroe (capitalist) is the widow of Lyman S. Monroe. Her interests consist of real estate and other investments.

Hon. C. J. Monroe is president of the First State Bank of South Haven and of the Monroe Realty Company, a member of the board of directors of the Kalamazoo Savings Bank and a member of the banking firm of C. J. Monroe & Sons at Covert.

C. O. Monroe, son of C. J., is the editor and manager of the *South Haven Daily Tribune*.

#### FARMERS' MUTUAL FIRE INSURANCE COMPANY

The Van Buren County Farmers' Mutual Fire Insurance Company is one of the valuable financial institutions of the county. It was organized thirty-seven years ago and has been doing business continuously ever since. Milton H. Pugsley of Paw Paw is president of the company and B. L. Breed of Paw Paw is the secretary. The recently filed annual report of the company shows that it has 3,207 members and that the amount of property at risk is \$4,833,057. The losses paid during the year amounted to \$6,518. The company generally meets all its losses and expenses by making one assessment of one-fourth of one per cent each year, thus providing for its patrons a cheap and secure insurance. The present board of directors are the following substantial citizens and business men of the county: Isaac Monroe, D. C. Hodge, C. B. Charles, S. A. Breed, M. H. Pugsley and M. D. Buskirk.



## TELEGRAPH AND TELEPHONE LINES

The Western Union Telegraph extends along the lines of every railroad in the county, bringing the entire population within easy reach of telegraphic communication.

There are a number of local telephone companies in the county. The first of these was the Kibbie, which was organized in 1898 and has its lines extended well over the county and into adjoining counties. The South Haven Mutual had its articles of association recorded in 1909. The Citizens was launched in the summer of 1910, and the Lawrence Mutual was organized in the month of March, 1911. Some of these companies reach into every community in the county, and the denizen of city, village or country that has no telephone connection is the exception rather than the rule. These lines connect with the great telephone system that traverses the state, so that oral communication from factory, office, store or home may be had with nearly every place of any importance in the state and in many parts of the states adjoining.

What would the pioneers of Michigan have said had anybody intimated that such a thing were possible? They would have thought that a man who entertained any such preposterous idea was crazy, and if a man had invented such a thing as a telephone in the day of Cotton Mather he would have been pronounced in league with the Devil and burned at the stake.

## CHAPTER XVI

### THE PRESS

“PAW PAW FREE PRESS”—“PAW PAW FREE PRESS AND COURIER”  
—“THE TRUE NORTHERNER”—“DECATUR REPUBLICAN”—“THE  
LAWTON LEADER”—“HARTFORD DAY SPRING”—“THE BANGOR  
ADVANCE”—EARLY LAWRENCE NEWSPAPERS—“LAWRENCE  
TIMES”—“BLOOMINGDALE LEADER”—“GOBLEVILLE NEWS”—  
SOUTH HAVEN NEWSPAPERS.

The first attempt at publishing a newspaper in Van Buren county was in January, 1843, when H. B. Miller of Niles, sent his brother-in-law, one Harris, with a press and printing outfit, to Paw Paw, ostensibly to start a newspaper, but chiefly for the purpose of getting the job of printing the delinquent tax lists, which at the date was quite a valuable “plum.” Harris started a six column folio sheet and named it the *Paw Paw Democrat*. He died soon afterward and that ended the career of the paper, the press and material being taken back to Niles.

#### “PAW PAW FREE PRESS”

For two years thereafter Van Buren county had no newspaper. In January, 1845, Samuel N. Gantt, one of the early lawyers of the county, and a printer named Geiger, brought by wagon from Detroit to Paw Paw, a wooden Ramage press, and the other necessary material for establishing a printing office, and started a five column four page weekly sheet, which they christened the *Paw Paw Free Press*. After a few months had elapsed, however, Geiger, for some reason, became dissatisfied with the course of events and more especially with his partner, against whom he harbored some kind of a grievance, real or imaginary, and in order to “get even” he removed the screw of the press and threw it into the Paw Paw river and himself fled to Detroit. Gantt did not care at all for the loss of his partner, but he mourned over the loss of the screw, without which the press could not be worked. He offered a reward of ten dollars for its recovery and return, and A. V. Pantlind, who chanced to know where Geiger had thrown

it, fished it out of the river, greatly to the satisfaction of its owner.

Mr. Gantt continued the publication of the *Free Press* until the spring of 1846, when he disposed of it to John McKinney, then county treasurer. McKinney did not long retain the ownership of the paper, but soon sold it to Emory O. Briggs, who published it for a little more than a year. In January, 1848, S. Tallmadge Conway became its owner. Mr. Conway had been a compositor in the office for a considerable length of time and had also done some work on the *Paw Paw Democrat* during its brief existence. He retained the ownership of the *Free Press* until the summer of 1854, when it passed into the hands of a stock company, but the stockholders not finding it to be a bonanza, transferred it to Isaac W. Van Fossen, who is yet a resident of Paw Paw. Soon after becoming possessed of the plant, Mr. Van Fossen changed the name of the sheet by dropping out the word "Free" and the paper became the *Paw Paw Press*, but this change was not satisfactory to the proprietor. It seemed to be too limited in scope and so he soon made another change and called it the *Van Buren County Press*. Under this name, and by this same publisher, the paper was issued until January, 1868, when the office was destroyed by fire and the publication was discontinued for a few months. However, it was soon revived by Mr. Van Fossen, who continued its publication until 1872, at which time he leased the plant to Frank Drummond. The paper had always been Democratic in its politics and during the campaign of 1872 it supported the Liberal Democrat ticket of Greeley and Brown. Soon after the close of that campaign, the publication ceased to exist and some of the material was purchased by Messrs. G. W. Matthews and E. A. Landphere, who utilized it in the publication of a new sheet which they launched under the name of the *Paw Paw Courier*.

The *Courier* was a Republican journal, and continued as such while owned by its originators. In 1877 Messrs. Blackman and Park became the owners and changed its political complexion and made it an exponent of the Democratic party.

In the meantime, and while Matthews & Landphere were publishing the *Courier*, Messrs. E. K. Park and George F. Sellick, job printers, started a new Democratic paper, to which they gave the old name of the *Van Buren County Press*.

#### "PAW PAW FREE PRESS AND COURIER"

Perhaps this venture of Messrs. Park & Sellick might be considered as a resuscitation of the suspended paper the name of which they assumed. It is said that a man who once gets his

fingers thoroughly daubed with printer's ink never again gets them thoroughly clean, which is but another way of saying that there is a certain fascination about the business that once engaged in makes it difficult to wholly abandon. At any rate, be this as it may, the business and the name of the sheet with which he had so long been identified, so attracted Mr. Van Fossen that he again became its owner. However, he did not long retain its ownership, but transferred it to O. D. Hadsell, who again changed its name to the *Paw Paw Free Press*, the name by which the sheet had been first christened—that is, if it be considered as a direct continuation of the original paper. Under this name Mr. Hadsell continued to publish the paper until the summer of 1877, when he sold it to the *Paw Paw Courier*. The two papers being thus consolidated, there was also a consolidation of names and the publication became the *Paw Paw Free Press and Courier*, under which name it has since been and still is published. In 1878 Mr. Park withdrew and E. A. Blackman became the sole editor and proprietor. After the consolidation the sheet was published as a semi-weekly for a few months, but soon returned to its once-a-week issue.

The next change of ownership was a transfer of a half interest to Mr. James F. Jordan. Mr. Jordan is now the credit man of a wholesale drygoods house in Minneapolis, the largest establishment of the kind in the northwest.

About the year 1883, Hiram A. Cole, a practical compositor and job printer, became the owner of Mr. Blackman's interest in the plant and for a time the firm was Jordan & Cole. The property soon afterward passed into Mr. Cole's individual possession and the paper has been managed and published by him down to the present time. It is the only Democratic newspaper in the county and is one of the leading Democratic weeklies of western Michigan. Through all these vicissitudes and changes of name, the publication claims lineal descent from the *Paw Paw Free Press*, making it the oldest publication in Van Buren county, the last issue being labeled "Volume 67, No. 46." The presses of the *Courier* as the paper is usually spoken of are run with a gasoline engine.

In the spring of 1851, James N. Gantt launched a paper called *The Paw Paw Journal*. This sheet had a comparatively brief existence, but just how long, it is impossible to say, as there is no record of its career, although Dr. O'Dell of Paw Paw, has two or three of the earlier issues, the earliest being No. 5, issued in June 1851.

#### "THE TRUE NORTHERNER"

The *True Northerner*, a weekly publication, was established at Paw Paw in 1855, and is nearing the end of fifty-seven years of

continuous publication without change of name and, so far as can be ascertained, without the omission of a single number, although the entire plant was destroyed by fire in January, 1888, which is a record of which its managers may well be proud. The question is sometimes asked why the paper was christened the *True Northerner*. To those who can remember the antislavery agitation of the years before the Civil war, the bitter contests that were waged and the animosity that was thereby engendered between the north and the south, the answer to that query is self-evident. The paper was founded as an advocate of the principles of the new Republican party that had then recently been organized under the historic oaks at the city of Jackson, Michigan, and it has ever since been an unwavering champion of that party.

Its founder was George A. Fitch, who was at the time publishing the *Kalamazoo Telegraph*. Mr. Fitch sent John B. Butler to edit and publish the new paper.

The first issue, which by the courtesy of Dr. B. O'Dell is now in the hands of the compiler, bears date April 25, 1855. It is a five-column quarto, well preserved and creditably printed. The opening paragraph of Mr. Butler's salutatory, entitled "To the Public," is as follows: "Citizens of Van Buren county, we have spread before you a Newspaper. We have come among you to advocate the cause of Popular Sovereignty and of human rights. You may call our politics, Fusionism, Republicanism, or any other 'ism, so long as you connect the idea of the name you apply with that of equal rights and the welfare of our whole country. We will adhere to no party which has not for its aim the good of the country, nor advocate any cause which seeks triumph for the sake of the spoils of office, regardless of the rights and liberties, the happiness and prosperity of the people at large. If such are your sentiments, citizens, you will support this print; if not we have mistaken the feelings and views which have long actuated the True Northerner, north of Mason and Dixon's line, and which has been so successfully exemplified in your late elections, both in state and county." Further along, Mr. Butler adds: "It is our desire, to place our paper on as high and truly independent grounds as possible and, although enlisted in the cause of the Republican party of this State, we will in no manner be tied down by party trammels, or led at the caprice of any political faction."

The only local items in the paper are two marriage notices—to wit, the marriage of Joseph W. Luce and Miss Martha Richmond, of LaFayette, on the 17th instant, and of William Hodges and Miss Caroline Blowers on the 25th, the day of the birth of the paper; and a notice of the meeting of subscribers to the stock of the Allegan and Paw Paw Railroad, a road that never materialized.

The notice stated that about \$30,000 had been subscribed toward the projected road and was signed by the following board of directors: John R. Kellogg, F. J. Littlejohn, Charles L. Mixer, E. D. Follet and John Clifford, Jr., of Allegan county, and John Smolk, Silas Breed, F. M. Manning, F. H. Stevens and S. G. Grimes of Van Buren county. Some of the other articles in the paper were "Scenes in the Kansas Election," "War with Spain," "Loss of the Propellor Oregon," "Arrival of the America" on the 13th of April, with the latest European news, among which appears this item: "The demolition of Sevastopol was not demanded, but a reduction of the Russian power in the Black sea was called for, the recompense being the withdrawal of the allies from Russian territory."

Mr. Butler retired from the management of the paper in the latter part of the summer of 1855, and Fitch sold it to John Reynolds and Edwin A. Thompson. Rufus C. Nash was employed as editor but did not long remain in charge, being succeeded the next January by L. B. Bleecker and S. F. Breed. Soon afterward Mr. Breed and Samuel H. Blackman became the sole proprietors of the paper. In 1858 they sold it to Thaddeus R. Harrison, who continued in its ownership until 1866, although during the latter part of that period it was leased to Charles P. Sweet. Mr. Harrison transferred the publication to Thomas O. Ward, who continued it until August, 1870, at which time S. Tallmadge Conway, formerly owner and publisher of the *Paw Paw Press*, became the owner of the plant and sole editor and publisher of the paper. He retained the ownership for a period of ten years, when he transferred it to Henry S. Williams, who had been county clerk and school superintendent. Mr. Williams retained the property until May, 1882, at which date he sold it to Messrs. A. C. Martin and O. W. Rowland, Mr. Martin becoming the manager of the concern and Mr. Rowland assuming the editorial chair. This arrangement continued for six years, when Mr. Rowland parted with his interest in the plant, and Mr. Martin became sole owner, although Rowland was retained as editor for a year after the dissolution of the firm of Martin & Rowland. In the fall of 1889, Charles L. Eaton purchased an interest in the plant and the firm became Martin & Eaton, with Eaton as the editor. Two years afterward Eaton retired from the business and Mrs. A. C. Martin, wife of the proprietor, became the editress of the paper. In November, 1892, the property was capitalized at the sum of \$10,000 and converted into a stock company and as such it still remains. Mrs. Martin was succeeded in the editorship by M. O. Rowland, a son of one of the former editors. He managed and edited the paper for several years, when he disposed of his interest and removed

to Lansing, having been appointed to a clerkship in the state insurance department. He was afterward appointed deputy insurance commissioner and later insurance commissioner, an office which he resigned on the coming in of a new administration. He is now president of the Detroit National Fire Insurance Company. E. A. Wildey, a former commissioner of the state land office, succeeded Mr. Rowland as editor of the paper, but remained in control only about a year. Frank N. Wakeman, formerly county clerk, has been editor and manager for nearly seven years.

The *True Northerner* has long been recognized as one of the influential weekly publications of the state and has been a successful business enterprise from the date of its first appearance. Its equipment of presses, type and material is very complete. Its machinery is run by an electric motor.

The *National Independent* was established at Paw Paw in March, 1878, by Dr. Charles Maynard, as an exponent of Greenbackism. The founder continued the paper until January, 1879, when he sold it to Rufus C. Nash. Mr. Nash did not long remain in possession, but transferred the sheet to Messrs. Smith & Wilson. Mr. Wilson soon retired from the firm and W. E. Smith became sole editor and proprietor. The *Independent* met with sudden death in the latter part of December, 1879, its proprietor leaving the town under somewhat of a dense cloud.

The *Paw Paw Herald* followed after the *Independent*, but had but a brief, precarious existence.

#### “DECATUR REPUBLICAN”

The first attempt at publishing a newspaper in the village of Decatur was made by Rufus C. Nash, about the year 1859 or 1860. His paper was printed in Paw Paw and circulated in Decatur. “Rufe” did not find the venture to be such as to warrant a financial success and only a few issues were ever printed, and even tradition does not preserve the name of this pioneer sheet.

So quickly it was done for,  
We wonder what it was begun for.

Some time in 1860, C. P. Sweet inaugurated the *Decatur Tribune*, which he conducted until about 1864, when it was allowed to depart in peace, and for a time Decatur was without a newspaper.

In the summer of 1865, Moses Hull came from Kalamazoo and launched the *Decatur Clarion* on the journalistic sea. Mr. Hull conducted this sheet for about six months and sold it to A. W.

Briggs, who published it about the same length of time, when it met the fate of its predecessors and sank peacefully out of sight.

Unawed and undeterred by these previous newspaper fiascos, E. A. Blackman and Prof. C. F. R. Bellows, the latter at the time being superintendent of the Decatur schools, in 1867 founded the *Van Buren County Republican*, which proved to be a healthy youngster and has continued until the present time. Prof. Bellows did not remain long connected with the paper, and on his withdrawal, Mr. Blackman became sole proprietor. As indicated by its name, the new journal was an advocate of Republicanism. It continued in that political faith until the presidential campaign of 1872, when, along with its proprietor, it "Greeleyized" and the next year became a straight out Democratic sheet.

In 1876, Mr. Blackman disposed of the plant to H. C. Buffington, who had formerly been engaged in the newspaper business in Cass county. Under the administration of Mr. Buffington, the paper returned to the Republican fold where it has ever since remained. In 1879 Buffington transferred the property to A. M. Wooster and he, in turn, sold it to Robert L. Warren and he to Andrew Johnson. About 1890 the paper was purchased from Mr. Johnson by O. W. and M. O. Rowland, father and son. The father had had several years experience as editor of the *True Northerner* and the son was an expert compositor and pressman and had had considerable experience as a reporter on different daily papers. The father afterward transferred the plant to the younger man, who, after conducting it successfully for a considerable time, removed the plant to Paw Paw, and once more Decatur was without a paper.

When the Messrs. Rowland assumed charge the name had been changed to the *Decatur Republican*, but they restored the old name, dropping "Decatur" and substituting "Van Buren County" instead. The paper was conducted at Paw Paw under that name until its owner became connected with the *True Northerner*, when it was suspended and its list of subscribers transferred to the *Northerner*. Shortly afterward, Messrs. Secord & Dewey purchased the presses, type and material and took them back to Decatur and started the *Decatur Independent*. This was soon transferred to A. N. Moulton, who dropped the name "Independent" and resumed the old appellation of *Decatur Republican* and such it has since remained. Mr. Moulton is still the proprietor and editor and under his direction and management the paper has been prosperous and profitable. It is well equipped with power presses and all the material required for first class newspaper and job printing.

The first newspaper in Lawton, the *Iron Age*, was founded in



1860 by one Joseph Twell. The name was derived from the fact that about that time a large blast furnace was established in the place that for a number of years did a large and prosperous business. The *Age* lived until 1867, when it peacefully breathed its last.

After the demise of the *Age* Judge Geo. W. Lawton began the publication of the *Lawton Gazette*, a weekly sheet the printing of which was done in Paw Paw. The *Gazette* lived less than two years when it surrendered to the inevitable.

In September, 1869, J. H. Wickwire founded the *Lawton Tribune*, which passed in succession through the hands of Cowgill & Jennings, Ambrose Moon, Orno Strong and Ezra Haydon and came to an inglorious end in 1873.

#### “THE LAWTON LEADER”

In 1887, A. E. Marvin established another weekly in Lawton, under the name of the *Lawton Leader*. In the month of May, 1890, the list of subscribers and the “good will” was purchased by Messrs. C. E. Lewis and E. Drury, who put in new presses and material and continued the publication of the paper. Drury parted with his interest about 1898, Lewis at that time becoming sole owner and continuing as such for about eight years. In 1906 he took in as a partner, Rev. W. K. Lane, but Lewis has recently again become the sole proprietor, which, under his administration and management, has become one of the fixed and valued institutions of the town, and which, having survived the usual vicissitudes of the life of a village newspaper, has gained strength with age and bids fair to have a long and useful life. The paper is not attached to any political party, but is strongly in favor of temperance and is a consistent and persistent advocate of the local option law that has been in force in Van Buren county for the past twenty-one years. In this regard, with only one or two exceptions, it does not differ materially from the other newspapers of the county which have almost unanimously accorded their support to that phase of the temperance question.

#### “HARTFORD DAY SPRING”

The first newspaper to make its appearance in the thriving village of Hartford was the *Hartford Day Spring*. Its first issue appeared on the 16th day of November, 1871. Its founders were Messrs. O. D. Hadsell and A. H. Chandler, the latter, however, retiring from the venture when the paper was but a few weeks old. It was continued by Mr. Hadsell, who gained a great degree of notoriety, by reason of the quaintness, sarcasm and bluntness

of his writings, until October 28, 1876, when it was purchased by William H. H. Earle. Mr. Earle edited and published the *Day Spring* about a year, when Luther Sutton assumed the editorship, Mr. Earle continuing as publisher. In 1888 Charles C. Phillips acquired the paper by purchase and remained in its editorial charge until 1893, when the paper again experienced a change of ownership, L. S. Johnson becoming editor and manager. In 1898 H. F. Cochrane assumed charge of the paper under a lease, having associated with him his son, Donald F. Cochrane. A year later a stock company was formed, which purchased the publication from Mr. Johnson. Complete ownership was later acquired by Editor Cochrane and his son, although the *Day Spring* still appears under the name of the Day Spring Publishing Company. With the formation of the stock company began a period of development, in which the old hand press and meager equipment that had sufficed during a succession of ownerships gave way to new machinery, until the *Day Spring* has today one of the most modern equipments possessed by any of the weekly newspapers.

Editor H. F. Cochrane died February 25, 1905, after which the editorship passed to his son, Donald F. Cochrane, who has since continued as editor and owner.

Of all the men who were identified with the early publication of the *Day Spring*, none survives except A. H. Chandler, who, then as now, is a lawyer located in the village. Editor Hadsell died in Chicago in 1892, where he had pursued a successful business career. Mr. Earle died while in charge of the paper; Sutton passed away in 1903. Mr. Phillips, who purchased the property of the Earle estate, is now quartermaster at the Michigan Soldiers' Home, Grand Rapids.

The *Day Spring* is now a six-column paper of from eight to twelve pages, all printed on its own presses, and is a lively exponent of its field.

Mr. Hadsell was a schoolmaster with a limited newspaper experience when he and Mr. Chandler planned the launching of Hartford's first newspaper. The venture was conceived and planned in a day, and so they christened the paper the *Day Spring*. Under the editorship of Mr. Hadsell, it was an aggressive Democratic sheet, reflecting the personal opinions of its editor with the emphasis characteristic of the times. With advent of Editor Earle came a change of political policy and the *Day Spring* has since been continued as a Republican journal, although it is first concerned with the unbiased publication of the news of its immediate field and of the county. The paper has been closely identified with the development of Hartford and few villages are represented by a more aggressive exponent.

During the time when the people of the country were all wrought up over "greenbackism," "free silverism," the crime of '73 (?) and other evanescent political issues, another newspaper, *The People's Alliance* was established in Hartford by Sullivan Cook, who was an ardent advocate of what he, with many others, thought was necessary for the welfare of the people, a radical change in the currency system of the country. The *Alliance* lived for a number of years, but with the decline of the money controversy the paper also declined, until it finally shuffled off its mortal coil and was peacefully laid to rest, another unsuccessful venture in the uncertain field of rural journalism.

The first attempt at journalism in the village of Bangor was made by Charles Gillett in February, 1873, who started a newspaper which he christened the *Bangor Journal*. The venture did not prove a success from a financial standpoint and in the fall of the same year the *Journal* gently breathed its young life away, un-honored and unsung, and it has practically passed out of mind and memory.

Out of the remains of the *Journal* arose another and more vigorous plant. W. W. Secord purchased its remains—that is its type and other material—and established the *Bangor Reflector*, the first issue of which appeared in the month of December, 1873. The new project met with only a limited success under the direction of Mr. Secord, who managed it until April, 1875, when it was purchased by Charles C. Phillips, who made it a valuable property and a paper of influence and fair circulation.

#### "THE BANGOR ADVANCE"

The *West Michigan Advance* was started by G. F. Burkett, in 1881, and was purchased by L. S. Russell the next year, at which time his son, M. F. Russell, started in to learn the printer's trade, and he has never since got the ink off from his fingers. In 1888 Mr. Phillips leased the *Reflector* to Mr. Russell, who consolidated the two papers, under the name of the *Advance and Reflector*. On the first of January, 1891, Mr. Russell turned over the business to his son, M. F. Russell, who found the venture to be profitable, and after managing it for a year purchased the entire plant and it still remains in his possession. The name was changed to the *Bangor Advance*, the "Reflector" disappearing from view. The paper was originally started with a Washington hand press. Mr. Phillips purchased a "Prouty," which has been succeeded by a "Potter drum cylinder." The outfit of the *Advance* is modern and consists of the newspaper press, two job presses, a five-horse

power gasoline engine, abundance of type and all the equipment needful for a first class newspaper and job plant.

Bangor had, at one time, three newspapers, the other two being the *Bangor Breeze* and the *Van Buren County Visitor*. The locality proved to be too breezy for the *Breeze* and after a brief career it blew away. There was, for a considerable length of time, a fierce rivalry between the *Visitor* and the *Advance*, but the strife ended in 1907 by the amalgamation of the two papers, Mr. Russell purchasing the *Visitor* outright, its publisher, Mr. B. F. Harris, entering the employ of the *Advance* as foreman where he has since remained.

#### EARLY LAWRENCE NEWSPAPERS

It was not until 1875 that the village of Lawrence could boast of having a newspaper. That year Theodore L. Reynolds established the *Lawrence Advertiser*. Mr. Reynolds continued this paper until some time in 1877, when he sold it to Robert L. Warren who published it for three years longer. In 1880, Mr. Warren, becoming the owner of the *Decatur Republican*, removed the *Advertiser* plant to Decatur and consolidated the two papers, leaving Lawrence as an open field for some other venturesome newspaper aspirant. A job printing office was continued in the village by different parties, but it was not until November, 1882, that any further effort was made to establish a newspaper, and that effort proved to be exceedingly weak. Messrs. Wilson & Moon started a sheet that they christened the *Lawrence Times*, but it did not live long enough to learn its own name. Its ambitious originators had no press and their "forms" had to be taken to Paw Paw, nine miles distant, to be printed. Only three issues of the *Times* ever saw the light of day, and for about three years no further effort was made to publish a paper in Lawrence. In the spring of 1885 G. M. Vining began the publication of a little six-by-nine paper called the *Basket of Locals* and continued the little sheet until mid-summer, when he revived the *Times* which he continued for five years, but it was too much up-hill traveling; and the *Times* followed in the wake of its predecessors and lay down and died.

For a short time, in 1890, Messrs Cash & Vining published a paper called the *Lyre*, but it was not a success. Possibly people not up in orthography mistrusted the name and so refused to give it their confidence.

The *Van Buren County Visitor*, mentioned as among the Bangor papers, was first established at Lawrence in 1895 by W. E. Thresher and by him removed to Bangor in 1897.

## "LAWRENCE TIMES"

After so many abortive attempts to provide the people of Lawrence and the adjacent country with a local newspaper, it seemed that the time was ripe for a successful effort along that line. On the first of January, 1898, Ernest G. Klock, a newspaper man from Holland, Michigan, brought his outfit to Lawrence and started a new paper, taking the old name of the *Lawrence Times*. It was rather "hard sledding" for the paper and in the fall of 1899 Mr. Klock sold his plant to Miss Vera P. Cobb, of Middleville, Michigan, who conducted it until January, 1901, at which time she disposed of it to James G. Jennings. Mr. Jennings succeeded in giving the paper some prestige and continued to publish it until November, 1909, when he sold it to G. S. Easton of Onsted, Michigan. Mr. Easton has shown himself to be a hustler, has made the *Times* one of the foremost newspapers in the county and has spared no pains to advance the interests of the town. He has put in a large amount of new material, including a typesetting machine. The business men of the village have accorded him a liberal support and the paper has every appearance of having become one of the well-established, permanent and paying newspaper plants of the county.

The first effort at the publication of a newspaper in the little village of Bloomingdale was made in the early seventies when a paper was started at that town, by Mr. W. W. Secord, under the name of the *Bloomingdale Tidings*. Mr. Secord continued the publication of this paper for a few years, but it did not prove to be a financial success, finally "lay down and died," and was buried in the newspaper cemetery of the county among numerous other unsuccessful aspirants for journalistic fame and fortune.

## "BLOOMINGDALE LEADER"

On the 10th day of June, 1881, undaunted by the fate that overtook the *Tidings*, Messrs. M. A. Barber and C. F. Smith founded the *Bloomingdale Leader*, which proved to be possessed of a greater degree of vitality than the *Tidings* and which is yet, after the lapse of thirty years, still in the ring and doing a prosperous business. Originally, the paper was a five-column folio. Messrs. Barber & Smith continued to publish the *Leader* for a couple of years when Barber sold his interest to Smith, who became the sole proprietor, and who, in 1892, added new material, put in new presses and enlarged the paper to a five-column quarto, which it has since remained. In 1895 Mr. R. D. Perkins purchased the plant from Mr. Smith, and has successfully managed the property

for the past sixteen years. A large two story cement building, which will be the future home of the *Leader*, is in process of construction and is nearly completed, and the prospect for future successful business was never better than at the present time.

#### “GOBLEVILLE NEWS”

The *Gobleville News* was established in the hustling little village of Gobleville in the fall or 1890, by J. M. Hall, who was its editor and publisher for nearly fifteen years. Under his administration of affairs the paper became a six-column quarto, with two pages only printed at home, the remainder of the sheet being “plate.” In August, 1905, the present editor and publisher, J. B. Travis, became the owner of the plant and at once doubled the amount of home matter, giving the patrons of the paper four pages of home news, instead of two as theretofore. In June, 1907, the *News* moved into new and commodious quarters on State street, which it now occupies. During the six years of the paper under its present management, it has practically doubled its business in all departments, has purchased a full supply of new and up-to-date type and other material including a power press, and now has a superior outfit for a newspaper of its class. Its editor, Mr. Travis, is a “Michigan boy” born in Hillsdale county, and prior to engaging in the newspaper business was superintendent of schools in various localities in the state.

#### SOUTH HAVEN NEWSPAPERS

The *South Haven Sentinel* was the first newspaper to be established in the village (now city) of South Haven. It was founded in 1867, by Capt. David M. Phillips, a veteran of the Civil war, and, unlike most of the first papers started in the county, it proved a success from the start. Captain Phillips, however, did not long retain the ownership of the *Sentinel*, for one year after it was born he sold it to Dr. Samuel Tobey, who, in turn, transferred it to Capt. W. E. Stewart, another Civil war veteran. Captain Stewart successfully conducted the *Sentinel* until his death, which occurred on the 11th day of July, 1899. The plant then passed into the possession and management of his daughter, Miss Nellie Stewart, who was a pretty good newspaper man (?) herself. The paper has, since that time, undergone change of name and change of ownership until it has finally landed in the office of the *South Haven Daily Gazette*. The change of name occurred while the plant was owned and published by Dr. H. M. Spencer, who came into its ownership after Captain Stewart's decease. It was afterward owned and published by O. C. Schmidt. Under his adminis-

tration the paper was converted into a semi-weekly, but when it passed into its present quarters it was again changed into a weekly. While Captain Stewart owned the *Sentinel* it was a Republican paper and strenuously advocated the principles of that party. Since his death and since it became an *Advocate* it has sometimes advocated political ideas which, to draw it mild, have been very much at variance with the convictions of its founder and former owners.

In 1878 J. Densmore started a "Greenback" paper in South Haven, which he named the *South Haven Record*. After less than a year of life in the place of its birth it was sold to Kalamazoo parties and removed to that city where it continued to support the Greenback party until there was no Greenback party to support the *Record*.

There have been numerous other ventures in the newspaper line in South Haven that have had their little day and then passed into oblivion. Among them were the *Fonetic Klips*, a little monthly sheet issued by Almon J. Pierce. As its title indicates, the purpose of this little monthly novelty was to promote the use of phonetic orthography, of which system the publisher was an ardent supporter.

Other papers that have either been consolidated, amalgamated or abrogated are the *News*, the *Avalanche*, the *Index* and possibly others that have had their little day and passed off the stage.

There are published in the city of South Haven at the present time, two daily papers—the *Tribune* and the *Gazette*; one semi-weekly, the *Tribune-Messenger*, and one weekly, the *Citizens Advocate*.

The *Daily Tribune* was founded in May, 1899, by Ira A. Smith, who converted it into a stock company. The articles of incorporation were executed on the 31st of July, 1902. The stockholders were Ira A. Smith, Hattie B. Smith and Wilbur G. Smith, and the amount of the capital stock was \$10,000. Later the paper passed into the possession of the present owners. The officers of the company are S. H. Wilson, president; C. O. Monroe, vice president, editor and manager; C. J. Monroe, treasurer; F. W. Taylor, manager of advertising and job department. The *Tribune* is a six column folio sheet. Soon after the paper passed into the possession of the present owners, the *Messenger*, a weekly paper that was being published in the city at the time, was merged with the weekly edition of the *Tribune*, under the name of the *Tribune-Messenger*. This sheet was continued as a weekly until March, 1911, when it was changed to a semi-weekly and so remains.

The *Daily Gazette* was started about the first of May, 1909, with F. T. Lincoln as editor. On the 31st day of July, 1902, articles of

incorporation were filed under the name of the South Haven Gazette Company. The amount of capital stock was fixed at \$10,000 and the stockholders were F. F. Rowe and A. E. Kettle, of Kalamazoo, and F. T. Lincoln, of South Haven. Mr. Lincoln continues to be the editor of the paper, which is a seven column folio sheet.

*The Citizens Advocate*, which is the lineal descendant of the *Sentinel*, the first South Haven newspaper, is also published by the Gazette Company, as a weekly journal.

Two dailies, one semi-weekly and one weekly represent a fairly ample supply of newspapers for a town of the size of South Haven, but they all appear to be prospering and to be well patronized. Neither of these journals misses an opportunity to advance the interests of the city and vicinity and the enterprising citizens of the place appear to fully appreciate the efforts of the press in their behalf and to give their papers a generous support.



## CHAPTER XVII

### MEDICINE AND SURGERY

MEDICAL SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH—PREVENTIVE MEDICINE—SURGERY—  
THE COUNTRY PHYSICIAN AND THE TRAINED NURSE—EARLY PHY-  
SICIANS OF VAN BUREN COUNTY—PAW PAW PHYSICIANS—BAN-  
GOR — GOBLEVILLE — HARTFORD — COVERT — LAWRENCE — LAW-  
TON—THE PROFESSION IN SOUTH HAVEN—SOUTH HAVEN CITY  
HOSPITAL—DECATUR—WILL CARLETON'S "THE COUNTRY DOC-  
TOR"—THE VETERINARY SCHOOL.

*By Dr. G. W. Cornish*

In the compilation of this chapter it has been necessary to digress somewhat from the usual routine of county histories. On account of the wonderful advancement of medicine during the period which this work covers, a general review of the progress of this science would be the history of the progress of medicine in this county.

We have summed up as concisely as possible the recent changes that have taken place along this line, and have endeavored to present them in such a manner that they may be readily comprehended and understood by the lay reader and may also prove both interesting and instructive.

In a work that covers so much ground it has been necessary to quote quite freely from the writings of medical profession and others.

To those whose kindly assistance and ready response to inquiries have so materially aided us in acquiring much information and data for this chapter, we desire to express our most sincere thanks and hearty appreciation.

The problem of public health, always of vital interest, assumes with the advance of civilization, the increase of population, the social and economic condition incident thereto, greater importance from year to year.

The one great problem of life is the preservation of health, and this one word covers the whole realm of the physician's labors, and hygiene or science and art of the preservation of health is

receiving more attention today than ever before. Wherever people have correct ideas as to the requirements of health and make intelligent efforts to obey its laws, sickness is comparatively rare and the very best work both physical and mental is accomplished. Not only does the individual help himself to progress and also those about him, but the community at large is benefited so that "public health is public wealth."

There are more people making themselves "physical bankrupts" by violating the laws of health than the great majority of people think. Unfortunately, very few people will regard what the physician says on the subject until it is too late. However, it is the duty of every physician to do all in his power to teach his patrons the laws of the preservation of health and prevention of disease.

Roosevelt says: "The preservation of national vigor should be a matter of patriotism." Hygiene can prevent more crime than law. We need education along health lines. "Ignorance is the greatest criminal of the twentieth century. It smothers and strangles more babies, it eats out the hearts of more women, and cuts the throats of more men, it injures more homes, and fills more untimely graves than all the felons who fill the prisons of this world."

#### MEDICAL SCIENTIFIC RESEARCH

A marked feature of this age is scientific research, and many great and useful additions have been made to the world's knowledge within the last fifty years.

The acquirement of a fuller knowledge of the properties of steam and electricity and their practical employment have revolutionized the world. Human conveniences have been multiplied and human comforts have increased, but the results of scientific advancement have not been merely material; they have made for a greater amity and closer union between men and people. Medical science has gone apace with sister sciences. The physician has been no less active than the physicist and the electrician. Within the past three decades a great mass of actual pain has been lifted from off suffering humanity, social conditions have been improved, life has been prolonged, and made better and happier. The world is not ungratefully blind to the fact that progress in medicine and surgery has had an incalculable humanitarian importance.

Medical science can boast no less than any other science so far as progress is concerned, though our progress is not so visible to the eye as others are—such as ship-building that made it possible to cross the Atlantic in less than five days; steam and electricity

which revolutionized the commerce of the world and made it possible to travel sixty miles or more an hour by rail; air ships which fly thousands of feet in the air; the telegraph, telephone, the wireless system which in times of war and storms will be of untold benefit, and I cannot forget the horseless carriages that convey the doctors to suffering patients in almost no time with a speed of from twenty to one hundred miles an hour. These are some of the very conspicuous results of the present day progress in science that strike the eye. But stop and think of the number of human lives saved as a result of medical advancement and of the great undertakings that sanitation and hygiene have made possible as a result of discoveries of causes of disease. It can then be compared more than favorably with the advances made in other branches of science.

The doctors are the connecting link between that great medical body which handles the vast majority of the diseases we would prevent and the general public, the victim of those diseases. This means that the doctor is awake and must awaken the people to their duty to themselves and make it plain to them that no man has a right so to keep his house or so to live his life in a civilized community as to jeopardize his neighbor's health or happiness. It is said in China it is the custom to pay the physician a certain amount to keep you well. When the patient is ill the pay ceases. This unique practice has much to recommend it. It means that we, the doctors, shall teach all our people that the duty of keeping clean in a physical sense is as high as that of moral cleanliness. This is accomplished in a great degree by teaching patients how to prevent diseases, how to avoid diseases instead of curing them.

#### PREVENTIVE MEDICINE

The *Philadelphia Ledger* of May 5, 1911, reports in substance the speech of President Taft on preventive medicine: "Whatever hostages to civilization were given by the United States in the war of 1898 have been wonderfully redeemed. The unwelcome conquest of undesired territory in the tropics has been turned to the world's advantage by the conquest over tropical disease. This is the greatest triumph in the history of the American army. The army did not do it all, nor is the progress achieved since 1898 to be boasted of as a peculiarly national achievement. The study of bacteriology and the causation of disease has been going on in the laboratories and hospitals of the wide world, from British India all the way round the globe, through Europe and America and over the Pacific to Japan. What our army doctors did was to keep

alert to every discovery and suggestion and apply it as the opportunity came to them, with a scientific thoroughness and a military efficiency that changed the whole aspect of life in tropical countries.

“Need I remind you of the names of men made famous, who are dear to the hearts of the nation for the great and unselfish work they have done to preserve health and life? Close investigation and experimentation, demonstrated that the dread yellow fever was due to the mosquito and could be banished, and that malaria is not ‘bad air’ as its name indicates, but it is the poison of a certain kind of mosquito, and ‘Yellow Jack’ is the same, only a different kind of mosquito. It was early observed that exposure to night air was frequently followed by either malaria or yellow fever, and this as well as other observations gave rise to a supposed similarity of cause of these two diseases. All this is now explained by the discovery of the fact that the two kinds of mosquitoes which communicate these two diseases are night birds. It is all very simple, after we know. It is very gratifying that our country has been able to show to the world one of the most striking examples in the history of preventive medicine by the extermination of yellow fever through the discoveries of Drs. Reed and Carroll, and the practical application of their researches by Colonel Gorgas has made it possible for the nation to undertake a great engineering task for years considered impossible by scientific men of other people. Medical science shall have its share in the glory of the achievement of the Panama Canal, a national dream realized. Were it not for this discovery this great canal could not be completed. If United States had done nothing more than to show the Cubans how to prevent these terrible diseases it alone would have repaid many times over all the loss and suffering of the Spanish war. The redemption of the Philippines from all manner of diseases by efficient sanitation, vaccination and the extermination of disease bearing pests would make the American occupancy of the islands glorious, even if it had accomplished nothing for the mental advancement of the people.

“The value of vaccination must be admitted by every sane mind as a preventive of smallpox. In well vaccinated Germany but one person a year in every million dies of smallpox. In England, where vaccination is general but not universal, twenty persons in a million die of the disease. In the Philippine Islands in certain districts where there had been 6,000 deaths annually before vaccination, one year after its completion Dr. Victor G. Heiser reports that not a single death from smallpox has been known.

“In the comparative restricted field of military medicine alone

we have but to recall the awful scourge of typhoid fever in the camp at Chickamauga and contrast with it the army reports of today to recognize the astounding progress of twelve years. In the Spanish War hardly a regiment escaped typhoid and the death rate among the affected was appalling. In the division now in Texas living for two months under canvass in a rain soaked country, there has been one case, a civilian, not protected by vaccination against typhoid. Thus by our vaccines and serums, our hygienic and sanitary precautions and by the alert watchfulness of specially trained physicians we are able to prevent epidemics, and how has our mortality decreased."

The practitioner of medicine saves lives one at a time, and right noble is his calling. But is it not infinitely wiser to prevent the pollution by sewage of a stream supplying a city of a million than to fight that pollution in the bodies of 10,000 innocent victims of filth? Is it not better far to prevent the pollution of our food, houses, vehicles and streets from tuberculosis than to spend millions on treatment and then see our loved ones die by the tens of thousands? Is it not cheaper to spend a hundred million of dollars and rid our country of every mosquito than to see business wither at flood-tide under blighting grip of yellow fever, and our kindred and friends perish from the pest, while malaria takes its yearly tribute of thousands of lives in our country and destroys the earning power to the extent of probably \$50,000,000 annually and perhaps double that? Shall we not vaccinate all our people at a cost of 25 cents each rather than leave some hundreds to die annually, and some other hundreds of thousands to be branded with scars? Vaccination, with re-vaccination until the susceptibility to vaccine is exhausted is an absolute protection from an attack of smallpox, but there is no known remedy which in any way modifies the disease once it is well started.

Of no less importance to mankind is the wonderful discovery of diphtheritic anti-toxin. In this country more than 100,000 lives are saved annually by the use of this serum.

We shall better estimate the value of disease prevention in our time by considering the losses which the human race has in the past sustained by reason of the non-existence of an adequate and scientific prevention. Take for example the bubonic plague some times called "Black Death," or the "Great Mortality" which is said to be the most dreadful calamity ever visited upon mankind. It is said that when the plague visited London it killed 50,000 people in one year. In Constantinople there were daily more than 10,000 victims. One third the population of Persia is said to have been bestroyed by it and one half the population of Europe was destroyed by this disease in the 14th century. But of the great

destroyers of mankind none has ever been comparable with tuberculosis—"Great White Plague." It is killing 5,000,000 people in the world every year. However, tuberculosis no longer claims its victims in these days unchallenged as those who contract it are not abandoned as hopeless cases for many in the incipiency of the disease recover. But the cry on all sides is not so much how to cure it as how to prevent it. How to stamp it out.

The recent causation of the hookworm disease has likewise been found to have its origin in soil pollution and stagnant waters in a similar manner to that of typhoid as it is an intestinal disease, and now that the cause of this disease is known the spread of it will doubtless soon be under control.

Of late years, much interest has been manifested in prevention and cure of one of the most fatal diseases when once infected of any of the contagions, that of tetanus. No doubt the unsuccessfulness of the serum treatment of this disease is largely due to the fact that the treatment is not used sufficiently early. The physicians need the co-operation of legislative bodies in accomplishing a sane Fourth of July, thus doing away with source of infection of a large percentage of this disease.

Above we deem sufficient to give the reader some idea of the advancement in medical research in the last few years among infectious and contagious diseases, although many more might be enumerated.

The one thing we have done well in the last few years is developing of the preventive side of medicine, the triumph of which we have above mentioned. How is this accomplished? One of the most encouraging features of modern civilization is the general interest which is being aroused in the matter of healthful and hygienic methods of living. All these advances have been the result of agitation and education among the laity, by the progressive physician. Hygienic measures and varied environment have certainly replaced much of the drugging which was the only recourse in former years, but it must be borne in mind that these by themselves have by no means covered the whole treatment of disease as is sometimes fondly imagined, nor do they justify us in withholding other therapeutic agents, already well approved by experience in conjunction with them.

Within the last few years there have arisen several non-drug branches of the healing art, such as chiropractic, osteopathy, new thought, Emmanuel movement, magnetic healing, Christian science and other cults or "pathies," nearly all of which could be classed under the head of psycho-therapy or mind cure and massage; each and every one of which has an element of truth on which it bases its claims and in functional troubles, and to some extent in

organic disease, exerts a curative effect. Also infra-red and ultra-violet rays as curative agencies are receiving considerable recognition.

Someone says: "One of the most important relationships between the medical profession and citizenship at large exists in the carefully planned and properly carried out system of medical supervision of school children. The influence that physical defects have upon retardation in school work is becoming well recognized. It is a lamentable fact that many school children are unjustly adjudged of being mentally deficient, or dull and backward, when in fact this deficiency is due to remedial physical defects. It is a deplorable fact that thirty per cent of all school children are suffering from diseases of the eye."

Dr. Stanley Hall says: "What shall it profit a child if he gain the whole world of knowledge and lose his own health?" The thinking mind, the equipped mind, and the healthy body are the three things necessary to make the ideal life, and the greatest of these is the healthy body. Our law makers are beginning to recognize the necessity of legislation along these lines. Already a man who risks the spread of tuberculosis and other pulmonary diseases by expectoration in public places is amenable to law. The treatment of children's diseases is now eminently a matter of encouraging national reaction. Air is admitted in abundance, children are properly fed, and they are taught the importance of cleanliness. "Children should be warned against open fruit and candy stands on streets, street soda fountain, open waffle wagons, hokey-pokey ice-cream, and the public drinking cup. Housewives should not buy foods in open, fly-invested markets or those exposed to street dust, flies, animals and promiscuous public handling. Investigate your milkman, your baker, your ice man and your marketman. Know where your ice cream is made and how." These are a few of the instructions of Michigan Board of health.

We are becoming forcibly acquainted with the facts of the pernicious character of flies in spreading disease, and are being aroused to the great necessity of destroying them. No longer can we patiently tolerate the little pests good naturedly. Toleration in the matter is a deadly error of omission. We must wage an active warfare upon them in the name of humanity. Never drive a fly from a sick-room but swat him on the spot.

#### SURGERY

As to surgery which is probably one of the most fascinating divisions of the work of a physician, two prominent discoveries were made during the period which we cover that revolutionized the

practice of surgery, namely, anaesthesia and antiseptics. The first abolished pain as a disturbing element during operative procedures, and the second prevented suppuration during the healing process. Together they effect a painless operation and rapid healing of the wound. Operations that a half century ago were unthought of and even unthinkable on account of their danger, are daily performed with the most absolute success. The surgeon of **today enters and explores** the abdominal cavity with as little hesitancy as he would amputate a toe or finger. The battle field of the late wars bear positive proof of the advancement in surgery. The mortality from wounds being only about one-sixth of that of the wars of a half century ago.

Probably no recent discovery has aroused more interest or curiosity in the people of the world than the discovery by Roentgen of Germany in 1895 of the X-ray which is a kind of light produced by electricity and is capable of penetrating wood, flesh, and other organic substances. Practical use of the rays is made in looking within the body so as to determine by sight the condition of the bones and the location of substances imbedded in the flesh. As an adjunct for diagnostic purposes in both medicine and surgery it has proved a wonderful aid. In fractures and dislocations, in locating foreign bodies, in the treatment of some types of skin diseases and cancer, and in the examination of many of the internal organs its value is beyond dispute.

#### THE COUNTRY PHYSICIAN AND TRAINED NURSE

The country physician is compelled to handle nearly the entire field of work without assistance. Not even a trained nurse. He usually finds his most difficult cases many miles from help, and nine times out of ten too poor to obtain a nurse or extra physician. Consequently the country physician has to "strip off and sail in." He handles the compound fracture as readily as would a whole hospital staff. He comes out as successfully with his transverse or face presentation as the best of the maternity hospital. And many other such cases he handles alone which the city doctor would **not undertake without a trained nurse and an extra physician.** One of the most valuable accessories in recent years to the successful handling of disease is the trained nurse. Not a few people could bear witness to the fact that they owe their lives to the untiring efforts of the faithful nurse. Only the physician can appreciate at full value her assistance, who during the critical hours, or days or weeks faithfully cares for her patient, watches every symptom, **rightly interprets its meaning, whether for good or for**



evil, and promptly and intelligently applies the prescribed remedial measure.

Many are the physicians and many are the trustful nurses who have laid down their lives in their efforts to relieve suffering humanity from the ravages of virulent contagions, with no rattle of musketry, no din of battle, no cheers of comrades, no thrilling strains of military music to stimulate and urge them forward to meet the enemy, but calmly and deliberately they place their lives as a bulwark between death and disease, many times with no prospects of recompense or remuneration other than the conscientious satisfaction of duty to mankind. No annals tell of battles fought and won; no songs tell of their brave deeds; no flowers deck their graves; no anniversaries emulate and commemorate their virtues; no monuments are erected in honor of fallen heroes. And again, the physician who worked and studied hard and long to perfect some wonderful discovery that has been the means of relieving so much pain and suffering and the saving of so many lives, unlike other scientific inventors, does not ask for a patent; does not demand a royalty on every life saved, but gives it to the world gratuitously for the benefit of mankind.

The triumphs which have been already achieved by preventive medicine have rightly won the plaudits of the world; but we must not forget that the pharmacologist whose scientific investigation of drugs has been no small factor in contributing toward success. The most unsavory concoctions of the modern pharmacy are as the "nectar of the gods," when compared with the medicines of olden times. A few years ago the pharmacist or physician made all of the elixirs, tinctures, plasters, pills, etc. from crude drugs and with no degree of certainty as to their strength. The elegant pharmacy of today furnishes palatable mixtures, coated tablets, capsulated bitter or nauseous medicines, serums, vaccines, etc. with unquestionable accuracy.

#### EARLY PHYSICIANS OF VAN BUREN COUNTY

The early physicians of Van Buren county were pioneers and they were the guardians of a widely dispersed population. Aside from their professional duties they contributed their full share to the material development of a newly opened country. Some were men of culture who had gained their medical education in college but the greater number were of limited educational attainments; their professional knowledge had been acquired in the office of established practitioners of more or less ability. Of either class, almost without exception, they were practical men of great force of character who gave cheerful and efficacious assist-

ance to the suffering, daily journeying on horseback scores of miles, over a country almost destitute of roads and encountering swollen, unbridged streams and destitute of water-proof garments or other now common protections against weather. Out of necessity the pioneer physician developed rare quickness of perception and self-reliance. The specialist was then unknown and the physician was called upon to treat every phase of bodily ailment serving as physician, surgeon, oculist, dentist and often times as nurse. His books were few and there were no practitioners more able than himself with whom he might consult; his medicines were simple and carried upon his person, and every preparation of pill or solution was the work of his own hands.

To the men of those days we owe much for our present knowledge and lightened burdens, of which they knew nothing in the days of their activity. They blazed the way for us through pathless forests and unmarked fields of medical research and we certainly should feel very grateful for their noble life-work.

It is at all times pathetic to contemplate the dependence that is placed on the skill and ability of the regular practitioner to accomplish cures in cases that are oftentimes beyond human aid, and if it is so at this time when the physician is aided in his work by all the modern appliances that scientific investigation has developed, how much more so it was in pioneer times when he had not only to cope with disease but with an unhealthful environment that tended to tear down his work as rapidly as accomplished. Chills and fevers in the early days were great promoters of disease, weakening the system and rendering it a vulnerable prey to the epidemics that were prevalent each year, and the miasma of the swamps was a condition that ever existed, so that the patients were only relieved to again become victims of a malady produced from this source. Quinine and liver pills were kept in every household, and indeed they formed an important part of the equipment of the pioneer physician, who supplemented their use by medicines to allay the fever following the chills. Oftentimes, however, he was not sent for until disease had made such ravages, that the utmost he could do was to relieve the suffering of the lingering patient who was beyond the aid of human skill. Doctors were few in those days, and it was not unusual for a father to take a sick child in his arms and tenderly carry it for many miles to consult a physician in regard to its ailment, which likely as not was of some virulent type of germ disease. Local prejudices existed then, as now, and who shall say that they were not well founded, for faith in the ability of the attending physician is a valuable aid to the work of the remedies employed.

In those days, it was not unusual, in the dark hours of night,

to hear the galloping horse of the hurried messenger go speeding past, and in the gray of the morning to see, returning home, the familiar form of the weary physician who had traveled far in the cold or wet, smoothed the pillow of the pain-racked brow or ushered into the world a new being, in whose life he ever after took the interest that can only be engendered by a life-long association in a community fraught with human interest.

To the mother of the household the family physician was regarded as a dependence as indispensable, as is the check book of the modern financier of today, and in her he found a faithful ally who in the administration of his remedies expended a generous share of loving solicitude that inspired the complete confidence of the patient. Indeed so keenly alive did she become to the necessity of coping with disease under adverse circumstances that in her wanderings in the fields or woods she was ever on the lookout for roots and herbs to be used for medicinal purposes. Mullein leaves were gathered and dried to be smoked for catarrh; hoarhound was brewed and the tea used for making candy for colds; sassafras was made into a tea in the spring time and the children were induced to drink it under the representation by the diplomatic mother that it was a rare treat, and if the youngster presumed to differ from this opinion he was made to drink it anyhow; catnip was made into a tea for infants and nervous people, and wild cherry bark into a tonic, and sundry other roots and herbs had their various uses, known to the careful mother. In every neighborhood it seemed there was some woman who was especially gifted in the line of nursing and who was sent for by neighbors for miles around in case of sickness. Many times in the pioneer days a messenger would come, often times in the night, setting the dogs to barking and startling the household by loud rappings on the door, saying, "Mother is sick, Mrs. Blank," or "baby is sick," and "mother wants you to come over right away," and there never was any hesitation in complying with such requests or thought of pay for the rendering of such services, and the same excited messenger who called for the neighborhood nurse went speeding on to bring the doctor.

#### PAW PAW PHYSICIANS

Van Buren county's first physician according to the best knowledge obtainable was one Dr. Barrett who located in Paw Paw in the summer of 1835. He came from New York. After practicing in Paw Paw for three or four years he moved to Kalamazoo, where he spent the remaining portion of his life.

In the fall of 1835 Dr. Levi H. Warner settled in or near Paw Paw. Dr. Warner with several others came from New York. After following his profession in this county for about twelve years he returned to New York.

Dr. Torrey came to Paw Paw in 1837 practiced several years. On account of failing health he returned East and soon after died.

Dr. Josiah Andrews from Cayuga county, New York, located at Paw Paw in 1838, one of nature's noblemen, representative in state legislature in 1846, later associated with Dr. H. C. Clapp and with Dr. L. C. Woodman. Was surgeon of the Third Michigan Cavalry during the Civil War. Died at Paw Paw in 1886, age seventy-five years.

Dr. John W. Emery came from New Hampshire to Paw Paw in 1848, died in 1884, age eighty-six.

Dr. George Bartholomew practiced in Paw Paw three years. Was surgeon of Panama R. R. Co., died in Keeler in 1887, age sixty-six.

Dr. Wm. B. Hathaway of Jefferson Co., New York located at South Haven 1853, came to Paw Paw 1861, practiced quite a number of years.

Dr. Henry C. Clapp, Cayuga Co., New York came to Paw Paw in 1842. Studied with Dr. Andrews. Practiced in Paw Paw several years then removed to Chicago.

Dr. Lucius C. Woodman, was assistant surgeon Third Michigan Cavalry and surgeon Eleventh Cavalry in Civil War, an excellent surgeon and a very fine man. Was partner of Dr. Andrews after the close of war. Died 1883, age fifty-five.

Dr. Leroy R. Dibble practiced in Paw Paw several years; in the early '70s removed to Albion, Mich.

Dr. Edwin B. Dunning practiced in Paw Paw for quite a number of years and until his death was member of the pension examining board. Died 1894, age sixty-four.

Dr. Charles M. O'Dell came to Paw Paw in the early '50s. Died in Paw Paw 1895, age eighty-one.

Dr. Eugene Bitely settled in Paw Paw in 1853 and practiced there until his death. Died 1873, age forty-nine.

Dr. Michael E. Whalen, died in Paw Paw 1895, age thirty-five.

Dr. Charles S. Maynard practiced in Paw Paw for many years. died 1910, age eighty.

Dr. Geo. Hilton came to Paw Paw in 1883 and in 1887 moved to Chicago.

Dr. L. E. Curtiss, born in Paw Paw, began practice in his home town. He removed to Berrien county a few years ago.

Dr. A. W. Hendryx, homeopathist, practiced in Paw Paw, for a few years. Dr. F. T. Roach, a young man, a graduate of the University of Michigan, began practice here a few years ago, but removed to Detroit. Dr. Roscoe W. Broughton, another Paw Paw born and bred also a graduate of the same institution, began practice in his home town, but soon removed to the far west where he is now practicing.

Dr. Henry Charles began practice here, but recently removed to Kalamazoo.

The resident physicians: Dr. Wilbur F. Hoyt, Dr. J. C. Maxwell, Dr. Geo. B. Jackson and Dr. Barnabas O'Dell, Dr. M. F. Smith, Osteopath, Miss L. R. Lofquist, Chiropractic.

The registered dental surgeons of Paw Paw are: Dr. W. C. Y. Ferguson, Dr. O. E. Lanphear and Dr. Vern Van Fossen.

#### BANGOR

Dr. Joel Camp came from New York State to Bangor when it was a wilderness, being obliged to go on foot and horseback. He was truly a pioneer. Practiced about fifty-five years. Died 1901 at the age of eighty-five.

Dr. Jas. E. Ferguson was born in New York State 1824, graduate of Jefferson Medical College and came to Bangor in 1866 where he practiced continuously until his death in 1903. He served two terms in the State Legislature.

Dr. John L. Cross graduated from Cincinnati Medical College in 1872. He came to Bangor 1877 where he practiced until his death in 1883.

Dr. M. C. Cronin came to Bangor in 1882. He graduated from Medical department of Butler University, Indiana, in 1881, and built up a very large and remunerative practice in this vicinity. He moved to Mt. Clemens, Mich., about 1898 where he still lives and has an extensive practice.

Dr. John R. Giffen, a native of Canada came to Bangor in 1894, having graduated from Williamette University the same year. He is still practicing his chosen profession in Bangor and stands high in the community.

Dr. N. A. Williams a native of Michigan came to Bangor 1897, graduated from University of Michigan 1883. He is still located in Bangor and is one of the leading physicians of the county.

Dr. E. G. Low came to Bangor from Breedsville about 1904 and is still in active practice.

Dr. James Murphy, a native of Ireland, came to Bangor in 1900. Dr. Murphy graduated from University of Pennsylvania in 1866. He died in Bangor, 1906 at the age of sixty-three.

Dr. Norman D. Murphy, son of Dr. James Murphy, was born in Canada, graduated from University of Michigan 1904, began practice in Bangor the same year, and through his integrity and skill is enjoying a very remunerative practice and is held in high esteem.

#### GOBLEVILLE

Dr. Babbit located in Pine Grove township about 1864-65.

Dr. E. A. Bulson located in Gobleville about 1869, practiced

here for a number of years, went from here to Jackson where he is at this time making a specialty of the diseases of the eye, ear, nose and throat.

Dr. J. F. Failing followed Dr. Bulson in 1878, going from here to Grand Rapids, later to California where he died of consumption.

Dr. J. C. Anderson located here in the 'eighties and stayed only a few years.

Dr. J. J. Carpenter located here about 1892 where he practiced until his death about two years ago.

Dr. E. V. N. Hall has been here about twenty years. He is still practicing.

Dr. J. H. Bennett practiced here about a year, ten or twelve years ago, and is now located in Boyne City, Mich.

Dr. Michael Mason was located at Pine Grove for a number of years during the '70s, went from there to Muskegon where he died a few years ago.

Dr. C. L. Bennett came here after graduating from Ann Arbor seven or eight years ago. He has built up a large practice and is doing well.

Dr. Edna Goble located here about 1901. On account of ill health she has not been able to practice for the past two years. She is a daughter of H. E. Goble for whom the village was named.

Dr. Hugh Smith has been here about sixteen months and is doing a large business.

Dr. J. W. Wisely has been here about a year. For a number of years previous he was located four miles north on the Allegan road.

Dr. C. M. Wilkinson has been located in Kendall for a number of years where he has a large practice and is a strong man in his profession.

Dr. G. J. Shand, dentist, located here about 1905, went from here in 1910 to Kalamazoo where he is now located.

Dr. de Goenaga followed Dr. Shand and is doing a good business.

#### HARTFORD

Dr. Milton F. Palmer was a native of Bridgewater, Oneida county, New York. When eleven years of age he came to Michigan and settled in Jackson county where he grew to manhood. After completing his professional education he came to Hartford in 1852 where he spent the remainder of his life, his death occurring in 1904. He was a man of strong intellect and a lover of nature. A vein of poetry ran through his life and he wrote

many beautiful and acceptable verses, all of which are unpublished. Of the difficulties and privations of the pioneer physician, Doctor Palmer had his full share. Called to visit a patient at South Haven, he would drive as far as the wagon road could be traversed, then saddle his horse for a few miles further ride, finishing the journey by Indian trail on foot.

Dr. W. A. Engle was born in Allegany county, New York, in 1827. His grandfather served in the Revolutionary war and his great-grandfather participated in the noted Germantown battle. Dr. Engle came to Michigan in 1855 and was graduated from the medical department of the University in 1856, locating at Hartford the same year, continuing the practice of medicine until 1900. He was very talented as a poet and had several books of poems published which received many commendations. He had the honor of being appointed post-master of Hartford by President Lincoln.

Dr. Ezra A. Palmer was a native of Orleans county, New York, coming to Paw Paw with his parents when three years of age. After completing the study of medicine at the University of Michigan in 1876, he located in Hartford where he continued the practice of medicine thirty-three years. In private life Dr. Palmer was a man of pronounced opinions and strong convictions. In professional life and in business affairs he was eminently successful, and hewed strictly to the line of personal integrity. Dr. Palmer with Dr. Rose of Decatur, and Dr. Cronin then of Bangor, now of Mt. Clemens, Mich. constituted the original U. S. Pension Examining Board of this county. Dr. Palmer died Sept. 17, 1909.

Dr. Andrew Robinson located in Hartford in 1905, remaining only five or six months when he moved to Allegan where he conducts a hospital and gives considerable attention to surgery.

Those practicing in Hartford at the present time are: Dr. H. C. Maynard, who located in Hartford in 1872; Dr. R. I. Lawrence in 1882; Dr. W. R. Sober in 1900; Dr. John McLean 1902; Dr. J. D. Stewart 1905. The present dentists are: Dr. B. W. Dineous and Dr. F. M. Hinkley.

#### COVERT

Dr. Logie was the first physician to locate in Covert, coming here about 1874. Dr. Logie was in Covert about two years and sold out to G. D. Carnes of South Haven.

Dr. Carnes moved to South Haven in 1883 and Dr. O. M. Vaughn came to Covert the same year, where he has since resided.

Dr. Osmer Letson moved to Covert from McDonald, Michigan.

After a few years he discontinued practice and died a few months ago.

Dr. Edwin Low now in Bangor was in Covert a few months.

Dr. M. McCausland, now in Imlay City, Michigan, was in Covert a few years.

Dr. E. F. Partello came to Covert in 1907 and left in 1910.

Dr. Marvin now of Coloma practiced in Covert while residing on his farm two miles from here.

#### LAWRENCE

We think no better history of the physicians of Lawrence can be given than is summed up in a letter written in response to our inquiry by Mrs. A. Rice, who is eighty-seven years of age. We print the letter verbatim. "For some twelve or fourteen years after the first settlement in the town there was no resident doctor. The pioneers when ill used such home remedies as were at hand and in critical cases sent to Paw Paw for a doctor. The pastor of the Congregational church, Rev. John L. Marvin, had studied medicine before he became a preacher and in extreme cases he ministered to the bodies of the people as well as the souls.

"On one occasion Mrs. Barnes, my mother, fell and broke her arm. Mr. Marvin dressed the injured arm, but fearing that it might not be right he the next day drove to Paw Paw and brought Dr. Andrews to inspect the injured arm who pronounced it all right. The first resident physician in Lawrence was Dr. Prindle, who came in 1849, or there about from the state of New York. After about a year he returned to New York and brought home a bride. A year or two later he removed to Dowagiac where he remained until his death a good many years later. At his death there was universal mourning as he had endeared himself to the people especially the poor by his kindness. He was a doctor of the old school his chief remedies were calomel and quinine, blisters and bleeding.

"The next doctor to settle in Lawrence was Dr. Nelson Rowe whose son Rufus Rowe still lives in Lawrence. Doctor Rowe came to Lawrence about 1859 or 1860 and remained until his death some years later, Dr. Rowe was a man much respected and trusted by his patients. His system was Allopathy. About the time Doctor Rowe came to Lawrence Doctor Camp came from Bangor to Lawrence; he only remained a year or two and returned to Bangor where he spent the remainder of his life. His death occurred several years ago. Not far from the time Doctor Rowe



came to Lawrence, Doctor Jackson came to live in Lawrence but only stayed about a year and then removed to Paw Paw.

“Doctor Sylvanus Rowe came to Lawrence sometime in 1854 from the state of Iowa and remained until his death, several years ago. Doctor Rowe was a man greatly beloved and respected for his unvarying kindness, while his patients had great confidence in his skill. His system was Eclectic. Doctor W. E. Rowe, his son, was born in Lawrence, studied with his father and graduated at the University of Michigan, began practice with his father in Lawrence, is at present or was when last I heard living and practicing in Grand Rapids.

“In 1867, or thereabout, Doctor Edward Cleveland came to Lawrence. He was the son of Rev. Edward Cleveland, pastor of the Congregational Church. I think they came from state of New York. Doctor Cleveland practiced a part of the time in partnership with Doctor Rowe. Doctor Cleveland remained five or six years then removed with his father’s family to Coffeyville, Kansas.

“Doctor O. B. Wiggins came to Lawrence before Doctor Cleveland but I cannot give date. Doctor Wiggins came from state of New York, he was for a time in practice with Doctor Sylvanus Rowe but not long. Doctor Wiggins died in Lawrence a few years ago. Doctor A. S. Haskin came to Lawrence when a young man 1857, and quietly made his way and acquired many warm friends. He still lives in town though now out of practice by reason of age and ill health. He was one of the leading physicians of the county and had an extensive practice. Doctor A. W. Hendricks came to Lawrence from White Pigeon, Mich., and remained two or three years then removed to Paw Paw where remained a few years and then removed to other parts. Doctor Zell L. Baldwin came to Lawrence from Manchester, Mich., in 1888, and entered into partnership with Doctor Rowe. After residing in Lawrence several years he removed to Niles, Michigan. Doctor Baldwin is at present head of a tuberculosis sanitarium at Kalamazoo.

“Doctor A. G. Six and Doctor W. P. Bope had been chums in Columbus, Ohio and came to Lawrence at or about the same time, 1897. Three or four years later, Doctor Bope removed to Decatur and went into practice there. Doctor Six still practices in Lawrence. Doctor Donaldson came to Lawrence, in 1902 and remained two years, from same place in Kent county. Doctor F. A. Butter came to Lawrence in 1900 from Illinois. Doctor F. B. Crowell came to Lawrence in 1897 where he is now doing a general practice.”

## LAWTON

In the early 'fifties a Dr. Gregg came to Lawton, where he practiced two or three years.

In 1855 Dr. Shankland came and practiced a number of years.

Dr. Hazen came also in 1855 and stayed three years.

Dr. Barnum came and practiced in Lawton a short time then went to Grand Rapids.

Dr. Griffin came to Lawton from Edwardsburg, 1862; after practicing here about ten years he returned to Edwardsburg.

Dr. Taylor came to Lawton and stayed but a few months.

Dr. Lee came to Lawton shortly after the war, he was a fleshy man and in summer time rested during the day and worked at night.

Dr. Eugene Bitely although a residence of Paw Paw for many years practiced extensively in Lawton.

Dr. M. V. B. McKinney came from Florida, Ohio in 1867, when he practiced until 1884 when he went to Hastings, Nebr. He returned to Lawton in 1892 for a year, then went to Kalamazoo where he resided until his death in 1901.

Dr. O. F. Thomas came to Lawton 1869, practiced here for twelve years and removed to Lakeland, Minn., where he died in 1910.

Dr. West came to Lawton in 1870 and died in 1886.

Dr. Megan came from Pine Grove to Lawton in 1880, stayed a few years and went west.

Dr. Long practiced in Lawton two or three years and removed to Mendon.

Dr. Hipp came from Chicago to Lawton in 1881 and returned to Chicago in 1884.

Dr. Iddings came to Lawton from Lansing but stayed only a few months.

Dr. Moffitt came from Indiana to Lawton in 1885 and in 1888 went west where he died.

Dr. I. E. Hamilton came to Lawton in 1887 and is still practicing here.

Dr. F. A. Phillips came to Lawton in 1891, after a two or three years stay he went to Chicago to specialize in diseases of the Eye, Ear, Nose and Throat. After practicing in Chicago a few years, on account of ill health, he removed to California.

Dr. G. W. Cornish followed Dr. Phillips and is still practicing here.

Dr. Storrs came from Detroit to Lawton in 1895, remained about five years when he went to Minneapolis to engage in literary work.

Dr. Irwin came to Lawton about 1905 remaining about a year when he removed to Paw Paw, and is at present practicing in Volinia, Cass Co.

Dr. Perry, dentist, practiced in Lawton from about 1894 till 1897.

Dr. Johnson, dentist, located in Lawton and enjoys a large remunerative practice. He has been secretary of the South West Michigan Dental Association for several years.

#### THE PROFESSION IN SOUTH HAVEN

The first doctor to practice in this vicinity was Dr. Goodrich who must have kept up his work in the late 'forties and early 'fifties. He covered a wide range of country traveling often thirty and forty miles to visit his patients. People in those days did not call a physician unless there was urgent need. Dr. Goodrich was the grandfather of the present Dr. Goodrich. Dr. E. B. Moon came in the early 'fifties and practiced for some years. Dr. A. N. Moulton practiced here in the late 'fifties, and until about 1866. He was a man of much ability. Dr. Dunn came in about 1866 and stayed a few years. Dr. Anderson practiced here in 1888 and later.

Dr. W. B. Hathaway was one of the early physicians who practiced for many years in Bloomingdale and Gobleville. In 1876 the physicians were Dr. L. C. Woodman who came here soon after the war and bought some land now known as the Dyckman & Woodman addition. He was a remarkable man of very superior ability as a physician and surgeon and enjoyed the unlimited confidence of the community. Dr. Hewson who was also the pastor of the Baptist church was here a few years. He was a man of very pleasing personality and had many warm friends. Dr. Gunsaulus was here a few years but moved in 1877 to the Black Hills where he died, the result of an accident. Dr. Seeley was also here a few years, dying about 1877.

Dr. Geo. V. Hilton, a nephew of Dr. Woodman, graduated in 1876 and located here, remaining till 1883 when he went to Paw Paw, leaving there in 1887, and locating in Chicago where he established himself and has a high reputation as physician and surgeon. Dr. Bishop located here in the fall in 1876, coming from New York. He spent the remainder of his life in South Haven and died in 1910, a kindly, respected man.

Dr. Triage came in 1879 and enjoyed a very active and lucrative practice, dying at his home here in 1910. Dr. Ransom came in 1880 and remained till 1894 when he organized and equipped a boat to sail around the world. Dr. Springer came in 1895 re-

maining till 1910. Dr. Lucy Hemenway practiced here for about three years, 1900 to 1903. She subsequently married W. D. Cook and moved to the state of Washington where she enjoys a lucrative practice. Dr. Marian Law, another lady physician, came in 1896 and has since practiced here enjoying a good clientage. Dr. Geo. D. Carnes came here in 1883 having located in Covert in 1876. He has been here since actively engaged in the practice of his profession. Dr. L. G. Rhodes came here in 1896 and has since been a very active and successful practitioner. Dr. E. L. Mater came here in 1897 and immediately planned a very active practice which he retained until he left on account of ill health in about 1902. Dr. Geo. F. Young, born in Paw Paw, a graduate of the Michigan University, came about 1901 and went into partnership with Dr. Mater. He has a good practice and is a highly respected physician. Dr. Pennoyar came in 1903 and soon attained a good practice and has been for the past 8 years a most active hard working and successful physician.

Dr. Neal Goodrich came in the Spring of 1911, and has secured a good foothold and bids fair to make a very able and substantial physician.

Dr. Ben Webster was here for a time some three or four years ago, also Dr. Kesler about the same time. The Osteopathic physicians are: Dr. G. F. Lathrop and wife, and preceding them in the same profession, Dr. Classen and wife.

#### SOUTH HAVEN CITY HOSPITAL

The City Hospital at South Haven is a public institution for the care of the sick and the injured. The new building was erected by public subscription at a cost of \$6,500, and formally opened January 1, 1909. It is maintained partly by money received for care of patients, and partly by charitable contributions. It has no endowment or financial aid from the county or state; the city has very kindly donated the electric light and water service. It is a two story building with full basement, built to accommodate fourteen patients, and in case of emergency, four or five more. Though small, it is well equipped with modern hospital conveniences. The operating room is up to date in its construction and furnishings for aseptic surgery.

The building is so planned that all patients' rooms have a south exposure. It is furnished with steam heat, up to date plumbing with sewer connection and a special ventilation system. An electric annunciator enables the patients to call a nurse by pressing a button. The building also has gas as well as electricity.

Any reputable physician may take his patients there and feel

assured that they will have the efficient care of trained nurses, and know that his instructions will be faithfully carried out. Any patient coming to the hospital may have the services of his family physician. Patients suffering from contagious diseases are not admitted. The rates for admission depend upon the room and nature of the case, and includes room, board, laundry and general care by competent nurses.

The hospital is not, and is not expected ever to be self-supporting; if it were, the rates would be so high as to defeat the purpose for which it was built viz., to furnish good hospital accommodations for people of moderate means.

The Woman's Auxiliary Board was organized for the purpose of meeting the annual deficit, and much praise is due the ladies for



CITY HOSPITAL, SOUTH HAVEN

the untiring zeal in raising funds for this purpose. They have instituted two annual methods of raising funds; one, a hospital Sunday, when an offering is taken the first Sunday in October in all of the city churches, and the other, a tag day in August. Material aid has come from many sources in supplies, furnishings and maintenance. Rooms have been completely furnished by individuals, churches, and lodges. The County Federation of Woman's Clubs furnished one room, and aided in other ways.

Any person paying one dollar or more may become a member of the South Haven Hospital Association. This Association holds its annual meeting the first Tuesday in October, at which time are elected the trustees, nine in number, of whom three are elected each year. The first regular meeting of the Association was held Oct. 1, 1907, when the following board of trustees were elected:

President, W. S. Bradley; Vice President, Mrs. H. M. Avery; Secretary, Mrs. R. T. Pierce; Treasurer, S. H. Wilson; Trustees, A. C. Runyan, George Myhan, George C. Monroe, and Mrs. C. H. Van Ostrand; Mrs. M. Porter, Superintendent.

No member except the superintendent, who devotes her entire time to the work, receives any pay for services rendered. While the local physicians have rendered all possible aid to the Board, it was not deemed advisable that they should be officially connected with the hospital. As many charity patients have been admitted as the financial condition would justify, the Trustees having rigidly adhered to their determination not to go into debt.

It has more than justified the belief of those who took an early interest in the project that it was a much needed institution and the large number of patients cared for, testify to its efficiency and the appreciation of the public which has so generously contributed to its support.

A separate fund is kept for charity patients, for which contributions may at any time be sent to the superintendent or secretary and they will be duly accredited and acknowledged.

#### DECATUR

In 1848 in a small office on Railroad street, there located a Dr. Bartholomew, Decatur's first physician. After remaining but a short time, he joined the "forty niners" and went to California to seek his fortune. Later he returned to Keeler where he died a few years ago.

The next physician to practice in Decatur was Dr. Wells, who resided on Little Prairie Ronde. He devoted more time to teaching singing-school than to the practice of medicine.

Dr. J. T. Keables located in Decatur in 1851 and for many years was the leading physician in this village. He was a pension examiner before the County Board System was adopted. He died in 1891. In 1855 Dr. Foster located in Decatur but soon moved elsewhere.

Dr. Gilbert L. Rose was born at Laporte, Indiana, in 1853, in which city he received his early education. He studied at the University of Michigan and at Cincinnati. He began the practice of medicine in Marcellus in 1874, where he stayed but a short time, then came to Decatur where he followed his profession for more than thirty-two years. When he first came to Decatur he entered into partnership with Dr. Dillon, the partnership lasting two years. In 1888 Dr. Rose formed a partnership with Dr. George W. Mahoney, which lasted four years, Dr. Mahoney removing to Chicago, where he practices his specialty: diseases

of the eye, ear, nose and throat. Dr. Rose died January 5, 1907; "but he still lives in the hearts of all who knew him as the most noble, the most generous, the most charitable, the most beloved of all men," are the words of a fellow practitioner.

Dr. C. T. Baker was born in 1829 in Steuben county, N. Y. He graduated from University of Michigan in 1854 and located in Decatur the same year, where he has since practiced with the exception of the time spent in the army where he served as contract surgeon, and was on duty at City Point, Virginia, General Grant's headquarters, when General Lee surrendered his army to General Grant and returned to Washington on the memorable 14th of April, 1865—the day of President Lincoln's assassination. He still resides in Decatur, although not in active practice.

Doctors H. D. Dillon, H. M. Brodrick and J. W. Rogers were also formerly among the prominent leading physicians of Decatur.

Those practicing in Decatur at present are: Dr. J. E. Maxwell, who located in 1892; Dr. J. M. Easton, in 1898, and Dr. W. P. Bope, in 1907.

The present dentists of Decatur are: Dr. N. E. Hooper, the oldest practicing dentist in the county, and Dr. W. Huyck, who is in partnership with Dr. Hooper.

WILL CARLETON'S "THE COUNTRY DOCTOR"

There's a gathering in the village that has never been outdone  
 Since the soldiers took their muskets to the war of 'sixty-one;  
 And a lot of lumber-wagons near the church upon the hill,  
 And a crowd of country people, Sunday-dressed and very still.  
 Now each window is preëmpted by a dozen heads or more,  
 Now the spacious pews are crowded from the pulpit to the door;  
 For the coverlet of blackness on his portly figure spread,  
 Lies the grim old country doctor, in a massive oaken bed.

Lies the fierce old country doctor,  
 Lies the kind old country doctor,

Whom the populace considered with a mingled love and dread.

Maybe half the congregation, now of great or little worth,  
 Found this watcher waiting for them when they came upon the earth;  
 This undecorated soldier, of a hard, unequal strife,  
 Fought in many stubborn battles with the foes that sought their life.  
 In the night-time or the day-time, he would rally brave and well,  
 Though the summer lark was piping, or the frozen lances fell;  
 Knowing if he won the battle, they would praise their Maker's name,  
 Knowing if he lost the battle, then the doctor was to blame.

'Twas the brave old virtuous doctor,

'Twas the good old faulty doctor,

'Twas the faithful country doctor—fighting stoutly all the same.

When so many pined in sickness, he had stood so strongly by,  
 Half the people felt a notion that the doctor couldn't die;

They must slowly learn the lesson how to live from day to day,  
 And have somehow lost their bearings—now this landmark is away.  
 But perhaps it still is better that his busy life is done:  
 He has seen old views and patients disappearing, one by one;  
 He has learned that Death is master both of Science and of Art;  
 He has done his duty fairly, and has acted out his part.  
     And the strong old country doctor,  
     And the weak old country doctor,  
 Is entitled to a furlough for his brain and for his heart.

#### THE VETERINARY SCHOOL

We would hardly feel justified in closing this chapter without giving the Veterinary school the recognition it deserves in the field of medicine. In the early history of this county this branch of the healing art received little or no scientific attention, most of the doctoring being done by some neighborhood "hoss doctor" who possessed more conceit than knowledge, and was more fortunate than skillful in saving his patients, for he knew practically nothing of disease, medicine or anatomy, but the rapid advancement in veterinary surgery in the past few years has elevated it to a parallel with the other schools of medicine. Today the study of preventable, communicable diseases among animals is receiving as much or more attention than similar diseases of man. Being an article of commerce, our legislative bodies are more liberal in their appropriations for scientific research and prevention of disease in animals than in man. Too much credit can not be given in the Veterinary School of Medicine for the benefit to mankind in the study of tuberculosis in animals. The recent advancement in the treatment of hog cholera, of foot and mouth disease, and of the oxygen treatment of milk fever in cows, are some of the valuable results of veterinarian research.

About thirty-five years ago there were only four veterinary surgeons in this county of whom we have any record: Dr. George Brown of Lawrence, who continued his practice until about ten years ago when he gave up his business to his son, Dr. E. W. Brown, who is now one of the County's leading veterinarians; Dr. Bartram who practiced in Paw Paw until the time of his death; Dr. Wilkinson settled in Decatur about 1865 practicing there until about 1880 when he moved to Indiana; the late Capt. G. H. Prentice of Lawton was a veterinary surgeon in the Civil War and afterwards resumed his practice in Lawton. Dr. Prentice was a man of ready wit, quick perception and natural ability, and in those days his practice extended over the greater portion of this county. Dr. W. J. Johnson, of Paw Paw, is also a scientific and skilful veterinarian. Other registered veterinarians are Dr. A. Elgas of Hartford, and Dr. H. T. Creagan of Decatur.



## CHAPTER XVIII

### TOWNSHIP OF ALMENA

GENERAL DESCRIPTION—PIONEER SETTLERS AND INSTITUTIONS—  
BUSY PERIOD (1836-42)—SETTLEMENT IN THE NORTHERN SEC-  
TIONS—CHURCHES—SCHOOLS, SUPERVISORS, ETC.

The township of Almena is officially designated by the United States survey as township number two south, of range number thirteen west. It was originally the southeast quarter of the township of Clinch. The name "Clinch" was conferred in honor of Judge Clinch of the state of Georgia. This township was divided by act of the legislature, in 1842, the east half being named Almena and the west half, Waverly. In 1849 the township of Almena was again cut in half, the northern portion taking the name of Pine Grove, while the southern retained the name of Almena. It forms one of the eastern tier of the townships of the county. Its boundaries are Pine Grove on the north, Kalamazoo County on the east, Antwerp on the south and Waverly on the west.

#### GENERAL DESCRIPTION

Originally there was a large swamp covering nearly one-third of the township extending from the northeast to the southwest along the river valley, but this has been practically reclaimed and converted into valuable pasturage and grass land.

The township is one of the three within the county that is not touched by a railroad. The nearest railroad stations are Paw Paw on the Fruit Belt line; Mattawan and Lawton on the main line of the Michigan Central; and Kendall, Pine Grove and Gobleville on the line of the South Haven division of the latter road.

There is no postoffice in the township, it being thoroughly covered by the free delivery system. Neither does it boast of any incorporated village, the nearest approach thereto being a small hamlet on section twenty-eight called Almena, the same as the township, where there are two stores, a flouring mill, a blacksmith-shop, a creamery, a church, a town hall and a Maccabees hall.

The assessed valuation of the township for 1849, the first year

Pine Grove was separated from it, was \$27,985, and the total of taxes for that year was the sum of \$530.60. The assessed valuation of the township for the year 1911 was \$479,025 and the total taxes levied was the sum of \$9,965.93.

The Federal census of 1910 gave Almena a population of 868, the smallest number of inhabitants of any township in the county.

At the general election held in 1850, the first after the present organization of the township, there were sixty-two votes cast, thirty-eight Democratic and twenty-four Whig. At the presidential election of 1908, the total vote of the township was 153, of which 112 were cast for Taft, Republican; thirty-seven for Bryan, Democrat; two for Debs, Socialist; and one each for Chafin, Prohibitionist and Hisgen, Independent party.

The township possesses a variety of soil, ranging from comparatively light sand to heavy clay loam and on the whole is fertile and productive.

Several small streams in the northeastern part unite to form the west branch of the Paw Paw river, which flows in a south-westerly direction across the township. Some of these streams are very clear and pure and are stocked with speckled trout, affording rare sport to many enthusiastic disciples of Izaak Walton during the open season, which is from the first day of May to the first day of September. There are not as many lakes in Almena as there are in some of the other townships of the county. The principal ones are called West, North, Fish and Wolf lakes.

#### PIONEER SETTLERS AND INSTITUTIONS

The first white man who became an inhabitant of the township was a Frenchman named Joseph Derosier. His wife was an Ottawa squaw. Derosier came into the township about the year 1833. He followed the occupation of an Indian trader, trapper, guide and interpreter. He could speak the English, French and Indian languages with equal facility. He died in the township of Waverly in 1854. The great Indian trail from Chicago to Grand Rapids passed through Almena and it was on this route that Derosier lived. In the vicinity of his place, until as late as 1845, considerable numbers of Indians of the Pottawattamie and Ottawa tribes encamped from time to time.

The first laid-out highway was called the Kalamazoo road and it is yet one of the principal highways of the township; it crosses the southern part of the township from east to west.

Mr. Jonas Barber built the first saw-mill in the township not long after the advent of Derosier, and in 1834 Elder Junia Warner, Horace Bonfoey and Willard Newcomb located lands in the

township. Warner and Bonfoey made a settlement on their lands and began their improvements in the spring of the following year. Warner had entered a tract of two hundred and forty acres, partly in the township of Antwerp and partly in Almena. Bonfoey located on section twenty-nine in the latter township.

Warner and his father, who was also named Junia, purchased a few boards at Barber's mill, put up a cabin on section thirty-one and began at once to clear a portion of the land and put in some crops. Having built a substantial log house, Junia, the younger, returned to the state of New York for his family, while the father concluded to stop in Kalamazoo, where for a time he worked at his trade as a mason. When the son returned with his family in the fall of the same year, the father joined them and they were all speedily and comfortably located in their pioneer home.

The younger Warner had been a Methodist preacher before coming to Michigan and he continued to follow his sacred calling to a considerable extent until his death which occurred in 1847. His health was such that he did not always feel able to preach the Gospel, in addition to his arduous labors in clearing up and cultivating his farm, but the demands made upon him were so frequent and so urgent that he was said to be almost as busy in ministerial work as he was as a farmer. He officiated at many of the weddings and funerals that occurred around the county and in the adjoining county of Kalamazoo. He was the first minister in the township, if not in the county. His father and mother continued to live with him until the father's death in 1840. His mother died at Paw Paw in January, 1880, at the ripe age of ninety-six years.

In the fall of 1834 a company of seven land-lookers, William Ranney and his son John, Campbell Waldo, Frederick Krull, Alvin Hall, Russell Palmer and Freeman Hall, came to Almena. Ranney purchased land on sections fourteen, twenty-three, twenty-five and twenty-six, Palmer and Krull on section twenty-four: Freeman and Alvin Hall on section twenty-six. Returning east with the rest of the company after having located their land, John Ranney returned alone the next year and settled on the land that his father had located the previous year. He lived a bachelor all his life and died on his Almena farm in 1863. Willard Newcomb settled in the township in 1835, and put up a blacksmith-shop on section twenty-nine. Freeman Hall returned in 1836 and made a permanent home on the land he had previously located.

Fernando C. Annable, with his family, became a resident of the township in the fall of 1835. Mr. Annable became a person of influence, not only in his township, but in the county at large. Politically, he was a strong Democrat and was regarded as a leader

in his party. He lived and died a resident of the township. His son, Edward R. Annable, became a prominent attorney and was at one time prosecuting attorney of the county. He emigrated to California where he died in the prime of his manhood.

Asahel S. Downing, with his family and his father-in-law, Isaac Barnum, came from Cayuga county, New York, in 1836, and purchased a tract of land of Messrs. Newcomb and Bonfoey. There was a water power on the property, subsequently occupied by a saw-mill called Brewer's mill. It was the intention of Mr. Barnum to erect a grist-mill, but he was stricken with apoplexy and died the next year after settling in the township. Henry Barnum, his son, after his father's death settled on section twenty-nine, where he lived until his death in 1856. Downing established a blacksmith-shop on his place and operated it for many years. Asa Crofoot made a visit to Alma in 1835 and entered one hundred and sixty acres of land on sections twenty-five and twenty-six. He made a small improvement and then went to Schoolcraft, in Kalamazoo county, where he obtained employment, improving his Alma farm from time to time as best he could. He did not become a permanent resident until 1844, when he married and located on his farm permanently.

#### BUSY PERIOD (1836-42)

Between 1836 and 1842 the settlers became quite numerous. Among them were John Campbell, Harvey Fauzdik, Bridget Finley, Nahum Eager, Chauncey Abbott, Louis and Benjamin Eager, Thomas Roland, Blakelee Burns, Abel Burns, Jacob Plank, T. C. Benton, Samuel Turner and others.

Chauncey Abbott settled on section twenty-three in 1840. Bridget Finley, with her six children, located on section twelve in 1839. Messrs. Fauzdik and Campbell settled in the same neighborhood at about the same time. S. B. Fisk, a millwright, located in the town in 1844. Amasa Tenney came in 1840, buying a farm of A. S. Downing. Samuel Mills purchased land on section thirty-four, in 1843, where he lived until his death in 1860.

Alva T. Stevens was a settler in 1837, afterward removing to Kalamazoo, but eventually returned and made his home on lands he had entered during that year in Alma and Antwerp, where he continued to reside until his decease in 1865. The early settlements above mentioned were all on the south side of the "big swamp."

The pioneers of this township did not meet with the trials and hardships that were incident to the settlement of some other parts of the county. The lands were not so heavily timbered, consist-

ing largely of "oak openings" through which it was comparatively easy to travel, even before there were any laid-out highways. Paw Paw was close at hand, and even at that early day there were to be found there many of the conveniences of a new civilization.

The year 1838 was noted for being a very sickly year. Fever and ague, that then prevalent disease throughout the entire state, was more than usually in evidence. It is said that at one time there were but three persons in the town who were in their accustomed good health; Mrs. Isaac Barnum, Horace Bonfoey and a colored man named Henderson. These looked after the sick and it may well be believed that they had little spare time for anything else.

#### SETTLEMENT IN THE NORTHERN SECTIONS

In the northern part of the township the first settlement was made by Nathan Williams and his son-in-law, John Condon. They first located on section twelve, in 1836. The next year they crossed what was then the "big swamp" and located on section four, where they remained for nearly thirty years when they removed to the state of Iowa. David Showerman and Jacob Currier came soon after Mr. Williams. Showerman worked in a Paw Paw saw-mill for a couple of years and then settled on section seven, in Almena, on what is still known as the Allegan road, and there, after a time, he opened a tavern. He died in 1863. Currier was a machinist by trade. He also settled on section seven, built a small shop and lived there until his decease in 1843. His widow married the late William Markillie, who came to Waverly in 1843 and to Almena in 1845. They occupied the Currier farm, which, under Mr. Markillie's skilful management, became one of the finest pieces of property in the entire county.

James Ketchum came to the township in 1843; Henry Campbell, from the state of New York, arrived in 1838, but settled in Waverly where he remained until 1844, when he located on section eight, in Almena, where he spent the remainder of his days. He died in 1872. Thomas Clark came to the town in 1846 and the next year settled on section eighteen. Silas Breed, who first settled in the township of Columbia and after whom the village of Breeds-ville was named, became a resident of Almena in 1851, having purchased a place on section seven of John Crowell, a settler who preceded him. Mr. Breed was a man of prominence in the affairs of the township and served as its supervisor for many years. He died in 1878. One of his sons, also named Silas, is still a resident on the old farm.

J. W. Stoughton, while not among the earlier settlers of the township, was a very early inhabitant of the state. He came to

Michigan with his father in 1824, when he was a lad of but four years. He located in Almena about 1854 and settled on a farm that had been previously occupied by Josiah Hopkins, where he lived the remainder of his life. His son, Warren M. Stoughton, is now the treasurer of Van Buren county.

The first birth in the township was a child of Elder Junia Warner, and this same child was likewise the first person that died in the township, the year of its birth and death being 1836. The second birth was that of a son to Mr. and Mrs. Jacob Currier. His fond parents named him George; he grew to manhood and spent his entire life in Almena.

The first couple that were married within the limits of the township were Alonzo Cobb and Mary Newcomb, who began their hymeneal voyage on the 17th day of October, 1837, Esquire Charles M. Morrill being the party that launched them on the matrimonial sea.

The first saw-mill, that built by Jonas Barber in 1835, passed into the hands of Edwin Mears of Paw Paw, and afterward was sold to a company composed of Charles M. Morrill, Nathaniel Livermore, Jacob Currier and Thomas Brown. The property afterward came into the possession of Daniel O. Dodge of Paw Paw and was known as the Dodge mill. At a later date Walter Wise undertook to utilize the power in the manufacture of paper, but the venture did not prove a success.

The first and only grist-mill in the township was built in 1859, by Stephen W. Fisk and for a considerable number of years was owned and operated by him and was known as Fisk's mill, but its owner becoming financially embarrassed, the plant passed into other hands and is now called Miner's mill, from the name of the present proprietors. It is located at the village of Almena on a small branch of the Paw Paw river.

#### CHURCHES

There are three church buildings in the township—the Free-will Baptist, the Methodist Episcopal and the Brethren, commonly called the Dunkard.

The Free Will Baptist church of Waverly, as it is called, although the house of worship is located across the line in the township of Almena on what is called Covey Hill, was organized in 1843, with thirteen members, to-wit: Mr. and Mrs. Harviland Thayer, Mr. and Mrs. Jonah Austin, Mr. and Mrs. Isaac Brown, Mr. and Mrs. Peter Haynes, Jephtha Waterman, Lucy Herron, Lucinda Aldrich, Elizabeth Brown and Polly Marble. Rev. Peter Haynes was the first minister and for a time meetings were held at private

houses and then at a schoolhouse until 1866, when the present meeting house was built. The present membership of the church is sixty-five. Rev. R. O. Thompson, of Gobleville, is the pastor.

The Methodist church was organized in 1853, with but five members, Mr. and Mrs. Philip N. Teed, Mr. and Mrs. James North and Ann Smith. The Almena schoolhouse was used as a place of worship until 1869, when the present church building was occupied, it having been dedicated in December of that year. The church is now under the care of Rev. Alex. T. Luther, pastor of the Methodist church at Paw Paw. It has a membership of twenty-eight.

The Brethren or Dunkard church is in a state of suspension at the present time. Their church building is situated on section twenty-seven.

There was formerly another church society at the village, but it has practically disbanded and their house of worship has been sold to the Maccabees, who occupy it for their hall and who have quite a flourishing organization.

The hall of Waverly Grange, No. 37, Patrons of Husbandry, like the Free-will Baptist house of worship, is situated on Covey Hill, in the township of Almena and now has about forty members.

#### SCHOOLS, SUPERVISORS, ETC.

The first school taught in the township was in the Warner settlement and the first teacher was Elizabeth Merry, a sister-in-law of Rev. Junia Warner. The following statistics of the public schools of the township are taken from the official school reports of 1911: Number of children of school age (between the ages of five and twenty), 304; number of volumes in school libraries, 579; number of school houses, 8; value of school property, \$6,050; aggregate number of months school taught, 66; paid for salaries of teachers, \$2,855. During the year 1911, the several school districts of the township were apportioned the sum of \$2,194.50 from the state primary school fund.

The first town meeting in the township was held at the Newcomb school house on the first Monday in April, 1842. (At this time the township included what was afterwards set off and organized as the township of Pine Grove.) The following named officers were chosen: Supervisor, Charles M. Morrill; township clerk, Junia Warner; township treasurer, Henry Barnum; highway commissioners, John A.-Ranney, Benjamin Eager and Green H. Brown; assessors, Willard Newcomb and Freeman Hall; school inspectors, F. C. Annable, Roswell Cook and Junia Warner; constables, Russell Bonfoey, Asahel S. Downing, Thomas F. Brown

and Green H. Brown; directors of poor, Horace Bonfoey and Willard Newcomb; justice of the peace, Jacob S. Carrier.

The following named gentlemen have served the township in the office of supervisor: Charles M. Morrill, Samuel Turner, J. A. Ranney, Green H. Brown, Henry Barnum, J. B. Hudson, F. C. Annable, Silas Breed, Chauncey B. Palmer, Stephen W. Fisk, Warren F. French, James H. Darling, William H. Stevens, Philip N. Teed, Benton W. Hipp, Joshua B. Breed, Rufus M. Waite, Levi A. Brown, John C. Kennedy and Walter A. Brown (present incumbent). Of the foregoing named supervisors, Messrs. Ranney and Stevens each served three years; Supervisor Waite, four years; Supervisor L. A. Brown, five years; Supervisor Kennedy, seven years; Supervisor French, twelve years; Supervisor Silas Breed, seventeen years.

Almena is one of the three towns in the county that are not touched by a railroad. For the southern part of the township, Mattawan on the Michigan Central, and Paw Paw, on the Fruit Belt line, are the nearest stations, and for the northern part, Kendall and Gobleville on the Kalamazoo and South Haven line.

While there has been, according to the census figures, a material decrease in the population of the township during the past decade, there has been at the same time, quite a material increase in the assessed valuation of the property of its citizens, indicating that they are prosperous from a financial stand point. Some of the very best farms in the entire county are located in the township, and while the inhabitants are not engaged in the culture of fruit to as great an extent as in some of the near-by townships, yet there are numerous fine orchards and vineyards to be found in some localities, and its citizens are as prosperous and progressive as those of any of her sister townships.



## CHAPTER XIX

### TOWNSHIP OF ANTWERP

GENERAL DESCRIPTION—RAILROADS, PROPERTY AND POPULATION—EARLY SETTLEMENT—SETTLERS OF 1836-8—SETTLERS IN SOUTHERN ANTWERP TOWNSHIP—POST OFFICES, ROADS AND HOTELS—PIONEER MILLS—TOWNSHIP ELECTIONS AND OFFICIALS—EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS—GLEN SPRINGS TROUT HATCHERY—VILLAGE OF LAWTON—VILLAGE OF MATTAWAN—RETROSPECT.

The township of Antwerp is one of the seven original townships of Van Buren county, and is the only township in the entire county that remains as originally organized without having undergone either a change of territory or name, or both. It is said that it was named by Harmon Van Antwerp after the city of Antwerp in Europe, but one can hardly resist the conclusion that there was a little personal pride in the selection of the name. All he had to do was to drop the "Van."

#### GENERAL DESCRIPTION

It is one of the eastern tier of the townships and is bounded north by Almena, east by Kalamazoo county, south by Porter and west by Paw Paw. It is officially designated in the United States survey as township number three south, of range number thirteen west. It is situated in the midst of the famous fruit belt of southwestern Michigan, and while it was originally largely devoted to the production of the various kinds of grain indigenous to this region, its inhabitants are now more extensively engaged in horticulture, especially in the production of grapes, there being several thousand acres of vineyards within its boundaries, and the annual production of that delicious fruit amounting to millions of baskets. Other fruits, such as peaches, apples, cherries, plums, pears and berries of various kinds are also produced in great abundance. Indeed, the business of fruit culture has very largely superseded all other kinds of husbandry.

There are two villages in the township, Lawton and Mattawan, the former only being incorporated. There are not many of the

little gems of lakes that beautify the landscape in various sections of the county to be found in Antwerp. Its principal stream is the east branch of the Paw Paw river, which enters the township near its southeast corner and crosses it diagonally in a northwesterly direction, uniting with the east branch of the same stream in the village of Paw Paw, about a half mile west of the east line of the township. There were formerly two very good water powers on this



A GLIMPSE OF THE GRAPE INDUSTRY, NEAR LAWTON

stream, one of them on section twenty-one and the other on section eighteen, almost in sight of the village of Paw Paw. Neither of these powers is in use at the present time. The mill and dam that stood on the site of the former have entirely disappeared. The mill that occupied the site of the latter has been removed, but the dam is kept in repair and the power, most likely, will be again put to use at some future date.

#### RAILROADS, PROPERTY AND POPULATION

Two railroads pass through the township, the main line of the Michigan Central and the Kalamazoo, Lake Shore and Chicago line, better known as the "Fruit Belt" line. Both these roads pass entirely across the township, intersecting at the village of Lawton. The Central enters the town on the east one mile north of the center line and runs in a southwesterly direction, leaving the town very near its southwest corner. The Fruit Belt running in a southeasterly course enters the township on the west line of section nineteen and reaching Lawton, changes to a northeasterly course and practically parallels the Central to the city of Kalamazoo, which is the

eastern terminus of the line. It is anticipated that this line will be electrified in the near future, in which event there will be a continuous electric line across the state from Detroit to South Haven. This latter road had its beginning in the construction of what was called the Paw Paw Railroad, a four mile line between Paw Paw and Lawton, which under various names has been extended to South Haven on the west and to Kalamazoo on the east, making a line fifty-five miles in length.

The soil of Antwerp consists largely of a sandy loam, generally fertile and productive, in some localities, however, bordering on quite a light sand, and in other places clay and gravel prevail. The surface is generally level, although there are some quite conspicuous elevations, the principal of these being south of the village of Mattawan and one in the northeast corner of the town.

On the first tax roll of the township, made in 1837, the total amount of the tax levy was \$172.60. The valuation of property does not appear on the roll, but the tax levied on the lands was uniformly one and a half cents per acre. There was no assessment of personal property. In 1911 the township was assessed at the sum of \$955,000, and the taxes levied were \$21,653.33. According to the census of 1910, the township contained a population of 2,320 souls. It ranks fourth among the townships of the county in point of population and fifth in point of wealth.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENT

On account of the comparative ease with which lands in the township of Antwerp could be converted into tillable farms, it was settled much earlier than some other portions of the county that were covered with heavy timber. Most of the lands of the town consisted of "oak openings," and it was practically free from low or swampy lands. Crops could be planted in many places with very little clearing away of brush or trees, and the virgin soil needed but to be tickled with the rude implements of the pioneer to produce the necessities of life in abundance. Even before any roads were laid out, traveling through the town in almost any direction was a matter of no great difficulty. There was very little underbrush or other obstructions in the way and the settler could drive almost anywhere without having to cut a road before him. The woods were like orchards, in that a person could see round about for a considerable distance.

There seems to be a difference of opinion as to who was the first settler in Antwerp. It was either Joel Tomlinson or Joseph Woodman. Mr. Tomlinson settled on section twenty-two, in the month of December, either in 1834 or 1835; the year is uncertain. There

is no question of the date at which Mr. Woodman came. He made his home on section seven, on the 10th day of May, 1835, and there is little doubt but that to him must be ascribed the honor of having been the first settler in the township.

Mr. Woodman was a minister of the Gospel, being an ordained minister of the Methodist church. He died in the month of April, 1879. The Woodman family have borne a prominent part in the affairs of Van Buren county. The late Hon. Jonathan J. Woodman, Elder Woodman's youngest son, was a member of the Michigan legislature for twelve successive years, a speaker of the house for four years of such service, and was one of the United States commissioners to the Paris exposition in 1878. He was prominent in the agricultural matters of the county and state and served as master of the State Grange, Patrons of Husbandry, and also as master of the National Grange. He died at his Antwerp home just outside the limits of the village of Paw Paw, on the 13th day of July, 1904. His widow, Rev. Olivia J. Woodman, a minister of the Universalist denomination, still occupies the homestead.

The incoming pioneers, following the route of the Territorial road, which was opened in the summer of 1835 and which crossed the northern part of Antwerp, naturally chose the line of that highway on which to plant their future homes.

In the spring of 1835, Joshua Bangs, Silas Breed and Elder Jonathan Hinekley started from Monroe county, New York, for Michigan, on a land-looking expedition. They journeyed overland as far as Silver Creek, Ohio, and found the traveling so bad that, to use Mr. Bangs' own words, "One of us drove the team, while the other two footed behind, carrying rails with which to pry the wagon out of the mud holes." They continued their journey by way of the lake from Silver Creek to Detroit, where they again took to the road, their objective point being Grand Rapids. At Marshall they overtook Joseph Woodman and his family, who was headed for the same location. Ascertaining that the land office was located at Bronson (now Kalamazoo), they halted there and were persuaded to change their route to Van Buren county. Woodman and Bangs visited the township of Antwerp and being pleased with the outlook concluded to locate there instead of looking farther. Bangs entered lands on sections five and seven adjoining those selected by Woodman on the latter section. Bangs settled on his new location in the fall of the same year, some months after Woodman had taken up his residence on the lands entered by him. He had been back to the state of New York after his family and on his return he was accompanied by Dr. Levi Warner, Joseph Luce, Theophilus Bangs and John Hill. Warner and Luce settled in the adjoining township of Paw Paw. Joshua Bangs resided on his Antwerp farm

until he was elected county treasurer at a special election held on the 20th day of September, 1837, when he moved to Paw Paw. He held that office for four years after which he returned to his farm. Nominally, he was the second treasurer of the county, but really the first, as Daniel O. Dodge, who was elected in the spring before, failed to assume the duties of the office. Mr. Bangs died in February, 1883.

Philip Moon, of New York, settled on section five in 1835. He died in 1856. His son, Horace W., who came out with Joshua Bangs, was formerly a resident on section sixteen, the present fruit farm of Messrs. Rowland & Shaefer and known as "Fairview Fruit Farm."

Peter Moon was also a settler in 1835. Elder Samuel Gilman became a resident on section five in 1838. He sold his farm to E. H. Niles and moved to a place on section six, where he lived the remainder of his life. His son, Joseph Gilman, who succeeded him in the ownership of the place, died in 1884.

Theophilus Bangs, who came to Antwerp with his brother, Joshua, settled on section nineteen, where he lived for about thirty years, when he moved to Paw Paw and died there.

Among the early land-lookers of Michigan was John Hunt, of Vermont, who first visited the township of Antwerp in 1835 and was so well pleased with the outlook that he entered a tract of 160 acres on section one. He returned to Vermont after making his entry and did not become a settler until 1837. Mr. Hunt and his family proceeded to Buffalo by canal and finding that they could not easily embark at that place, he engaged a man and team to carry his family and goods to Silver Creek, thirty-six miles distant, where he was told he would find a steamer for Detroit. The roads were knee deep with mud and the driver of the team was drunk and finally abandoned them in the woods when only about half way to their objective point. Finally after three days they reached Silver Creek and found the steamer. They disembarked at Toledo, and eventually after a journey of three weeks duration, reached Kalamazoo. "When I left Vermont," said Mr. Hunt, "I had \$800 in money, but when I got to Michigan I had \$300 less, a pretty stiff price to pay for a journey that can now be made in thirty-six hours." As an evidence of the cost of the necessaries of life in those "good old days," Mr. Hunt paid \$55 for a second hand cook stove in Kalamazoo; "and," said he, "it was about as big as a warming pan." Mr. Hunt spent the remaining years of his life on his Antwerp farm, dying some years ago at a ripe old age.

Among the more conspicuous and well known early settlers of the township were Samuel Lull; Anthony Corey, who settled on the

site of the present village of Lawton; Hiram and Robert Morrison, the latter of whom settled on section eight where he lived until his death which occurred on the 8th day of September, 1907; Lyman Taylor, Patrick Johnson, Harman Harwick and Peter Harwick, his son; Silas F. Breed, the founder of the village of Breedsville; the Weldins, the Hathaways and John McKinney, who was county treasurer from 1842 to 1846. Peter Hinckley settled on section four in 1835 and sold to E. B. Dyckman in 1838.

#### SETTLERS OF 1836-8

The year 1836 brought many settlers into Antwerp. Among them was Wells Gray, who located on section two. He built the usual log cabin, which had a loose board floor, and one day when a huge blacksnake crawled through between the boards, his wife was so frightened that she declared she would not live there and her husband, having to choose between the serpent and his wife, wisely chose the latter and sought a new location, selling his claim to Reason Holmes and taking up a new one on section seven. Mrs. Gray died not long afterward. Mr. Gray married again and spent his days on his farm where he died in 1867.

Among other settlers of 1836 were Samuel Longstreet and his brother Andrew. The latter was the second sheriff elected in the county. The first was Samuel Gunton, who was elected in the spring of 1837, but did not accept the office. Mr. Longstreet was elected at the same special election at which Joshua Bangs was chosen as county treasurer, so that he was, in point of fact, the first officer to serve as sheriff. He held the office for four years. He died in the village of Lawton in 1871.

Morgan L. Fitch was also a pioneer of 1836. He bought four eighty acre tracts on sections one, two, eleven and twelve, and also an eighty on section three for his brother, Lyman C. Fitch, who became a settler of the town the succeeding year. Morgan L. was elected and served as a member of the Michigan legislature in 1851, and Lyman C. was elected state senator in 1855. The former died in 1883, and the latter in 1900.

The elder brother, Morgan, related an incident that occurred during his trip from Western New York, his former residence, to Michigan, that shows that the science of "graft" was not wholly unknown, even at that early day. On his arrival at Detroit he found that all the seating capacity of the stages from that city to Kalamazoo had been sold for six days in advance. Not caring to make the journey of about one hundred and fifty miles on foot, he managed, after a search of three days, to purchase a horse which he rode over the route, and so at least escaped the task of carrying

a rail with which to pry the coach out of the mud. On his arrival at the latter place he was very much surprised to see an old Quaker who had been his fellow passenger across the lake to Detroit and with whom he had parted at Detroit. "Why, my friend," said Mr. Fitch, "how did you get here so soon? They told me in Detroit that there wouldn't be a chance in the stage for a week."

"Well," said he of the broad brim and drab garments, "I waited until ye were all gone from the stage office, when I said to the clerk 'If any of thy friends conclude they will not go today, thee mayst save a seat for me; I hand thee here two dollars, not for my ticket, but for thyself; my ticket I will pay for beside.' When I came around at time for the stage to start," continued the sly Quaker, "I found the man had a seat ready for me."

Nathaniel L. Surdam and his wife came to Antwerp in 1837 and settled on section three where they lived out the remainder of their days, both living to a good old age. Mr. Surdam was a man of remarkable vitality and longevity. He died at his farm residence on the 8th day of March at the unusual age of a little over one hundred years.

The pioneer blacksmith of Antwerp was William Taylor, who also came to the town in 1836 with a Rooseveltian family consisting of a wife and twelve children. He was brother-in-law of Reason Holmes and his first residence was a "rail pen" on Holmes place, which he occupied until he could secure a more permanent dwelling place. He located on section three on the Territorial road, where he established his forge and where he lived until his death. He was a very industrious man, but was possessed with the crazy notion that he could invent a "perpetual motion machine," upon which subject he became a monomaniac. He worked secretly for fear that some one would steal his plans and forestall him in procuring a patent, and on one occasion his invention was, as he inferred, actually stolen. He immediately filed an application at the patent office in order to head off the thieves (?). After a time his beloved machine was returned to its accustomed place as mysteriously as it had disappeared, much to the joy of its inventor. The affair was but the prank of some mischievous youngsters. Like many another who has been possessed with the same insane idea, Mr. Taylor lacked but one thing to make his machine a great success. It wouldn't go!

James Ferguson came to Antwerp in 1836 and died there a few years later. During the same year John Lyon settled on section three. He died during the sickly season of 1838. In June of the same year, Daniel Van Antwerp and family, consisting of his wife and four children, together with his father (Harmon) and his mother, came from Geneseo, New York, where he had exchanged his

farm for twelve eighty-acre lots in township number three south, of range number thirteen west, afterward to bear the Van Antwerp name. Mr. Van Antwerp's land lay near the center of town on either side of the Paw Paw and Schoolcraft road. So well pleased was he with his location that he bought one more eighty-acre tract in the same locality. The first adult death in the township was that of his mother, who died May 4, 1837; the first death was that of a child of John Lyon's, who died the previous year. Mrs. Van Antwerp was buried in the Van Antwerp cemetery which is located on sections ten and fifteen.

The next year, 1838, was a sad time for those early pioneers, as seven new made graves in that cemetery silently testified. Chills and fever in aggravated form prevailed and four persons—John Lyon, a Mr. Whittel, John Barber and Benjamin Markle—succumbed to that disease, the treatment of which, at that time, was but little understood. That same year Daniel Woodman, son of Joseph Woodman, a youth of eighteen years, died of brain fever and was buried in the same cemetery. Mrs. Wells Gray was also one of the pioneers who passed away that year. Daniel Morrison was also one of those who died that same fatal year.

It is said that the reason that this cemetery was laid out on two sections was to prevent the road from Paw Paw to Mattawan passing through the Van Antwerp domain, and that in consequence of such opposition the road was laid half a mile farther south.

Another cemetery was afterward laid out on section two. Bodies that had been buried in different places were disinterred and buried there. Among those who have been buried there was Elizabeth Quackenbush, who at the time of her death was one hundred and one years of age and who had one hundred and twenty-one descendants, to-wit: fourteen children, sixty-nine grandchildren, thirty-four great-grandchildren and four great-great-grandchildren. Harmon Van Antwerp died in 1849, and his son Daniel in 1875. His daughter, Ann, was Mrs. P. Nary Smith. Her son, John Smith, is now a resident of the village of Paw Paw.

Jacob Plank located near what is now the village of Mattawan, in 1837, and James Murray in the same locality in 1838.

Solomon Phillips, a bachelor, was one the early land owners in the township, but he did not become a resident until after it was well settled. He and his brother, Benjamin Phillips, built the first flouring mill in the township, utilizing a now dismantled water power on the Paw Paw river on section twenty-two.

E. B. Dyckman, in 1838, exchanged his farm near Syracuse, New York, for Antwerp lands on sections four and nine, taking as part of the consideration in the trade one hundred barrels of salt, at the agreed price of one dollar per barrel. He was very reluctant



to accept the salt part of the bargain, but was finally prevailed on to do so. He shipped the salt to St. Joseph, where he realized from six to ten dollars per barrel for the same; and Michigan was fairly underlaid with salt, but nobody knew it. O! Those good old times that so many people long for! "Distance lends enchantment to the view." With Mr. Dyckman also came Philip Hineckley and P. Nary Smith, above mentioned.

Oliver Warner settled on section six in 1836 and lived there until his death. A. M. Lane came to the county the same year and lived in the vicinity of Paw Paw for a while and then became an Antwerp settler on section five.

#### SETTLERS IN SOUTHERN ANTWERP TOWNSHIP

Most of the parties that have been mentioned settled in the northern part of the township which was fairly well filled before many improvements were made in the southern portion. One of the earliest settlers in that part of the town was Levi Savage who located in 1835, on section thirty-six, but who soon afterward disposed of his land to Samuel Lull and, himself, moved to a farm in the Van Antwerp neighborhood. Lull eventually became a Mormon and went to Salt Lake City.

In 1836, John Cooper, from Ohio, located on section thirty-six, but moved away a few years afterward. The same year Daniel Bird settled on section twenty-four. He removed to Prairie Ronde where he died. J. B. Wildey was another early settler on section twenty-four. He died at the village of Lawton. Mr. Whittel settled on section twenty in the fall of 1837 and died the next year. The Markle family, consisting of a widow and her four sons, Jacob, Benjamin, Elias and David, settled on section twenty-two in the spring of 1837.

As in other parts of the county, game was abundant. Wolves and deer were especially so. Most of the men and the boys who were old enough to carry a gun were hunters, and as the finding of game was an easy matter, abundant returns invariably rewarded the efforts of the hunters. Venison was more plentiful than pork, and much less highly prized. Wolves were a constant menace to the farmers' stock and great vigilance was necessary for its protection. It is related that young William Van Antwerp, who was given to playing the flute, used to tune up his instrument nearly every evening, and as soon as he began to play the wolves would begin to howl; when the music ceased, the howling stopped, only to be renewed with greater vigor when the young man resumed his playing.

## POST OFFICES, ROADS AND HOTELS

The first post office in Antwerp was at the tavern of Reason Holmes on the Territorial road and Mr. Holmes was the postmaster. He was succeeded by Philip Williams. On the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad the office was removed to Mattawan.

In April, 1837, the commissioners of highways divided the township into four road districts, cutting the township into quarters in the division and putting nine sections of land into each district, which was certainly a systematic division, although it is doubtful if any other township was divided in a similar manner. Immediately afterward the following roads were surveyed. The Longstreet road April 11th, the Center road April 12th, the Paw Paw road April 13th, the Cooper road April 13th, the Bangs road April 14th.

The large traffic that soon began to pass over the Territorial road gave rise to the establishment of many public houses which were dignified by the name of taverns. On that portion of the road that passed through Antwerp, Jesse Abbe was the first person to open a place of public entertainment. Like most of those primitive "hotels" it was merely a log cabin and contained the kitchen and dining room on the first floor and a couple of sleeping rooms above. One of the principal things in evidence in those primitive hostleries was the whiskey bottle. There was no thought of total abstinence, local option, prohibition or other phase of the temperance question in those early days, and the travelers were generally thirsty whenever they came to any place where liquor was to be had. Mr. Abbe kept this tavern until the construction of the railroad put the stage route out of business.

Mr. Abbe was a very eccentric man and also very religious. Numerous anecdotes of these traits are related of him. Calling once on Mr. Hunt and finding that gentleman hoeing his corn, he said "Mr. Hunt, this is a fine field of corn, but you don't deserve it; you don't pray enough." "Very well," replied Mr. Hunt, "you pray and I'll hoe, and we'll see who has the best corn," Calling on one occasion upon Jonathan Woodman, he remarked: "Jonathan, you are altogether too fine a fellow for the devil to have." He had at one time in his employ a youngster who preferred resting to working, and often, when the boy wanted to do a little loafing on the job, he would say to his employer "Hadn't we better go into the grove and have a season of prayer?" and, pleased beyond measure at the young scapegrace's religious turn of mind, the old man would leave off work and pray for an hour or more with the lad in the grove, never dreaming that the young rascal was simply

imposing on him in order that he might enjoy a loafing spell. Late in life Mr. Abbe embraced spiritualism and died in that faith.

Reason Holmes built a frame house on section one, the first frame house in the township, which he conducted for several years as a tavern. This place was but a short distance east of Abbe's and, just over the line in Kalamazoo county, Samuel Millard kept another tavern, so that within a distance of less than three miles there were three public houses. That would have been a good place for the governor of South Carolina and the governor of North Carolina, as it was no very "long time between drinks." Between Abbe's and Dodge's tavern in Paw Paw there was dry stretch of five long, thirsty miles.

#### PIONEER MILLS

The first saw mill built in the township was put up by Samuel O. Miller on section twenty-six, through which flows a tributary of the Paw Paw river. This property subsequently came into the possession of Cowgill, McKeyes & Company, who put a flouring mill on the old saw-mill site. In 1838, John Bingman built the second saw-mill in the township, on section twenty-one. The site of this mill was afterwards occupied by the Rix flouring mill. Messrs. Solomon and Benjamin Phillips built the pioneer grist mill on this same stream in 1858. In 1869 Asa Landphere built quite a large flouring mill on the Paw Paw, about half a mile east of the village of Paw Paw, but this structure, like the others mentioned, has gone out of existence. None of these water powers are in use at the present time. The clearing up of the surrounding country has so affected the flow of the streams, that none of them, except the latter, is of any great value, although, perhaps, they might be used as auxiliary to some system for the development of electric power.

#### TOWNSHIPS ELECTIONS AND OFFICIALS

The first town meeting in the township of Antwerp was held at the house of Philip Williams on the first Monday in April, 1837, at which the following named officers were chosen: Supervisor, Andrew Longstreet; township clerk, John K. Bingham; assessors, Theophilus Bangs, Reason Holmes, Joel Tomlinson; commissioners of highways, Joshua Bangs, Jesse Abbe, Joel Tomlinson; constable and collector, John Hill; directors of the poor, Jesse Abbe, Patrick Johnson. At a special town meeting held May 4, 1837, the following additional officers were elected: Justices of the peace, Reason Holmes, Joseph Woodman, Philip Williams; school inspectors, John Cooper, Samuel O. Wells and John A. Lyon.

The following named gentlemen have served the township in the capacity of supervisor: Andrew Longstreet, Morgan L. Fitch, Theophilus Bangs, Joshua Bangs, I. S. Borden, Peter Harwick, John Hunt, Lyman A. Fitch, Harman Harwick, Daniel Van Antwerp, John Smolk, Nathan H. Bitely, Henry Fitch, Oliver H. P. Sheldon, Orrin Buck, Jonathan J. Woodman, Asa C. Glidden, Napoleon B. McKinney, John Ihling, Juan McKeyes, Franklin B. Adams, Charles D. Lawton, William H. Stainton, George H. Rix, Harlan P. Waters, Alonzo S. Mitchell, Elmer W. Hall, Oscar J. Williams, Sheldon Coleman, J. W. Mitchell and Charles S. Shaefer.

Of the above named supervisors the following served for more than two years: Waters, ten years; Hunt, seven; McKeyes, five; Theophilus Bangs, Stainton, A. S. Mitchell, Shaefer and Coleman (the present incumbent), each four years.

At the general election held in November, 1838, there were thirty-eight votes polled in the township, which shows the rapidity with which it was being settled, the first settler coming only a little more than three years before.

At the first presidential election, held on the 2d and 3d days of November, 1840, sixty-three ballots were cast, thirty-two Democratic and thirty-one Whig.

At the presidential election of 1908, 553 votes were polled, as follows: Taft, Republican, 374; Bryan, Democrat, 153; Chafin, Prohibitionist, fifteen; Debs, Socialist, seven; Hisgen, Independent, four.

#### EDUCATIONAL STATISTICS

The first school teacher in Antwerp was Miss Ann Van Antwerp, and the first schoolhouse was the log cabin of Joshua Bangs, on section seven, in the second story of which Miss Van Antwerp taught a private school and had, perhaps, a dozen scholars. The next season a slab schoolhouse was built, near where the "Steeple" schoolhouse now stands, which did duty as a "temple of learning" for some considerable time. On May 4, 1837, the township was divided into four school districts and shortly afterward two additional districts were formed. On February 26, 1839, there was apportioned to the township the sum of \$14.08, primary school money. The annual report of the board of school inspectors for that year showed that reports had been received from but two of the six districts in the town, and that the text books used were the Elementary Spelling Book, Smith's Grammar, Adams' Arithmetic, English Reader and Olney's Geography.

The official reports for the school year of 1910-11 show that there are six schools in the township, two of them graded schools: total number of persons of school age, 591; number of volumes in school

libraries, 1,446; number of schoolhouses, seven; value of school property, \$23,050; total district indebtedness, \$2,500; number of qualified teachers employed, nineteen; aggregate number of months of school taught, 143; amount paid for teachers' salaries, \$7,555 during the past year; the township received from the state primary school fund the sum of \$4,372.50.

#### GLEN SPRINGS TROUT HATCHERY

There is one unique enterprise carried on in the township that should not be passed by without special notice, the Glen Springs Trout Hatchery, situated on the east side of section twenty-two, about three miles from Lawton, and conducted by Messrs. Bassett & Son of Paw Paw. The hatchery is located in a glen, encircled on three sides by high banks and groves, the fourth side being laved by the waters of the Paw Paw river. From under the bank flows a spring of cold water as clear as crystal, at the rate of about 2,000 gallons per minute, making it an ideal place for fish culture. The company have twenty tanks or ponds containing speckled trout (the only variety of fish bred by them) in all sizes, from the tiniest minnows up to fish of marketable size; about a million of them on hand at the present time. The season's yield of eggs, just closed, was about 4,000,000. Eggs and fry as well as fish of larger size are shipped to various parts of the country. It is the most complete hatchery of the kind in the state of Michigan, and one of the largest and best of any in the entire United States.

#### VILLAGE OF LAWTON

In 1849 Nathan Lawton of Watertown, New York, owned the land on which the business portion of the village of Lawton is situated. When the place was selected as a station on the line of the Michigan Central Railroad, Mr. Lawton laid out a village there. He gave ten acres of land for railroad depot buildings, which were erected in 1848. It was at first known as Paw Paw station and that name adorned the passenger house for a considerable number of years. A post office was established there in 1851 and by Colonel Longstreet christened "Lawton," in honor of the proprietor of the town, and that became not only the name of the post office, but of the town as well; and the railroad eventually adopted it as the name of the station.

Andrew Longstreet was the first postmaster. His successors in the office have been Henry McNeil, Livingston McNeil, Albert H. Thompson, Richard Finley, Napoleon B. McKinney, Andrew Longstreet (second appointment), William Harvey Smith, Otis Rider, James H. Hall, Al McElheny, James H. Hall (second appointment),



GLEN SPRINGS TROUT HATCHERY

Pliny A. Hubbard, Milton F. Lawton, Elmer W. Hall, who died while holding the office, and Minnie Hall, the present incumbent, widow of Elmer W. Hall.

Nathan Lawton, himself, never became a resident of the village, but his two sons, George W. and Charles D., spent their lives there and became prominent, not only in the affairs of the village and township, but in county and state affairs as well. Major George W. Lawton was a veteran of the Civil war, wounded in action, and brevetted major, as the record says, "for gallant and meritorious conduct in action." He served the county as judge of probate for eight years, from 1868 to 1876, and also held various other official positions. He was one of the prominent attorneys of the county and was, at one time, the nominee of the Republican party for the office of circuit judge of the judicial circuit of which the county formed a part, but owing to party dissensions between the two counties composing the circuit—Van Buren and Kalamazoo—he was defeated and a candidate of the opposition party elected. Mr. Lawton owned a fine home in the village of Lawton, where his widow, Mrs. Isabella Lawton, yet resides. Judge Lawton died on the 7th day of February, 1887, in his fifty-fourth year.

Hon. Charles D. Lawton was a surveyor and civil engineer by profession. He was commissioner of mineral statistics for the state of Michigan from 1885 to 1891 and regent of the Michigan University for a period of eight years, beginning January 1, 1898, and had also served two terms as county surveyor. The brothers were both ardent Republicans and were reckoned among the advisers and leaders of that party. Charles D. departed this life at Lawton on the 24th day of August, 1909. His widow, L. Lovina Lawton, still occupies the fine homestead in that village left her by her late husband.

When the Michigan Central Railroad was being constructed through what is now the village of Lawton, Henry McNeil opened a store in a log cabin on the west side of what is now Main street. He supplied the laborers with merchandise, such as they required, and, as was customary in those days, it is said that a considerable part of such merchandise was "wet." He made quite a bit of money out of his venture and removed to Minnesota. While McNeil was still in the mercantile business, Andrew Longstreet, who had been living on a farm, moved into the embryo town and started a shoe-shop. About the same time Gilbert Johnson opened another store, calling it the "Farmers' Head Quarters." From these small beginnings the village began to show signs of improvement.

Horace Sebring erected a hotel where the "Hotel Giddings" now stands. Other business places were started and the town began to grow, but for a number of years such growth was very moderate.

With the establishment of the Michigan Central Iron Company, in 1867, the town took a long stride in advance. This company continued in business until 1875, during which period Lawton was experiencing its palmy days. When that institution went out of business there was a decided decrease of population and a falling off of business and for some years it looked as though the place would not be able to recover its lost prosperity, but with the advent of the grape industry throughout the region roundabout, the town again took on new life and at the present time is one of the prosperous go-ahead towns of the county.

While it lasted the Iron Company did a large and profitable business. It had a capital stock of \$150,000 and employed about 150 men. Among the stockholders were General U. S. Grant, Generals Gillmore, Barnard and Porter, and others in the military service. General Gillmore was the president of the company. The ore was shipped from the Lake Superior region by lake to Michigan City, thence to the works, by the Michigan Central Railroad. A de-



TOWN HALL, SOLDIERS' MONUMENT, MUNICIPAL PLANT, LAWTON

pression in the business of manufacturing iron caused a suspension of the establishment and the work was never resumed.

The village of Lawton was first platted by Nathan Lawton, on the 6th of September, 1853. The original village embraced but a small plat of six blocks lying between the railroad and Union street and west of Main street. Since that time, however, there have been eleven additions to the town, almost any one of which is larger than the original plat, and the town is now nearly a mile in width from east to west and a little more than a mile from north to south. It was first incorporated by a resolution of the board of supervisors,



on the 15th day of October, 1858. It was reincorporated by act of the legislature in 1869 (S. L. 1869, Vol. 2, p. 160). This act of incorporation was amended by the legislature 1893 (L. A. 1893, p. 393).

Lawton is well represented in the line of ladies and gentlemen of mystic signs, grips and passwords.

Lawton Lodge No. 216, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, was instituted January 19, 1867, with Grove C. Love as master, H. P. Robinson as senior warden and John Ihling as junior warden. It now has 101 members.

There is also a flourishing lodge of the Eastern Star.

Lawton Lodge No. 83, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted on the 14th day of February, 1861. It has had somewhat of checkered life, but at the present time has seventy-four members and is prospering. Its oldest member is David Powell, who united with the lodge in 1864.

Vineyard Rebekah Lodge, No. 305, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted September 8, 1909, and has a membership of sixty-four.

The Order of Maccabees is represented by Lodge No. 307, K. O. T. M., organized on the 6th day of June, 1890, with twenty-six charter members and which now has a membership of ninety. The ladies branch of the order is represented by Lawton Hive, No. 427, L. O. T. M., which was instituted November 9, 1893, and now has 120 members.

Lawton Lodge No. 256, Mystic Workers of the World, was organized May 19, 1900, and now has seventy-four members. There are also more or less flourishing lodges of the Modern Woodmen of America and its ladies' branch, the Royal Neighbors, and also of the Knights of Pythias, the Grand Army of the Republic, and the Woman's Relief Corps.

The Isabella Club is an organization of the ladies of the place and is one of the prosperous, interesting and profitable institutions of the village. It is affiliated with the State Federation of Women's Clubs. Through the instrumentality of the ladies of this club the village has been for several years past, provided with a first class lecture course.

There are two incorporated companies in Lawton formed for the purpose of handling and marketing the immense fruit crop that is produced in the two townships of Antwerp and Porter—principally grapes. There are about 15,000 acres of vineyard in those two townships; the larger part of the fruit produced is marketed in the two villages of Lawton and Mattawan, although that grown in the northwest part of Antwerp is mostly marketed at Paw Paw.

The Southern Michigan Grape Association was organized in

1897 by A. D. Benway, an experienced man in the marketing of fruit. The name has since been changed to the Southern Michigan Fruit Association. It was incorporated in the spring of 1899. For some years the company has been under the management of Carey Dunham of Lawton. The company loads grapes at Lawton, Mattawan, Paw Paw and Decatur. During the past season it shipped 1,916 car-loads of grapes, approximately the equivalent of 5,750,000 eight-pound baskets.

The Michigan Fruit Exchange was organized in 1901 and incorporated in 1904. This company has been under the management of A. D. Benway since its organization. During the season of 1911, it shipped 800 car-loads of grapes, the equivalent of 2,500,000 eight-pound baskets. The company loads at the same points as the Southern Michigan Association.

During the season of 1911, there were shipped from Lawton 1,132 car-loads of grapes, the equivalent of nearly or quite 4,000,000 eight-pound baskets of that finest of fruit, besides large quantities of other fruits, such as cherries, pears, plums, berries, etc. In addition to this there were shipped numerous car-loads of potatoes, grain and live stock.

The village had, according to the census of 1910, a population of 1,042 people, being the fifth village in point of numbers, among the nine incorporated villages of the county. It has a fine brick school-house, valued at \$13,000. The village district contains 228 persons of school age and has a school library of 925 volumes. The district has a bonded debt of \$2,500. Eight teachers were employed during the past school year and an aggregate of sixty-three months school was taught. \$3,862.88 were paid out for teachers' salaries.

There are two churches in Lawton, the Baptist and the Methodist Episcopal. The Baptist church was organized on the 11th day of November, 1865, by the late Rev. Edwin S. Dunham, with twelve members, viz: Rev. and Mrs. E. S. Dunham, Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Barker, Mr. and Mrs. M. D. Williams, Mr. and Mrs. John Stearns, Mr and Mrs. Jonathan Baughman, Cynthia Smith and Helen M. Williams. The society has a good house of worship with a seating capacity of about 250. The present pastor is Rev. J. W. Pincombe.

The Methodist church is in a prosperous condition, has a commodious house of worship, that will seat about 300 people. The spiritual welfare of this church is looked after by the Rev. F. M. Cosner, its present pastor.

The manufacturing plants of the village comprise a basket factory putting out a million and one-half of fruit packages per year; a vinegar plant, chemical works, flouring mill; grape juice factories, which press from 400 to 500 tons of grapes for unfermented grape juice; saw-mill, two pickle processing establishments, and

the Michigan Metal Works, the object of which is the manufacture of metal telephone tablets and other specialties.

The other industries of the village include a bank, clothing store, two drygoods store, two hardware stores, four groceries, two drug stores, two meat markets, two lumber-yards, variety store, furniture store, and an agricultural implement depot, three real estate dealers, two milliners, one newspaper and job printing office, three barber-shops, wagon repair shop, two blacksmith-shops, two physicians and one dental surgeon.

The Michigan Central Railroad maintains large ice houses at Lawton for the icing of refrigerator cars during the fruit shipping season, and the Standard Oil Company maintains a distributing station.

Accommodations for public meetings are excellent, there being a fine town hall that will accommodate 600 people, as well as a smaller hall owned by the Grand Army of the Republic, with a seating capacity of 200.

There are two hotels in the town and one restaurant; the streets of the village are shaded with rows of beautiful maples and bordered with fine cement walks; there is a first class municipal electric light plant and waterworks, and, taken all in all, the village is well supplied with the up-to-date improvements of modern, twentieth century life.

#### VILLAGE OF MATTAWAN

The first plat of the village of Mattawan was made on the 9th day of November, 1850, by Lyman Lawrence, and consisted of but four blocks on the north side of the Michigan Central Railroad. Since that time there have been five additions made to the town, to-wit: Scott's in 1855, twelve blocks; Kinne's in 1857, of nine blocks; Scott's 2nd, in 1870, one block; Farr's in 1871, three blocks; Sessions', in 1872, four blocks; so that now the little burg consists of thirty-three blocks. It is situated on sections thirteen and fourteen. It has never been incorporated.

While the Michigan Central Railway was in course of construction, Nathaniel Chesebro, who was attorney for the railroad company, purchased forty acres of land on which a part of the village of Mattawan is now situate. It is said that he laid out a town there and called it Mattawan, after a village of that name on the Hudson river in the state of New York. Be that as it may, if Mr. Chesebro ever platted the village, his plat was never placed on the records of the county. Mattawan is also a station on the "Fruit Belt" line.

In 1848, Charles Scott donated land to the company for depot

purposes, on condition that Mattawan should be made a regular station and stopping place for trains. It is said that the company ignored this condition of the grant and that Scott tried, unsuccessfully to recover pay for the land. Whatever may have been the practice of the road as to stopping trains at the place in those early days, Mattawan has long been one of the recognized stations of the road at which all trains, except fast through trains, make regular stops.

The first building of importance in the place was a grocery store, put up by John Cronkhite in 1850. He sold the place to Rev. J. J. Bliss, a Canadian clergyman, who made his residence on the first floor and opened a store in the second story. Bliss also built a warehouse, which he sold to the late Morgan L. Fitch. He was a man of considerable versatility, a railroad switchman, a preacher as well as a trader, and occupied his time when not engaged in his railroad duties, in selling goods and preaching the gospel, at first as a Protestant Methodist, afterward as a Free-Will Baptist. He sold his business to Henry Fitch, whose successors were Morgan L. Fitch and C. D. Van Vechten.

The first hotel in the place was built on Front street, in 1855, by J. F. Parmenter, and was called the "Antwerp House," subsequently the "Willard House." This building was destroyed by fire in 1873.

Previous to this Harry Durkee had built another hotel which was known as the "Union House." This was also burned, several years prior to the destruction of the "Willard." Durkee then put up another public house, which was kept by Chauncey Bonfoey.

A post office was established at Mattawan in 1850, and Rev. J. J. Bliss was appointed postmaster. His duties as a representative of "Uncle Sam" were not burdensome and a cigar box served him as a receptacle for the mail sent to his office. His successors have been John Smolk, James Murray, Raper Ward, Abel Brown, L. C. Fitch, S. S. Rascoe, Isaac Stewart, Miss Nina Goodrich, A. H. Campbell, Will C. Mosher and Miss Fannie Bockius, the present post-mistress.

At one time in the later sixties Mattawan enjoyed a brisk trade in lumber and shingles and other forest products, but the construction of the Pere Marquette Railroad (it was then called the Chicago & West Michigan) and the Kalamazoo & South Haven (now a branch of the Michigan Central), which cross the county on the north and west, diverted this traffic to other points and interfered materially with the prosperity of the town. The subsequent development of the fruit interests have, however, restored to the place a degree of prosperity that is very gratifying. The town is surrounded by some of the finest vineyards to be found in the "grape

belt" and is a lively place during the gathering and marketing of that delectable fruit.

As an indication of the progressive character of the citizens of Mattawan it should be stated that that village has the only school in the county, known as a consolidated school. The statutes of Michigan provide that when any two or more contiguous school districts have in the aggregate more than 100 pupils of school age—between the ages of five and twenty—they may, after complying with certain conditions, unite for the purpose of forming a graded school.

The preliminary steps for the formation of such a district were taken in the early summer of 1910, the result being that four rural



MATTAWAN'S CONSOLIDATED SCHOOL

districts united with the village district, combining them all into one district, instead of five, as theretofore. The scholars are taken to and from the school in comfortable covered vehicles by men who are bonded for the faithful performance of that duty. This is one of the desirable features of the plan, as it enables the pupils from a distance to easily reach the school and insures their early return to their homes. Under this new plan, instead of each school teaching simply the "three R's," with, perhaps a few occasional outside frills, the course embraces twelve grades, with instruction in music, manual training and ethics. Library, laboratory and class-room facilities are being added as rapidly as possible. In view of the fact that the students are drawn from so large an area, the school is a subject of interest to a good many people. The official report for the school year of 1910-1 shows that there were 219 scholars

in the consolidated district, two schoolhouses, valued at \$7,000, six teachers employed during the school year, an aggregate of forty-five and one-half of months of school taught, and \$2,297 expended for teachers' wages.

During the past season, there were 461 carloads of grapes shipped from Mattawan, which would be equivalent to 1,383,000 eight-pound baskets. There is a grape juice factory located in the village that pressed 1,356 tons of grapes during the past season, making about 300,000 gallons of unfermented grape juice.

Other business places are three general stores, hardware store, meat-market, undertaking establishment and real estate dealer, blacksmith-shop, wood working shop, livery, two pickle processing factories, hotel, harness and shoe shop, large railroad ice houses for icing fruit cars and two railroad depots.

There are two churches in the village, the Congregational and the Methodist Episcopal, each of which have fine brick houses of worship, that will seat about 250 people.

The Congregational church was organized July 2, 1867, at the residence of J. J. Johnson. The following members were received on that occasion: Mr. and Mrs. J. J. Johnson, Mr. and Mrs. W. O. Elmore, Mr. and Mrs. Charles Kelsey, Mr. and Mrs. Josiah Hopkins, Mr. and Mrs. William Ward, Mr. and Mrs. Oliver P. Morton, Luther J. Hopkins, Milo Ward, Samuel Ward, S. N. Mygatt, Louis Hitchcock, A. Kellogg, Mary A. Van Winkle and Stephen Morton. The present pastor is Rev. J. D. Perrin.

The Methodist church was organized about 1854, at the Fitch schoolhouse north of Mattawan, where worship was held for the first two years, when the meetings were transferred to Mattawan. At that time the class was a part of the church at Lawton. A house of worship was built by the society at Mattawan in 1866. The pulpit of the church is at the present time supplied by the Rev. F. M. Cosner, pastor of the Lawton M. E. church.

Secret orders are represented in Mattawan by Mattawan Lodge No. 268, F. & A. M., which was instituted on the 13th day of January, 1870, with Dr. Thos. H. Briggs, as master, C. D. Van Vechten as senior warden and Clinton Fitch as junior warden. The Maccabees also have a lodge in the village.

#### RETROSPECT

Could those hardy, brave and courageous pioneers of the early thirties, who first set foot in the wilds of Antwerp, return to the scenes of their young manhood, they could not but be astonished beyond measure to see the changes that have been wrought. Orchards have superceded the "openings," vineyards loaded with the

most luscious of fruit in its season have taken the place of the grubs and brush that then covered the landscape; mansions, such as could hardly have existed even in the wildest dreams of the first settlers, have displaced the wigwams of the red men; domestic animals feed where once the wild beasts of the forest had their dens; automobiles have succeeded the ox teams of the pioneer, and all is most wonderfully changed. The luxuries of yesterday have become the necessities of today, and yet pessimists sigh for the "good old times."

## CHAPTER XX

### TOWNSHIP OF ARLINGTON

FIRST ELECTION—FIRST SETTLER ARRIVES—MAJOR HEATH, FIRST SUPERVISOR—THE DANGEROUS BRIGGS BROTHERS—OTHER NEW YORK MEN—THE HOGMIRE FAMILY—RUGGED WORK OF THE PIONEERS—M. H. HOGMIRE ON PIONEER TIMES—NEW TIMES BETTER THAN OLD.

When the county of Van Buren was first organized, the township of Arlington constituted a part of Lawrence. It was set off from that townships and organized into a separate body by an act of the legislature of 1842. The name "Arlington" was suggested by one of the pioneers of the township, James Stevens, a Revolutionary soldier, in memory of his native town in the Green Mountain state. The township is centrally located in the county and is bounded on the north by the township of Columbia, east by Waverly, south by Lawrence and west by Bangor.

#### FIRST ELECTION

The first election in the township was held at the residence of Allen Briggs on the first Monday of April, 1842, at which the following officers were chosen: Supervisor, Major Heath; township clerk, Emory O. Briggs; township treasurer, Allen Briggs; highway commissioners, Alvinsy Harris, James T. Hard and Joseph Ives; assessors, Alvinsy Harris and William A. Taylor; justices of the peace, James T. Hard, Allen Briggs, William Dyckman and Major Heath; constables, William A. Taylor and James G. Cochrane.

So few were the inhabitants of the new township at this time that but fourteen electors were present, viz: William N. Taylor, James G. Cochrane, Emory O. Briggs, Joseph Ives, Morrison Heath, Major Heath, James Stevens, Allen Briggs, William Bridges, Alvinsy Harris, William Dyckman, William H. McGeorge, James T. Hard and Conrad Hogmire.



## DRAINAGE, TIMBER AND PRODUCTS

Arlington is watered by the two principal rivers of the county. The Paw Paw river passes diagonally through the southwest corner of the township, crossing section thirty-six and forming a part of the southern boundary of the town, that portion of such section cut off by the river having been attached to the township of Lawrence. Black river crosses section six, the northwest corner of the township. There are also several small lakes, the principal one, Scott Lake, a beautiful sheet of water, on section one, extending nearly across the section.

The township was originally heavily timbered with whitewood, walnut, beech, maple, ash, oak and other varieties of valuable timber, very much of which was cut down and burned by the early



A GLIMPSE OF THE FRUIT INDUSTRY

settlers in order to make room for the crops necessary for their livelihood. Owing to this great growth of timber the labor of clearing and improving the land and fitting it for the production of crops was much greater than in other portions of the county known as the "oak openings."

The surface of the township is somewhat broken, in some localities the elevations and depressions being quite abrupt and marked. The soil consists quite generally of a loam of sand and clay and is exceedingly rich and productive. It has been brought to a high degree of cultivation and is admirably suited to the production of wheat, corn, oats and other cereals, as well as to the growing of various varieties of fruit, which is produced in great abun-

dance. It is especially adapted to the culture of the apple and some of the finest apple orchards in the county—and that means within the state as well—are to be found within its limits.

#### FIRST SETTLER ARRIVES

The first settler within the limits of the township was William N. Taylor, a young man of twenty-two years, who came to Michigan in 1835 with a party from Monroe county, New York, who were seeking a home in what was then the territory of Michigan, and most of whom settled in the adjoining township, now Columbia. Practically the entire party, including women and children, made the journey from Detroit to Van Buren county on foot, following an Indian trail, single file, as was the custom of the red men who made the pathway. The limited possessions of the party were drawn by a yoke of mismatched, balky steers, which they purchased in Detroit, and it was not without much trouble and difficulty that they finally reached their destination.

Soon after the arrival of the party Mr. Taylor obtained one hundred and twenty acres of land on section number eight, in township number two south of range number fifteen west, which was at that time unorganized and which became a part of the township of Lawrence in 1837 and, subsequently, the township of Arlington. Being an unmarried man, Mr. Taylor did not immediately take up his residence on his new "wildwood" farm, but sought employment in Kalamazoo county for a time, returning to New York in the winter of 1836-7, where, at Hinckleyville in the county of Monroe, he was married to Miss Philinda Kelsey. He returned to Michigan with his wife in the spring of 1837, leaving his bride at Comstock, Kalamazoo county, until he could erect a bark roofed shanty on his Arlington possessions, which, as soon as completed, was occupied by the newly married couple. It is reported that the only crop he was able to raise that season was a small lot of turnips, and that they were practically destroyed by that team of balky steers that he had driven from Detroit on his first journey to Michigan and which were owned by some of the party in the adjoining township of Columbia.

The next settler in the township was James T. Hard, who located on section number five in the fall of 1837 and who afterward emigrated to the state of California.

#### MAJOR HEATH, FIRST SUPERVISOR

Major Heath was another of the first Arlington settlers. Mr. Heath was a native of Jefferson county, New York, and came to Jackson county, Michigan, in 1837, and two years later to Van

Buren county. He entered lands on sections nineteen and thirty, selecting the latter as the place whereon he erected his first residence, a primitive house of logs, but, as rendering it more aristocratic and pretentious than the dwellings of the other pioneers, it actually had a board door made from a sawed board which Mr. Heath secured by a walk of six miles, carrying it home on his shoulders. Mr. Heath was very active in the affairs of the new township and was chosen as its first supervisor. When he first arrived upon the scene of his future residence, no roads led to his new possessions and they could only be reached otherwise than on foot until with his brawny arms and woodman's axe he had hewed a pathway through the dense forest. Major Heath became an influential citizen of the county and was greatly interested in all matters that concerned the welfare of the community in which he resided. He subsequently removed to the state of Iowa, but returned to Van Buren county and bought a farm in the adjoining township of Bangor where he lived out the remainder of his days. He was the father of the late Charles E. Heath, who was at one time clerk of Van Buren county, an office which he filled for two successive terms.

The first death in the township was that of Major Heath's wife, who passed away in the winter of 1841.

There were seven taxpayers within the boundaries of the township at the assessment of 1839, viz: James T. Hard, who was taxed \$2.75; R. Gillman, \$2.70; William N. Taylor, \$2.88; Ransom Kellogg, \$3.84; Major Heath, \$3.75; S. M. N. Brooks, 96 cents, and Robert Christie, \$1.60.

Another of the early settlers of the township was Allen Briggs, who was a native of the state of Vermont. With his parents he removed to the state of New York where he grew to manhood. In 1838 he came west, visiting Ohio, Indiana and Michigan, spending a considerable time in the latter state prospecting for a satisfactory location. The next year (1839), in company with his two sons, he entered forty acres of land on section nineteen and began the arduous task of hewing out a home in the forest. Having completed the usual pioneer log cabin he sent, the next year, for the remainder of his family, who joined him after a tedious journey by canal and lake to Detroit and overland from that city to their new wilderness home. Mr. Briggs was a man of education and ability and from the time of his coming into the county occupied a position of prominence and was of great assistance to the pioneers, both in private and public life, filling numerous township offices and being regarded as a leader in public affairs. He died at his Arlington home in 1868, aged eighty years, beloved and re-

spected by all with whom he had become associated during a long and useful life.

#### THE DANGEROUS BRIGGS BROTHERS

Two of the sons, Emory O. and Duane D. Briggs preceded their father to their new Michigan home by a few months. They left their home in New York in the month of February, 1839. One horse sufficed to carry all their worldly possessions, including provisions for the journey. Their route was from Orleans county, New York, to Lewiston, thence across the Niagara river and through the dominion of Canada to the city of Detroit. The "Patriot War" was scarcely ended and people from the United States coming into the British dominions were regarded with suspicion, and so these two beardless youths, aged respectively seventeen and nineteen years and wholly unarmed, were promptly arrested by a valiant officer in "Her Majesty's" service, as characters dangerous to the British government. In custody of an armed guard with fixed bayonets, they were triumphantly marched through the streets of Queenstown to the headquarters of the English commander, by whom they were ordered to the guard house; but the order was countermanded before they were actually imprisoned and they were returned to the presence of the commander by whom they were questioned and ordered searched. After considerable delay they were permitted to continue their journey, the conclusion evidently being that there was no danger of the overthrow of the British empire at the hands of these two American boys. However, in view of what had transpired in previous disagreements between Uncle Sam and John Bull, no blame could be attached to the Canadian authorities for exercising proper care in the premises. There was no telling what the boys might do!

After a tedious and unpleasant journey these two youths finally reached their destination. The first money they earned they invested in forty acres of land which was entered in the name of their father, Allen Briggs.

Young Emory was a lad of superior education for those primitive times and at once became a more than ordinarily useful member of the community. During the winter time he was employed as a teacher and, being versed in the science of surveying, he found no difficulty in securing remunerative employment at other seasons of the year. He surveyed many of the roads, not only in Arlington, but in other townships of the county. He not only became prominent in township matters, but was looked upon as an adviser in county matters as well. Politically, he was a strong Democrat and few steps were taken by Van Buren county Democrats

without his advice and approval. He eventually became a large landholder in the township where he first settled. He not only filled many of the local offices of his township, but was elected to the office of register of deeds in 1844, and was subsequently three times chosen county treasurer. While filling such official position, Mr. Briggs and his family became residents of Paw Paw, returning to the Arlington farm at the close of his official career. In 1866 he again took up his residence at the county seat and became one of the prominent business men of that place, being at one time cashier of the First National Bank, the first banking institution organized in the county. He died at Paw Paw, in 1885, in his sixty-fifth year. His death was the result of an accidental fall. His elder son, George Allen Briggs, a very promising young man, at one time the superintendent of the Paw Paw Union schools, preceded his father to "that bourne whence no traveler returns" by a period of about four years. His younger son, E. Stanley Briggs, is now one of the leading business men of Paw Paw.

In 1840, Alvinsy Harris located on section nineteen. He was a man of much force of character and of good judgment and was elected by his fellow citizens to numerous local official positions. His son, the late Jefferson D. Harris, succeeded to the homestead after the death of his father and added to it by the purchase of adjoining lands. He represented his township on the board of supervisors for a number of years and was regarded as one of its most valued citizens.

Morrison Heath was likewise one of the early pioneers of the town, coming with Mr. Harris in 1840, and locating on section thirty.

#### OTHER NEW YORK MEN

That same year brought several other additions to the little band of hardy pioneers that had selected homes in the primeval forests of the township. William Bridges, who came from Livingston county, New York, in 1837, and first located in the adjoining township of Columbia, settled on section eight and, like those who had preceded him, built a log cabin in the midst of the forest.

James Stevens, the step-father of Allen Briggs, came from the same county in the same year and made his home with Mr. Briggs. Mr. Stevens was an old man of some four-score years and to him was accorded the honor of naming the township. He died in 1847.

Joseph Ives was another immigrant from the state of New York who settled in the same township in 1840, locating on section twenty-nine. He was one of the electors at the first town meeting held in the newly organized township and was chosen as one of its first assessors.

James M. Bierce soon afterward settled near Mr. Ives and built the customary pioneer log cabin, which he followed in after years by a comfortable and commodious farm house. The compiler of this work, in his younger days, was an employe of Mr. Bierce upon this same land after the proprietor had converted it into a rich, cultivated and highly productive farm. Mr. Bierce became a member of Company C, of the Fourth Michigan Cavalry, in the Civil war, giving up his life for his country. He died at Nashville, Tennessee, in the month of January, 1863, less than six months after his enlistment. For a considerable number of years his father, Norman Bierce, whom the people familiarly called "Uncle Norman," lived in the same vicinity.

James G. Cochrane was another man from Livingston county, New York, who settled in the next township north in 1838 and shortly afterward located in Arlington. A very sad incident occurred in the pioneer life of Mr. Cochrane. Samuel Watson, Mrs. Cochrane's father, had been to Paw Paw, and on his way home lost his way in the forest and died before he could be found by parties searching for him. Andrew M. Cochrane, son of James G., was the first white child born within the limits of the present township of Arlington.

William Dyckman was another of the 1840 settlers of the township. He settled on section twenty-four, where he cleared up and occupied a fine farm on which he lived for many years. He died at Bangor in the summer of 1909, at the advanced age of ninety-three.

At about the same time Evart B. D. Hicks located on section twenty-five. Mr. Hicks became one of the most successful and prosperous farmers in the township.

#### THE HOGMIRE FAMILY

The Hogmire family, while not among the first settlers of the township, nevertheless are entitled to be counted among the real pioneers. Daniel Hogmire left his home in western New York in 1842, coming to the Van Buren wilderness, selecting Arlington as his future dwelling place, and making an entry of forty acres on section nine. Of course he at once constructed the usual pioneer log cabin which was, without exception, the kind of architecture adopted by the first settlers. Indeed, there was little opportunity for any other style of dwelling. Mr. Hogmire was a carpenter and worked at his trade for a time, but soon returned to New York after his family. He afterward became interested in the pineries of Columbia township and engaged in the manufacture of shingles for which there was a continually increasing demand as the popu-

lation of the county increased in numbers. He later purchased eighty acres of land on section twenty-one, where he erected a fine brick mansion which he occupied during the remainder of his life.

Conrad Hogmire, another resident of Livingston county, New York, came to Arlington in 1842, and located on section eight, but did not long survive after coming to Michigan.

Henry Hogmire also located on section eight, cleared up the land and eventually erected a fine residence. He afterward removed to Paw Paw, at which place he died.

John, another member of the Hogmire family, came to Arlington considerably later, in 1850, and settled on section twenty. He purchased eighty acres, which he converted into a fine, productive farm.

The Bigelow family was also quite prominent in the annals of the township. Rufus Bigelow came in 1843 and Calvin J. and Samuel Bigelow in 1845. Calvin bought eighty acres on section twenty, and Samuel purchased an eighty on section twenty-one.

Among other early settlers of the township were George Meabon, Homer Adams, Ira Orton, Melancthon Gage, Daniel Gage, Henry Earl, Samuel Hoppin, Amos Hamlin and James F. Kidder.

During the earlier years there were no mills in Van Buren county and to procure a supply of provisions required a journey of upward of forty miles and return. It took seven days to go to mill and get home with the supplies.

#### RUGGED WORK OF THE PIONEERS

The present generation can scarcely realize the vast amount of labor that was required to convert the densely timbered lands of the township into cultivated farms. Simply to cut down those monarchs of the forest that covered an eighty-acre tract of land, or even forty acres, was no light task, but after they were laid low the work of burning them, which was all that could be done with them before the days of saw-mills, was enough to discourage any but men cast in the heroic mold of the indomitable pioneers; men who never feared any amount of hard labor and to whom there was no such word "fail." And then after the lands were cleared of the timber it was covered so thickly with the remaining stumps that it was a difficult matter to find room to cultivate sufficiently for planting any kind of a crop. But the soil was fertile and only required to be tickled with the rude implements of husbandry of those early days to respond with a bountiful return for the labor bestowed upon it. Very few horses were to be found in the pioneer settlements, the work of breaking up the virgin soil being much

more easily done with oxen, which in these modern days are so scarce as to be real curiosities.

The earlier religious services were held at the residences of the first settlers, Elder Knapp being the expounder of Gospel truths.

The earliest surveyed highway in the township was known as the "Monroe Road" and passed diagonally through the township, connecting South Haven and Paw Paw. Soon afterward the Bridges and the Brown and Taylor roads, with others, were surveyed and eventually made passable, but it was a considerable number of years before the township was possessed of really good highways.

Through the labors of those indomitable pioneers of early days, Arlington for years has been one of the best townships in the county, and it is hard to realize that three-quarters of a century ago it was an unbroken wilderness where the foot of the white man had never trod, and where the red man and the wild beasts of the forest had roamed at will from time immemorial.

The township is devoted almost wholly to agriculture and horticulture; it has no postoffice within its limits but is amply covered by rural mail routes. It has only a piece of a village, Monroe's addition to the village of Bangor being on section seven of the township.

The Pere Marquette Railroad crosses its extreme northwest corner, but there is no station within its borders.

#### OFFICIAL RECORDS

Following is a list of the names of the gentlemen who have served at different times as supervisors from the date of the organization of the township to the present time: Major Heath, Isaiah F. Hunt, Abram Lewis, Homer Adams, Alvinsy Harris, Sidney Fuller, Emory O. Briggs, Marquis Woodward, Arvin Heath, Jefferson D. Harris, Mitchell H. Hogmire, Hiram K. Wells, O. E. Cox, Frank H. Fuller, H. B. Smith, Levi DeHaven, S. E. Monroe and Frank G. Cleveland. The greater number of these gentlemen served more than one term, some of them several terms in succession. Mr. Cleveland, the present supervisor, is now serving his seventh term.

The census of 1910 gives the number of inhabitants of Arlington as exactly fifteen hundred. In point of population it ranks as tenth among the townships of the county.

At the first presidential election after the organization of the township, held on the 5th day of November, 1844, twenty-four votes were polled, to-wit: twenty for James K. Polk, Democrat, and four for Henry Clay, Whig.



At the last presidential election 282 ballots were deposited, as follows: Taft, Republican, 183; Bryan, Democrat, ninety-three; Chafin, Prohibitionist, four; Debs, Socialist, and Hisgen, Independent, each one.

The assessed valuation of the township in 1842 was \$19,025 and the taxes levied were \$520.80. The non-resident land, and that included by far the larger part, was assessed at \$1.25 per acre. No personal property appears on the roll. The system of those early days seems to have been the much debated single-tax plan of these modern days, a tax on land values only, which tends to the verification of the adage that "there is nothing new under the sun."

The assessed valuation of the township for 1911, \$824,040, places it as the eighth in rank among the townships of the county, in point of wealth.

The first school within the limits of the present township was taught by Mehitable Northrop in a log schoolhouse located on the southeast corner of section twenty-five.

The official school reports for 1910-11 give the following statistics: Number of pupils of school age, 455; volumes in district libraries, 898; estimated value of school property, \$11,300; number of schoolhouses, ten; indebtedness, none; teachers employed, eleven; aggregate months school taught, ninety-five and one-half; teachers' salaries paid, \$3,858.75. From the primary school fund of the state the township was apportioned the sum of \$3,367.50.

#### M. H. HOGMIRE ON PIONEER TIMES

The following quoted paragraphs are taken by permission of the author, Mitchell H. Hogmire, from an interesting paper read by him at a meeting of the County Pioneer Association, at Bangor, in 1906: "Arlington's natural wealth could hardly be told or calculated. It certainly had more valuable timber than any other township in the county, such as whitewood, ash, elm, blackwalnut, birch, maple, basswood, oak, pine and sycamore. On one forty acres on section nine, one hundred and twenty-three whitewood trees could be counted that would measure from two feet up to four feet across the stump, with a body from sixty to eighty feet in length. We could boast of having the largest walnut tree in the county. It grew on section seventeen, and measured thirty-five feet and ten inches in circumference, two feet from the ground.

"In addition to this was the game with which the forests abounded, such as deer, bears, turkeys and all small game, which, with the two streams that passed through the town, and its numerous lakes, furnished the early pioneers with an abundance of meat and fish.

“The soil is all that could be wished, from a heavy clay loam to a black, sandy loam; also deposits of muck that have proved to be of great value. Arlington, with the rest of Van Buren county, furnishes as great a variety of products as any other county in the United States.

“The early settlers were all poor. Many of them, when they came here, owed debts in the east, and I know of many who paid them after they were outlawed, thus showing their honor.

“A large per cent of the early pioneers came from Livingston county, New York. They were the sons and daughters of the early settlers of that county, which was heavily timbered, so they were no novices at the task that was set before them. While the natural wealth of timber was great, it was a burden, for it had to be cleared away before the settlers could raise crops on which to live. Even yet there are to be seen fence rails that were split out of the best of walnut and the finest of whitewood, while the rest was burned to get it out of the way. I do not think that an acre of the heavy timbered land in Arlington was ever cleared at an expense of less than from sixteen to twenty dollars, and this did not remove the stumps. Those who came later were not so inconvenienced, for as the town developed there was a market for lumber, which helped to pay the expense of clearing. To illustrate: The first walnut log sawed at Breedsville was hauled to the mill by my father, Conrad Hogmire. It was worth \$1.25 per thousand in the log, or \$2.50 as lumber. Some of this lumber was used as panels in the doors to the house he built and some of it was used to make the coffin in which he was buried. After he had been buried twenty-four years, I removed his remains to the cemetery. The coffin was in perfect condition showing the lasting qualities of the timber. The same lumber would sell for sixty dollars per thousand at this date.

“The early settlers were of a hardy class of men and women, who had come to this new country to build homes for themselves and their children, and they went at the matter with the will and the courage that win. All being poor, there was not the envy and strife that now exists. All were interested in each other's welfare, and as a whole, they were morally good, God-fearing citizens, and lived to better their neighbors as well as themselves. Let me illustrate this old feeling and the new: I was two years old when my father came from Livingston county, New York, in 1840. Six years later he died, leaving my mother with three small boys to care for, the first orphans in our part of the town. Mother lived with my grandfather, William Briggs. When he killed his last and only shoat—and it was not corn-fed either—it was divided up and I carried portions to the neighbors three or four miles away. It was just the same when a deer was killed; but how is it now? All

we get from one who butchers his hogs, even if it be just across the way, is the squeal!

“At the first township meeting, held at the residence of Allen Briggs, on the 5th day of April, 1842, there were fifteen votes cast, of which thirteen were Democratic and two Whig. The township remained Democratic until the adoption of the fifteenth amendment to the constitution, which gave it thirty-three additional voters. Since which it has been Republican, but the people have always been patriotic, believing that the majority should rule.

“During the Civil war Arlington’s sons responded and some of them were among the first to enlist. Some died in southern prisons; others died of disease; some were killed in battle; others lived to return home to enjoy the fruits of the victory that was so dearly won. Your humble writer was one of the last mentioned and let me say that it took no little nerve to kiss a wife and a five-months’ old babe good-bye, and bid adieu to life-long friends, and go forth to fight the battles of one’s country. But we only did our duty as all loyal men should. I am thankful that the All-wise Ruler has permitted me to live in this, the most eventful period this nation has ever known. When I look back sixty-six years and see Arlington as it was at that time, and compare it with its present condition, a veritable ‘Garden of Eden,’ I feel that it is glory enough for us old pioneers, and that we can truly say that the world is better for our having been here.

“Arlington has never sent a president to Washington, nor a governor to Lansing, but she has furnished some very good jurists, sent some capable law-makers to the state capital and has given, according to its population, the largest vote in favor of temperance at the last two local option elections, of any township in the county. As ‘Uncle Abe’ said ‘we are just honest,’ and Arlington is on the side of the right.’”

#### NEW TIMES BETTER THAN OLD

In a letter accompanying the foregoing sketch, Mr. Hogmire says: “Arlington has developed her resources and has demonstrated her progress by her enterprising inhabitants. We can boast of our fruits, such as apples, peaches, pears, plums, cherries, and in fact all varieties, except tropical fruits, and their flavor is not to be excelled. There are farms in our town at the present time that would pay good profit on \$300 per acre, land that once sold for \$1.25 per acre. We have peppermint lands that produce from sixty to seventy-five pounds of oil from a single acre, worth from \$2.00 to \$3.50 per pound, land that will produce 1,200 bushels of onions per acre, and celery lands that cannot be excelled. We

have raised on some of our lands as high as sixty bushels of wheat to the acre, in a forty acre field. I myself raised last year a crop of corn on reclaimed swamp land that produced thirty tons of silage and 206 bushels of corn per acre. This may seem large, but we have the corn."

Accompanying this communication, was a letter written by Mr. Hogmire's mother in 1842 to her New York relatives. The following prices quoted by her are of interest in these days of the high cost of living. She says: "It is a first rate time for those who have provisions to buy. Wheat is two shillings (that would be twenty-five cents—Editor) per bushel, oats eighteen cents, corn eighteen cents and pork one and a-half cents per pound."

Ah, well, the times have changed since those good old days that so many people long for and glorify, but it is distance that lends enchantment to the view. If it were possible for those who have such love of the "old times" to be placed in the same conditions as those early pioneers were placed, they would soon be praying to be restored to these twentieth century days, the best days in the world's history. *O tempora! O mores!*

## CHAPTER XXI

### TOWNSHIP OF BANGOR

NATURAL FEATURES—EARLY SETTLERS—PIONEER TAX PAYERS—  
CIVIL AND EDUCATIONAL—SKETCH BY HON. JOHN S. CROSS—IN  
THE CIVIL WAR—PROGRESS AND PROSPERITY—VILLAGE OF BAN-  
GOR—VILLAGE OF DEERFIELD.

Bangor is one of the interior towns of the county, and is designated by the United States survey as township number two south of range number sixteen west. The adjoining townships are Geneva on the north, Arlington on the east, Hartford on the south and Covert on the west. The northwest corner of the township approaches within four and a half miles of Lake Michigan and it has convenient railroad connection with two harbors on that body of water, St. Joseph and South Haven; with the former, via the Pere Marquette Railway, a distance of twenty-seven miles; with the latter, via the Pere Marquette and the South Haven division of the Michigan Central, a distance of seventeen miles.

#### NATURAL FEATURES

The principal stream in the township is the Black river, which in its course to Lake Michigan enters the township at the east side of the village of Bangor and passes across the northeast corner of the township, diagonally through sections number one and two. There are also a number of smaller streams and numerous small lakes, those large enough to be dignified by a name being Rush, Van Auken, School Section, Pleasant and Duck. Rush and Van Auken lakes are beautiful sheets of water, each being about three quarters of a mile in length and well stocked with fish of various varieties.

The surface of the township is undulating, with few abrupt declivities, smooth and easily tilled land prevailing. It was originally heavily timbered with beech, maple, whitewood, walnut, elm, ash, pine and hemlock, but these primeval forests have practically yielded to the woodman's axe and comparatively little timber remains. The soil is variable, being in some places a gravelly loam,

in others on the sandy order, elsewhere a heavy clay loam and in some localities black muck, originally the beds of swamps which have been drained and converted into rich, productive, tillable land. This muck soil is peculiarly adapted to the cultivation of peppermint, which is extensively grown in the southern part of the township in the vicinity of the village of McDonald. The grower sometimes realizes from thirty to thirty-five pounds of peppermint oil per acre, which is worth at the present time about \$2.70 per pound and has sometimes been as high as \$4.00, thus making it a very profitable crop to raise. Large quantities of onions and other vegetables are also produced on this kind of soil.

#### EARLY SETTLERS

Charles U. Cross was the first man to locate lands within the limits of the present township of Bangor. He settled on section twelve, in the month of March, 1837, although he first came to the county in 1834. At the time of his settlement in the township he was its sole resident. Mr. Cross was a man of prominence in the affairs of the new settlement and did much toward the development of the township and of the village of Bangor which was subsequently founded and of which he remained a resident until his death, which occurred in 1872.

The second party to locate in the township was John Smith, a native of Orange County, New York, who settled upon section eleven in June, 1837. He remained for some time with Mr. Cross, while clearing up his land and building for himself a pioneer cabin, into which when completed he moved with his wife and son, who had joined him in their new wilderness home.

John Southard, another New Yorker from Cayuga county, was the next of Bangor's pioneer settlers. He came in November, 1837; entered a large tract of land on section twenty-five and proceeded at once with the business of preparing a home for himself and his family, for whom he returned to New York the following spring.

Caleb Northrup was another of the pioneer settlers of the township that arrived in the latter part of the year 1837. He located on section thirty-six where, after the manner of those early settlers, he proceeded to make a home for himself and family and where he resided until his death.

Mansel M. Briggs came to Michigan in 1836 and settled in Bangor in 1838. At first he became an employe of Mr. Southard, taking a contract to clear a tract of land for that gentleman. On the completion of his contract, he purchased a farm on section

twenty-four and built upon it a very comfortable log house, where he and his family resided for about fifteen years.

Near the close of the year 1837 Daniel Taylor, from Monroe county, New York, located on section fourteen. Charles A., one of Mr. Taylor's sons, had previously entered a half section of land of which he had sold all but hundred and twenty acres which he reserved for himself.

Mr. Taylor, not having any near neighbors, built his pioneer cabin entirely with his own hands. Like the other early settlers, he had to go to Schoolcraft, thirty-six miles distant, for grain and then take it to Kalamazoo to be ground. Mr. Taylor was the first man in the township to start an orchard, which he did by planting seed that he brought with him from the state of New York.

Perrin M. Northrup was another pioneer who located in the township at an early date and who was prominent among the settlers of those early days.

PIONEER TAX PAYERS

The tax roll for 1839 shows that there were eight taxpaying residents in the township at that time, viz:—

Names.	Section.	Acres.	Tax.
Charles U. Cross.....	12	80	\$ 1.35
Daniel Taylor .....	14	160	3.59
Charles A. Taylor.....	14	160	3.20
John Smith .....	11	40	.65
John Southard .....	25	467	10.02
P. M. Northrup.....	36	141	2.83
Caleb Northrup .....	36	40	.78
Mansel M. Briggs, personal estate.....			<u>.20</u>

On the assessment roll of the township for the current year the valuation is placed at the sum of \$1,062,700. The total sum of taxes assessed for the year was \$21,115.81.

Other early settlers of the township were Thomas and William Kemp (brothers), Mason Wood, S. W. Bancroft, Orlando S. Brown and William Jones.

In 1845 there were twenty-two taxpaying residents in the township: Thomas Kemp, William E. Kemp, S. W. Bancroft, H. Potter, J. L. Northrup, Perrin M. Northrup, Mansel M. Briggs, J. Ball, John Southard, William Jones, Charles A. Taylor, Daniel Taylor, John Smith, William S. Camp, Mason Wood, William Henry, Charles U. Cross, S. Hoppin, Calvin Cross, Orlando S. Brown, William H. Hurlbut and Hial Swan. From this time for-

ward the township continued to have a moderate growth and in 1856 it contained nearly a hundred taxpayers.

#### CIVIL AND EDUCATIONAL

The first town meeting was held on the third day of April, 1854, at which the following officers were elected: Mansel M. Briggs, supervisor; Charles U. Cross, township clerk; Perrin M. Northrup, township treasurer; John Smith and Daniel Van Auken, highway commissioners; Charles B. Hurlbut, school inspector; Mansel M. Briggs and William H. Hurlbut, justices of the peace; David I. Taylor, Henry Goss, John L. Northrup and Francis Burger, constables.

The following named gentlemen have served as supervisors of the township: Mansel M. Briggs, William H. Burlingame, Charles U. Cross, William H. Hurlbut, Moses S. Hawley, Daniel Van Auken, Samuel A. Tripp, Ephraim P. Harvey, Joel Camp, Charles E. Heath, Enoch S. Harvey, Peter J. Dillman, John Mutchler, and Frank A. Burger, the present incumbent, who is now serving his fourth term. Mr. Dillman had the honor of serving longer than any other of the gentlemen named, although he was a Democrat coming from a strong Republican precinct. He was first elected in 1883 and then served for ten successive years. He was again elected in 1897 and served until his death, twenty years altogether. He died July 28, 1907. Other somewhat lengthy terms of service were Charles E. Heath, nine years, and John Mutchler, four years.

The first general election was held in the township on the fourth day of November, 1856, at which seventy-five presidential votes were cast, fifty of them being for John C. Fremont, the Pathfinder, and twenty-five of them for James Buchanan, the bachelor president. At the last presidential election held on the third day of November, 1908, there were 532 votes cast for president, as follows: William H. Taft, Republican, 303; William Jennings Bryan, Democrat, 196; Eugene W. Chafin, Prohibitionist, eleven; Eugene V. Debs, Socialist, twenty-one; Thomas L. Hisgen, Independence party, two; Gilhaus, Socialist Labor, one.

The first school in the township was taught by Miss Adelia Barnes, now Mrs. Allen Rice, who is one of the very few of the remaining pioneers of Van Buren county. A description of this school, written by Mrs. Rice herself, appears in the chapter of this work devoted to educational matters. Another school was opened in 1845, of which Miss Mehitable Northrup was the teacher. Neither of these teachers could have considered school teaching as a "get-rich-quick" scheme, as they received a weekly wage of eight shillings, which means in Uncle Sam's currency one dollar



per week, or sixteen and two-thirds cents per day—truly a munificent remuneration for teaching the “young idea how to shoot.”

The last school census of the township shows that there were then 699 persons of school age in the township, nine school houses, 2,782 volumes in the several district libraries, estimated value of school property \$32,800, district indebtedness \$2,000, teachers employed eighteen, aggregate number of months of school 153, paid for teachers' salaries \$8,860.65. There was apportioned to the township from the primary school fund of the state, for the current year, the sum of \$5,250.

#### SKETCH BY HON. JOHN S. CROSS

The following interesting historical sketch of the township and village of Bangor, was written by the late Hon. John S. Cross, and read by him at a meeting of the Pioneer Society of the county, at Bangor in June, 1898:

A few days ago from my office window I saw one of the original pioneers of this county. He had been picked up along the roadside by a farmer and brought to town. He was an Indian; I do not know his name. I only know that he was poor, sick, decrepit, aged and nearly blind; that he was cared for by the authorities, fed, warmed and sent to the county poor house—a bit of driftwood on the current of civilization. There are men and women here to-day who were alive when the stately forests of pine, oak, maple and hemlock which covered this region, knew no other owner than this man, his colleagues and ancestors; when no voices but theirs and the beasts of the forests waked the echoes of our inland lakes. One generation has not wholly passed since the treaty of Chicago extinguished the Indian title to southwestern Michigan, and the strokes of the axe of the pioneer broke the primeval silence which had rested upon these gloomy forests from time immemorial.

If the mound builders developed a scheme of civilization, and it is certain that they possessed some knowledge of the arts, their work, except as indicated by tools and fragments of pottery in their burial places, has been overgrown and obliterated by the growth of the dense forests of later ages.

We must, perforce, begin our story where the original pioneers left off, for their records are silent and forgotten. It is fitting, too, that this meeting should be held upon this historic ground. Here was the home of Orlando Brown, the second settler to locate within the limits of the present village of Bangor. His log cabin stood yonder near the bank of the little brook, surrounded by trees upon which it is said the first apples were grown in this township. A little above the cabin was the first brickyard. Mr. Brown and C. A. Taylor were the joint owners of the first threshing machine and the hum of the harvesting machine was first heard upon this farm.

A half mile westward, on the bank of Maple Creek, stood the first temple of learning, the “little red school house.” There on the 3rd day of May, 1858, was organized the first church society, a class of Bible Christians consisting of nine members under the leadership of E. P. Harvey, the founder and first pastor.

In 1840 the only other apparent sign of civilization was the Cross homestead a half mile to the northwest, and blazed trees then marked the Monroe road,

which was surveyed by Jay R. Monroe and Charles U. Cross in 1835 and was undoubtedly the first act toward the improvement of the township. Here Mr. Brown lived and labored for forty years. He was an enterprising man, a loyal and consistent Christian, a kind and obliging neighbor. At the time of Mr. Brown's location, there were eleven residents in the township, viz: Chas. U. Cross, Daniel T. Taylor, John Smith, John Southard, P. M. Northrup, Caleb Northrup, Samuel Bancroft, A. S. Brown, Mason Wood and William Jones. Together they owned 1,500 acres, about six per cent of the entire township. The aggregate tax on their property for the year 1839 was \$22.92. C. U. Cross' proportion on eighty acres, comprising what is now the principal business part of the village of Bangor, was \$1.55. (The total amount of taxes assessed on the citizens of Bangor, including both township and village, for the year 1911, was \$26,423.91.—Editor.)

The township of Bangor has the distinction of being the first township in the county to be organized by the board of supervisors. It was first named Marion, but on October 14, 1853, five days after the passage of the original resolution, the name was changed to Bangor. The name Marion was unsatisfactory to the people of the proposed township. The name Bangor was suggested by a member of the board who had been a citizen of Maine, and after consultation with residents of the township was accepted and adopted by Mr. Hurlbut, who was the author of the original resolution. At this time there were less than one hundred people residing in the township, and then, as now, agriculture was their principal occupation.

The only manufacturing industry in the township at that time was a little sawmill owned by Calvin Cross and W. H. Hurlbut, with its old fashioned, single, upright, sash saw, concerning which it is said the sawyer would start it in the morning, then go to his breakfast and get back in time to wind it up for a new start.

The sole mercantile business was conducted by M. P. Watson and Albert Comstock in the front part of Watson's dwelling, afterward a part of the Sebring House.

The advent of Joseph H. Nyman, who purchased the Watson property and moved to Bangor with his family from Niles in 1856, marked a new era in the history of the town. Mr. Nyman soon made his means and influence felt in the improvement of the water power. He built a saw mill and in 1857 erected the first grist mill, followed by a woolen mill in 1865. He caused to be established the first post route and was the first postmaster.

J. D. Kingston has the distinction of having been the pioneer hotel keeper. He purchased the Watson store building and converted it into a hotel in 1862. He subsidized the stage drivers by making them "star" boarders, thus insuring the patronage of passengers. He did a thriving business until the death of his wife in 1864. He was followed by Russell, Breed and Palmer; in 1869 Horace Sebring became the proprietor, and in his family the property has since remained. (It has passed into other hands since the above was written.—Editor.)

Samuel P. Cross was the first white child born in the township, but John Southard is the oldest native born child who has been a continuous resident.

Among the many enterprises that have contributed to the prosperity of Bangor was the coming of the railroad in 1870, in aid of which the citizens contributed the sum of \$15,000 as a bonus. This was like the dawning of a new day. The Bangor blast furnace which followed the railroad was a valuable aid in the development of the resources of the township. In the eighteen years of its existence, nearly half a million cords of wood in the form of

charcoal was consumed, the product of twenty sections of land. More land was brought under cultivation in those eighteen years than in all the preceding forty years of the history of the township.

The first grain elevator was erected by G. W. Smiley and O. E. Goodell in 1871. In 1872, Horace Sebring and Mitchell H. Hogmire built the Overton elevator and opened the stockyards.

The chemical works erected by H. M. Pierce for the manufacture of wood alcohol and acetic acid were at that time the largest in the world.

The first bank was established by E. M. Hipp in 1872, under the name of the Bank of Bangor.

The first blacksmith shop was conducted by Charles B. Hurlbut.

The pioneer newspaper was the *Bangor Journal*, established by Charles Gillett in 1872.

The Methodist Episcopal church was organized in 1865, and in 1868 the society built a church on the north side. This property was lost to the church by foreclosure of mortgage in 1868. The present building was erected and dedicated in 1873.

#### IN THE CIVIL WAR

Bangor was well represented in the Civil war. The first man who entered the service from this town was Sergeant Joseph Warren Crow, who enlisted April 26, 1861, in the Lafayette Light Guard, subsequently Company C, Seventieth New York Infantry. He was also the first Bangor soldier to give up his life for his country. He was the color bearer of his regiment and died of wounds received at the battle of Williamsburg, May 5, 1862. He was a man of splendid physique, six feet four inches in height, broad shouldered, a little awkward, and a "perfect devil in a fight." The first general enlistment of soldiers from the township was on the 17th day of September, 1861, when the following Bangor boys became members of Company C, of the Third Michigan Cavalry: R. C. Nyman, Orrin W. Cross, James B. Travis, William Worrallo, Samuel P. Harvey, Clark G. Russell, Lyman S. Russell, John P. Goss, Daniel Wood, Archibald Abbott, Lemuel C. Mallory, Benjamin F. Ewing, and Daniel S. Camp.

These names are mentioned here only because they were among the first to enlist. Before the close of the war fully one-half of the men liable for military duty, that is between the ages of eighteen and forty-five, were fighting for the "Flag and the Union." The names and service of the others will, in-so-far as the records disclose, be found in the chapters of this work devoted to the military history of the county.

#### PROGRESS AND PROSPERITY

Although Bangor was one of the last townships in the county to be organized, it now takes rank as one of the best and most prosperous. In point of population, it is third, being exceeded

only by Paw Paw and Hartford, and in assessed valuation stands as fourth. The number of its inhabitants, according to the last federal census, was 2,424.

Forests have given way to magnificent orchards; swamps have been drained and reclaimed and now yield rich reward to the husbandman; forests have disappeared under the sturdy blows of the woodman's axe, for in those early days the woodman knew naught of the command that bade the "woodman spare that tree," and in their stead are, in season, beautiful fields of waving grain and the most delectable of fruits. Civilization has succeeded barbarism, the wigwam of the Indian and the cabin of the sturdy pioneer have been replaced by the comfortable, elegant and luxurious residences of those who followed after them. Marvelous, indeed, have been the changes wrought in a period of time that is but as yesterday.

#### VILLAGE OF BANGOR

The village of Bangor lies partly in the township of Bangor and partly in the township of Arlington. It was first platted in November, 1860, by Joseph Nyman, and surveyed by Almon J. Pierce. This original plat was wholly within the boundaries of the township of Bangor and was situated in the southeast corner of section one. Since that date there have been platted six different additions to the village—Cross' addition, platted in 1867; South Bangor, otherwise known as Morrison's plat, in 1872; Morrison's addition in 1874; Monroe's addition in 1880; Funk's addition in 1909; and Hasting's addition in 1910. All of these several additions, except Monroe's, are in the township of Bangor—that is in the township of Arlington.

Charles U. Cross, who was the first settler within the boundaries of the township, was likewise the first man to locate upon the present site of the village. A son born to Mr. and Mrs. Cross was the first white native child of the township. The site of the village was originally covered with very heavy timber of various varieties, some of the trees, especially the walnut and whitewood, being of enormous size.

Calvin Cross, a brother of Charles U. Cross, was very prominent in the development of that part of the township which subsequently was embraced within the limits of the village. He became a resident of Bangor in 1844. Mr. Cross was a millwright and in 1846, in connection with his brother, Charles U., he erected a saw mill on Black river, of which he became the sole owner four years later. He operated this mill for a period of six years, when he conveyed it to M. P. Watson and in 1856 it became the prop-

erty of Joseph H. Nyman, the original proprietor of the village where it was located. Mr. Cross, after disposing of his mill property in Bangor, removed to Paw Paw, where he built another mill. Afterward he became a resident of Hartford and erected a mill on the Paw Paw river, just north of the village of Hartford in that township. Finally he settled in the township of Lawrence, where he engaged in agricultural pursuits. His attention was early attracted to the practice of the law, and for many years there were few suits in the inferior courts of his neighborhood in which he was not engaged. He eventually became a full fledged lawyer and was admitted to the practice of his profession by the circuit court of the county. He departed this life at South Haven on the 20th day of November, 1894, aged seventy-seven years.

In 1852, M. P. Watson, in connection with Albert Comstock, opened the first general store in Bangor, but there was so little trade that they soon closed out their stock and abandoned the venture.

The village of Bangor was incorporated by a special act of the legislature of 1877 (found on page 62 of the volume of local acts for that year).

The census of 1910 gave Bangor a population of 1,158, which is exceeded by only three villages in the county, Paw Paw, Decatur and Hartford.

One of the notable high schools of the county is located in Bangor. At the school enumeration of 1911 there were 336 persons of school age residents of the village district. There were eighty non-resident pupils in attendance of the school during the school year of 1910-11, and the average daily attendance was 300. There were 1,650 volumes in the district library. The village has two schoolhouses and the value of the school property is estimated at \$25,000. There is a bonded indebtedness on the district of \$2,000. There were eleven teachers employed during the school year and they taught an aggregate of 105 months of school and received as salary the sum of \$6,077.90.

The present officers of the village are as follows: President, Samuel Martindale; clerk, Charles E. Cross; treasurer, James A. Yates; assessor, Willard S. Northrup; trustees, Edson V. Root, Lewis McKinney, Burtes M. Sherrod, Lemuel J. Branch and Frank W. Palmer.

There are four churches in the village—Methodist Episcopal, Disciple (sometimes called Christian) Congregational and Adventist. There is also a society of Christian Scientists. The Methodist society is the oldest, having been organized in 1865. Its present house of worship, a frame structure with a seating capacity of about 400, was erected in 1873 and was remodeled and enlarged

in 1900. During the past year the society has built a new, modern parsonage at a cost of about \$2,500. The membership at the present time is about 180. The present pastor is Rev. C. S. Risley and he presides over one of the leading Methodist churches of the county.

The Disciple (or Christian) Church was organized in the spring of 1876 by the late Rev. John H. Reese, who was its first pastor and under whose ministrations the church soon became a power in the religious life of the town. Its house of worship, a brick structure, was remodeled and reconstructed in 1905 and is the finest church building in the town. It will seat about 450 people. The Rev. F. Z. Burkette is the present pastor.

The Congregational society is also well represented in the town. They have a fine church edifice, constructed of white brick. The church is prospering in all its departments, under the ministration of its present pastor, Rev. H. G. Kent. The society also has a parsonage adjoining the church property.

The Adventist church (Seventh Day) was built through the personal effort of Rev. L. J. Branch, who has been a long-time resident of the place, and is its pastor.

Outside the limits of the village there are several other churches: The Adventists (Sunday) have a neat little chapel about two miles west of the village; the Congregationalists, a very active church about four miles west of the town; the Methodist Episcopal society, a neat church building in what is known as the Hawley district; and there is an Evangelical church in the north-west corner of the township.

The village has a very efficient and satisfactory municipal electric light and water system. The water is obtained from two eight-inch wells, sixty feet in depth, and is very clear and pure. As a result of these public improvements, the town is bonded in the sum of \$25,000.

The business houses of the place are five large department stores, two drug stores, one furniture and undertaking establishment, one jewelry store, one hotel, two bakeries and restaurants, two harness stores, three meat-markets, one weekly newspaper (the *Bangor Advance*), one large pickle processing plant, one vinegar factory, two flouring mills, one lumber yard and planing mill, one bank (the West Michigan Savings, with deposits of upwards of \$400,000), one saw-mill, one implement depot and other smaller business plants. There are three resident physicians, one dental surgeon and one attorney.

The two strongest secret societies in the place are the Masons and the Oddfellows. Coffinbury Lodge, No. 204, A. F. & A. M., has a membership of 132; Bangor Chapter, No. 105, R. A. M., has

fifty-seven members and Golden Rule Chapter, No. 339, O. E. S., 160. Tillotson Lodge, No. 165, I. O. O. F., has upwards of 150 members and Sunnyside Rebekah Degree Lodge, No. 28, about 125. In addition to these, there are the Modern Woodmen, Grange, A Lincoln Post, G. A. R., and a lodge of the Royal Neighbors.

The business men have organized as the Bangor Business Men's Club and the ladies have several literary and social clubs, the principal one being "The Argonauts."

The township of Bangor is one of the fruit-growing townships of the county, being especially adapted to the raising of that king of fruits, the apple, which crop alone, during the season of 1911, brought into the Bangor markets approximately the sum of \$100,000; and no better quality of apples is produced in America. There were shipped from the town, during the past season, 753 full carloads of various kinds of commodities, of which 304 carloads were fruit, forty-one potatoes, twenty-two grain, 101 hay, forty live-stock, twenty pickles, thirty-eight cider stock and eighty-three miscellaneous produce.

#### VILLAGE OF DEERFIELD

Deerfield is a small unincorporated village; a station on the line of the Pere Marquette Railway, midway between the villages of Bangor and Hartford. It is more generally known by the name of McDonald and is so called on the railway map, possibly because there is another Deerfield in the eastern part of the state. However, it was platted as Deerfield and is known only by that name in the official records of the county. It was laid out in the spring of 1871 by Henry Goss and James J. Clark, and since that date there have been three additions to the little embryo city, to-wit: Goss' addition in 1874, Hubbard's addition in 1890, and Goss' second addition in 1891. While the town is small, it has ample room to grow. It is situated in the midst of a rich agricultural region and has a railroad station, a telephone station, a creamery, a saw-mill, a plant for the distillation of peppermint oil (which is produced in considerable quantity), and two prosperous general stores. There is also a flourishing Baptist church at the place.

## CHAPTER XXII

### TOWNSHIP OF BLOOMINGDALE

FIRST SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS—TAXES AND TOWNSHIP GOVERNMENT—POPULATION AND EDUCATION—VILLAGE OF BLOOMINGDALE—MR. HAVEN'S SKETCH OF THE VILLAGE—CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES—VILLAGE OF GOBLEVILLE.

We acknowledge our indebtedness to Hon. H. H. Howard for a considerable portion of so much of the following sketch as relates to the early history of the township of Bloomingdale.

Bloomingdale is one of the northern tier of townships of the county and is designated by the United States survey as township number one south, of range number fourteen west. It is bounded on the north by the south line of Allegan county, on the east by the township of Pine Grove, on the south by Waverly and on the west by Columbia. The territory embraced within its limits, together with the townships of Pine Grove, Almema and Waverly, comprised the old township of Clinch. It became Waverly in 1842 when the township of Clinch was divided, the east half being named Almema and the west half Waverly. In 1845 the township of Waverly was divided, the north half thereof being called Bloomingdale. The surface is rolling and was originally heavily timbered with pine, hemlock and various kinds of hardwood, such as are indigenous to this latitude. The soil in some places is sandy and in others consists of a clay loam, exceedingly fertile and well adapted to the growing of grain and the production of fruit. A considerable number of lakes diversify the landscape, beautiful sheets of water, well stocked with different varieties of fish, and affording excellent sport to the disciples of Izaak Walton. Those which are of sufficient size to be dignified with a name are Great Bear, which extends into the township of Columbia, and Muskrat, each of these being nearly a mile in length; Sweet, Twin, Three-legged, Mud, Lake Mill, Thayer, Little Brandywine and Smith's.

Mr. Howard says that the first township meeting in the new township was held at the residence of L. Jackson Lacy, which is probably correct, although the statute required that it should be held at the house of Elisha G. Cox. There were seventeen votes



polled at this election and the following named officers were elected: Supervisor, Mallory H. Myers; township clerk, Hiram T. Houghton; township treasurer, Ashbel Herron; assessors, Harviland Thayer and Orlando H. Newcomb; highway commissioners, Mallory H. Myers, Joseph Brotherton and Orlando H. Newcomb; school inspectors, William H. H. Myers and Dennis C. Whelan; overseers of the poor, Ashbel Herron and L. Jackson Lacy; justices of the peace, William H. H. Myers and Ira S. Frary.

#### FIRST SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS

During the bleak, cold days of December, 1837, the first settlement was made within the limits of this township by the four Myers brothers—Mallory H., William H. H., Reuben J., and Merlin M., accompanied by their mother and sister, Sarah O. and Ruth Ann Myers. These first settlers of the township were from Oneida county, New York. In the spring of 1836 two of the brothers, Mallory and William H. H., started out on foot and walked the entire distance from Genesee county, New York, via Canada, to Michigan. For six months Mallory worked in Monroe county and William at White Pigeon. The latter then returned to New York and brought the rest of the family to White Pigeon where they were all reunited. The next year they decided to locate permanently on section thirty-six, the extreme southeastern corner of the township of Bloomingdale. They procured the services of Ashbel Herron to bring them to their new location, with his ox team, arriving at their future home on the 22d day of December, 1837, no other shelter awaiting them than that afforded by the tall monarchs of the forest. The frozen earth, after the snow had been melted away by a roaring fire, afforded them a resting place the first night. The next day a rude cabin was built, which was soon after followed by a substantial log house, and thus was commenced the first settlement of this township, now one of the best in the entire county of Van Buren.

During the next year the first schoolhouse was erected, William H. H. Myers becoming the first teacher in 1838 and 1839.

During the year 1838 Ashbel Herron, a native of Cayuga county, New York, and Daniel G. Robinson from Ohio, settled near the Myers location, and Joseph Peck, from Monroe county, New York, located on section six, in the extreme northwestern corner of the township. This locality was known for years as "Peektown." The first marriage celebrated in the township was that of James Scott of Decatur and Ruth Ann Myers. Mr. Howard states that this marriage was solemnized by Elder Warner, but in this he must have been in error as the official record states that the wed-

ding took place on the 11th day of April, 1839, and that the party officiating was Ashbel Herron, Esq.

Orlando H. Newcomb located in this township in 1839, on section number thirty-six, near the Myers brothers. One of the events of the year was the preaching of the first Gospel sermon by Noah D. Sweet, the service being held in the schoolhouse. W. Brownell, a young shingle maker was the first to depart this life in the new settlement. John Wesley Herron was the first white child born within the limits of the township. During this same year two homes of the settlers, together with their contents, were burned in a mysterious manner. Suspicion pointed to the Indians who yet remained in the vicinity in considerable numbers.

Harviland Thayer, a native of New Jersey, settled in the township in 1840, on section thirty-four. Other settlers of the same year were Alanson Todd, Ira S. Frary, N. Kennedy and Dennis E. Whelan. Henry Mower of Windsor County, Vermont, removed to Kalamazoo in 1832. From that date until 1843, he traversed the greater portion of southern Michigan, acting as a guide to land seekers. In the latter year he purchased land on section number twenty-three in this township, where he resided until his death some forty-five years thereafter. He was present at the first township election and was elected township clerk in 1846, an office he continued to hold for nine successive years.

Thomas Hudson settled on section number thirty in 1844. William L. Houghton came the same year and two years later was married to Hannah M. Story. Reuben H. Ward located on section number four in 1845.

The persons whose names appear on the assessment roll as resident tax payers, during the year that the township was organized, were Ashbel H. Herron, William H. Myers, Joseph Brotherton, Harviland Thayer, David Loveland, H. T. Houghton, Dennis E. Whelan, Mallory Myers, Levi Thayer, Burroughs Abbott, O. H. Newcomb, Daniel Robinson, Peter Valteau, Alanson Todd, Ira Frary, Robert Moon, Elisha Cox, Jackson Lacy, Melvin Hogmire, Joseph Peck and Daniel Robinson & Co. Additional tax paying residents in 1846 were Reuben Ward, Jonathan Goodell, William Houghton, William Story, Alanson Greanes, Josiah Sweet, Daniel Jewell, Henry Whelpley and John Wait.

An early saw-mill (water power) was built by Daniel G. Robinson on section number sixteen and later Messrs. Myers & Newcomb built the first steam mill. In 1866 John Hudson built the first grist mill which was burned about three years after it was completed.

Among the other early settlers were Truman Douglas, Samuel Lane, Zenas Case, Zenas Howard, Harvey Howard, Harrison

Cooley, John Barnard, Isaac Knapp, Chester Barber, Rufus Brown, William Merwin, O. M. Bessey, Arch Bishop, Alexander Miller, Christian Speicher, Shadrack Austin, Matthew Munn, Timothy Cooley, John Baxter, James Baxter, Milton Healy, Edmund Baughman, Augustus Haven, Warren Haven, Henry Killefer, Egbert Cooley, Austin Melvin, Carlos Peck, Elisha Joy, Greenwood Wait, Pliny Wait, Eli Bell, George Harvey and Eli Smith.

Previous to the coming of Dr. Barber, when in need of medical advice or the services of a physician, the people were treated by Dr. Andrews of Paw Paw. Here, as in all other newly settled regions, the early settlers kept open house and the weary or belated traveler always found a hearty welcome and a generous entertainment for both man and beast. "Hospitality to the stranger" was ever a marked characteristic of the pioneers of the Peninsular state.

Augustus Haven, from Portage county, Ohio, became a resident of Bloomingdale in 1854. There were then about forty voters in the township, and Paw Paw, sixteen miles distant, was the nearest postoffice. The only religious organization at that time was the Methodist and their meetings were held in Peck's barn. Mr. Haven soon became a man of prominence in the affairs of the township, and as a farmer, merchant, business man, township official and religious leader, has always been at the front. He is yet a resident of the village of Bloomingdale, honored and respected by all who have the pleasure of his acquaintance.

The entire amount of the taxes spread on the first tax roll of the township was \$571.75, being \$245.08 for township purposes, \$168.52 for schools, \$91.91 for highways, and \$66.24 for county and state tax.

#### TAXES AND TOWNSHIP GOVERNMENT

As an illustration of the changes that time has wrought, the tax assessed on the township for the year 1911 is \$11,545.96, for the following purposes: State tax, \$4,025.78; county tax, \$2,741.37; township tax, \$1,000; school tax, \$3,499.07; special taxes, \$1,139.99. The valuation of the township at the last assessment was \$935,725.

The following named gentlemen have served the township as supervisors, a considerable number of them for two or more terms: Elisha C. Cox, L. Jackson Lacy, Harviland Thayer, Ashbel Heron, Harrison Cooley, Isaac L. Knapp, Harvey H. Howard, Henry Killefer, Timothy Cooley, Pliny Wait, Augustus Haven, James M. Robertson, William Killefer, Isaac T. Robertson, David H. Smith, Robert E. Vickers and Milan D. Wiggins. Supervisor Smith served

for nine successive terms and several of the others held the office nearly as long.

The township is traversed by the South Haven branch of the Michigan Central, commonly called the Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad, which crosses the township diagonally from east to west dividing it into two very nearly equal parts. There are two stations on this line of road within the boundaries of the township, Bloomingdale and Gobleville, both flourishing, incorporated villages.

#### POPULATION AND EDUCATION

The census of 1910 gives the number of inhabitants of the township as 2,011, being the fourth in point of numbers of all the townships of the county outside of the city of South Haven.

There are nine school districts and nine schoolhouses in the township. Nineteen teachers were employed during the past school year, and their salaries amounted to the sum of \$9,479.25, the largest sum paid by any township outside of the city of South Haven. The number of persons of school age, according to the school census of 1911, was 620, a number exceeded only by the townships of South Haven, Hartford and Paw Paw. There are a thousand volumes in the various district libraries. The valuation of school property in the township is \$15,575. District No. 5, the Gobleville school, has a bonded indebtedness of \$6,000. The other districts are free from debt. The nineteen teachers employed taught an aggregate of 156 months during the school year of 1910-11. The state primary school money apportioned to these schools during the past school year was the sum of \$4,657.50.

At the first general election held in the township, November 4, 1845, there were ten votes cast, for the office of governor, as follows: Five for Alpheus Felch, Democrat; four for Stephen Vickery, Whig, and one for James G. Birney, Liberty party.

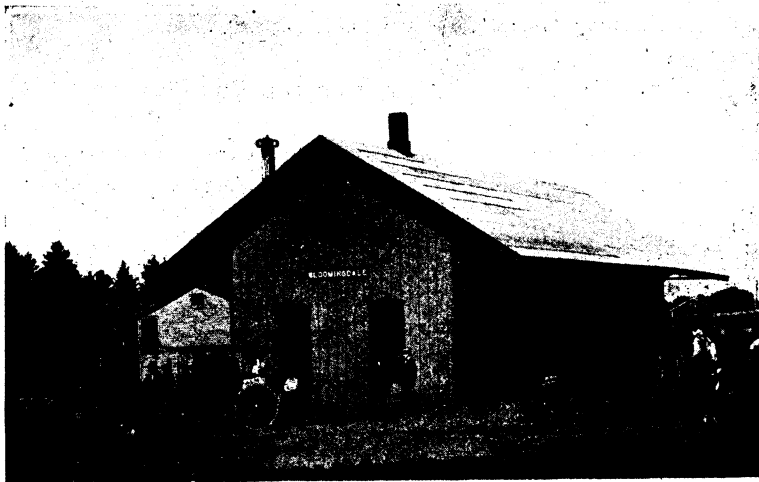
At the last presidential election the voters of the township cast 465 electoral votes, as follows: 270 for William Howard Taft, Republican; 178 for William Jennings Bryan, Democrat; thirteen for Eugene W. Chafin, Prohibitionist; two each for Eugene V. Debs, Socialist, and Thomas L. Hisgen, Independent party.

The present officers of the township are as follows: Robert E. Vickers, supervisor; Emerson D. Spayde, township clerk; J. W. Brown, treasurer; Byron G. Wait, Duvis Button, Franklin Cooley and Calvin D. Myers, justices of the peace; B. S. Munn, commissioner of highways; Fred W. Banks and H. H. Howard, board of review; Eber Cooley, Charles Allen and A. G. Cheney, constables.

## VILLAGE OF BLOOMINGDALE

The village of Bloomingdale was platted on the 23d day of May, 1870, by Henry Killefer, Lucius B. Kendall and J. M. Remington. What is known as Haven's addition was platted and made a part of the village on the 15th day of September, 1870. The village is situated on the line of the South Haven branch of the Michigan Central Railroad and is located on sections sixteen and seventeen, within about a mile of the center of the township, and is perhaps, the most important business place between Kalamazoo and South Haven. The census of 1910 gives it a population of 501.

The occupant of the site of the town was Henry Killefer, or Kilheffer, as the name was originally spelled. About the year 1854 Davis Haven purchased a tract of land that included the present site of the village, and, as an inducement for Mr. Killefer to settle there, he conveyed to him an acre of land on which the present railroad depot is situated.



MICHIGAN CENTRAL DEPOT, BLOOMINGDALE

The first mercantile establishment in the place was opened by Rufus M. Brown and Jesse Merwin, under the firm named of Brown & Merwin, but it was short lived and soon closed up and went out of business. This first effort at establishing a store was followed by Mr. Killefer, who, about the year 1857, erected a small building, the upper part of which he used for a dwelling and in the lower story of which he placed a small stock of boots, shoes and groceries. This establishment of Mr. Killefer's was the first dwelling house built within the limits of the present village.

A postoffice was established soon afterward and Mr. Killefer became the first postmaster. He was succeeded in this office by William Killefer, his father, and he by John Killefer, his brother. Since that time the office has been filled by Charles Killefer (John's son), William Harrison, George D. Scofield and Gilbert H. Hudson, the present incumbent.

The first passenger train arrived at the village on the fourth day of July, 1870, and the event was the occasion of great rejoicing among the inhabitants of the village and surrounding country.

The first saw mill, steam of course, as there is no water power in the township, was set up by Mr. A. W. Torrey in the fall of 1870.

Dr. L. A. Barber was the first resident physician. The present resident physicians are Dr. Thomas H. Ransom and Dr. William R. Scott.

The village of Bloomingdale became an incorporated town by act of the state legislature in 1881. Its present officers are Thomas H. Ransom, president; Charles E. Merrifield, clerk; Sherman D. Smith, treasurer; Edwin J. Merrifield, assessor.

#### MR. HAVEN'S SKETCH OF THE VILLAGE

It is with pleasure that we acknowledge our indebtedness to Augustus Haven for most of the facts contained in the following sketch.

The village of Bloomingdale was platted on the 23d day of May, 1876, by Henry Killefer, Lucius B. Kendall and J. M. Remington. The village is situated on the line of the South Haven branch of the Michigan Central Railroad and is located on sections sixteen and seventeen, within about a mile of the center of the township, and is, perhaps, the most important business place on that line between Kalamazoo and South Haven.

In 1853 Daniel G. Robinson built a saw-mill on the outlet of Mack's lake and erected a frame house near it. These buildings were on the east line of the present village. In the summer of 1855, Rufus M. Brown, Jesse W. Merwin and Alexander Miller each erected a frame house in the new village and Messrs. Brown and Merwin engaged in the mercantile business, principally buying shingles and hauling them to Mattawan. The partnership was short-lived, being dissolved in a few months.

In 1856 Davis Haven of Portage county, Ohio, purchased the north half of section seventeen, and as inducement for Henry Killefer (or Kilheffer, as the name was at that time spelled) to settle there, he conveyed to him one acre where the railroad depot

and new park are now located. Mr. Killefer had a frame house erected and moved his family to his new location in 1857. In November of the same year, Mr. Killefer commenced business with a small stock of groceries at Paw Paw and had a small consignment of boots and shoes shipped in from Ohio. This was the beginning of a successful mercantile business which he followed in company with his sons, John and William, for about thirteen years.

As early as 1855, there was a postoffice in Cheshire on the base line, in Allegan county, a few miles north of Bloomingdale, kept by Jonathan Howard. A man by the name of Pratt brought the mail from Allegan, going on to Paw Paw one day and back the next, but there was no postoffice at Bloomingdale at that time, all its mail coming to the Paw Paw office, sixteen miles distant. About 1859 or 1860 a mail route was established between Paw Paw and Bloomingdale, with John Caughey as mail carrier and J. P. Howard as postmaster. Mr. Caughey continued on this route until the railroad was built in 1870. Mr. Howard was postmaster for some five or six years and was succeeded by John Killefer, and he in turn by his sons William and John and his grandson, Charles. Following the Killefers came Frank Hughes, William Harrison, G. D. Scofield and the present incumbent, Gilbert H. Hudson.

The line of the railroad was located through the village in 1869 and the depot site selected in May, 1870. The very day that the site was definitely decided upon, Mr. Kendall purchased sixteen acres of land on the southwest corner of the northwest quarter of section sixteen. Mr. Killefer, in the meantime, had bought a few acres on section seventeen, and on the 23d day of May, 1870, they platted the village.

The first passenger train arrived on the fourth day of July, 1870, and was the occasion of great rejoicing among the inhabitants of the village and the surrounding country. On the completion of the road, the village was imbued with new life, wide awake business men located and engaged in various pursuits, and the town has continued to prosper ever since.

The village became an incorporated town by act of the legislature in 1881. The present officers are: Thomas H. Ransom, president; Charles E. Merrifield, clerk; Sherman D. Smith, treasurer; Edwin J. Merrifield, assessor; Edwin J. Merrifield, Roy D. Perkins, Gardner L. Stewart, Charles A. Weidenfeller, Charles E. Trim and Charles Linton, trustees.

The village schools are a credit to its enterprising citizens, ranking among the best in the county. The last school census shows that there was 169 persons of school age residing in the village district



HIGH SCHOOL, BLOOMINGDALE

and that during the last school year there was an enrolment of thirty-five non-resident pupils. The district library contains 233 volumes, and the value of school property is reported at \$6,500. Six teachers were employed and the amount paid for teachers' salaries was \$3,703.75. The aggregate number of months taught was seventy-two and three-quarters.

#### CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES

There are three churches in the village, the Methodist Episcopal, the Christian and the Baptist. The Methodist society was organized in the winter of 1856. The names of the original members were: A. Miller, W. C. Wait, F. Miller, H. E. Miller, J. A. Wait, E. Caughey, Wm. J. Merwin, T. Merwin, L. E. Cook, M. Cook and M. S. Miller. The church now has thirty-five members and church property worth \$4,000. There are fifty persons members of the Sunday school. W. R. Kitzmiller is pastor.

The Christian church was organized in April, 1858, and held its early meetings in a schoolhouse on section fifteen. The original members were Harrison Cooley, Azubah Cooley, Austin Melvin, Frederick Melvin, Eli Bell, Margaret Bell, Russell Loomis, Rebecca Loomis, W. D. Ensminger, Polly Ensminger, George Pierce, Henrietta Pierce, Augustus Haven, William Armstrong, Abby Killefer, Corintha Strong, Lucretia Brown, Marinda Loomis, Louisa Loomis, Margaret Corning, M. L. Healy, Maria Healy, R. F. Loomis, Mary F. Loomis and Julia M. Paxon.

A house of worship was erected in 1871. The church now has



a membership of 125 and a Sunday school of 120 members. The church property is valued at \$4,500. G. W. Daines is the present pastor.

The Baptist church, W. A. Johnstone, pastor, has a membership of 122, with a Sunday school of 100. The church property is valued at \$4,900. This church sprang from a very small beginning. In 1853 the Allegan Baptist church granted to A. B. Eaton, Maria Eaton, Ann E. Palmer, M. E. Eaton and L. J. Cannon, members of that society, the privilege of associating together, as a branch church. For many years they met in the dwellings of the members, and were occasionally privileged to hear ministers who happened among them. The first baptism was administered in April, 1854, when Elder H. Munger baptized his son, Harvey, and Orrit Lane in Eagle lake. From this small beginning the work has gone forward until the church has become one of the prominent religious organizations of the denomination in the county.

The following are societies that have an organization in the village: Lodge No. 221, F. & A. M. has 130 members. The lodge has about \$3,000 worth of property. Its members are building a fine hall, the upper story of a fine new brick building that is in process of construction by Trim, Hodgman & Company for a store building. The expense to the lodge will be about \$4,000, and will give them one of the finest lodge rooms in the county.

Bloomington Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star, was organized August 6, 1895, with a charter membership of twenty-seven. It now numbers 104.

Bloomington Lodge No. 161, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, 140 members, has property valued at \$3,000.

Bonnefoi Rebekah Lodge was organized March 25, 1902, with five charter members. It now has a membership of 102.

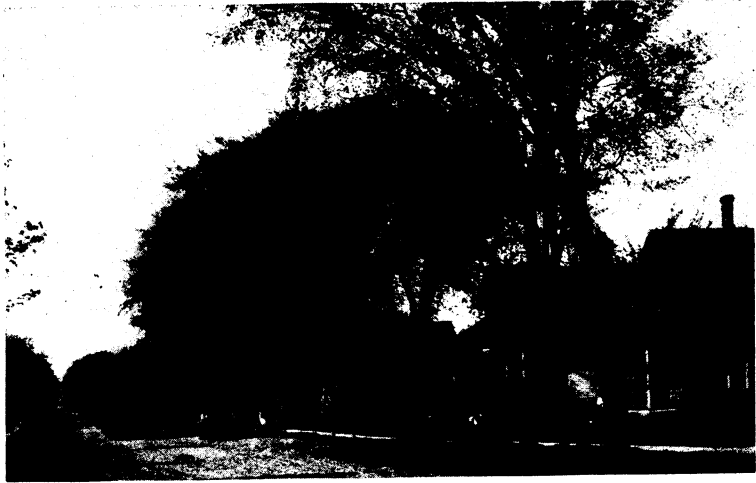
Encampment No. 176, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, has twenty-five members.

Bloomington Camp, No. 8159, Modern Woodmen of America, has seventy members.

The Maccabee Lodge has thirty-five members.

Edwin Coldwell Post, No. 23, Grand Army of Republic, has twelve members.

A Detroit firm at this place, during the past season, put up 52,793 gallon cans of fruit, plums, peaches, cherries and small fruits, made 1,083 cases of grape and currant jellies, converted 33,185 bushels of apples into cider, shipped eleven carloads of apples in bulk, made 420 Weir jars of apple preserves, salted 16,000 bushels of cucumbers, paying upwards of \$7,000 for help and \$28,000 for stock.



NORTH VAN BUREN STREET, BLOOMINGDALE



SPRING STREET, BLOOMINGDALE

The Bloomingdale Creamery (successors to the Haven Cheese factory) has 225 patrons, with a yearly output of 185,000 pounds of butter, selling for \$50,750.

Shipping live-stock has been a thriving business. Over \$100,000 has been paid during the year for cattle, sheep and hogs shipped to outside markets; \$6,000 has been paid for apples, and the farmers have received about \$8,400 for their potato crop. The prosperity of the place is indicated by the following list of business houses, all prosperous and each one a credit to the village: One general mercantile store; one department store; one clothing, shoes and grocery establishment; one hardware and grocery store; two groceries; one barber-shop; one investment company; one granite works; one meat market; one produce and lumber company; one hardware, implement and undertaking establishment; one livery; one hotel (the Park View); one blacksmithing and wood-working establishment; one millinery shop; one papering and decorating firm; one jewelry store; one milling company; two physicians; one newspaper (the *Bloomingdale Leader*); one photograph studio; one bank (the Peoples); two telephone lines (the Kibbie, with 123 members, and the Citizens, with 200 members); one band, a good one; and a base ball team that is noted as being one of the very best amateur clubs in the entire state.

And last, but by no means the least, is a commercial club that is interested in the prosperity of the town and that misses no opportunity to advance the interests of its citizens—an organization that has already accomplished much and which is expected to accomplish much more.

#### VILLAGE OF GOBLEVILLE

The village of Globleville derives its name from the Goble family who were quite early settlers in the vicinity and the proprietors of the original plat of the village.

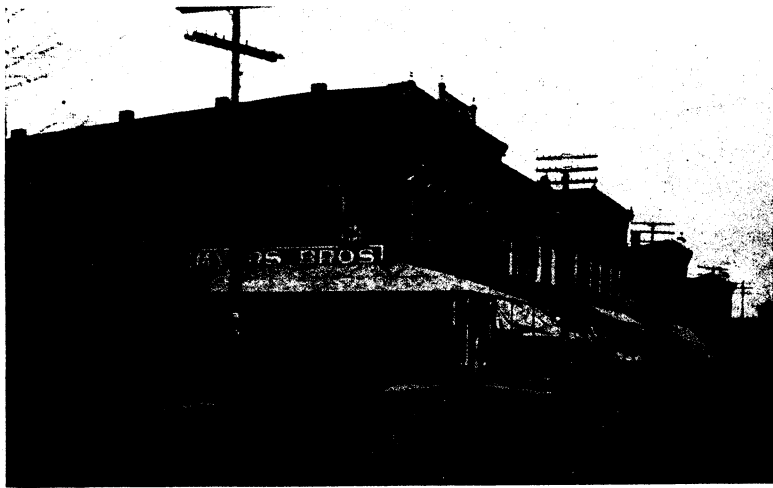
The hotel known as the Central Hotel, which was destroyed by fire since this chapter was first written, was the first building erected within the limits of the present village. It was built by John Goble about the year 1864, on the highway then called the Allegan state road, and being about midway between the village of Paw Paw and the village of Allegan, in Allegan county, it made a very convenient and desirable stopping place for travelers along that route, of whom there were a considerable number in those early days.

In 1867 Hiram E. Goble built a store near the hotel and Fessenden & Hayes followed with a blacksmith shop. Dr. A. E. Bulson was the first resident physician.

The place continued to grow somewhat moderately until the



RESIDENCE STREET SCENE IN GOBLEVILLE



BUSINESS STREET, GOBLEVILLE

railroad from Kalamazoo to South Haven was built, which was completed to this point in 1870 and which gave a new impetus to the embryo village.

A postoffice was first established at "Lake Mills" and Arch W. Bishop was appointed postmaster. In 1867 the office was removed to the village and was christened "Gobleville," Hiram E. Goble becoming postmaster; his successors in that office have been G. B. Boughton, Edward Keeler, George W. Myers, Arvin W. Myers, David D. Wise, Arthur Webster and Lewis E. Churchill (the present incumbent).

The village is situated partly in the township of Bloomingdale and partly in the township of Pine Grove. It was first laid out and platted, on the sixteenth day of April, 1870, by Hiram Goble and his wife, Susan A. Goble. This original plat was of lands on section twenty-five in the township of Bloomingdale. On March 12, 1872, an addition called Goble's was platted by Warren Goble and his wife, Cordelia E. This addition is situated on section thirty of the township of Pine Grove. Another addition on section twenty-five of Bloomingdale, called the Lewis addition, was platted on the 14th day of March, 1889, by Nathaniel Lewis and his wife, Celinda Lewis, and afterward, on the 30th day of July, 1894, William Killefer and his wife, Emily Killefer, platted a third addition called Killefer's addition, situated on section nineteen in the township of Pine Grove.

Gobleville is entitled to be classed as one of the prosperous and thriving villages of the county. The two most important towns on the line of the South Haven division of Michigan Central Railroad are Gobleville and Bloomingdale.

According to the United States census of 1910 there were 537 inhabitants in the village of Gobleville, thirty-six more than in Bloomingdale. Gobleville is situated five miles by rail southeast of Bloomingdale. Being in the same township, of so near the same population and in such close proximity, there is quite naturally a considerable spirit of rivalry existing between the two villages.

Gobleville is distant eighteen miles from the city of Kalamazoo on the east and twenty-one miles from the city of South Haven on the west. It became an incorporated town by act of the state legislature in 1893. Its present officers are Charles Overacker, president; John T. Bernius, clerk; Edward W. Howard, treasurer; Robert E. Vickers, assessor; William Day, Othello E. Scarlett, Michael Dorgan, William Miller, Edwin Covey and H. E. Elheny, board of trustees.

One of her institutions of which the village is justly proud is the village school, which is one of the eleven high schools in the

county. At the last enumeration of the district there were 165 persons of school age, the average daily attendance during the school year was 158. There were fifty-nine non resident pupils enrolled. There were 273 volumes in the district library. The value of the school property is \$15,000 and there is a bonded indebtedness of \$6,000. Six teachers were employed and the aggregate number of months taught was fifty-four. There was paid for teachers' salaries the sum of \$2,947.50.

A disastrous fire visited the town in 1901, destroying eighteen of the business places, but like many other instances of the same character it proved a blessing in disguise. The enterprising business men of the place proceeded at once to rebuild and in a comparatively short period of time the burned buildings were replaced with new ones, much better than the old.

There are two churches in the place, the Freewill Baptist and the Methodist Episcopal. The former was organized about the year 1866. They have a commodious frame house of worship which was completed in 1877, and which has a seating capacity of 350. The present membership is 120. C. D. Thornton is the pastor.

The Methodist church was organized in 1880 and has a present membership of 122. The house of worship is a frame structure with a seating capacity of 200. G. W. Hawley is the pastor.

Hudson Lodge, No. 325, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, located in a commodious hall over the Frank Company's store, is in a flourishing condition and has a present membership of about 150. Easter Lily Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star, No. 230, is adjunct of the Masonic Lodge.

Gobleville Lodge, No. 393, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, own their hall, which is large and commodious and fitted up especially for lodge purposes. Hazel Dell Rebekah Lodge, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, is another branch of the order that is in a very prosperous condition. Both of these lodges of Odd Fellows have a large and increasing membership. The Maccabees are also represented in the village by organizations of both ladies and gentlemen. There is also a prosperous Lodge of Modern Woodmen, Camp No. 9132.

The Grand Army of the Republic also has an organization and adjunct thereto is the Woman's Relief Corps.

Two telephone lines have exchanges in the town—the Kibbie and the Mutual companies.

The village contains these business establishments: One marble company; two produce dealers, shippers and coal dealers; one opera house, seating capacity 400; one grocery, drug and crockery store; one boot and shoe store; one jewelry store; one restaurant

and soda fountain; one meat market; one general hardware and farm implement store; one hardware, carriages, wagon and implement dealer; one department store; one bank, the Gobleville Exchange; one general dry goods, boot and shoe and clothing store; one furniture and undertaking establishment; one barber shop; one millinery establishment; one drug store with soda fountain; one agricultural implement store; one feed store; one grocery store; one harness shop; two blacksmith shops; three physicians; one dentist, and one shoe shop.



LAKE MILL, NEAR GOBLEVILLE

The Gobleville Creamery, which does a large business, manufacturing from 1,500 to 1,700 pounds of butter per day during the summer season, besides selling a large amount of cream to Kalamazoo ice cream dealers.

The Gobleville milling establishment which is equipped with modern machinery and does a large business.

The enterprise and push of the business men of this flourishing little village is a credit not only to themselves, but to the county in which it is so pleasantly located.

## CHAPTER XXIII

### TOWNSHIP OF COLUMBIA

PHYSICAL FEATURES AND RAILROADS—SITE OF BREEDSVILLE SETTLED  
—PROPERTY HOLDERS AND TAXES (1839)—SETTLERS PRIOR TO  
1845—CIVIL AND POLITICAL—PRESENT VILLAGE OF BREEDSVILLE  
—BERLAMONT—COLUMBIA—GRAND JUNCTION.

When the county of Van Buren was first organized, Columbia formed a part of the township of South Haven, indeed, at that time nearly all of the inhabitants of that township resided within the present boundaries of Columbia. It was not until 1845 that, by act of the legislature of the state, it was set off and organized into a separate township under its present name. It is the central one of the north tier of townships of the county and is bounded on the north by Allegan county, east by Bloomingdale township, south by Arlington and west by Geneva. It is officially designated as township number one south, of range number fifteen west.

#### PHYSICAL FEATURES AND RAILROADS

The surface of the township is generally what would be termed rolling, being diversified by irregular ranges of low hills and also by numerous lakes, of which Saddle lake (so named from its peculiar shape) is the largest. This body of water lies partly on four different sections—ten, fifteen, sixteen and twenty-two. From its eastern extremity to its northern end is a distance of about a mile and a half. The other lakes that are dignified by a name are Jeptha's (commonly called Jap) lake, which is one and a half miles in length, but narrow, varying in width from a few rods to a quarter of a mile; Lakes Fourteen and Eleven, so named from the sections on which they are located; North lake, Munson, Dollar (or Silver as it is called on the later maps), Coffee, Base Line, Deer, Mud, Little Bear and Great Bear lakes, the last named lying partly in the township of Bloomingdale.

The outlet of Great Bear lake forms the south branch of Black river and is the principal stream in the township. It flows diagonally across its southern part, forming a considerable water power



at the village of Breedsville, which was utilized at a very early date in its history.

The township possesses a variety of soil, ranging from light sand to heavy clay, but in general it is fertile and productive, yielding abundant crops of hay, grain and fruits.

Like the entire northern half of the county, Columbia was originally covered with a growth of heavy timber of different kinds, pine and hemlock being the predominating varieties. As a natural consequence the manufacture of lumber and shingles was the prevailing industry of the earlier years, but the forests have practically all disappeared and in their stead are fine farms and orchards and the usual accompaniments of prosperous modern rural life.

The township has excellent railroad facilities, the line of the Pere Marquette crossing it from south to north and the South Haven division of the Michigan Central passing through its northern part from east to west. The two lines intersect at the village of Grand Junction. Both these roads were completed through the town in 1870. Breedsville and Grand Junction are stations on the Pere Marquette, and Berlamont, Columbia and Grand Junction, on the South Haven line.

#### SITE OF BREEDSVILLE SETTLED

In May, 1835, Rev. Jonathan N. Hinckley, in company with Barnard M. Howard, both from Monroe county, New York, visited the region that afterward became a part of the township of Columbia and made entries of a considerable acreage of lands near the site of the present village of Breedsville. At this time they built a cabin on their new location, preparatory to its occupation, and then returned to New York. In the fall of the same year, a party of some twenty-five persons, all from the county of Monroe, New York, left their eastern homes with the intent of settling on the lands purchased by Messrs. Hinckley and Howard and of making for themselves new homes in the Michigan wilderness, which was then considered to be in the "far west." Their route was by way of the Erie canal to the city of Buffalo; thence by way of Lake Erie to Detroit. At the latter place they purchased a yoke of oxen, and a wagon upon which they loaded their household goods and children, and thus equipped started for Paw Paw by way of the Territorial road, the major portion of the party making the journey on foot. Although their destination was only about eighteen miles from the last mentioned place it took them two days to reach it. The party consisted of Rev. Jonathan N. Hinckley, William N. Taylor; Mr. and Mrs. Silas Breed and their

four children—Stillman, Phoebe Ann, Hinckley and Joshua—and Sarah Taylor, an adopted daughter; Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Watson and his three children—Leonard, Lyman and Sarah—and a grandson; Mr. and Mrs. Jonathan N. Howard; and Mr. and Mrs. Amos S. Brown and their five children—Elizabeth, Amos S., Jr., Wells G., Minerva and Jesse R.

The cabin which had been erected the previous spring was soon made habitable. The next domicile was built for the Brown family and immediately afterward a cabin was constructed for the occupancy of the Watson people. These three primitive dwellings served to shelter the entire colony during the first winter, including William A. Babbitt who had joined them. About the first of January, however, Elder Hinckley returned to the state of New York and it was not until several years later that he took up his permanent residence in Van Buren county. The first death in the little colony was that of Sarah Taylor, who passed away during that first winter. The next year Mr. Howard and others erected dwellings for themselves, and Silas Breed built the first saw-mill in the new settlement.

The following season, 1837, the settlement was augmented by the arrival of Elijah Knowles, William Bridges and George Cochran, from Livingston county, New York; Dr. Hervey Manley from Ashtabula county, Ohio, and Myron Hoskins from Paw Paw, who had settled in that place a couple of years before. In later years Mr. Hoskins again became a resident of Paw Paw, where he died, November 7, 1900, at the ripe age of eighty-nine years. He was followed by his widow, Sarah, on the 13th day of January, 1903, who was eighty-seven years of age at the time of her decease.

The first child born in the new settlement was Nancy, a daughter of Jonathan N. Howard and wife, and during the fall of the same year the second death occurred. Samuel Watson, who was then a man of some sixty years of age, had gone on foot to Paw Paw, to obtain some needed medicine for his family. On his return journey he died alone in the forest, where after a diligent search, his body was found.

The first marriage solemnized in the little colony was that of James G. Cochrane and Miss Sarah Watson. The wedding took place on the 10th day of June, 1840. 'Squire Silas Breed was the officiating magistrate.

In 1838 Elijah Knowles and John Barrows erected a tannery, the abundance of hemlock bark making it an ideal locality for that purpose. Indeed, for many years thereafter, the traffic in hemlock bark was one of the leading industries of the township, large quantities being hauled to tanneries located in Lawrence, Decatur and Paw Paw, or to South Haven and shipped across Lake Michigan.

The colony was augmented in that year by the arrival of Jephtha Waterman, John Barrows, Horace Humphrey and quite likely by a few others.

For quite a number of years Paw Paw was the nearest postoffice, so it may be well be believed that mails were rather irregularly received and that the pioneers knew little and probably cared less about receiving a newspaper every day, or even once a week. However, a postoffice was eventually established at Breedsville and Amos S. Brown became the first postmaster, Jesse R., his son being the first mail carrier between the new office and Paw Paw.

PROPERTY HOLDERS AND TAXES (1839)

The resident taxpayers of the township in 1839, the number of acres assessed to each and the sum of their taxes on both real and personal estate, were as follows:

Names	Acres	Tax
Silas Breed	80	\$7.04
Elijah Knowles	160	4.65
Hervey Manley	240	4.98
J. N. Howard	240	4.56
J. M. Babbitt	160	3.33
Myron Hoskins	320	5.69
Leonard Watson	40	.91
Amos S. Brown	160	4.94
Luman Brown	80	1.55
J. Waterman	69	.79
H. Humphrey	40	.78
J. Peck	80	1.55
D. C. Ackley	80	1.55

This shows that the total amount of taxes paid by the resident taxpayers for that year was \$42.32.

Of the above named parties, one—Joseph Peck—was not actually a resident of the township, as he lived across the line in the township of Bloomingdale. The next year, 1840, the only changes that appear on the resident tax roll are that the name of J. M. Babbitt is left off and the names of William A. Babbitt, Henry Babbitt and Dustin Murch are added, making the number fifteen. The taxes paid were even less than in the previous year, being only \$26.48.

For the year 1911, the valuation of the township was the sum of \$453,790, and the total tax levy was \$11,725.96. In point of wealth Columbia is at the foot of the list of townships of the county.

## SETTLERS PRIOR TO 1845

Thomas P. Page settled in the village of Breedsville in 1841, where he kept open house for the accommodation of travelers as did others of the early settlers. When the stage line was established between Paw Paw and South Haven, which was about the year 1848, Page opened a hotel or, as it was called in those days, a tavern. There are yet a considerable number of people living in the county who have a vivid recollection of the old Page tavern and of the hilarious scenes that occasionally—or oftener—transpired therein.

Charles W. Luce settled on section twenty-three the same year. Alexander Lytle, who became a man of prominence in the affairs of the township, at different times being elected as township treasurer, settled in the township in 1842.

Other settlers prior to 1845 were Peter Smith, Lyman Loomis, Jethro Barber, Amos E. Barber, Edmund Sawtelle, David Barker, Hiram Chappell, James Richards, S. N. Pike, A. Bugsbee and James Moore.

The first grist-mill in the township was built by Mr. Heath in 1858. The northern part of the township was but slightly settled until about the time the railroads were projected and built.

## CIVIL AND POLITICAL

At the first township meeting, held on the first Monday of April, 1845, the following officers were elected: Supervisor, Elemuel Sawtelle; township clerk, Jonathan N. Howard; justices of the peace, Elijah Knowles, Hervey Manley, Horace Humphrey and David Barker; township treasurer, Amos S. Brown; school inspectors, Hervey Manley and Elemuel Sawtelle; overseers of poor, Hervey Manley and Elijah Knowles; assessors, Lyman Loomis and Amos S. Brown; commissioners of highways, Dustin Murch, Thomas P. Page and David Barker; constables, Dustin Murch, Amos S. Brown, Wells G. Brown and Jephtha Waterman.

The following named gentlemen have served the township in the capacity of supervisor: Elemuel Sawtelle, Horace Humphrey, Joel Camp, Eusebius Mather, Amos S. Brown, Elijah Knowles, Howard S. Allen, H. Chamberlain, Doctor H. Anderson, William H. Knowles, V. F. Randall, Norman H. Adams, Jonathan N. Howard, Amasa M. Brown, Duane D. Briggs, A. D. Enos, Eri Sumny, David Anderson, James M. Gray, Levi Ackley, Elisha Abbott, A. Throop Anderson and Andrew Gaynor. Of the above named, Supervisors Camp and Doctor H. Anderson each served three years; Supervisor Gray, four years; Supervisor Amos S. Brown, ten years; Supervisor Amasa M. Brown, eleven years, and Super-

visor Gaynor, the present incumbent, and a popular Democrat from a Republican town, is serving his thirteenth term.

At the first general election held in the township, in November, 1846, there were twenty-seven votes cast. In 1847 the number increased to thirty-six, the votes being equally divided between the Whigs and Democrats. At the first presidential election held in the township on November 7, 1848, forty-four votes were polled—twenty-one for Taylor, Whig; twenty-two for Cass, Democrat, and one for Van Buren, Free Soil.

At the last presidential election, November 3, 1908, 324 ballots were cast: 211 for Taft, Republican; ninety-three for Bryan, Democrat; eight for Chafin, Prohibitionist; eight for Debs, Socialist, and four for Hisgen, Independent party.

According to the census figures of 1910, Columbia ranks as the eleventh among the townships of the county; in point of population, the number being given as 1,475.

The first schoolhouse was built in the Breedsville settlement in 1838, and Lorenzo D. Cate taught the first school. School District No. 1, including within its limits the nine sections composing the southwest corner of the township, was formed in January, 1845. In 1847 there were twenty-three children of school age in the district and the apportionment of public school money was \$7.36.

The apportionment of primary money for the current year (1911) was \$2,437.50 for the township. Official reports of educational matters for the school year of 1910-11 give the number of persons of school age as 344; volumes in the several district libraries, 1,336; number of schoolhouses, six; estimated value of school property, \$14,800; district indebtedness, \$2,500; teachers employed, ten; aggregate number of months of school, seventy-nine; sum paid for teachers' salaries, \$3,605.

#### AS A RESORT REGION

Numbers of people from across Lake Michigan, within the past few years, have invested in Columbia real estate, attracted thither by the many pleasant locations and the numerous attractions to the city dwellers to whom life in the country seems a desirable change from the rush and turmoil that has surrounded them in their urban homes. Owing to this immigration, Columbia, like other of her sister townships, has been thinking of her opportunities and facilities as a resort, and quite recently two summer resorts have been platted into lots, one on the shore of Saddle lake and the other on the bank of Silver, or Dollar lake, as it is sometimes called. Both of these are "desirable for a situation" and

are quite likely to become popular places for those who seek summer quiet and rest.

And so, by the industry and the diligence, and the labors of the hardy pioneers, and those who came after them, a township has been reclaimed from a state of nature and converted into fertile fields; the forests have disappeared; the wilderness has been redeemed, and the highest degree of modern civilization has succeeded to barbarism and savagery, and all this within the memory of living men.

#### PRESENT VILLAGE OF BREEDSVILLE

The village of Breedsville, which occupies the site of the oldest settlement in the northern part of Van Buren county, derives its name from Silas A. Breed, who was one of the first men to locate lands within the limits of the present township of Columbia, which, at the time, was a part of the township of South Haven. It was not platted until 1900, although it has been known as Breedsville from a very early date in the history of the county. Prior to 1900 all property in the village was described by metes and bounds. It is a station on the line of the Pere Marquette Railway, thirty miles from the city of St. Joseph on the shore of Lake Michigan. The first tavern in the place was opened and kept by Thomas P. Page and the first store was opened by Painter, Woodson & Company, who, before they began a regular mercantile business, had been engaged in bringing in goods and exchanging them with the settlers for shingles, which, in those early days, came very near being the only circulating medium.

The village was incorporated by act of the legislature in 1883 (Local Acts, 1883, p. 404). Its present officers are as follows: President, Charles M. Cushman; clerk, Loren D. Townsend; treasurer, Frank A. Adams; assessor, Edwin J. Rugg; board of trustees, Charles G. Chamberlain, Andrew Gaynor, Jerome R. Niles, E. K. Cassada, William E. Hollister and Edson C. Stickney; street commissioner, H. B. Johnson; Marshal, Ed. Bailey; poundmaster, Henry J. Sringer.

The population numbered 219 souls, according to the figures as given by the census of 1910. The first officers of the village were as follows: President, Norman H. Adams; clerk, E. D. Lockard; treasurer, James M. Gray; assessor, N. J. Cranmer; trustees, F. E. Sherwood, E. S. Hogmire, A. D. Enos, Jay P. Gilman, William H. Wicksall, William Cushman; street commissioner, N. W. Smith; constable, Aaron Miller; marshal, E. Carter, Jr.; health officer, F. P. Robertson; fire warden, D. M. Miller; poundmaster, Henry

Scrimger; special assessors, James M. Gray, N. W. Smith and Solomon Snell.

The village has no public improvements, such as a lighting system, waterworks, etc.

There is one church society in the village—the Methodist Episcopal, with a membership of about forty. They have a very good and convenient house of worship, a frame building.

Secret societies are represented in the town by the Odd Fellows and the Masons. Headley Lodge, No. 163, I. O. O. F., was instituted on the 31st day of May, 1871. The charter members were Ahira G. Eastman, Abner D. Enos, Chester C. Leathers, H. C. Kelley, Samuel Hoppin and T. P. Bewley. The present membership of the lodge is about fifty.

Narcissus Rebekah lodge, I. O. O. F., is also a prosperous branch of the order, having about the same number of members as the subordinate lodge.

Bailey lodge, No. 287, F. & A. M., was chartered on the 13th day of January, 1871. Its first officers were Duane D. Briggs, W. M.; P. C. Hathaway, S. W.; and A. P. Dulerow, J. W. The lodge now has fifty-eight members.

There is a ladies' club in the town known as the D. M. C. club.

The business places of the village consist of two general stores, one drug store, one hardware store, one grocery store, one grist-mill (water power), one steam saw-mill and one meat market.

#### VILLAGE OF BERLAMONT

This is a small hamlet, a station on the line of the railroad three miles east of Columbia and two miles west of the village of Bloomingdale. It was originally known as Bear Lake, or Bear Lake Mills, on account of its proximity to the lake of that name, but the name was subsequently changed to Berlamont. It is situated on the town line between Columbia and Bloomingdale and lies partly in each of those townships. There is no recorded plat of the place.

It was anticipated that the railroad might develop the burg into a somewhat flourishing town, but such anticipations were never realized and it is altogether unlikely that they ever will be.

D. H. Anderson, from Genessee county, New York, had settled in Breedsville in 1855. Two years later, in company with Amos S. Brown, he built a saw-mill operated by steam power on the shore of Bear Lake, about a mile south of the present village of Berlamont, and a grist-mill near by operated by water power from the outlet of the lake. In 1866 his brother, Col. David Anderson, a veteran of the Civil war, became a partner. In 1871 they removed the plant to the village, and added to it a planing mill. The grist

mill building was afterward taken down and removed to Fennville, in Allegan county, where it was reerected and continued in use for the same purpose for which it was originally built. About the year 1874 the property passed into the hands of Seneca B. Anderson, a son of David, who converted the entire plant into a furniture factory and did a very successful business for about ten years, and until the property was destroyed by fire in the month of April, 1884. The plant was a total loss and a large quantity of finished furniture, practically ready for shipment, was also consumed. This not only put an end to the plant itself, but it was a blow to the little village from which it never recovered.

There are now two general stores on the Columbia side of the town and a feed mill on the Bloomingdale side that does a good business.

#### VILLAGE OF COLUMBIA

Columbia is a small hamlet one mile east of Grand Junction, on the line of the South Haven division of the Michigan Central, and like the latter place owes its existence to railroad building. It is a station on that road and was platted in the winter of 1871 by Marvin Hannahs, William F. Dickinson and Samuel Rogers. There is little else there but a stopping place for the trains passing through.

#### VILLAGE OF GRAND JUNCTION

The village of Grand Junction, as its name indicates, is situated at the intersection of the two railroads that pass through the township—the South Haven branch of the Michigan Central and the Pere Marquette—and came into being as the direct result of the construction of those roads. It is situated where the corners of four sections—five, six, eight and nine—come together, and lies in part on each of those sections. It is four miles north of Breedsville and ten miles east from the City of South Haven.

The village was platted in December, 1871, by Samuel Rogers, Marvin Hannahs, Conrad Crouse and George W. Chrouch. Although it has developed into a place of considerable importance, it has not yet attained the dignity of being an incorporated town.

The first settlement within the limits of the village was made in 1869 by David Young, who had been for a number of years previously a resident of the adjoining township of Geneva. He purchased six lots in the prospective village and became its first settler, his nearest neighbors being at that time in the village of Breedsville. Soon afterward, being confident that there must eventually arise a town at the junction of the railroads, he began



the erection of a structure which, when completed, became known as Young's hotel. This he opened for the accommodation of the traveling public in 1871. The second individual to become an inhabitant of the prospective village was a colored man named Hungerford.

There are two churches in Grand Junction—the Congregational, with a membership of twenty, and the Catholic with thirty-five members.

There are no secret societies, and no clubs or other similar organizations except the Congregational Ladies' Society.

The public buildings consist of the churches and the graded school building. There are ninety children of school age residing in the village district; 564 volumes in the district library and one schoolhouse; value of school property, \$2,500. The two teachers employed during the last school year taught an aggregate of eighteen months and \$980 was paid for teachers' salaries.

The business places in the village consist of one glove factory, one meat-market, two grocery and provision stores, one hardware store, two general stores, one restaurant, one hotel; the postoffice building with stationary, notions, cigars, etc.; one blacksmith-shop, one barber-shop; one bakery and confectionery establishment; a warehouse with feed, hay, coal and farm implements on sale; one cider-mill; one saw-mill and lumber yard carrying various kinds of building material, and one drug store. The citizens also possess that indispensable adjunct of modern life, excellent telephone service.

## CHAPTER XXIV

### TOWNSHIP OF COVERT

#### THE ORIGINAL TOWNSHIP—PHYSICAL FEATURES—EARLIEST SETTLERS—ROADS AND SCHOOLS—STATISTICAL AND POLITICAL—THE VILLAGE OF COVERT.

The township of Covert is officially designated by the government survey as township two south, of range seventeen west. It is situated on the west side of the county and its western border is washed by the waters of Lake Michigan. It is bounded on the north by the township of South Haven, on the east by Bangor, its southern boundary being the north line of Berrien county. The township is fractional, being only about four and one-half miles wide along its northern boundary, while on the south it is about seven miles in width. This is occasioned by the line of the lake shore. There are two fractional sections, twenty-five and thirty-six of township two south, of range eighteen west (all there is of that township) that form the southwest corner of Covert.

#### THE ORIGINAL TOWNSHIP

The township was first called Deerfield, but on account of there being other towns of that name in the state, the name was changed to Covert. This change was made in 1876, by an act of the legislature introduced by Hon. William O. Packard, at that time a representative from Van Buren county and a resident of the township.

Covert was originally a part of the township of South Haven, from which it was separated and organized into a separate township by action of the board of supervisors at their October session in 1855. The first meeting of the new township thus formed was held at the house of Hiram Fish on the first Monday of April of the following year. W. A. Dell was chosen supervisor at that election. The official records of the county do not disclose who were the other officials elected.

The following named gentlemen have served the township in the office of supervisor: William A. Dell, Miram Fish, George H. Barker, William F. Trafford, George Grant, Orrin S. Shaw, William

J. Shattuck, Robert Bartley, Cyrus H. Lewis, Jacob Gunsaul, Truman A. Lampson, Shepard H. Shattuck and George Hale.

Those who served more than two years were Fish, Barker and Hale, each three years; Grant, five years; Lampson, six years, and Gunsaul, nine years. S. H. Shattuck, the present supervisor, is serving his sixth year.

#### PHYSICAL FEATURES

The surface of the township in general is comparatively level, except along the lake shore where it becomes broken and uneven. Abrupt and picturesque hills line the shores, some of them almost worthy of being called mountains. Indeed one of them bears the name of "Thunder mountain," from which, tradition has it that in an early day the strange sounds emanated resembling subdued thunder and about which weird tales are related. It is said that the vicinity was at one time a rendezvous for counterfeiters and other criminals, but these stories are probably all imaginary and inspired by the weird surroundings of those early days. From the top of these hills a fine view of the lake is to be obtained, as well as of the inland landscape that is largely covered with orchards of apples, peaches, pears and other fruit trees, as well as with large tracts of small fruits for the cultivation of which the township has long been noted, being located well within the boundaries of the celebrated Michigan fruit belt. The soil in places is of a decidedly sandy character, while in others it is a loam, a mixture of sand and clay, much of being very fertile and a large part of it peculiarly adapted to fruit culture. Being on the shore of the great lake that forms the western boundary of the Lower Peninsula, it is, like other localities similarly situated, protected from the extreme cold of winter which constitutes one of the factors that make it an ideal fruit region. There are numerous small streams, in the township, but none of importance, neither are there any inland lakes of any consequence.

#### EARLIEST SETTLERS

While the township has some seven miles of lake shore, it possesses no harbor, although there formerly was a pier called St. Paul's near the south line of the town, at which smaller sail vessels used to stop in an early day, when the weather would permit, to load with lumber, of which there was formerly a large quantity cut in that vicinity. A large part of the township was originally covered with hemlock forest with considerable pine intermingled with it, while other parts were covered with different varieties of timber. A saw-mill near the pier was operated by Chicago parties,

one R. P. Toms being the moving spirit. This was a steam mill of considerable size and containing the most up-to-date machinery of those days.

The writer has a vivid recollection of the time, considerably more than half a century ago, when he was employed as a "hand" in that mill. At that time there was a large boarding house and several other structures at the place, which was known as Paulville, or St. Paul, so named in honor of a member of the mill company. But the forests have all been cut down, the timber has disappeared and so has the "town," there being no vestige of it remaining.

In-so-far as its settlement is concerned, Covert may be considered as the newest township in the county. Very little progress was made in its development prior to 1860. Its heavily timbered land, some of it rather low and wet, and other portions not appearing as fertile as they were subsequently proven to be, were not attractive to the early pioneers. There was no spot in the entire township where tillable land could be secured without the hardest kind of labor, and in those early days the timber was a hindrance instead of an advantage; the greatest trial of the first settlers was to get rid of it, which was accomplished by burning it in immense heaps and at the cost of the hardest kind of labor; and it was not until the demand for lumber from the city of Chicago and the denizens of the great Illinois prairies made this vast quantity of timber a source of revenue, that substantial improvements began to be made.

The first party to locate in the township was Benoni Young, who emigrated from the Pine Tree state and settled upon a quarter section of land situate on section twenty-one. Here, with his family, he lived for seven years, the solitary settler within the limits of the township. His nearest neighbors were Mason Wood, who lived in the adjoining township of Bangor, and Isaac Swain, who lived in the township of Watervliet in the adjoining county of Berrien. Mr. Young had no assistance in erecting his pioneer cabin or in clearing up his land, but by his indomitable industry he soon made matters fairly comfortable for his family and cleared up a portion of his land and proved its productiveness by the abundant crops it yielded under his skilful hands. Mr. Young remained in Covert until 1861, when he removed to Hartford, where he spent the remaining years of his life. He died on the 16th day of August, 1885, at the age of seventy-seven years. The earliest wedding that occurred in Covert was the marriage of Mr. Young's daughter, Jane, to Allen Fish. The ceremony took place at the Young's home in 1859.

The next settler was John Peters, who located on section thirty-two. He remained but a short time, when he removed to Berrien county and afterward enlisted in the United States army where he died.

Matthias Farnum was another early settler of the township. He settled on section seven and built a saw-mill, the first in the township. The mill hereinbefore mentioned was built on the site of this primitive mill of Mr. Farnum's.

James Dobbyn, a Canadian, came to Covert in 1854 and entered 280 acres of land on section thirty-two. The Dobbyn family, which consisted of sixteen persons, was warmly welcomed by Mr. Peters, until such time as its members could construct a cabin for their own shelter.

When the Dobbyn family arrived at the new location the household goods consisted solely of what each person wore or carried, so it may well be imagined that the task they had undertaken of making a home in the wilderness was no light one. However, game was plentiful and served to keep the family larder well supplied with meat and the surplus could be shipped from South Haven to Chicago, where it brought remunerative prices and lightened the burdens that had to be borne.

John Wygent arrived in 1854 and settled on section thirty-two, occupying the house that had been vacated by John Peters when he removed from the township. Mr. Wygent cultivated and improved his land until it became valuable, but eventually disposed of it and emigrated to Nebraska.

Hiram Fish came to the township in 1854 and located on section twenty-one, where he entered a tract of 320 acres. Mr. Fish soon became prominent in the affairs of the township, in which he was deeply interested.

Quite a number of settlers arrived during the next two years, among them being William Kelley, W. W. Lampson, Frank Beal, William and J. McConnell.

#### ROADS AND SCHOOLS

One of the first things that called for the attention of the early settlers was the laying out and opening up of highways. The first road cut through the forest was probably the one leading to Farnum's mill. The Dobbyns and their neighbors also cut an early road in the vicinity of their own homes. As late as 1857, the road from the south part of the township, near the lake shore, was little more than a trail along which the compiler, in company with several others, got lost in the hemlock forest one evening while "footing it" from South Haven to Paulville.

The first schoolhouse was built on section thirty-three near the Dobbyn place and Miss Geraldine Taft, herself a lass of only fourteen years, was the first teacher. Her pupils were Josephine Lee, William Lee, David Lee, Henry Wygent, Violetta Wygent, William Wygent, John Dobbyn, Jane Dobbyn, Isabella Dobbyn, Sarah Dobbyn, Emma Dell, Mary Dell, Lita Fish and Solon Ingraham.

There are now 438 persons of school age in the township, 1,842 volumes in the district libraries and six schoolhouses; the estimated value of school property is \$11,100 and district indebtedness, \$1,720; eleven qualified teachers were employed during the school year of 1910-11, an aggregate of ninety-five months school was taught and \$4,794 was expended for teachers' salaries. The sum of \$3,670 was apportioned to the township during the past year from the state primary fund.

William A. Dell, who was chosen as the first supervisor of the township, purchased an eighty-acre tract on section twenty-nine, but afterward he removed to Watervliet. Reuben Lee was another settler of the same year. J. Enlow, from Ohio, settled on section twelve in 1857. The previous settlements had practically all been in the southern part of the township, so that Mr. Enlow, while having nearer neighbors than some of those who preceded him, found himself located in a section of country equally as wild as did the first comers.

Like other towns similarly situated, Covert has an ambition, which seems likely to be achieved, to become a popular summer resort. Two places for that purpose have been surveyed and platted along the lake shore, on sections five, seven and eight, one called the Covert Resort and the other Palisades Park. The latter is a park containing 640 acres located in the west part of the township, on the sand bluffs of Lake Michigan. It is laid out with beautiful grounds, walks and drives and has a large, modern hotel with accommodations for about 100 guests. There are about seventy-five cottages, golf, tennis and base-ball grounds and a fine bathing beach.

The Covert Resort Association has a beautiful park about a mile south of the Palisades, improved by elegant grounds and cottages. It is not as large as the Palisades Park, but in other respects compares very favorably with that beauty spot.

#### STATISTICAL AND POLITICAL

The population of the township, according to the census of 1910, was 1,522. In point of numbers Covert and Pine Grove each rank eighth among their sister townships, the last United States census giving them the same population.

At the first assessment after the township was set off from South Haven, taken in the spring of 1856, its total valuation was \$84,640 and taxes spread upon the roll amounted to \$1,134.37. In 1911 the assessed valuation of the town was \$477,925 and the tax spread was \$12,366. In point of wealth the township ranks as next to the last, only the township of Columbia being assessed at a less sum.

At the first general election held in the township, the presidential election of 1856, thirty-five votes were cast, twenty-six for the Republican ticket and nine for the Democratic. At the presidential election of 1908, 280 votes were polled, as follows: Taft, Republican, 212; Bryan, Democrat, 50; Chafin, Prohibitionist, ten; Debs, Socialist, six; Hisgen, Independent, two.

Although this township was so late in becoming improved, a stranger passing through it at the present time, looking upon its fine, modern farm residences, viewing its magnificent orchards, seeing its up-to-date schoolhouses, beholding its beautiful parks and taking in its one thriving, prosperous little village, would hardly imagine that but little more than half a century ago it was all an unbroken wilderness, inhabited only by the red man and the beasts of the forest, a veritable terra incognita.

#### THE VILLAGE OF COVERT

The village of Covert is centrally located, being situated on the southwest quarter of section fourteen and the southeast quarter of section fifteen. It was surveyed by Almon J. Pierce, county surveyor, and platted by the Messrs. Packard & Sons and others, in December, 1875, and is the only village in the township, although there is a little hamlet on the line of the railroad three miles to the northward, called Packard.

The village is situated on the Fruit Belt line, about midway between the village of Hartford and the city of South Haven, being eight miles from the latter place. While the village has been so long platted, it is not incorporated. It was about the year 1866 that the earliest indications of improvement were manifested in the locality now occupied by the village. About that time Messrs. Hawks & Lambert became interested in the outlook for lumbering in the township and began the erection of mills for its manufacture. After three years, they sold out to Packard & Company. These gentlemen at once became greatly interested in the development of the town and they are entitled to full credit for the great improvement that speedily became apparent. Alfred H. Packard, Jr., had, in 1868, built a saw-mill on section two and became the owner of a considerable tract of timber. Packard & Company added largely to their purchase from Hawks & Lambert and built a much larger

mill. Eventually they became interested in sawing and planing and the grinding of coarse grain. Their mills were capable of cutting 4,000,000 feet of lumber per year, while the mills of Alfred H. Packard had even a greater capacity.

In order to be able to ship their lumber across the lake, they built substantial piers extending into the lake and constructed tramways operated by horse power from their mills to the piers. The Packards also carried on a general store and dealt largely in wood and in hemlock bark for tanning purposes.

One of the efficient high schools of the county is located in the village of Covert. According to the last school census there were 184 pupils in the district, 581 volumes in the school library, the school property was valued at \$3,500, an aggregate of forty-five months school was taught during the school year, five teachers were employed and \$2,385 were expended in teachers' salaries.

The Congregational church at Covert was organized on the 27th day of September, 1870. Its earlier membership was composed of the following named individuals: Josiah Packard, Elizabeth Packard, Perlia Packard, Pamela Packard, Alfred Packard, Mary Packard, William O. Packard, Milan Packard, Margaret Smith, Edward A. Rood, Thaddeus Rood, Martha Rood, Flora Rood, Mr. and Mrs. E. P. Shaw, W. F. Trafford, Martha E. Trafford, Gordon Sinclair, D. B. Allen and Flora Allen. The first meetings were held in a barn arranged for that purpose, then in the schoolhouse, afterward for a series of years in Packard's hall. A parsonage was built in 1873 and in 1878-9 a fine church building was erected at an expense of more than \$4,000, with a seating capacity of 400 people. The building was dedicated November 5, 1879. The church now has 179 members. A Sunday school was started by that enthusiastic veteran Sunday school man, D. B. Allen, ten years prior to the organization of the church.

An Adventist church was organized in 1888. The society has a small house of worship and twenty-nine members.

The Covert postoffice was established about 1866. The first postmaster was D. B. Allen. His successors have been as follows: Dr. Orley M. Vaughan, Jacob Gunsaul, Dr. Vaughan, appointed a second time; Jacob Gunsaul, a second time; and Charles Gunsaul, the present incumbent.

The business places in the village consist of one drygoods and clothing store, one drygoods and grocery store, two hardware stores, one drug store, one private bank, one grocery store, two meat markets; one nursery, growing and dealing in fruit trees and vines; one hotel, one undertaking establishment, one livery, one cooper shop, one coal and ice establishment, one feed mill, one coal and lumber yard, one warehouse, one wagon shop, one shoe shop, one



billiard hall, one barber shop, one dray line, one blacksmith shop; two pickle factories, which put up 21,000 bushels of cucumber pickles during the past season, and one fruit canning establishment which, in 1911, canned about 20,000 bushels of peaches, 9,000 bushels of apples, and 3,000 bushels of plums. There were shipped out of Covert and used in the cannery during the season about 32,000 bushels of peaches, 20,000 bushels of apples, 12,000 bushels of pears, 6,000 bushels of plums and 20,000 cases of strawberries.

The following secret societies are represented in the village: Covert Lodge, No. 328, of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, which was organized May 27, 1879, with nine members and now has a membership of seventy-five; and Star Rebekah Lodge, No. 61, same order, which was organized January 17, 1882, with nine members and now has a membership of sixty-nine.

A lodge of Modern Woodmen of America was instituted on the 13th day of April, 1899. Its present membership is thirty-four.

The business transacted in this little village would be creditable to a town of much larger size.

## CHAPTER XXV

### TOWNSHIP OF DECATUR

FIRST WHITE SETTLER OF THE COUNTY—FIRST NATIVE WHITE CHILD—FIRST GOSPEL SERMON AND PIONEER SCHOOL—A. B. COPLEY ON EARLY DAYS—VARIOUS PIONEERS—CIVIL AND POLITICAL—STATISTICS—VILLAGE OF DECATUR—RETROSPECT.

By the government survey, the township of Decatur is officially designated as township number four south, of range number fourteen west. It is one of the southern tier of townships of the county. Its southern boundary is the line between the counties of Van Buren and Cass, and it is bounded on the north by the township of Paw Paw, on the east by Porter, and on the west by the township of Hamilton.

#### FIRST WHITE SETTLER OF THE COUNTY

The first white settler within the limits of Van Buren county was Dolphin Morris, who was born in Loudon county, in the state of Virginia, where, on the 29th day of March, 1825, he was married to Miss Nancy Beaver. In the fall of 1828 he started with his family and all his personal effects in a lumber wagon, destined for Summerville, Cass county, Michigan. Their route lay through dense forests; many streams were to be forded and many obstacles had to be overcome. He finally arrived safely at his destination and spent the winter with his cousin, Joseph Gardner. During his stay at Gardner's he located in the south half of section 35, township of Decatur, and early in the spring of 1829 erected the first white man's residence in the county, and made the first improvement. His home was a typical pioneer cabin, built of logs notched at the corners to hold them in place; the crevices were chinked with split basswood and daubed with clay to make the cabin warm and comfortable; the roof was made of oak shakes which were held in place by weight poles; the floor was of split basswood puncheons several inches in thickness, smoothed slightly on the upper side with an adze or axe. There were three small windows below and one in the gable; the chimney was made

of sticks and mud and thickly plastered inside; the fireplace was capacious and wide, admitting of huge logs, in front of which the cooking was done. The chamber was reached by a ladder. The door was put together with wooden pins, hung on wooden hinges and provided with a wooden latch with a latch string on the outside. It was indeed a case of "pull on the latch string, 'twill open the door." An axe, a saw, an auger and a froe were all the tools that were required in building the pioneer residences. We wonder how many of the rising generation have ever seen a froe, or frow (as is, perhaps the more approved orthography), or know what kind of an implement it is?

#### FIRST NATIVE WHITE CHILD

To Mr. and Mrs. Dolphin Morris, on the 4th day of August, 1830, was born a son, Lewis Creighton Morris, the first native white child of the county. This babe survived only until the 20th day of the next December and was the first person buried in what is known as the Morris and Anderson cemetery.

#### FIRST GOSPEL SERMON AND PIONEER SCHOOL

The first Gospel sermon ever preached in the county was in this Morris cabin and was delivered in 1830 by Rev. William Sprague, a young Methodist minister who afterward became a presiding elder and later a member of congress, defeating the Hon. Charles E. Stewart of Kalamazoo, for that office. As soon as suitable accommodations could be secured the circuit rider came, preaching wherever a place could be found, either in the Morris barn or elsewhere. The inhabitants would generally attend these services coming for miles on horseback, sometimes riding double, sometimes "riding and tieing." Buggies and carriages were not then in use among the hardy pioneers. The preaching was usually extemporaneous; the singing was congregational and consisted in making a "joyful noise" with little regard for tune or melody. Hymn books were scarce and the preacher would "line out" the hymns, a couple of lines at a time, and when the people had sung them the process would be repeated.

The first school in the county was taught in this same pioneer residence by William Alexander. A fairly good schoolhouse was built as soon as practicable and the first school therein was taught by G. N. Copley.

The Indians who at that time inhabited the county were as a rule friendly, some of the squaws being exceptionally kind. There was, however, now and then an exception. One Indian, known as old Shavehead, who was somewhat of a terror to the community,

was looked upon with suspicion and regarded as being a treacherous fellow. It is generally believed that he was shot by some white man as he suddenly disappeared and nothing was ever heard of him afterward. His name is borne by a lake in the southern part of Cass county, Shavehead lake.

The log cabins of the pioneers were erected without regard to section lines; in fact, such lines were not run when the first settlers arrived and their claims were located by guess, or "stepped off." The field notes of Decatur township say that its boundaries were surveyed by William Brookfield in 1827, and the section lines by E. H. Lytle in 1830. Roads were laid from one settler to another as nearly in a direct line as the conformation of the ground permitted, continually changing as new settlers arrived or as some farmer desired to extend his fields. Very few of the original roads, as at first laid out, are in existence at the present time, and but few of the original building sites are now occupied as such.

#### A. B. COPLEY ON EARLY DAYS

Writing of these early days, Alexander B. Copley, himself a pioneer, since deceased, says: "My father left Dayton, Ohio, on horseback, to make a trip to that part of Michigan territory called the St. Joseph country, reaching the home of Dolphin Morris, September 4, 1832. From his journal it appears that up to that time there had been entered at the land office sixteen eighty-acre lots in the township of Decatur, four in Waverly, and five in La-Fayette (now Paw Paw). There were then six families in Van Buren county, namely, Dolphin Morris, his brother, Samuel H. Morris, H. D. Swift, George Tittle, David Curry and LeGrand Anderson—but for nearly two years Mr. Morris and his wife were the only settlers in Van Buren county. The cabin erected by Mr. Morris, the one hereinbefore referred to," says Mr. Copley, "was of more than passing interest, aside from sheltering the first white family of the county. Here it was that Daniel Alexander and Margaret Tittle, the second married couple in the county, began housekeeping; and here it was also that Elias Morris, second son of Dolphin Morris, was born, and who up to the time of his death a couple of years ago was the oldest person born in the county. This cabin where the first birth and the first death occurred, where the germ of our valued school system was planted; this cabin that served for both schoolhouse and church and where the first family altar was reared, surely deserves to be kept in remembrance and its site marked to commemorate the beginning of civilization in our beautiful county."

## VARIOUS PIONEERS

Dolphin Morris remained a resident of Decatur until his death which occurred January 7, 1870. His wife, Nancy, died October 4, 1877. Henry Morris, his youngest son and his wife, Esther Morris, aged respectively thirty-two and twenty-six, were murdered; shot to death in the night of the 28th of September, 1879, while in the peaceful occupancy of the old Morris homestead. Their murderer was unknown and was never brought to justice, although a large reward was offered by the public authorities for his apprehension and conviction. Strong suspicion was entertained as to the perpetrator of the dastardly deed, but his identity was never established and the whereabouts of the suspected individual, who immediately disappeared from public view, has never been made manifest.

Dolphin Morris split with his own hands the first rail and turned the first furrow in Van Buren county. His three remaining sons, Samuel, Amos and Elias are all deceased.

Coming to Michigan with Mr. Morris, H. D. Swift located a claim on section thirty-six, in the township of Decatur, which he sold to LeGrand Anderson in 1831. With the proceeds of the sale he purchased another tract near at hand where he lived the remainder of his life.

George Tittle, who was Mr. Morris' brother-in-law, came from the state of Ohio in 1831 and settled on section thirty-five, where he lived until his death in 1866.

Samuel Morris, a brother to Dolphin, came to Cass county in 1829, where he resided for a couple of years when he settled on section thirty-six, near his brother, and where he spent the remainder of his days.

LeGrand Anderson came from Ohio to Michigan, in the spring of 1831, and purchased a tract of more than 400 acres in Decatur township, on sections twenty-six and thirty-six. In the summer of 1832, he brought his family from Ohio and they became permanent residents of the then wilderness. Mr. Anderson remained on his Decatur farm during the remainder of his life. After his death it passed into the possession of his son LeGrand R. Anderson, who continued to own it until his death which occurred October 14, 1909.

David Curry was one of Decatur's leading pioneers. He came from Indiana in 1830, to Cass county, where he remained about two years when he entered a quarter section adjoining the Morris land, built thereon a log cabin eighteen by twenty feet—quite a sumptuous residence for those early days, although it was sans floor, door or window. His young wife would not permit him to lay a "punch-

eon" floor, preferring to tread on "mother earth" until she could have something better. The next winter Mr. Curry secured some rough boards from the adjoining county of Cass, with which he laid the floor of his primitive palace, and Mrs. Curry enjoyed the distinction of having the only "sawed" floor in the settlement (even if it was rough), and that she lived in the best house on the "prairie." Mr. Curry died in 1846 while in the prime of life, being killed by a fall from a wagon.

Joseph Van Hise, a native of Butler county, Ohio, located on section thirteen in 1835. A year later he returned to Ohio for his family and with them came his brother, William O., and their father and mother, Mr. and Mrs. Oakey Van Hise. One of Joseph's sons, William K. Van Hise, who has been a man of considerable prominence in township affairs, is yet living on a farm on section thirteen near where his father made his primitive home.

Another of the early settlers was John Eckenberger, who sold his farm to Jacob Charles of Cass county and removed farther west, but eventually returned to Decatur and died there as did Mr. Charles.

Thomas Scott and family located on section thirteen in 1836, afterward becoming a resident of the township of Antwerp and removing to the state of Illinois. John W. Scott, a nephew of Thomas Scott, came from Ohio to Decatur in the spring of 1837 and worked as a farm laborer until 1842, when he returned to his native state, married, returned to Decatur in 1844 and made that township his home.

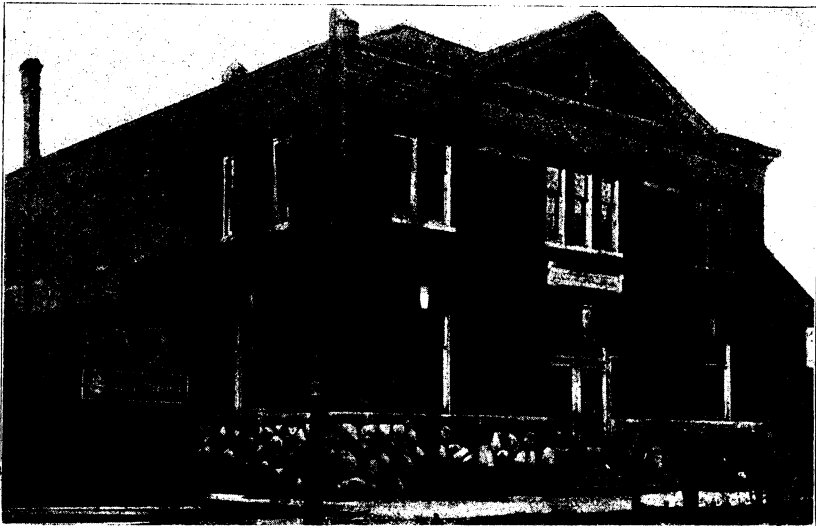
At the time that Mr. Morris settled in Decatur there were Indian traders at Bronson (now Kalamazoo); at Grand Rapids, a trading post at that time and now the second city in the state; and west, a trading post at St. Joseph; nothing else east, west or north. To the south was the Carey mission, near the location of the present city of Niles, in Berrien county. This was established in 1820, in accordance with the treaty made by General Cass with the Potawattamies. This mission was the means of opening up the valley of the St. Joseph to permanent settlement.

#### CIVIL AND POLITICAL

The township of Decatur, which was named in honor of Commodore Stephen Decatur, one of the nation's naval heroes, was organized in 1837, by legislative enactment and embraced within its limits the present townships of Decatur and Porter—the latter having been set off and organized into a separate township in 1845. The first township meeting was held at the schoolhouse near Little Prairie Ronde. At this election John D. Compton was elected

clerk and Joseph Van Hise, John D. Compton, George S. Freese and Tinker R. Smith were elected as justices of the peace. The official records of the county do not disclose the names of the other officers chosen at this election.

At the first general state election held on the fourth and fifth days of November, 1839, forty gubernatorial votes were cast, twenty-four of them being for William Woodbridge, Whig, and sixteen for Elon Farnsworth, Democrat. (Woodbridge was the only Whig that ever occupied the chief executive office of the state of Michigan.)



TOWN HALL, DECATUR

At the presidential election of 1908 there were 497 presidential votes cast as follows: 305 for Taft, Republican; 165 for Bryan, Democrat; seventeen for Chafin, Prohibitionist; five for Debs, Socialist, and five for Hisgen, Independence party.

According to the census figures of 1910, Decatur ranked fifth among the townships of the county in point of population, having 2,106 inhabitants.

George S. Freese was the first supervisor of the township, having been elected to that office at the first town meeting held on the first Monday of April, 1837. The records do not disclose the names of the supervisor for either the year 1838 or 1841. John McKinney was elected in 1840. With the exception of the years noted, the following is a complete list of the names of the persons who have filled that office: George S. Freese, Joseph Van Hise, John McKinney, Stephen Kinney, Lyman Sanford, N. Le Fevre, Wil-

liam O. Van Hise, Jeremiah Teed, George Bennett, O. T. Welch, E. Parker Hill, C. Hollister, Eri Beebe, Ransom Nutting, Marvin Hinckley, William K. Van Hise, David A. Squier and Emory H. Squier (present incumbent). Of the earlier supervisors, Lyman Sanford held the office seven years, possibly more. E. Parker Hill served seven years; William K. Van Hise, ten years; Ransom Nutting, fifteen years; David A. Squier was elected nine times in succession and died in 1902 while holding the office, and his son, Emory H. Squier, was appointed to fill the vacancy caused by his father's death and has been continued in the office since.

There are several small lakes in the township, the principal ones being Lake of the Woods, which is within sight of the village of Decatur on the west and lies partly in the township of Decatur and partly in the township of Hamilton. This was originally a beautiful sheet of water, but its beauty has been considerably marred by its having been partially drained in order to secure a few acres of tillable land around its shores. A small lake just south of the corporation line of the village is dignified by the un-euphonious name of Mud lake. Pickerel lake, half a mile southeast of the village, was originally well stocked with that variety of fish from which it takes its name. Swift's lake, on section 36, in the southeast corner of the township, covers about one-fourth of the section. Several small streams take rise in the northern and western part of the township and unite to form what is known as the west branch of the Paw Paw river, and in the southern part of the township other similar streams (the principal one being the outlet of Pickerel lake), form the Dowagiac creek, which flows southeasterly into Cass county.

#### STATISTICS

The first school in Decatur was taught by William Alexander in the humble cabin of Dolphin Morris in the winter of 1834-5. There are now seven schools in the township and eight schoolhouses. The number of persons of school age, according to the enumeration of 1911, was 613, the value of school property is estimated at \$21,700; the number of teachers employed during the school year of 1910-11 was sixteen; they taught an aggregate of 145 months and received in wages \$7,065.25. The district libraries contain 1,072 volumes. \$4,260 state primary school money was apportioned to the schools of the township during the last year.

The total amount of taxes levied in the township in 1837, was \$263.60. No assessment of personal property appears on the tax roll, but the tax spread was just four cents per acre throughout the entire township. In 1911 the amount of tax spread on the as-



assessment roll of the township was \$14,002.75. In point of wealth, according to assessment, Decatur ranks third among the townships of the county, being assessed at \$1,186,350, which is exceeded only by Paw Paw and Hartford.

#### VILLAGE OF DECATUR

The original plat of this village was surveyed in the spring of 1850. Joseph D. Beers and Samuel Sherwood of New York had become the owners of a large tract of government land in which was included the present village site. These gentlemen donated the site of the depot buildings, which were erected in 1848, the same year that the railroad was completed to Niles, in Berrien county. When the Michigan Central Railroad Company began to push its road westward from Kalamazoo these gentlemen conceived the plan of laying out and platting a village along the line of that road, which they did, calling it Decatur after the name of the township in which it was situated. Since that date there have been no less than fifteen additions to the original plat. The last of these is called "Hastings' Addition" and was platted in the summer of 1910. In 1905, the common council of the village caused a resurvey and a new plat to be made covering the original plat and the major portion of the various different additions. This plat is commonly known as the Supervisors' plat.

As at present constituted, the village embraces portions of sections seventeen, eighteen, nineteen and twenty, and by the census of 1910 contained a population of 1,286, being exceeded in numbers by no village in the county except Paw Paw.

There had been some indications of a future village before it was platted. Hiram Lee purchased the first village lot in 1848. The construction of a road across the swamp south of the village, which was completed in the fall of 1849, opened communication with a considerable tract of country that had been theretofore practically inaccessible. This gave to the new village a decided impetus. During the year 1849 C. S. Tucker opened a boarding house, and stores were established by A. H. Dixon, Goss & Dixon and Theodore E. Phelps. Before these business places were opened, trading was done either at Paw Paw or Kalamazoo.

In 1851, there were three general stores in the village, kept by the following named merchants: A. H. Dixon, Theodore E. Phelps and E. Ingalls. Henry Carroll had a drug store and the boarding house started by Mr. Tucker had been converted into a hotel, kept by L. R. Barker and called the Decatur House.

At that time Decatur was literally "in the woods," being surrounded by the forest on every side, in which various kinds of

game abounded. A steam saw-mill was erected by Messrs. Beers & Sherwood in 1850, near the village. A distillery subsequently took its place, but it was short-lived.

During the first five years after its incorporation the village increased in growth moderately and at the expiration of that period there were about seventy-five buildings within its boundaries.

The first wedding that occurred in the village was that of L. T. Olds and Miss Mary Elliott, which was solemnized, May 18, 1850, by Justice George Sherwood.

Mr. Olds, who settled in the village in 1849, was its first carpenter and joiner.

The first village physician was Dr. George Bartholomew, who erected a small building in 1848 and occupied it as an office and drugstore. He subsequently became a resident of the township of Keeler where he died, September 20, 1887. Dr. John T. Keables located in Decatur in 1851, where he continued the practice of his profession until his death, about forty years later, November 1, 1891.

A couple of years after the platting of the village a postoffice was established. George Sherwood was the first postmaster. Subsequent incumbents of the office have been W. N. Pardee, Charles N. Poor and Theodore Phelps, who died while holding the office, his widow being appointed as his successor; following her, Eri Beebe, J. W. Rogers, John L. Harrison, Lyman A. Roberts, Ransom Nutting, May F. Nicholson, Theodore Trowbridge, William H. White and Arba N. Moulton, the present incumbent.

The village was first incorporated on the 11th day of October, 1859, by resolution of the county board of supervisors. It was re-incorporated by legislative action in 1861, and again by the legislature of 1883. This last act of incorporation is found in the Local Acts of that year on page 17. These last articles of incorporation have been twice amended. (Local Acts of 1893, p. 154, and Local Acts of 1905, p. 297.)

The first officers of the village were E. Parker Hill, president; Charles Shier, recorder; Hiram Cole, Myron Hinkley, J. H. Wallace, Carlton Wheeler, Charles N. Poor and John Tarbell, trustees.

The present officers are Malcolm S. Carney, president; Stephen O. Van Hise, clerk; William A. High, treasurer; Edwin L. Cady, assessor; Milton E. Knoll, William P. Bope, Horace D. Crane, J. M. Altha and B. K. Durkee, trustees.

The first schoolhouse within the limits of the present village was built in 1848 and the first school was taught therein during the winter of 1848-9 by Miss Sarah Cook, whose pupils numbered twenty.

The village is now possessed of one of the leading high schools of the county. At the last enumeration there were 420 persons of school age in the village district; forty-seven non-resident pupils attended the school during the school year of 1910-11; the district library contains 500 volumes; there are two modern school buildings in the district; ten teachers were employed during the school year; the aggregate number of months of school taught was ninety-five, and the sum paid for teachers' salaries was \$3,924.64.



DECATUR HIGH SCHOOL

There are six churches in the village, to-wit: Methodist Episcopal, Christian or Disciple, Presbyterian, Catholic, Universalist and Free Methodist.

The Methodist Episcopal church was organized in 1860, and its house of worship was erected in 1861. The building is a commodious structure, with a seating capacity of 350. Its present pastor is Rev. F. W. Nickel. It has a membership of 150.

The Universalist church was organized in 1868. Their house of worship was built in 1881. It was afterward destroyed by fire and rebuilt in 1895. It is a brick structure capable of seating two hundred people. The church now has a membership of forty-eight, but at the present time has no pastor.

The Christian church is a large, commodious brick building and the society is one of the leading religious organizations of the place. Many of the foremost citizens of the village are and have been connected with this church, which has been among the leaders in religious matters. This church was organized in 1885, the pres-

ent membership is about sixty; the house of worship was built in 1887 and has a seating capacity of 350. The present pastor is Elder J. J. Terry.

The first Presbyterian church of Decatur was organized in 1852 by Rev. Mercus Harrison, with the following members: Lydia Harrison, Mrs. Eli Rich and Joseph McClintock, three in all. Their house of worship was dedicated in 1856, the dedicatory sermon being preached by Rev. A. C. Tuttle of Paw Paw. It now has a fine frame church building, and the society ranks high in the religious life of the town.

The Free Methodist have a house of worship, but the society is numerically rather small.

The Catholic church, known as the Church of the Holy Family, began about 1855, when Rev. Father Koopman of Marshall visited the place and arranged to hold services once in three months. Meetings were held in private houses or public halls for twenty years or more, when the society purchased the building that had formerly been occupied by the Universalists. There are at the present time about twenty-five families connected with the church. Rev. Father Geo. Clarson of Paw Paw, is the pastor.

There are numerous lodges and orders represented in the village. Decatur lodge, No. 99, Free & Accepted Masons, was instituted January 1, 1858, and at the present time has seventy-six members.

Star Chapter, No. 336, Order of the Eastern Star, has recently been instituted and has ninety members.

Burnside Post, No. 27, Grand Army of the Republic, was instituted September 19, 1881, and now has twenty-seven members.

Decatur Lodge, No. 112, Knights of Pythias, was organized in 1890. It has a present membership of fifty.

Sprague Lodge, No. 113, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted on the 28th day of October, 1867, with five charter members. It now numbers 118 and the lodge owns its own hall.

Ellen A. Sprague Rebekah Lodge No. 6, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted February 22, 1879, and has a membership of eighty-eight.

Decatur Grange, No. 346, Patrons of Husbandry, was organized in June, 1875, with sixty members, and has been in continuous operation since that date.

The Modern Woodmen and the Order of Maccabees also have flourishing lodges.

A prosperous ladies' literary club, known as the Every Tuesday Club, is one of the institutions of the town.

The business places of the village consist of three drygoods and shoe stores, one general store, two clothing stores, two drug stores, two jewelry stores, one racket store, seven grocery stores, four

meat markets, one exclusive shoe store, one wholesale bakery, two furniture stores, two banks, two millinery stores, one steam laundry, three restaurants and ice cream parlors, one garage, two agricultural implement stores, one grain, feed and produce store, two elevators, one cannery, one pickle factory, two coal yards, one lumber yard, one hoop and lumber mill; one measure factory, where wooden measures, candy and tobacco pails and crates are manufactured; one flouring mill, one saw-mill, two livery stables, and various smaller shops.

The public buildings are a town hall built at an expense of \$12,000, a corporation building, water-works and electric lights combined.

The village owns its system of water-works and lights, which are modern and up-to-date. There are two schoolhouses in the place, the original one built many years ago, at an expense of \$25,000 and a new one costing \$12,000.

The yield of the peppermint crop, produced in the vicinity of the village and shipped from there during the season of 1911, was about 50,000 pounds of oil, which sold for \$2.75 per pound.

Large shipments were made of celery produced on muck lands near the village. This was of a superior quality, not surpassed even by the far-famed Kalamazoo article. Celery culture is largely carried on by Hollanders, and the Dutch population of the place is increasing from year to year. The lands on which peppermint and celery are grown were formerly regarded as practically worthless, consisting of swamp too low and wet for any kind of agricultural purposes, but by a judicious system of drainage they have been rendered available for use and are now among the most valuable lands in the township, selling for from \$85 to \$150 per acre.

Following is a list of the carload shipments of various kinds of produce, via the Michigan Central Railroad for the year 1911: Potatoes, forty-eight carloads; beans, two; sugar beets, one; flour, two; onions, sixteen; canned fruit, eight; apples, nine; pickles, five; cider, one; celery, seventy-seven; grain, eighty; stock, 132; grapes, 290; making a total of 664 carloads for the year, a pretty fair business for a town of its size, and which bids fair to largely increase in the near future.

Decatur is entitled to take rank as one of the liveliest, hustling villages of its size anywhere along the line of the Michigan Central Railroad and is in the very forefront of the flourishing, prosperous villages of Van Buren county.

## RETROSPECT

But little more than three-score and ten years have elapsed since Dolphin Morris, the first white man to seek a home in Van Buren county, erected that little log cabin near the southern boundary of the county in the township of Decatur, but what wonderful, astonishing changes have taken place since that early day. Had Jean Nicolet, the first white man to set foot within the limits of the Peninsular state, returned to earth and visited Van Buren county one hundred and ninety years later he would have found no change; the land would still have been covered with the primeval forest tenanted by the untutored red man and by wild beasts, just as it had been for ages upon ages before. But from that time until the present the most vivid imagination could not have kept pace with the reality. Those once wild and uncultivated forests have been converted into a beautiful, fruitful, prosperous country; into vineyards, farms and orchards, such as no man had ever dreamed of at that date. Within considerably less than a century the railroads have come; telegraphs and telephones, those marvels of the modern world, have been invented; thriving villages almost within a stone's throw of each other; schoolhouses everywhere; churches with their spires pointing heavenward, in recognition of the Great Giver of all good; the automobile instead of the ox team; factories on every hand; flocks and herds dotting the hill sides; aerial navigation has become an accomplished fact; time and distance are almost annihilated; the howl of the wolf and the scream of the panther has given place to click of the reaper, the hum of the thresher, and the whir of machinery, and the rude wigwam of the red man has been supplanted by the palatial residence of his white brother. The people of the old world take just pride in the great things accomplished by their ancestors from the time of William the Conqueror to the reign of the kindly Queen Victoria. But here in our own Van Buren we have a country redeemed from a savage wilderness, transformed into ideal perfection, rich in the means of happiness and enjoyment, and abounding in advantages and privileges which were wholly unknown a century ago.

Improvements have been boundless, progress has been limitless, and still no man can foresee or imagine what lies beyond in the marvelous years of this wonderful twentieth century, which has but closed its first decade.

## CHAPTER XXVI

### TOWNSHIP OF GENEVA

ROADS AND PHYSICAL FEATURES—POLITICAL AND EDUCATIONAL—  
PIONEERS OF THE TOWNSHIP—VILLAGE OF LACOTA—VILLAGE OF  
KIBBIE—GENERAL TOWNSHIP PROGRESS.

Geneva is one of the northern tier of townships of the county and is officially designated as township number one south, of range number sixteen west. It is bounded on the north by Allegan county, on the east by the township of Columbia, south by the township of Bangor and west by the township of South Haven, of which latter township it formed a part from the organization of the county in 1837, until, in 1845, by act of the legislature, it was set off, together with township number one south of range number fifteen west, and organized as the township of Columbia. Afterward, January 5, 1854, by resolution of the board of supervisors of the county, it was detached from Columbia and organized as a township by itself under the name of Geneva.

The first town meeting thereafter was held on the first Monday of April, 1854, at the residence of Nathan Tubbs, at which twenty-two votes were polled and the following named officers were chosen: Supervisor, Nathan Tubbs; township treasurer, Philip M. Brooks; township clerk, Charles N. Hoag; justices of the peace, Eri Bennett, Leander J. Eastman, Jesse L. Lane and Philip Hoag; school inspectors, Hiram Simmons and Francis M. Jones; commissioners of highways, Clark Pierce, Leander J. Eastman and Jesse L. Lane; directors of the poor, Eri Eaton and Clark Pierce.

The township is watered by the Black river and its tributaries. The river enters on section thirty-four and runs in a north-westerly direction across the township to its northwest corner. Geneva differs somewhat from most of the townships of the county in not having the numerous small lakes, such as abound in other localities, the only one named being Moon lake, a small body of water on section thirteen.

## ROADS AND PHYSICAL FEATURES

The South Haven division of the Michigan Central Railroad crosses the northern tier of sections and this, in connection with its juxtaposition to the city of South Haven and the steamship line thence to Chicago, affords the citizens of the township excellent transportation facilities.

Like the other northern townships of the county, Geneva was originally covered with dense forests of heavy timber of various kinds. Its surface is generally level or slightly undulating, its soil is fertile and well adapted to the production of fruit, especially to the culture of the peach, large quantities of which have been grown, and some of the finest peach orchards in the county have been located in the township.

The first laid-out highway in the township was the Monroe road, established in 1833 by Judge Jay R. Monroe and Charles U. Cross running from Paw Paw to South Haven, and which crossed sections thirty and thirty-two. This highway is still one of the principal roads in the township. When Geneva was set off from Columbia, the records of that township showed the following roads as having been theretofore established: Murch road, surveyed June 29, 1839; Stearling road, surveyed June 22, 1846; Eaton's road, surveyed June 25, 1846; Pierce road, surveyed December 14, 1846; Tubbs road surveyed October 5, 1852.

## POLITICAL AND EDUCATIONAL

The first general election held in the township after its organization was on the 7th day of November, 1854, at which fourteen votes were cast, twelve Democratic and two Republican.

At the presidential election held two years later, November 4, 1856, the number of votes polled was thirty-three, twenty-six for John C. Fremont, and seven for James Buchanan.

At the last presidential election, November 3, 1911, 307 electors expressed their choice at the ballot box, as follows: 197 for Taft, Republican; ninety for Bryan, Democrat; fifteen for Chafin, Prohibitionist, and one for Hisgen, Independent.

The following named gentlemen have filled the office of supervisor of the township: Nathan Tubbs; O. H. Burrows, Jerome B. Watson, Abel Edgerton, Varnum H. Dilley, Gideon Hall, S. M. Trowbridge, William R. Tolles, Goodwin S. Tolles, Gilbert Mitchell, James T. Tolles, Milton L. Decker, Ralph F. Watson, W. W. Wenban, Frank E. Warner and G. S. Tolles (present incumbent).

The following named gentlemen held the office for more than two years each: Watson, ten years; Mitchell, eight; Dilley, six; Mitchell, J. T. Tolles and Warner, each four years.



The first school in the township was taught by Mrs. Caroline Miner, about the year 1848, in her home. The only pupils were the Eaton, Eastman and Miner children. The next year, in the winter of 1849-50, Laura Rogers taught a school in Clark Pierce's log house. A schoolhouse was built by Marvin Hannah, at Hunter, better known as Jericho, but no school was taught there for considerable time afterward. Ellen Fish was the first teacher in that house. In the northeastern part of the township a school was taught in 1853 by Mrs. Orrin S. Hoag, in a rough shanty near Eri Eaton's place. Not long afterward a schoolhouse was built in what was afterward known as the Lull district. Mrs. Harriet Hoag and Miss Augusta Smith (subsequently Mrs. Benjamin Knowles), were among the early teachers there.

The first school district was formed soon after the organization of the township, and in the winter of 1855 a second district was created by dividing district No. 1. District No. 3 was organized about the same time, and in 1855 there were reported forty-six pupils of school age—at that time between the ages of four and eighteen—in the three districts.

Following is a list of those licensed to teach in the township for the earlier years after its organization:

1855—Fanny Kidder, Angeline Foster, Amvietta Blood, Helen M. Fish.

1856—William M. Welch, Israel P. Boles.

1857—Ruth Hunt, Mary E. Welch.

1858—Augusta Smith, Lucinda E. Young.

1859—Evaline Fellows, Sarah Shaver, Sarah Young.

1860—Henry C. Rowman, Francis M. Jones.

1861—Mary H. Briggs, Sarah Peacock, Amanda Rawen, Aldena Hoag, Aurelia Ellsworth, Helen Ailsworth, James Southard.

1862—Eliza Clark, Adaline Deming, Kate C. Peters, Martha E. Grover.

1863—Mary A. Rowland (then and now the wife of the compiler), Rebecca A. Burlingame, Emily A. Loomis, Helen M. Poole.

1864—Georgia Williams, Cordelia Worrallo, Hannah Cross, Laura Pierce, Aurelia Stilwell, Aristine E. Metcalf.

1865—Susan A. Cassidy, Janet Hurlbut, Gideon Hall, Carrie Longwell, Marion Balfour.

According to the official report for the year 1911, there were 304 persons of school age (between five and twenty) in the township; 792 volumes in the district libraries; eight school houses, estimated value of school property, \$10,900; district indebtedness, \$120; eleven teachers employed during the year; aggregate number of months' school, seventy-six; paid for teachers' salaries, \$3,597.25. The township was apportioned, from the primary

school fund of the state, the sum of \$3,270, very nearly a sufficient amount to pay all the teachers employed; and money so appor-tioned could be lawfully used for no other purpose.

#### PIONEERS OF THE TOWNSHIP

The territory embraced in the present township of Geneva was a wilderness long after settlements had been made in other parts of northern Van Buren county. Clark Pierce, an emigrant from the Green Mountain state, was the first to locate within the boundaries of the township. He became a resident of Michigan in 1833 and for a considerable time lived at St. Clair. When Van Buren county was organized, in 1837, he came to South Haven, of which the township of Geneva was a part, and purchased a quarter section of land along the Monroe road on section thirty-two. Upon this land, he built a log cabin and kept "bachelor's hall" for a couple of years, his nearest neighbor being at Breedsville. In 1839 he and his brother, Daniel Pierce, rented a farm in Schoolcraft, county of Kalamazoo, where they remained until 1842, when Clark having become a married man, he, with his wife, babe (now Almon J. Pierce, of South Dakota), and household goods, returned to his "log cabin home," where they passed two years as the sole residents, there being no other settler in the township until 1846.

In the meantime the lands where the present city of South Haven is located, having passed into the possession of a company that proposed to build a mill and make other improvements at that place, Mr. Pierce was engaged to move there, open a boarding house and take charge of the property. In 1845 he took up his residence there with his family, which at that time consisted of his wife and two sons, the youngest of whom was Irving, the first white child born in the township. They remained there until June of the next year, when they returned to their Geneva farm. Irving, the son, still resides on the old homestead.

From 1837 till February, 1846, nobody but Mr. Pierce and family had settled in the township. At that date Eri Eaton and Andrew Miner came in and settled near the center of the town. Mr. Pierce afterward removed to Illinois, but returned to Geneva in 1858, where he spent the remainder of his life. He died March 30, 1900, in his eighty-sixth year.

Mr. Eaton and his son-in-law, Leander J. Eastman, settled on section fifteen and Mr. Miner on section three.

Messrs. Miner and Eaton both lived in the township until their decease. Mr. Miner died March 7, 1887, in his sixty-sixth year

and Mr. Eaton followed him a couple of years later, April 4, 1887, aged eighty-five years.

Other somewhat early settlers of the township were: Philip Hoag, 1848; Nathan Tubbs (first supervisor of the township), 1849; Charles N. Hoag, a brother of Philip, 1851; James Bates, 1851; Charles Davey, winter of 1851-2; Moses Welch, 1852; James Kelly, 1852; Orrin G., another of the Hoag brothers, 1852; Philip Brooks, 1853; Benjamin Knowles, who came with his father to the township of Columbia in 1837, settled in Geneva in 1852; Samuel Lull, 1854; Charles Brott, 1855; Daniel and Mahlon Funk, 1856; William Miller and George McKenzie, about the same time. Beginning with the early sixties the township began to settle up quite rapidly.

In 1847 Marvin Hannah as the name was spelled in those early days (it has since added a final "s"), of the village of Albion, Michigan, opened up a settlement on section eighteen, where he built a saw-mill, the first one in the township on the Black river, and also a boarding house, which he placed in charge of Henry Hogmire. The next year he built a large tannery, the locality being peculiarly adapted to the tanning business on account of the great hemlock forests that covered no inconsiderable part of the township. The demands of the tannery for hemlock bark afterward furnished employment to quite a good many laborers and when they had any spare time from their own matters, the settlers employed it in working for Mr. Hannahs. Bark peeling was a real help to the people at that time and "bark peelers" numerous. Mr. Hannahs, who was regarded by the settlers as a capitalist, also built a schoolhouse and made other improvements, as an inducement for people to locate in the neighborhood. He placed Eri Bennett in charge as his foreman. Mr. Bennett afterward served as supervisor of the town.

Mr. Hannahs named the settlement "Hunter," but his employes nicknamed it "Jericho." There are few people that remember anything about Hunter, but even to this day the locality is known as Jericho although there is nothing remaining to indicate the business that was transacted there in those primitive days. Mr. Hannahs himself did not become a resident of the township, but remained in Albion. He had other large interests in the county, having at one time a grist-mill on the Paw Paw river at Lawrence, which for years was the only establishment of the kind between South Haven and Paw Paw and which did a very large business, as the compiler of this work knows by reason of having been employed therein in his youthful days in connection with his father, Eber Rowland, who was a miller by trade, as was the son at that time. George, a son of Marvin Hannahs, subsequently settled at

South Haven, where he was identified with large business interests and became one of the prominent citizens of the county, serving at one time as a senator in the state legislature. He subsequently removed to California, where he resided until his decease.

#### STATISTICAL AND PHYSICAL

According to the Federal census of 1910 Geneva contained 1,420 inhabitants, being the twelfth among the townships of the county in point of population.

In 1854, the year the township was organized, its assessed valuation was \$72,361, and the entire amount of taxes levied was the sum of \$1,106.10. The valuation of the township in 1911 was \$514,640, being the fourteenth township in point of wealth. The tax levied for all purposes in the latter year amounted to \$11,855.51.

The surface of the township is generally level, or somewhat undulating, and the soil is fertile and well adapted to fruit, especially to the culture of the peach, large quantities of which have been grown, and some of the finest peach orchards in the county have been located in the township. A few years ago a severe and unusual October freeze injured the peach business, practically destroying many of the orchards; but new orchards have been planted and the business is again flourishing.

#### VILLAGE OF LACOTA

There is no incorporated village in the township of Geneva. In November, 1870, Almon J. Pierce, county surveyor, at the request of Enoch M. Pease, the proprietor, surveyed a village plat on the northwest quarter of section one, consisting of seven blocks, and named the proposed village Irvington, by which name it was known for some twenty years, and, indeed, is still so called on the official records of the county.

In August, 1892, Varnum H. and Marshall Dilley caused another plat, consisting of five blocks, to be surveyed on the northeast quarter of section two and adjoining the previous plat. This new survey was named Lacota, by which the two surveys are usually known. This is also the name of the railroad station and the postoffice. The village is an enterprising, prosperous little town, and has one good, general store, one hardware store, two groceries, a livery, a cider and vinegar factory, a blacksmith and wagon shop for the manufacture of fruit wagons, a lumber and wood yard, a postoffice, a railroad depot, and two churches (the Christian and the Methodist Episcopal). The Methodist church was instituted about the same time that the township was organized. A house of worship was erected at Irvington in the summer of 1876. The Chris-

tian, or Disciple church, is of a later date. That society also has a good meeting-house. Both these churches are in very prosperous condition.

There is also a school in the place which is a credit to its enterprising patrons. There were ninety-two pupils in the district at the last enumeration. The school property is valued at \$3,000. Two teachers were employed during the last school year, each of whom taught nine months of school and were paid salaries amounting to \$945.

#### VILLAGE OF KIBBIE

There is another little burg in the township, on the line of the railroad about midway between the village of Lacota and the city of South Haven, being four miles from the latter place. It has a postoffice and one general store.

#### GENERAL TOWNSHIP PROGRESS

Although Geneva did not become an organized township until at a comparatively late date, only the township of Covert succeeding it, its progress has been rapid and its improvements of the most substantial character. To one who was familiar with it in its original state when it was covered with dense forests of giant hemlocks and other varieties of timber, the change is indeed wonderful and the labor required to effect it is almost incomprehensible. Instead of forests there are now orchards and cultivated fields; instead of the log cabins of the pioneers, the landscape is dotted with modern farm houses, convenient and up-to-date; instead of the scream of the panther and the howl of the sneaking wolf is heard the roar of the railroad train and the whistle of the locomotive; and instead of the roving red man the land is occupied by a happy, thriving prosperous people, who are in the enjoyment of many modern necessities and luxuries of life that had never even been dreamed of when the first settlements were made in the township. Great as the progress has been, none can tell what the future will develop. Doubtless the changes of the twentieth century, although along different lines, will be as wonderful and as marvelous as have been those of the nineteenth.

## CHAPTER XXVII

### TOWNSHIP OF HAMILTON

CIVIC AND POLITICAL MATTERS—PHYSICAL FEATURES—TAXPAYERS AND TAXES OF 1839—FIRST BUILDING AND FIRST PERMANENT SETTLER—ALSO SETTLED PRIOR TO 1844—ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE PIONEERS AND THEIR TIMES—SCHOOLS, THEN AND NOW—THE HAMILTON TOWNSHIP FAIR.

When the county of Van Buren was organized in 1837, it contained seven townships. By act of the legislature of that year, townships four south, or ranges fifteen and sixteen west, as they were officially designated in the United States survey, were organized into a separate township by the name of Covington. Just why Covington, does not appear, and the name was not of long duration and is remembered by very few of the inhabitants of the county at the present time.

#### CIVIC AND POLITICAL MATTERS

Pursuant to the legislative act organizing the county, an election was held on the second Monday of April, 1837, for the purpose of choosing county officers. The statute organizing the township of Covington provided that this first election should be held at the Keelerville postoffice, which was situated at about the center of the west half of the township, which was subsequently organized as a separate township under the name of Keeler. Twenty-seven votes were cast at this election. There seems to have been but one ticket in the field; at least, there was but one set of candidates voted for. The official records recite that at this election James Conklin, Robert Nesbitt, James A. Hill and George S. Bishop were elected as justices of the peace, and E. H. Keeler as township clerk. No other local officers are mentioned. A subsequent entry for the same year recites that at a special election, Benjamin F. Chadwick and Philotus Haydon were elected justices of the peace, in place of James A. Hill, deceased, and James Conklin, removed.

The poll list for this election is not preserved among the rec-

ords, but at the general election held the next November, the following named persons exercised their right of suffrage: Philotus Haydon, E. Lombard, W. H. Keeler, E. Staples, A. Barney, Benjamin F. Chadwick, Lyman Hill, R. Johnson, W. S. Hill, Lewis Johnson, Freeman Foster, S. A. Keeler, S. T. Howell, M. Lewis, E. Geer, C. Bartlett, Robert Nesbitt, Tobias Byers, John Comley, R. Comley, G. Geer, W. S. Sanart, C. Field, Jr., J. M. Lombard, L. T. Ball, Zebina Stearns, E. Smith, A. W. Ensign, H. S. Wright and Ira Foster.

The township of Covington had only a two years' lease of life. The legislature of 1839 passed an act providing that township four south, of range fifteen west, which was the east half of Covington, should be set off and organized into a township by the name of Alpena, and that the first town-meeting in the new township should be held at the house of Henry Coleman in said township. The records of that meeting show that Henry Coleman, Ralph Mason, Calvin Fields and Robert Nesbitt were elected justices of the peace; Henry Coleman, township clerk, and Ebenezer Lombard, collector.

The first general election in the newly organized township was held on the fourth and fifth days of November, 1839. At this election thirty-four votes were cast, equally divided between the Whig and the Democrat parties.

At the first presidential election which was held on the second and third days of November, 1840, there were thirty-nine votes polled in the township; twenty for Martin Van Buren, Democrat, and nineteen for William Henry Harrison, Whig.

At the presidential election of 1908, the voters of the township cast 183 ballots: ninety-eight for Taft, Republican; eighty-one for Bryan, Democrat; two for Chafin, Prohibitionist; and one each for Debs, Socialist, and Hisgen, Independent.

The name "Alpena" did not prove satisfactory to the citizens of the township, and in 1840 the legislature, on request, enacted that "The name of the township of Alpena, in the County of Van Buren, shall hereafter be altered and changed to that of Hamilton." Not a very happily worded statute, but it accomplished its design, and Hamilton it has ever since been, in honor of Alexander Hamilton, one of the great American statesmen of early days.

The first township officers chosen after the division of the township of Covington were George A. Bentley, supervisor; Henry Coleman, clerk; Marcus Merriman, treasurer; Ralph Mason, Philotus Haydon and Henry Coleman, assessors; Ebenezer Lombard, constable and collector; Ralph Mason, Calvin Fields, Jr., and James Nesbitt, school inspectors; Joshua Comley and Aaron Barney, directors of poor; Jackson Pratt, Philotus Haydon and Zebina

Stearns, commissioners of highways; Henry Coleman, Robert Nesbitt, Calvin Fields and Ralph Mason, justices of the peace.

The following named gentlemen have officiated as supervisors of the township: G. A. Bentley, Philotus Haydon, Palmer Earl, Henry Coleman, Robert Nesbitt, Truman Foster, George G. B. Yeckley, Calvin Fields, Solomon B. Hagar, Abram S. Wise, John H. Collins, James E. Maxwell, James M. Weeks, M. F. Phillips, C. W. Byers, Amos B. Wagner, Austin D. Conway, and Waldo E. Phillips (who is now serving his second term).

Those supervisors who served more than two years were M. F. Phillips, three years; Bentley and Foster, each four years; Nesbitt and Collins, each five years; Conway, six years; Yeckley, seven years; Hagar and Byers, each eight years, and Haydon, ten years.

#### PHYSICAL FEATURES

The surface of the township is generally level or slightly undulating, and the soil is rich and productive. The northern part was originally covered with heavy timber, while the southern portion was mostly what is termed "oak openings." In the southeastern part there is a considerable low land, originally somewhat swampy, but this has practically all been reclaimed by an extensive system of drainage and is now among the valuable, high-priced lands of the town.

There are several creeks and small streams within the township, the principal ones being Brush creek, a branch of the Paw Paw river which crosses the northwestern corner of the town in a northerly course, and a branch of the Dowagiac creek which takes its rise in the Lake of the Woods and crosses the southeastern corner of the town in a southerly direction. There are also several small lakes, the principal one being Lake of the Woods, which lies partly in Hamilton and partly in Decatur. The name seems, at the present time, to be somewhat of a misnomer, as the "woods" by which it was originally surrounded have all disappeared and in their stead are cultivated fields with the village of Decatur within a quarter of a mile of its eastern shore. Originally this was a handsome sheet of water, but its beauty has been somewhat marred by having been partially drained, thus lowering its surface and diminishing its area. However, there is some compensation for this in the increased area of arable land rendered tillable by the draining of the lowlands adjacent to the lake. Other lakes in the town that have been considered of sufficient importance to bear distinctive names are Pond Lily, Pine, Knickerbocker, Osborn, and Johnson.

The southeastern corner of Hamilton is crossed by the line of



the Michigan Central Railroad, but there is no station within its limits. Hamilton has no village, no postoffice, and neither store nor church building. Its nearest market town is Decatur, situated within about a mile of the eastern boundary of the town, although considerable trading is done in other places. The city of Dowagiac is about six miles south of the southwest corner of the township; the village of Lawrence, four miles north of its north line; the little town of Keeler, three miles west of the west line, and the village of Hartford, about six miles northwest. So that the people do not have to travel far in any direction to find a market place. The population of the township, as given by the census of 1910, was 952, Alma being the only township in the county with a less number of inhabitants.

#### TAXPAYERS AND TAXES OF 1839

The resident taxpayers of the township in 1839, when the first assessment was taken were as follows: George S. Bishop, Calvin Fields, Aaron Barney, Marcus Merriman, Samuel Bradt, Elisha Geer, John Comley, Daniel Evans, Samuel Gunton, W. H. Keeler, Truman Foster, G. W. Geer, F. Pitcher, A. W. Broughton, James Brooks, William L. Butterfield, William Lake, James Nesbitt, Ralph Mason, Jackson Pratt, Joseph Pratt, Colcott Pratt, Joseph McClintock, James M. Lombard, G. A. Bentley, Henry Coleman, Zebina Stearns, Sidney Stearns, Hale Wakefield, Caleb Bartlett, Silas F. Howell, Lewis Johnson, Robert Nesbitt, Philotus Haydon and Alexander Sloan.

The assessment of the above named residents was the sum of \$19,642, of which \$15,962 was on real estate and \$3,680 on personalty. Non-resident lands, which comprised by far the greater portion of the town, were assessed at the sum of \$54,456, making the total valuation of the township \$74,098. Practically all lands were assessed at four dollars per acre, which was a liberal valuation for those days. The total tax levy for the year was \$522.94.

The valuation of the township at the assessment taken in 1911 was \$621,600 and the tax levy was for the sum of \$9,613.36. The town ranks as eleventh in wealth among the townships of the county.

#### FIRST BUILDING AND FIRST PERMANENT SETTLER

It is said that the first building ever erected within the present boundaries of Hamilton was a hunter's cabin on section thirty-three, built by Benjamin Reynolds and Joel Clark, two Kalamazoo county Nimrods who were accustomed to visit the vicinity occasionally on hunting excursions. The story is related that Reyn-

olds intended to make a settlement in the township and that in 1834 he brought his wife with him to the cabin with the intention of remaining. Shortly afterward, while the lady was looking for their cow that had strayed into the forest, she became lost in the woods. Her cries for help were unheard and it was not until the following morning that she was discovered several miles from home in an adjoining township. Her experience was so unpleasant that she declared she would not stay; that she would not live where she could not take a walk out of sight of the house without getting lost. She was as good as her word, and, notwithstanding the entreaties of her husband, she shook the dust of Hamilton from her feet and, of course, that ended his plan to become a permanent resident of that locality. Not long afterward, they settled in the township of Porter where the forests were not quite so dense, and there spent the remainder of their lives.

The first entry of land in Hamilton was made by Robert Nesbitt, who located a tract on section four in the spring of 1835, and at once settled there and began his improvements. The history of Hamilton with no mention of Robert Nesbitt, would be like the play of Hamlet with Hamlet left out. Previous to coming to Hamilton with his brothers, John and James, he had been living in Kalamazoo. Mr. Nesbitt had theretofore been interested in the building of mills in the state, and one inducement for the selection of his new location was the fact that Brush creek ran through his land and afforded an eligible site for the construction of a fairly good water power. He lost no time in taking advantage of the situation and at once proceeded in the erection of a saw-mill. He had to haul all his lumber and other supplies from Prairie Ronde, but so energetically did he proceed with his undertaking that his mill was ready to begin operations early in the summer of 1836. For a number of years this mill was the only one for miles around, and when the Michigan Central Railroad was built through the county it did a rushing business and was kept running night and day to supply material for the railway construction. For many years thereafter the mill continued to do a profitable business.

In 1856 Mr. Nesbitt erected a flouring mill on the same site and continued to operate as long as he lived. To his other extensive business interests, he added that of a land agent and in that capacity bought and sold thousands of acres of land, being himself, at one time, the owner of upwards of 2,500 acres. Mr. Nesbitt died at his Hamilton home, on the 11th day of April, 1888, at the age of seventy-eight years. The people of the township are now enjoying the fruits of his pioneer labor. He was a man of great energy; an excellent business man, honorable and upright; a good all-

around man and citizen. His life was a fine illustration of the character of the sturdy pioneers who transformed Van Buren county from a wilderness into a garden, from an almost impenetrable forest into a land of beautiful farms and elegant homes.

#### ALSO SETTLED PRIOR TO 1844

In 1835, Zebina Stearns came to Hamilton, taking up his quarters in the Reynolds hunters' shanty. Mr. Stearns afterward entered land on section seventeen and remained a resident of the town until his death in 1846. He was joined by his son Sidney, who had previously been engaged in the business of driving stage in the eastern part of the state. He remained a resident of Hamilton until his decease which occurred on the 4th day of May, 1885, in the seventy-second year of his age.

James Nesbitt, a brother of Robert, removed from Keeler in 1835 and located lands on sections thirteen and fourteen. He lived there until 1849, when, one day, he was found dead at the bottom of his well. There were some suspicions of foul play, but investigation failed to throw any light on the manner of his death, the mystery of which was never solved.

In 1835 Lewis Johnson came to Hamilton from the eastern part of the state along with his father and Zebina Stearns. He settled on section eighteen and remained and continued to reside there until he died in 1872. The elder Johnson returned to the state of New York, which had been their former place of residence, after remaining in Hamilton for about three years.

Aaron Barney, from the state of New York, was also a settler in the township in 1835. He located on section thirty-eight. He lost his wife in 1838 and he, himself, died in 1858.

A man named Lyon, who also came to the township in 1835, remained but one year. He sold his possessions to Philotus Haydon, who became a man of prominence, not only in Hamilton but in the county. He was somewhat eccentric and many anecdotes are related of him, some of which may, perhaps, be genuine, but, as is apt to be the case, it is probable that most of them are imaginary. Mr. Haydon took quite an active part in the politics of his day and served at different times in the state legislature, both as a representative and as a senator. He died at his farm on section eighteen, in 1866. He was probably the most prominent and noted man that ever lived in the township. His son, Arthur W., is yet a resident of Hamilton and is well and favorably known throughout the county, and, like his father, is somewhat prominent in political circles.

Other settlers of the township, who came in 1836, were James M. Lombard, Henry C. McClure and his son, Henry; John Comley; George Geer and his brother, Elisha; S. T. Howell, Hale Wakefield, Caleb Bartlett, and Joseph McClintock. In 1837 other settlers were Henry Coleman, Samuel Bradt, Jackson and Colcott Pratt, George S. Bishop, Marcus Merriman, Calvin Fields and James Brooks.

Fields removed to Kansas and Merriman eventually took up his residence in Paw Paw, where he died on the 22d day of January, 1892, at the age of eighty-eight years and nine months.

James Brooks, with his wife and two children, settled on section thirty-three, where he resided on the same place until his death in 1876. It is related of him that he was once so completely lost in the forest that he could not find his way out and that he was rescued by a searching party after wandering four days in the woods. Leonard Tisdale and Solomon B. Hagar were also prominent among the early settlers of the township. The latter served as its supervisor for eight consecutive years.

George A. Bentley, Alexander Sloan, and Palmer Earl were among the settlers of 1838-9. Truman Foster came in 1840. He was both farmer and school teacher. He taught in the adjoining township of Lawrence and was the second teacher to be employed in that town.

Thomas Harris came from the state of New York in 1842, with a Rooseveltian family of fourteen children. He died in 1863.

George Bennett was also an early settler of the town. He removed to the village of Decatur where he died at an advanced age.

Stephen Osborn settled in the town in 1843, just north of Osborn Lake, together with his wife and ten children. The lake takes its name from the Osborn family. He died in 1853.

The first white child born in the township was Mason Wakefield, whose birthday was the fifth day of July, 1836. The second birth was that of Miss Mary, daughter of Robert Nesbitt, in September, 1837. She died in the morning of life, just before reaching the age of twenty years.

The first marriage of Hamilton residents was that of Robert Nesbitt and Maria, daughter of John Comley. The ceremony was performed in the township of Lawrence, on the first day of December, 1836, by John D. Freeman, a justice of the peace.

#### ILLUSTRATIVE OF THE PIONEERS AND THEIR TIMES

The first death was that of Mr. Knickerbocker, who with his family located on the bank of the lake that bears his name in 1835. He died as the result of exhaustion and exposure and the hard-

ships endured, within a few days after he had occupied his unfinished pioneer cabin. The circumstances connected with this death were peculiarly harrowing. Hearing of the matter, Robert Nesbitt and Zebina Stearns went to the premises and found a most distressful scene. The dead man lay in one corner of the floorless, roofless shanty, while the weeping widow and children, gathered around a smouldering fire in another corner of the hut, completed a picture of utter wretchedness. Stearns at once started for Paw Paw, some fourteen miles distant, and in due time returned with Peter Gremps of that village and Elder Junia Warner, who preached the funeral sermon. Mr. Gremps provided the coffin and in accordance with the request of the dying man, he was buried on the island in the lake which bears his name, and there his bones still rest. After her husband's decease, the widow returned to her friends in the east.

A story related by Sidney Stearns is illustrative of the indomitable energy and pluck that characterized those hardy settlers of early days. There came along one day, said Mr. Stearns, to his father's cabin, two foot travelers, Mr. and Mrs. Lewis Johnson; he carrying an axe on his shoulder and leading a cow, and she carrying a bundle, which, with another bundle borne by her husband, represented the entire worldly possessions of the worthy couple. It was but a limited outfit for the beginning of strenuous pioneer life, but, like many others under similar circumstances, they did not fear hardship or short allowances. Johnson knew that with his good axe, he could, if health was spared, hew his way to success and prosperity, and, with the help of his equally brave wife, he struggled for even the commonest necessities of life until at last grit and perseverance won success.

In 1837 Henry D. Coleman built a tavern in the township on the line of the Territorial road some four or five miles from the present village of Decatur. Travel by stage was very brisk along that highway prior to the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad, and as long as the stage route was continued Coleman did an extensive and profitable business. He had put all his means into this enterprise, but shortly afterward borrowed a few hundred dollars, with which he purchased a small stock of goods and opened up a mercantile business on a limited scale in one corner of his tavern. He then turned his attention to the matter of obtaining a postoffice for the town, which he succeeded in doing and was himself appointed postmaster. When the stage route was abandoned, the office was abolished and Coleman removed to a farm on section four, where he died in 1857. He was a man of some prominence and was elected as associate judge of the circuit court in 1842. After his removal, the tavern became known as Brown's

Tavern and acquired rather an unsavory and undesirable reputation. Charles N. Poor, a blacksmith in Keeler, removed his shop to Coleman's new location, where he remained and stuck to his bellows as long as the stages stuck to the road, after which he removed to California.

Aaron W. Broughton, who came to Hamilton in 1839, brought with him a considerable stock of merchandise, opened up quite a pretentious store near the residence of Philotus Haydon, and for a considerable time transacted a flourishing business. Mr. Broughton removed to Paw Paw, where he spent the remainder of his life. He became an influential citizen of the county, and in 1846 was elected to the office of judge of the county court.

#### SCHOOLS THEN AND NOW

There were no grist mills easy of access to the early settlers of Hamilton, and as "going to mill" was no pleasant task not infrequently the home made mill on the top of a hollowed out stump was brought into requisition for a temporary supply of corn meal, or "johnny-cake timber," as it was sometimes called.

About the year 1837 or 1838 Mrs. Millard, who lived with her daughter, Mrs. Bennett, taught a day school and a Sunday school at her mother's house. Not long afterward Robert Nesbitt procured the services of Miss Litchfield, who came from Pennsylvania to teach his children. The first public school was taught in the Little Red Schoolhouse near Coleman's tavern in 1837, and was patronized by some twenty pupils.

The condition of the public schools of the township at the present time is shown by the following official figures: Total number of pupils of school age, 266; volumes in school libraries, 1,061; number of schoolhouses, nine; estimated value of school property, \$7,600; district indebtedness, \$150; teachers employed, nine; aggregate number of months school taught, seventy-three; sum paid for teachers' salaries, \$3,065. To the township was apportioned the sum of \$2,032.50 from the primary school fund of the state for the year 1911.

While there are no church edifices in Hamilton, the people are not without religious privileges. There are two Methodist Episcopal societies holding regular meetings and there are three Sunday schools.

The secret societies are Hamilton Grange, Patrons of Husbandry, which has upwards of seventy members; the Modern Woodmen, and two societies of the Gleaners. The ladies have a club of their own, not secret.

The inhabitants of the township are practically all engaged in

the pursuit of agriculture and horticulture. The grape industry is becoming of some importance, there being several hundreds of acres of vineyard in the eastern part of the township, while celery is extensively cultivated on the low lands in the south-eastern portion.

#### THE HAMILTON TOWNSHIP FAIR

An unique feature in the history of the township, which is worthy of special notice, is the Hamilton Township Fair. The following sketch of the origin and growth of that institution was written by Arthur W. Haydon, at the request of the compiler of this work: "In the spring of 1876, a party of Hamilton farmers went to a sheep shearing festival at the home of B. G. Buel, on Little Prairie Ronde. At the next grange meeting the writer spoke of the good time they had and of the value of such meetings in general and suggested that the Hamiltonians hold an annual sheep shearing and organize a township fair. Captain Josiah Hendryx, Henry Smith and others spoke in favor of the plan, and from this beginning the first fair was held at the grange hall.

"It began as a township fair, but soon claimed jurisdiction throughout the world.

"As it finally developed, it differed essentially from the ordinary fair in that it was entirely free as to entries and admission, and its premiums consisted of honorary cards or ribbons. The necessary funds to cover expenses were secured by a moderate charge for booths, games, amusements, etc.

"It styles itself 'The Great Free Fair;' dear to the hearts of the children and also to the 'grown ups,' who like to take a day off, meet friends and have a good time.

"It has been addressed from year to year by noted men, governors, congressmen and candidates for high public position, who come gladly and without pay to meet the 'dear people' of Hamilton and vicinity.

"It is at the present time less of a fair and more of a reunion, and its continued popularity is evidenced by an attendance of from one thousand to five thousand people. The township has purchased forty acres of land adjoining the grange hall property for the present use, at least, of the fair. Ultimately this may become Hamilton's 'Picnic Park,' if the forest trees growing thereon can be protected from fires.

"Taking a retrospective glance over the history of Hamilton, the greatest benefits seem to have come from the advent and the influence of the grange, the fair, and later the Woodmen, the Gleaners and the Woman's club.

“Though without a village as a business center, we have the Grange Hall, suitable for church and funeral services; also used as a town hall, for caucuses, rallies and elections; for the fair, entertainments, socials, lectures, parties, theatricals, etc. These advantages, together with the great work done within the various societies, have resulted in concentrating and developing social ties and friendships, and building up an interest and pride in Hamilton among its citizens.”

Mr. Haydon speaks none too enthusiastically of the township of which he has been, ever since arriving at years of maturity, an influential and highly respected citizen.

A spring time or early summer drive along some of the fine highways of the town, between rows of magnificent shade trees, with elegant farm buildings on either side, fertile farms covered with bountiful crops, orchards in full bloom, filling the air with fragrance, thrifty vineyards clothed in a dress of emerald green, presents a scene greatly to be enjoyed. While Hamilton is not among the most populous of the townships of the county, it is one of the best and its thrifty, intelligent people keep fully abreast of the developments of these twentieth century days.



## CHAPTER XXVIII

### TOWNSHIP OF HARTFORD

FIRST THINGS AND EVENTS—ALLEN'S PAPER TOWN—FIRST ACTUAL SETTLERS—TERRITORIAL AND OFFICIAL—"WHEN THE WORLD GOES WRONG WITH ME"—THE VILLAGE OF HARTFORD—EDUCATIONAL AND PROFESSIONAL—CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES—BUSINESS AND INDUSTRIES.

Nearly all have passed away,  
Our pioneers we knew so well,  
Before whose steady, sturdy strokes  
The mighty forests, prostrate fell.  
The winter blast that sweeps the sky,  
No more disturbs their calm repose  
Than Summer evening's latest sigh,  
That o'er them gently blows.

As the present generation is enjoying their heritage in this fruitful land bequeathed to them by pioneers of stalwart worth, they should pause and consider whence came the fine development of their inheritance, and be not like the animals that roamed the primeval forests, partaking of the food they found in such abundance, without ever looking up to see whence it came.

Michigan first became known to the white man some two hundred and fifty years ago. It was then occupied by the Miami Indians, who afterward migrated to the eastward. Their camp fires had scarcely ceased to burn before the ancestors of the present Pottawattamies swept south around Lake Michigan from Ouisconsin (Wisconsin) taking possession of this beautiful land.

Michigan is an Indian word signifying "monstrous lake." The Ottawas say it was pronounced by them "Mi-chi-gum."

#### NAMED AND ORGANIZED

The township of Hartford was organized in 1840, by act of the legislature. Ferdino Olds, Burrill A. Olney, Thomas Conklin and some others settled in the southern part of the township as early as 1837. Ferdino Olds, being the first settler, was permitted to name the town which he did, calling it Hartland, after his native

town in the state of New York, but learning of another town of the same name in the state, at the suggestion of Mr. Olney, the name was changed to Hartford.

After the first election, nearly every man in the township was filling one or more offices. The officers chosen at that first town meeting as follows: Supervisor, Joseph Ruggles; township clerk, Burrell A. Olney; township treasurer, Joseph Ruggles; assessors, Thomas Conklin, Richard B. Everitt and Alexander Newton; highway commissioners, Richard B. Everitt, Cornelius Williams, Alvah De Long and Alexander Newton; constables, Alexander Newton, Richard B. Everitt, Smith Johnson and Burrell A. Olney.

#### FIRST THINGS AND EVENTS

The first schoolhouse, built of logs, was erected in the southeast part of the township. There were five pupils, and the school was taught by Olive Poole who received the munificent salary of \$1.25 per week.

The first Protestant sermon preached in the township was by Rev. John Hammond, a Baptist traveling missionary, father of the late Henry Hammond and Mrs. Brodhead.

The first wedding was that of Mehitable Cone to Thomas Kemp. The next day Lucy Allen and James Griffin, and Abigail Mellen and Edward Eber were married at the home of Ira Allen. This double wedding was conducted by two magistrates, William Thomas and Burrell A. Olney, each marrying one couple and dividing the honors and the fees. No cards were issued, no wedding bells were rung and few presents were given. At that time there was but a trail between Hartford and Watervliet, in Berrien county, along which the bridal party passed in single file, in order to be present at a dance and supper gotten up by the two bridegrooms at the latter place.

In 1852 Wilkes and Fowler built a house on what is now the southwest corner of Main and Center streets in the village of Hartford. Wilkes raised a small crop of wheat, took it to Niles and traded it for whiskey and soon afterward the place was nicknamed "Bloody Corners." Hartford postoffice and a semi-weekly mail between Paw Paw and St. Joseph was established in 1855. James Griffin was the first postmaster.

Mr. Engle says: "I came to Hartford in the fall of 1855 and built a log cabin ten by twelve feet, one mile east of Stoughton's Corners, where I lumbered during the winter; returned the following year accompanied by my sister, Mrs. P. A. Travis. I was married in 1857 and again returned with my wife and my brother, the late Dr. W. A. Engle, and built in what is now the village of

Hartford. Weare Hilliard and Roswell Hart, who had settled here two years before, were our nearest neighbors—Roswell and I owned one partnership dog. I well remember how all the cattle of the surrounding country used to congregate at night on the main corner to rid themselves of the flies and how the jargon of fifty cow bells—more or less—disturbed our slumbers, until, in our wrath, we would arise and let loose the dog which never failed to scatter them like autumn leaves before the wind.”

The lands embraced in the present township of Hartford were first opened for settlement in 1829. In 1834, a noted hunter and trapper, the first white man ever known to come to Hartford, built a log shanty one mile east of the present village of Hartford and covered it with bark. Here he spent his winters hunting and trapping, returning to Niles in the county of Berrien, which place he made his summer headquarters. His cabin was called the “Half-way House,” being about equidistant from Dowagiac creek and Black river. His habitual dress was trousers of deer-skin, a blouse and a slouch hat. He continued to occupy his shanty until 1844. This cabin remained for a good many years and was designated as the “Hunter House.”

#### ALLEN'S PAPER TOWN

In 1835 John Allen opened business in Brush Creek (Lawrence) on the credit system, and made a failure. Being of a speculative turn, he conceived the idea of platting a village and disposing of the lots to strangers in the east.

“Could we with ink the ocean fill,  
Were Earth of parchment made,  
And every single stick a quill,  
Each man a scribe by trade,  
To write the tricks of scheming men  
Would dip the ocean dry.”

At that time Waterford (Watervliet) was in its infancy. Hog Creek was about half way between Brush Creek and Waterford, and so our pioneer speculator located his imaginary village on the stream referred to, a few rods north of where it emptied its waters into the Paw Paw river, naming it Middletown, and proceeded with Yankee shrewdness to make sale of lots to people in his former Green Mountain home. At that time the late Luther Sutton, then but a lad, was one of the parties to a practical joke in connection with Allen's paper town. Some half dozen families who had gathered at Brush Creek—its original name was Mason, but it was then better known as Brush Creek—and, supposing Middletown to be quite a village, planned to make it a visit. The com-

pany consisted of some half dozen ragged men and as many bare-foot boys. One of the company, John Miller, a Mohawk Dutchman, being rather more destitute of clothing than the others, was ashamed to go among strangers so scantily arrayed, and so Humphrey Barnum—the Barnums were all noted for being great jokers—lent the Dutchman his coat. Bent on reaching the town, the party started westward, past Mud and Sutton's lakes, through the brush and over logs, finally reaching a small stream where they halted to partake of their lunch. Mr. Barnum then informed them that he would take them to the Public Square and introduce them to the leading citizens of the place, and piloting them up the bluff bank of the creek, he said "Here they are boys, the residents of the place are all cannibals (mosquitoes). Flee for your lives." The joke was appreciated by the company and was the source of much merriment for a long time afterward.

The site of this paper village was covered by a dense forest for years thereafter. It was finally cleared off, with the expectation of converting it into a skunk farm, but skunk skins declined in value and so the place escaped being called Skunkville. Some ten or twelve years ago it was purchased by a Chicago party and converted into a duck and goose farm, but the venture did not prove to be a paying investment and it was abandoned.

It is said that what caused the name of the stream to be changed from "Middletown Creek" to "Hog Creek" was the following circumstance: A gentleman having heard that the waters of the creek were strongly impregnated with medicinal properties decided to make an investigation and if he found the report to be true, his intention was to establish a sanitarium. He drank freely from the stream and was very much encouraged. He found that the water had a brackish taste, very like the waters he had drunk at different watering places, but on looking around, he discovered a decaying hog in the stream, just above his place. He left suddenly, feeling somewhat "sea sick" and sought the aid of a doctor, and so Hartford lost a prospective sanitarium.

For several years, the site has been owned by Dr. Parker, who has planted several acres with different varieties of roses down to the very water's edge, and so the name of the locality has been redeemed and it is now known as "Roseville."

The prospect is that during the coming season, the springs at the head of this creek will be piped to the village, which, if done, will supply the community with abundance of as pure spring water as can be found anywhere in the state.

## FIRST ACTUAL SETTLERS

The first actual settlers within the present limits of the township of Hartford were Ferdino Olds and family who located on section twenty-nine. Mr. Olds had a family of ten children, most of them born after he came to Hartford. He departed this life in 1856. A little later two of his brothers settled in the township, Hezekiah and Orson. The Olds family have been prominent in the development of both the township and the village of Hartford.

Henry Hammond was the next settler. He located on section thirty-four and erected a cabin for temporary use in 1837. Both he and his wife bent their energies to the construction of a better and more commodious dwelling, and soon had a comfortable log house which they occupied as soon as completed. Here, on the 3d day of January, 1838, a daughter was born to them, the first white child born in the township. This was Catharine Hammond, afterward the wife of Hiram E. Stratton. (We used to call her "Kate," when she was a schoolmate of the compiler.)

The first white male child born in the township was Luke Conklin, son of Thomas Conklin, born in 1838. Thomas Conklin came to Kalamazoo from New York in 1834, but did not remain. In the fall of 1836, in company with his brother James, he came back to Kalamazoo—then Bronson—and while there, in behalf of himself, his brother, Mr. Sellick, James Spinnings and Burrill A. Olney, he entered and paid for about a thousand acres of government land. In the winter of 1837 the two brothers and Sellick built log cabins on sections five and six in the township of Keeler. Olney and Spinnings came the next spring, arriving in Hartford on the 14th day of March, 1837. Spinnings lived with Olney. He died on the 2d day of May, 1841, being the first death in the township.

Mr. Olney was a man of great energy and ambition, and was possessed of a high degree of business ability. After clearing up his farm and cultivating it for twenty-five years or more he entered into a large lumbering business at Watervliet, in the adjoining county of Berrien, the firm with which he was connected being known as Swain, Olney & Company. The business was very successful and profitable. At the time of his death, Mr. Olney was regarded as one of the wealthiest men in the county. His son, Horace M. Olney, is the president of the First National Bank of Paw Paw and also of the Olney National Bank at Hartford, the only two national banks in the county. Thomas Conklin remained a resident of Hartford until his death which occurred January 28, 1888.

Rufus Sayres located lands on section twenty-four at an early

day, but did not become a resident. He sold his place to Horace Dowd in 1843. Mr. Dowd became a permanent resident and was active in the organization of the Baptist church in the village of Hartford. He died on the fourth day of July, 1870.

Smith Johnson was also a settler in 1843. He sold out to William Thomas, who became a man of some prominence in the community. He served a term in the state legislature in 1875 and filled numerous local official positions.

Alvah DeLong was a settler of the town in 1839. He removed to California where he died. Two of his brothers, Asher and Allen, became residents of the township. Their father, a Revolutionary soldier, lived with his sons. He died at the extreme age of one hundred and two years.

In the fall of 1837 William Everitt and his son, Richard B., settled on section twenty-six and about the same time Alexander Newton settled on section thirteen. In 1839 Joseph Ruggles and family came from Huron county, Ohio, and located on section thirty-one.

Ira Allen, who was a soldier in the War of 1812, located in Hartford in 1839, having previously been a resident of Lawrence. He died about 1875. Charles P. Sheldon was also a prominent early citizen of the township and was the first settler on the north side of the Paw Paw river. He was several times elected as supervisor and was chosen as representative in the legislature in 1853.

Fabius Miles, another somewhat noted man, located three hundred acres on section twelve in 1844. He also served as a member of the state house of representatives for the session of 1859-60.

Adoniram J. Dyer came to Hartford about 1850 and engaged in teaching. In 1853, with a small company, he crossed the plains to California, with ox teams. They were six months in reaching the Pacific coast, but since that time, Mr. Dyer says, he has several times passed over nearly the same route in three or four days. He was instrumental in building the first store in the village of Hartford, which was afterward remodeled and fitted up for a hotel and was widely known as the Rassette House. The postoffice block now occupies the same site. Returning from California in 1855, Mr. Dyer became the manager of Cross & Andrews saw-mill, sometimes shipping as much as 150,000 feet of lumber in cribs, floated down the Paw Paw river to St. Joseph, thence across the lake to Chicago. Millions of feet of lumber and logs have been thus floated down that stream. Mr. Dyer and his late brother, Andrew J., vouch for the following anecdote: On a trip to his father's place, southeast of the town, he saw a large flock of wild turkeys settle down behind a fallen tree. Young A. J. crept cautiously up to the tree, and, seeing a number of turkeys' feet on the opposite

side, he carefully introduced his hand under the log, grasped the patriarch of the flock by the legs and held him until his brother dug a hole under the log large enough to draw the old gobbler through. When dressed, his captive bird weighed twenty-one pounds and the Dyer family and their neighbors, who were invited to partake, as was the custom in those days, enjoyed a great feast. After that, Adoniram was considered to be the family Nimrod. A few years later he caught a live deer that was being held at bay by a dog. Dyer never would admit that he failed to get any venison on that occasion, but those who were acquainted with the ability of a wild deer as a fighter, declare that he came home nearly naked and bleeding from the numerous wounds inflicted by his quarry.

#### A SOLDIER OF THE REVOLUTION

Perhaps the only Revolutionary soldier who ever lived in Van Buren county was Francis DeLong, who was born in 1760 and died in 1862, at the extreme old age of one hundred and two years and eight months. He and his wife came to the township of Hartford in 1854 and lived with their children.

Mr. DeLong enlisted in the American army on the 13th day of September, 1777. He was taken prisoner by the English forces at Charleston, South Carolina, and was held as a prisoner for five months: he was then taken to the island of Jamaica, where he was held for six years, when he was transferred to Halifax and detained for a year: then sent to Montreal, and three months afterward he and his comrades in captivity were sent to the West Indies to fight the natives, but not being of the requisite stature of an English soldier, he was discharged, a stranger in a strange land, without money and without friends. He finally succeeded in working his way to Northern New York, where he was married and raised a family of eight children.

When the old veteran was told that Fort Sumter had been bombarded and captured by the rebel forces, he wept, but when told that Lincoln had called for troops to put down the rebellion, he roused up like one from sleep and said: "Eighty-one years ago I volunteered and fought to save Charleston from being captured by the English army, and I am now ready to volunteer again and do all I can to save my country for whose liberty I fought and dragged out so many of the years of my youth in British prisons."

The old veteran was laid to rest in the Hartford cemetery, in military style, in the presence of friends, relatives and a few soldiers, who had just been sworn into the United States service by C. H. Engle. The scene was an impressive one. "We are consigning to his grave," says Mr. Engle, "in the presence of the

young soldiers, one of the last of the Revolutionary heroes who fought for the liberty that was secured to us by such loyal souls as Francis DeLong."

"Soldier, Rest thee from a hundred years of toil;  
Rest thee: Nobly thou didst fight for Freedom's soil.  
We'll go forth and battle for our Country's cause,  
Until all traitors shall obey our union's laws."

Three grandsons of the old hero were in the Civil war—Silas, Henry and Nathan DeLong. The first two were wounded and Silas was a prisoner in Libby prison for more than a year. Freeman Stowe, a great-grandson, was also a soldier and was also wounded during his service. Numerous descendants of the old veteran, grandchildren and great-grandchildren, are residents of the townships of Hartford and Bangor.

Nathan DeLong was a great hunter, known as the "Nimrod" of the family. The following anecdote is related in his own words: "I had been out hunting one day, and as I was returning home, just south of the Jackson Hotel (now the site of the Postoffice block), a big buck jumped up within a few feet of me. I fired and he fell as if dead, but when I came to where he lay, I saw that the ball had broken off one of his horns close to his head. I commenced to reload, but found there was not a ball in my pouch. I grabbed a rope that I always took with me while hunting, tied it about his neck and hitched him to a staddle close by. I had no sooner done this than he recovered from the shock and sprang to his feet, and of all the pitchings, divings, and gyrations that that buck went through was a 'sin to snakes;' it beat any circus performance I ever did see. I ran half a mile to my home in the pinery, reloaded my gun and returned as quickly as I could. My prisoner was as quiet as a lamb, but when he saw me the circus again began in earnest. I fired. The circus was ended. When dressed, that buck weighed two hundred pounds."

#### TERRITORIAL AND OFFICIAL

When the county of Van Buren was organized in 1837 and divided into seven townships, what is now the township of Hartford was a part of Lawrence and remained so until 1839, when it was set off from that township and made a part of Keeler. The next year, 1840, the legislature enacted that township three south, of range sixteen west, should be set off and organized into a township by the name of Hartford and that the first official meeting should be held at the house of Smith Johnson.



At the following presidential election, held November 2 and 3, 1840, eighteen votes were polled in the township, twelve Democratic and six Whig. The citizens who exercised their right of franchise on that occasion were Alexander Newton, Cornelius Williams, Peter Williamson, Henry Hammond, Smith Johnson, Burrill A. Olney, Richard B. Everitt, and Joseph Ruggles, who deposited their ballots on the first day of the election, and Ira Allen, Fernando C. Ruggles, Caleb Johnson, Hezekiah Olds, Martin Allen, Paul Wilcox, Clark A. Lapham, Thomas Conklin, James Spinning and Ferdino Olds, on the second day.

At the presidential election of 1908 the vote of the township had increased to 583, as follows: Taft, Republican, 316; Bryan, Democrat, 242; Chafin, Prohibitionist, sixteen; Debs, Socialist, four; Hisgen, Independent, five.

Following is a list of the names of those who have filled the office of supervisor of the township: Joseph Ruggles, Burrill A. Olney, Charles P. Sheldon, Sylvester G. Easton, William Thomas, Roswell Hart, Lyman Bridges, Howland C. Taylor, Thomas J. Johns, Jesse Thomas, Stephen Doyle, Henry Spaulding, Archibald P. McWilliams, Howard Lobdell, John S. Thorn, Walter O. Gage, John Ryan, John McAlpine, Jasper H. Thompson and Charles E. Anderson (present incumbent).

Of the foregoing named gentlemen the following served more than two years: Messrs. Olney and McWilliams, three years each; Lobdell, four years; McAlpine died while serving his fifth year, and was succeeded by Thompson to fill vacancy; Hart served eight years.

The first mail route through the township was established in 1854, between St. Joseph and Paw Paw. The mail was carried on horseback but no mail was delivered in Hartford until the next year, when a postoffice was established at Hartford Center, as it was then called, now the village of Hartford. The first school was taught in the spring of 1837 by Mrs. Martha Conklin, wife of Thomas Conklin, in their own house. The first school house, built of logs, was erected in the southeastern part of the township, and the first school therein was taught by Miss Olive Poole, who received \$1.25 per week for her services.

The official educational records for 1911 are, in part, as follows: Number of pupils of school age, 681; number of volumes in district libraries, 1,995; ten schoolhouses; estimated value of school property, \$24,200; district indebtedness, \$2,601.72; aggregate number months of school, 167; number teachers employed, twenty; sum paid for teachers' salaries, \$8,153.50. Amount of moneys awarded to the township from the primary school fund of the state, \$5,160.

The assessed valuation of the township in 1840, the year of its organization, amounted to \$31,678.75, as follows: Resident realty, \$2,262.50; personal estate, \$521.00; non-resident realty, \$28,895.25. The sum total of taxes levied for that year was \$401.52. The names of the resident taxpayers appearing on the roll were Alexander Newton, C. Williams, Hezekiah Olds, Ferdino Olds, Alvah DeLong, Smith Johnson, Caleb Johnson, Henry Minor, Ira Allen, Joseph Ruggles, Fernando Ruggles, Burrill A. Olney, Thomas Conklin, Henry Hammond, Richard B. Everitt and Peter Williamson.

The valuation of the township, including the village, for the year 1911, was \$1,197,800, and the total of taxes levied was the sum of \$19,853.97.

The population of the township, according to the census of 1910, was 2,597, only one other township in the county—Paw Paw—having a greater number, not including the city of South Haven. It also ranks second in point of wealth, Paw Paw being first.

“WHEN THE WORLD GOES WRONG WITH ME”

The following little poem written by Mrs. Mary L. Hall, one of our devoted pioneer mothers, entitled “When the World Goes Wrong with Me,” voices the sentiment that actuated the heroic, self-sacrificing women who so nobly struggled in the primitive wilderness to assist their husbands, brothers and fathers in securing a livelihood and educating their children so that they might become upright, God-fearing men and women, an honor to their parents, to the community and to themselves.

Wild birds swiftly find their nests,  
 When the storm beats hard abreast,  
 Honey bees spin home in haste,  
 When black the clouds threaten waste;  
 Oh! then I gladly fly to Thee,  
 When the world goes wrong with me.

Tracked by hounds, the helpless fawn,  
 Sleeping in the early dawn,  
 Wakes to hear the cruel bay  
 Of her foes not far away.  
 Little fawn, I'm scared like thee,  
 When the world goes wrong with me.

Lord, perhaps there's in thine eyes,  
 Nothing living to despise;  
 Love, forgiving, fond and true,  
 Always, always dwells with you:  
 Why should I not flee to Thee,  
 When the world goes wrong with me?

## THE VILLAGE OF HARTFORD

The village of Hartford, the only village in the township, is located on sections fifteen and sixteen, so near to the center of the township that it was formerly called "Hartford Center." It was platted on the 3d day of March, 1859, by Truman Stratton, W. W. Shepard, Weare Hilliard, James Wolcott, Roswell Hart, J. C. Crandall and James Smith. Since the original plat was made, there have been sixteen additions to the town. It was incorporated by a special act of the legislature in 1877 (Local Acts of 1877, p. 99). It covers about one square mile of territory and has between five and six miles of streets, on either side of which are the best of cement walks, shaded by beautiful maples.

The population in 1910 was 1,268, making it third in number among the villages of the county, being exceeded only by Decatur and Paw Paw.

The growth of the village was quite moderate until the building of the Pere Marquette railway in 1870, since which time there has been a constant, steady increase of both population and of business. The construction of the narrow gauge road from Lawton to South Haven, intersecting the Pere Marquette at Hartford, which road has since been converted into a standard gauge, and is now known as the "Fruit Belt" line, gives the town excellent transportation facilities; none better in the entire county, except the city of South Haven, which, in addition to two railroads, has direct steamboat connection with the cities on the other side of Lake Michigan.

There are sixteen daily passenger trains passing through and stopping at the village and a greater number of passengers it is claimed, get on and off the trains there than at any other station on the Pere Marquette railway between New Buffalo and Grand Rapids. There are also twelve daily freight trains on the Pere Marquette and four on the Fruit Belt line and more than four thousand carloads of produce and merchandise are handled yearly. There are upwards of three miles of side tracks and yet they are often crowded for lack of sufficient room.

The first store in the village was built by Willard Stratton, who did a small mercantile business. He was succeeded by Henry Baird, who found the business to be neither very extensive nor profitable. C. H. Engle says that Baird told him that a mouse that he had tried in vain to catch had eaten up all his profits, and, adds Mr. Engle, "I believed it."

In 1858 Cyrus Boynton opened a store in the Rassette House. He brought on a large number of sacks of coffee and some other goods. After he had been doing business for a while he remarked

that where he had kept store "out west" everybody wanted coffee and not much of anything else, but in Hartford they seemed to want everything else, but not much coffee.

The following incidents related by Mr. Engle are interesting and will not be out of place here: "Along in the sixties, during the time when we had state prohibition, Harvey Tamblin ran a grocery store and saloon near the present site of Bennett's hardware store. One evening an old soak known as Plutarch called at his place and wanted his quart bottle filled with whiskey. Tamblin refused, saying he had twice been fined by 'Squire Engle for selling liquor in violation of law and that if he were to be again convicted, he would be sent to jail sure.' Finally he told him that if he would not take the bottle out of his pocket until he was five miles from town, he would fill it for him.

" 'Oh, Mr. Tamblin, you are a good man, I will not touch it in ten miles of Hartford,' said old Plutarch. Tamblin then filled the bottle with kerosene and blackberry juice. The old fellow put it into his pocket saying, 'and sure Mr. Tamblin, you are a good man and I'll not betray you,' and started east in the direction of the village of Lawrence.

"Tamblin, anxious to witness the result, followed him. Plutarch went but a short distance when he sat himself down in a fence corner. Tamblin unnoticed crawled into an adjacent corner. Plutarch took out the bottle, saying 'Ah, my good friend, it is you and I for it now,' and began to guzzle down the mixture; but as he got a fair taste of the dose he began to gag and spit; then holding up the bottle in the light of the full moon, in wonder and surprise he said, 'Will the Gott of the universe tell me what that is?'

"In 1861, after our first soldiers had gone to the front, several boys from thirteen to fifteen years of age used to parade the the streets with fife and drum, as the soldiers had done before them. During the last years of the war most of these boys enlisted. I swore them into the service and I do not know one of them that lived to return home. I can never recall this sad fact without saying in my heart, 'Oh, the cruelty of war.' "

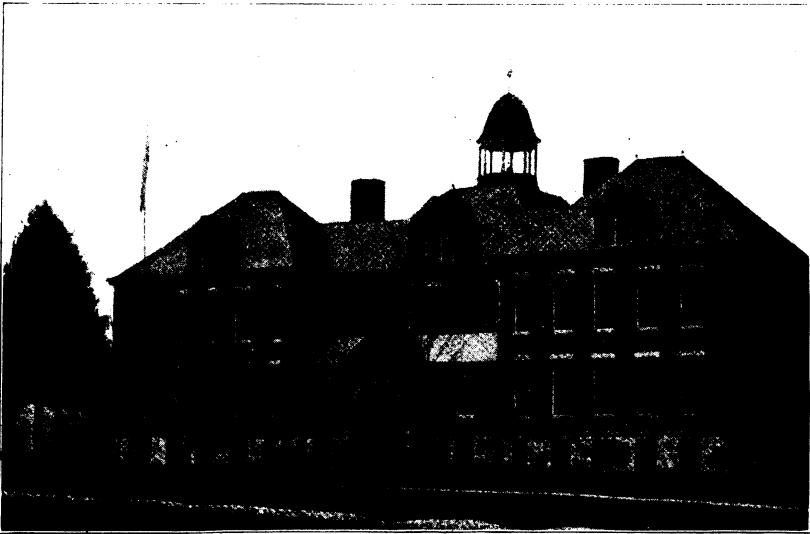
"During the war," continued Mr. Engle, "I was called on to marry a couple some distance north of the village. The groom arrived on the scene very late in the evening, and then astonished and disappointed the bridal party by refusing to marry the girl. I asked him what he meant by such action. He started for the door and beckoned me to follow. When we were on the outside he said he was engaged to the girl before the breaking out of the war, but so many had enlisted that men were getting scarce and, said he, 'I am now sure I can do better.' I was dumfounded and

told him that there was no punishment known to the law that was adequate to his case. I learned afterward that he was drafted and hustled off to the front, but it was near the close of the war, and he soon returned home and had the cheek to again ask that girl's hand in marriage; but the plucky maiden replied, 'No, sir, the volunteer boys are now home and I can do better.' "

#### EDUCATIONAL AND PROFESSIONAL

The first school in what is now the village district was taught by Miss Antoinette Stoughton, in the dwelling house of Harvey Tamblin. The first schoolhouse in the district was built the next year, by William Shepard.

The present schoolhouse was erected in 1903, at a cost of \$16,000, besides fixtures which are all modern and up-to-date. It con-



HIGH SCHOOL, HARTFORD

tains ten commodious rooms, one of which is occupied by the Normal class. The building is heated by two furnaces of modern type and is centrally located in a grove of three acres. The school ranks among the best of the graded schools of the county. Its graduates are admitted to the Michigan University on presentation of diploma and without additional examination. Under the management of Professor George S. Foster, who has been its efficient superintendent for the past six years, the school has been exceedingly prosperous. The official figures for the school year of 1910-11 reveal the following items: Number of pupils in district between the ages of five and twenty, 341; non-resident pupils attending school, sixty-eight; average daily attendance, 276;

volumes in school library, 835; value of school property, \$15,000; district indebtedness, \$2,500; teachers employed, ten; aggregate number of months of school, nine; salaries paid teachers, \$5,032.50.

Dr. Milton F. Palmer settled in Hartford and commenced the practice of medicine in 1857. He was the second postmaster in the place and a great sportsman. He killed several deer in the vicinity, and ducks, wild turkeys and squirrels without number. His gun was named the "Rodlong." He planted an apple orchard in the center of the village, and said at the time that the fruit it would produce would be much better for the children than his medicine, all of which was verified in time. At least, it cost them less than his pills, for he was never known to drive a child out of his orchard.

Dr. W. A. Engle settled in the place soon after Dr. Palmer and the two practiced their profession there for more than forty years. Dr. Engle was postmaster for several years. He was somewhat of a poetical turn of mind, published two very creditable volumes of poems and had a third volume nearly ready for the press at the time of his death, which occurred at Hartford, on the 20th day of November, 1907, in his eighty-second year.

The first lawyer to settle in the village was Alonzo H. Chandler, who is yet practicing his profession in the place. Not long afterward Cenius H. Engle was admitted to the bar and for several years they were the only practitioners in the town.

The first saw-mill in the township of Hartford was erected in 1855, on the Paw Paw river, one mile north of the village, by Calvin Cross and John Andrews. In 1870 it was purchased by Will-



ANDERSON'S MILL, HARTFORD

iam Anderson, who converted a part the structure into a grist-mill, and for a number of years ran the two in connection. Since the death of their father, which occurred in the spring of 1900, the property has been managed by two of his sons, Julian H. and Edgar A. Anderson. A few years ago, the brothers greatly improved the water power and started an electric plant which supplies the village with both street and inside lights. They are entitled to much credit for their venture, which has been a success, as at the time of the construction of the plant neither of them had had any experience, or knowledge, practical or theoretical, of the business. At the present time, Marion O., son of Julian H. Anderson, has immediate charge of the working of the plant. He is a graduate of one of the best electrical schools in the country and thoroughly qualified for the work.

The first steam grist-mill in the village was built in 1878 by E. J. Walker and is still in operation in connection with a hoop and heading mill.

The first livery in the place was established by Jacob Craiger, who ran a daily line of stages between St. Joseph and Paw Paw until the completion of the Pere Marquette Railway, after which he continued the line between Hartford and Paw Paw until the opening of the "narrow gauge" in 1883. Craiger was a very energetic man; no storm prevented him from being on time if possible. "No lion was ever in his way." His old livery barn was torn down a few years ago and one of the finest residences in the town erected on its site, owned and occupied by George Ocobock and his wife, Craiger's youngest daughter.

Hartford has one of the most beautiful parks in the state, certainly the finest in the county. It contains about three acres of ground and is situated midway between the main part of the village and the railroad depot. The park is a great resort for passengers in the summer season while waiting for trains. They are often heard to say "We are glad we did not make connections, for this is certainly one of the most charming places in the state of Michigan;" and they are right about it. It is not only a park, but it is a regular botanical garden as well; a perfect beauty spot, adorned as it is with an almost endless profusion of flowers of all varieties and colors. The park was presented to the village by Horace M. Olney, one of its foremost citizens, and is called "Ely Park," in memory of his mother, whose maiden name was Ely.

Hartford has also a neat Opera House.

The town has an excellent fire department, which was installed in 1899. The water tower is of sufficient height so that a stream can easily be thrown to the top of the highest buildings in the town.

There is a first class weekly paper, the *Hartford Day Spring*,

published in the village. A more extended notice of this sheet will be found in the chapter of this work devoted to the press of the county.

There are two banks in the village, the Olney National and Merriam's banks, the latter a private institution.

The postoffice is located in what is known as the Postoffice block, on the southeast corner of Main and Center streets. The building was erected in 1906 by Horace M. Olney. It is a fine two story structure sixty feet square, of marbled Portland cement. The ground floor is occupied by the Olney National Bank, the postoffice and the office of the *Hartford Day Spring*. The second floor is used for office purposes. The building is modern in every respect, steam heated and elegantly furnished. The National Bank quarters seem to have been fitted up regardless of expense and the



ELY PARK, HARTFORD

postoffice is one of the very best in the county. Thirteen mails per day are handled—during Christmas week of 1911, 279 pouches and sacks of mail matter were disposed of. Four rural mail carriers are employed throughout the country adjacent to the town and they travel one hundred and thirteen miles each day, Sundays excepted. V. W. Olds, postmaster, and Estella M. Olds, his assistant, are about closing their eighth year in the office. During their administration the receipts of the office have increased forty-five per cent.

#### CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES

When the good people of Hartford desire to attend public worship, they have the choice of five church organizations: The



Methodist Episcopal, the Christian, the Congregational, the Baptist and the Latter Day Saints.

A Methodist society was formed as early as 1859 and used the old schoolhouse as a meeting place. Among the first members were Charles Doty, the first class leader; Sarah Doty, John and Maggie Van Ostrom and Fanny Goodenough. Some of the early clergyman who attended the charge were Revs. J. Hoyt, C. C. Kellogg, H. H. Joy, T. T. George, G. A. Buell, J. W. Miller, F. I. Beard, J. W. Webster and J. P. Force. The church, however, was not recognized as a separate charge until 1873, when Rev. E. A. Tanner became its pastor. For a number of years afterward the churches at Hartford and Lawrence were united as one charge under the ministration of the same preacher. Since 1874 the following pastors have served the church: Revs. S. C. Woodard, N. M. Steele, F. I. Bell, V. G. Boynton, L. W. Earl, L. S. Matthews, H. H. Parker, W. W. Lamport, W. A. Prouty, J. R. Oden, A. E. Hawley, H. L. Potter, G. F. Craig, G. D. Draper, H. A. Lyon, Geo. Killian, R. E. Quant and F. L. Niles (present pastor). The church now has 200 members and the Sunday school has an enrolment of 190. The first superintendent of the Sunday school was C. H. Engle, who acted in that capacity for thirty-five years.

The First Baptist church was organized in the old district schoolhouse, on the 17th day of November, 1858, by Rev. Harvey Munger, with seventeen members. The present membership is 119. Since the pastorship of Elder Munger the church has been served by the following named ministers: Rev. Albert Gore, whose ministrations were terminated by his enlistment in the Civil war; Revs. W. M. Simons, W. Gates, P. S. Dean, J. F. Ross, J. G. Portman, S. Hendricks, Samuel Jackson, L. W. Olney, Charles Bailey, — Walker, — Armstrong, — Chappell, J. Howard, — Dean, Charles Rock, E. E. Branch, C. B. Kendall, C. A. Salyer, — McConnell, F. A. Carlisle, J. B. Reynolds, — Preston, and the present pastor, D. C. Henshaw. There is a flourishing Sunday school in connection with the church with a membership of about 100. J. D. Stewart is the superintendent. The first Sunday school was organized soon after the church with forty scholars and Jefferson Dowd as its superintendent. The present officers of the church are as follows: Deacons, Henry Brown, Kendrick Smith and Arthur Dowd; deaconesses, Mrs. Freeman Stowe, Mrs. L. Prichard and Mrs. George Webster; trustees, Ed. Ewald, Henry Brown, and James Clark. During the pastorate of Rev. J. F. Ross, in the early seventies, the present house of worship was purchased of the Universalist society, which, for a time, had been in quite a flourishing condition, but was finally abandoned, disposed of its church property and went out of existence.

The Congregational church was organized in 1885 with twelve members, among whom were Mr. and Mrs. A. W. Spaulding, Mr. and Mrs. Van Vrankin, A. J. Dyer, Mrs. Smith and others. The following year the society built a fine house of worship on South Maple street. The church now has forty-five members.

The Christian, or Disciple church, as it is sometimes called, was organized in Reynolds' hall, now the town hall, in the spring of 1886, after a series of meetings held by Elder Levi Dewey of Dowagiac, who was its first pastor and who served the church for about four years. A house of worship was erected in 1887, on Shepard street. The church started with a charter membership of about fifty, mostly men and women in middle life. The following pastors have served it during the twenty-five years of its history: Levi Dewey, J. H. Hammond, J. H. Reese, Nathan Fellows, Garry L. Cook, Willard McCarthy, F. F. Schultz, Frank A. Taylor and James A. Brown, the present pastor, who has been its minister for the past five years. The church has a flourishing Sunday school, is free from debt and the future outlook is very promising.

The local congregation of the reorganized Church of Latter Day Saints is known as the Hartford branch. It was organized on the 6th day of September, 1885, with sixteen members, Henry Manea as president (pastor), and George Conolly as secretary. The present membership is forty-four. Francis Earl is president and secretary. The church building is located at the corner of Mary and Barnard streets.

The town is also well represented by the ladies and gentlemen of mystic grips, signs and pass-words. Charter Oak Lodge, No. 231, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted on the 7th day of May, 1874. The lodge now has a membership of about 100.

Hartford Rebekah Lodge, No. 281, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was organized on the 22d day of February, 1879, by authority of Grand Master James M. Servoss. The lodge now has 115 members.

Florida Lodge No. 309, A. F. and A. M., was instituted January 17, 1873, with E. C. Hurd as worshipful master, Thomas J. Johns, senior warden, and James C. Crandall, junior warden. The lodge has 137 members at the present time.

Benevolence Eastern Star Lodge, No. 46, was instituted on the third day of October, 1877, with Allie Manley as worthy patron. A year later the name was changed to Benevolence Eastern Star Chapter and the number changed to 19. After a time the chapter, by reason of lack of interest, ceased to exist and was dormant until January 30, 1902, when it was revived with twenty-nine charter members and rechristened as Benevolence Chapter, No. 46, Order of the Eastern Star. Since the reorganization, it has been

prosperous and now has a membership of 156. One of its members, Mrs. Emma Ocobock, has filled the position of worthy grand matron of Michigan and at the general grand chapter meeting at Jacksonville, Florida, was elected to the office of grand worthy conductress.

A tent of the Knights of the Modern Maccabees, No. 230, was organized on the 15th day of August, 1890, by authority of W. S. Linton, great commander, and Major N. S. Boynton, grand record keeper. They now have about seventy members.

#### BUSINESS AND INDUSTRIES

The village business is transacted at one department store, two general dry goods stores, four groceries, two clothing and furnishing stores, three meat markets, three hotels, three eating rooms, one saw-mill, two stave and heading mills, two jewelry stores, two furniture stores, three shoe and repair shops, one bazaar, one 5 and 10-cent store, three canning factories, three cider mills, two grain elevators, three blacksmith-shops, one feed store, one grist-mill, two lumber yards, one garage, two machine shops, two livery barns and two banks, while five doctors look after the physical well being of its citizens and three lawyers settle the few disputes that arise among a happy and prosperous community.

Of the three canning factories, the one known as the Traver factory is built of stone and is one of the largest and best equipped plants of the kind in the state of Michigan. From eighty to one hundred hands are employed for about six months in the year. What is known as the Traxler factory was built some time prior to the "Traver" and employs practically the same number of people during the same time. Arrangements have been made to run what is called the "Old Dunkley factory," the first cannery erected in the town, to its full capacity during the coming year. A large pickle factory is projected for 1912.

These canning factories not only put up many varieties of fruit, berries, peaches, plums, cherries, apples, pears, etc., but can large quantities of various kinds of vegetables. The proprietor of the Traxler factory reports that he did \$90,000 worth of business last season, paid out \$8,000 for help, and put up and shipped half a million cans of fruit, mostly in gallon cans, and the Traver factory was equally busy. It can readily be seen that such a business is of immense advantage to the farmers and fruit growers of the surrounding country.

Another firm shipped forty-four carloads of apples, thirty-six of peaches, six of grapes, four of pears, besides local shipments of not less than five carloads of different varieties of fruit.

One of the elevator firms reports twenty-five carloads of beans shipped out, fifty carloads of wheat and rye, sixty of grapes and other fruits, and shipped in, ten carloads of flour, seeds etc., seventy carloads of coal and thirty of fruit baskets.

The other elevator reports shipments out and in as follows: Shipped out, 175 carloads of grain and 500 bushels of clover seed; shipped in, 3,000 tons of coal and fifteen carloads of fruit baskets.

At one lumber yard eighty-eight carloads of lumber and other building material were received and at the other forty-five cars of like material were delivered. Another buyer purchased last fall, 50,000 bushels of apples and shipped thirty-eight carloads of cider.

At one meat-market nearly a hundred head of beef cattle, fifty sheep, one hundred calves and over a thousand chickens were slaughtered for local consumption, and this was at only one of the three markets that supplied the people with meats of various kinds.

The foregoing brief resume of the business of the village serves to show the energy and push of its live business men and places the town in the foremost rank of the hustling, thriving towns of the county.

It seems but a few years, indeed it is not so very many, since all the business places in the town were inferior wooden structures, and the houses of the people of the most ordinary character, but now its rows of fine brick business houses on either side of the principal streets, and its numerous modern, up-to-date dwellings that are to be seen in all parts of the thriving town, most forcibly impress the beholder with the immense progress that has been made within the last half century. None can even imagine what will be the developments and improvements of the next fifty years.

## CHAPTER XXIX

### TOWNSHIP OF KEELER

LAKES AND RESORTS—CIVIL ORGANIZATION—FIRST SETTLERS OF TOWNSHIP—WOLCOTT H. KELLER—SETTLERS OF 1836-44—TAXPAYERS, PROPERTY AND SCHOOLS—KEELER AND OTHER TOWNS—GENERAL VIEW.

Keeler is the southwestern corner township of Van Buren County and is designated by the United States survey as township four south, of range sixteen west. It is bounded on the north by the township of Hartford, on the east by the township of Hamilton, on the south by the township of Silver Creek in the county of Cass, and on the west by the township of Bainbridge in the county of Berrien.

The act of the legislature organizing the county of Van Buren, approved March 11, 1837, divided the county into seven townships, of which Covington comprised township four south, of ranges fifteen and sixteen west, being the present townships of Keeler and Hamilton. Two years later Covington was blotted from the map, the territory embraced within its limits being equally divided, the east half being called Alpena and the west half, together with township three south of range sixteen west being organized into a new township under the name of Keeler. The north half of Keeler as then organized is now the township of Hartford and had been theretofore a part of the township of Lawrence, as originally organized. The township was named in honor of Judge Wolcott H. Keeler, one of its earliest settlers and most prominent citizens. He was elected as one of the associate judges of the circuit court at the first election held in the county, March 18, 1837.

Keeler contains some of the very finest farming lands in the county, which have been brought to a very high degree of cultivation. The surface is quite generally level and originally was timbered mostly with scattering oaks, constituting what was then known as the "oak openings." The soil is a peculiarly rich, sandy loam and is practically all under cultivation, there being no waste land in the township. For agricultural purposes Keeler is not surpassed by any township in the county.

## LAKES AND RESORTS

There are no important streams in the township, but there are a number of handsome lakes, some of them unsurpassed for beauty. The principal ones of these are Round, Crooked and Magician lakes, the latter two lying partly in Keeler and partly in the township of Silver Creek, in the county of Cass. Other lakes that have been deemed worthy of a name are Keeler, Brown, Sikes and Red. Round and Crooked lakes are usually spoken of as Sister lakes and they constitute one of the beauty spots of the county. The names of the lakes indicate their general outline. Round lake is about three-fourths of a mile across, while Crooked is double that distance from one end to the other. The two lakes approach within a few rods of each other; the ground between them is high and dry and covered with a beautiful grove. Between the two is located one of the popular pleasure places of the county known as Sister Lakes resort which is largely patronized during the resort season. Another resort is also platted on the opposite side of the lake called Hield's subdivision, and adjoining the original resort is a plat called Bowling's subdivision. On the north shore of Round lake is yet another platted resort called Benton Beach. All these places are so near each other that they might well be considered as one. They are located on sections thirty-one and thirty-two. A postoffice is located there called, after the name of the resort, "Sister Lakes." It is the only postoffice in the township.

Another resort on the north side of Magician lake on section thirty-four, called Gregory's addition to Magician Beach, is a popular place in summer time.

At the first township meeting held in the newly organized township there were twenty-nine votes cast, and the following named officers were chosen: Supervisor, James Hill; township clerk, E. H. Keeler; justices of the peace, Lyman G. Hill, Benjamin F. Chadwick, Burrill A. Olney and Richard B. Everitt; collector, Thomas Conklin; highway commissioners, Wolcott H. Keeler, Richard B. Everitt and Tobias Byers.

## CIVIL ORGANIZATION

In 1840 the legislature detached township three south, of range sixteen west and organized it into that of Hartford, leaving Keeler as it has remained, township four south, of range sixteen west.

At the town meeting held on the first Monday in April, 1840, the first one after Hartford and Keeler were separated, the officers elected were as follows: Supervisor, Benjamin F. Chadwick; township treasurer, James Hill; township clerk, E. H. Keeler; assessors, E. H. Keeler, S. C. Hill and Adam Manley; commissioners

of highways, William Green, Benjamin Hungerford and W. H. Keeler; collector, William B. Green; school inspectors, George W. Springer, Wolcott H. Keeler and Stephen Hungerford; constables, William B. Green, H. S. Wright, Andrew Harrison and Zenas Sikes.

The following named gentlemen have served the township in the office of supervisor: Benjamin F. Chadwick, Theodore E. Phelps, Lyman G. Hill, James A. Lee, Charles Duncombe, Albert E. Gregory, Charles G. George, Isaac J. Cox, William Tuttle, Jr., Orendo M. Sikes, John Baker, John V. Roosevelt, Henry S. Keith, Lucius E. Buck, John McAlpine, Fred H. Baker, Adolph Danneffel, Dwight Foster, George J. Danneffel and George Heagy. Of the foregoing those who served more than two years were Hill and McAlpine, each three years; Phelps, four years; Duncombe, Foster and Adolph Danneffel, each six years; George Danneffel, seven years. George Heagy, the present incumbent, is serving his second term.

At the first general election after Keeler became a township by itself—the presidential election of 1840—thirty-two votes were polled, twenty-four Democratic and eight Whig. At the presidential election of 1908 the vote had increased to 227, divided as follows: Taft, Republican, 128; Bryan, Democrat, eighty-six; Chafin, Prohibitionist, eight; Debs, Socialist, four; Hisgen, Independent, one.

The old Territorial road passed from east to west through the central part of the township, and prior to the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad a large traffic was carried on over that route between Detroit and St. Joseph, the latter city being only about thirteen miles from the west line of Keeler. In those early days the little village of Keelerville was a place of some importance.

Keeler is one of the three townships in Van Buren County that is untouched by a railroad. It was on the direct route of the Michigan Central, as that road was originally planned and surveyed and had the route of the road not been changed the history of the town would have been materially different from what it is.

#### FIRST SETTLERS OF TOWNSHIP

While the townships along the lake shore were visited at an early day by parties in search of eligible locations for the manufacture of lumber, the shipment of wood, etc., and who were not intending to make any permanent settlement, the localities back from the coast were not even sparsely settled until some years later.

About the years 1833-4 parties began to come from the east seeking locations in the then unbroken wilderness of western Michigan. The first white man to settle in the county, as has been heretofore related, was Dolphin Morris, who located in Decatur, the second township east of Keeler, in the spring of 1829. It was five years later that the first settlement was made in Keeler. The first white men to locate within its present boundaries were John and James Nesbitt, natives of the Emerald Isle, who entered one hundred and twenty acres of government land on section fourteen in the summer of 1834. Their dwelling place was of the rudest and most primitive construction. It consisted simply of two crotched sticks driven into the ground, a pole across the top and other poles down the sides, tent-shaped, and the whole structure thickly covered with marsh grass. This shelter they occupied until the summer of 1835, when they sold their claim to Wolcott H. Keeler. John Nesbitt became a resident of Porter township, where he spent the remainder of his life, while James located in the adjoining township of Hamilton and was afterward found dead in the bottom of his well, under somewhat mysterious circumstances that were never made clear.

The next settler in Keeler was Tobias Byers. He was a native of Pennsylvania, but when quite young had become a resident of Livingston county, New York. He left his eastern home late in the winter of 1835, and went to the state of Illinois, where he remained a few months when he came to what is now the township of Keeler and, being favorably impressed with the outlook, went to the land office at Bronson—now Kalamazoo—and located one hundred and twenty acres of land on section nineteen and two hundred and forty acres on section thirteen. After locating his land he returned to New York, returning to Michigan in the fall of the same year. His brother, David, and Isaac De Long came with him on his return. David Byers afterward settled in the adjoining township of Bainbridge, Berrien county. For some fifteen years Tobias was principally occupied in locating land for settlers and in clearing and breaking up land for other parties. He was married in 1856, to Jeannette Wilson. He spent the remainder of his life in Keeler, where he died on the 21st of January, 1898, being at the time of his death within a few days of ninety years of age. He was a quaint, shrewd and somewhat eccentric man, but greatly respected by all who knew him, of whom the writer was one. He was a man of influence in the community and was chosen to fill numerous important local offices.



## WOLCOTT H. KEELER

Wolcott H. Keeler came to the township that bears his name only one week later than Mr. Byers. He purchased the Nesbitt claim of forty acres on section fourteen and also eighty acres on section thirteen, and then went to Bronson and located three hundred and sixty acres on section twenty-four, thus becoming the owner of four hundred and eighty acres of government land. Mr. Keeler was from the Green Mountain state, to which he returned soon after securing his claims. In the fall he came back to Michigan, bringing with him his son, Eleazer, and his daughter, Almira. They erected a log cabin on section thirteen, and after the house was completed Mr. Keeler again returned to Vermont. Another son, Simon, in the winter of 1835, drove through with a team and a load of household goods, from Vermont, and in the spring of 1836 Mr. Keeler and his wife, and another daughter, Ursula, journeyed around by way of the lakes to St. Joseph; thence, by way of the newly surveyed Territorial road, to their new wilderness home. Mr. Keeler, laid out a village under the name of Keelerville around his home and converted his house into a tavern. For a time the place bade fair to become a town, but it was such only on paper. The tavern was for a time a stopping place for the stages that traveled across the state along the Territorial road, but after Henry Coleman opened his tavern in the adjoining township of Hamilton the patronage of the Keeler place fell away to a considerable extent. A postoffice was established at the place in 1836 and Mr. Keeler was made the first postmaster. The office remained there until 1856, when it was removed to the village of Keeler, which is located a couple of miles farther west at the center of the township, where it remained until it was superseded by the rural free delivery. A store was opened by Mr. Keeler in 1836, and a blacksmith-shop was operated the next year by Harlow Wright. Mr. Keeler (Judge Keeler, as he was called by reason of having been elected to the office of associate judge of the circuit court in 1838) was a man of prominence and influence in the community.

## SETTLERS OF 1836-44

James Hill and his family, consisting of his wife and four children, settled on section eleven in 1836. Mr. Hill was supervisor of the township for several years. His son, Justus Hill, came from Vermont in 1840 and settled on a part of his father's farm. As late as that date the place was practically a wilderness. In the north were Henry Hammond, Richard B. Everitt and Peter Williamson, their location being within the limits of the present township of

Hartford. Theodore Phelps was living on section twenty-five and William Earle on section twenty-eight. On the south, beyond the center of the township and on to Cass county, the wilderness was unbroken and no settlements had been made.

Ira Foster, a New Yorker, with his wife and child and his brother Truman, settled on section fifteen in 1837.

The same year Benjamin Hungerford came from Livingston county, New York, with his wife and a large family of children, first occupying the cabin that had been built by Tobias Byers on section nineteen, which was used by other early settlers until such time as they could erect cabins of their own. Mr. Byers' residence was on his other place on section thirteen. Hungerford bought six hundred and forty acres of land on sections seventeen, twenty and twenty-eight and occupied the premises with his wife and thirteen children for a considerable number of years. None of the family has resided in the township for more than thirty years.

Dr. Zenas Sikes located in Keeler in the summer of 1837. He entered lands on sections eighteen, nineteen and twenty. The Sikes family became prominent in township affairs. One of the sons, Orendo M. Sikes, was at one time supervisor of the township.

Other settlers of the township in 1836-7 were Adrian Manley, Calvin Hathaway and Jeremiah Johnson.

In the winter of 1835-6 Matthew Fenton, a cousin of Judge Keeler, was killed by a falling tree. He was the first person buried in the township, although his was not the first death, which was that of a laborer engaged in breaking and clearing up the land along the line of the Territorial road, who was taken sick and died. He was buried at St. Joseph.

In 1838 Samuel Pletcher from eastern New York located on section nineteen. His wife was a sister of Tobias Byers. Mr. Pletcher died in 1845. His daughter married Dr. J. Elliott Sweet, late of Hartford.

Captain Marshall Lewis was another settler of 1838. He was a civil engineer and had been in charge of some of the most important work of constructing the Erie canal. He also designed the plan for the locks of the Welland canal and was employed to superintend their construction. In 1837 he came to Lawrence and the next year removed to Keeler.

General Benjamin F. Chadwick, who was a somewhat noted man in the history of Van Buren county, was a native of Massachusetts, but went to the state of New York with his parents at an early age. When a young man of twenty-one years he went to Canada, where, in company with Captain Lewis, whose daughter he mar-

ried, he erected a foundry. In 1836 he came to Michigan and located a tract of three hundred and twenty acres of land in what is now the township of Lawrence, and in April, 1837, with his family, accompanied by Captain Lewis, he arrived at the residence of Judge Keeler at Keelerville. The next day they went to the lands they had entered in Lawrence, where they put up a shanty, cleared a small piece and lived there until the next fall when they sold their claim to Judge Broughton. Chadwick then purchased a tract of one hundred and sixty acres in Keeler, on section twenty-five. Captain Lewis and General Chadwick were residents of Keeler for about three years, when they traded their land with Theodore Phelps for mill property. Captain Lewis died in 1844. General Chadwick was appointed by President Pierce superintendent of public works at St. Joseph while the government was building and repairing the piers at that harbor. After he had been there two years he was appointed as keeper of the light house, a position which he held for six years. He subsequently returned to Van Buren county where he spent the remaining years of his life.

Palmer and William Earle settled in Keeler in 1839, Ira Gould in 1842, and an Englishman named John Duncombe about the same time. Palmer Earle and Duncombe located near Magician lake. Duncombe went to California in 1846, and died there soon after his arrival. Daniel J. Osborne settled on section seventeen about 1842. Marvin Palmer settled on section thirty-six, made some improvements, sold out and went to California, where he was fairly successful. He came back to Michigan and purchased a farm in Cass county, but again sold out and returned to California.

Other settlers in the early forties were Thomas Arner, Linus Warner, Ebenezer Lyon, Samuel Robinson, William Green, Thomas Green and James Lee. As late as 1844, the roads in the township were the Territorial, running east and west, a diagonal road from the Sikes settlement southeasterly to Magician lake, and a mail road from Keelerville to Cassopolis, Cass county.

About 1844 the population of the township began to increase as the tide of immigration from the east became greater. Among those who came to Keeler about that date were Ormon Rosevelt, John and Lucius Buck, Samuel Gordon and Henry S. Keith.

Dr. George Bartholomew settled in the town in 1846 and after a residence of a couple of years went to Paw Paw, afterward to Decatur. After that he went to Central America where he spent five years in the employ of the Panama Railroad Company. He then returned to Keeler where he spent the remaining years of his life.

In 1844 Moses Duncombe came from Canada and located lands that are now a part of the village site. Mrs. Duncombe, and Charles, Caroline, William and Stephen W. Duncombe, came later. Charles and Stephen W. became somewhat noted in political matters, both being ardent Republicans after the organization of that party. Few men were more frequently consulted in reference to matters that concerned the welfare of their party than they were. Charles was a member of the constitutional convention in 1867, and Stephen W. was county treasurer for six years and register of deeds for four years.

#### TAX PAYERS, PROPERTY AND SCHOOLS

There were twenty-six resident taxpayers in the township at the first assessment taken after Keeler and Hartford were made separate townships, viz: Marshall Lewis, Benjamin F. Chadwick, Samuel Pletcher, Tobias Byers, Zenas Sikes, Orendo M. Sikes, George Parrish, Benjamin Hungerford, Hiram Hungerford, Stephen Hungerford, H. S. Wright, Wolcott H. Keeler, James A. Lee, Ira Foster, Calvin Hathaway, L. G. Hill, W. S. Hill, James Hill, William Green, G. W. Springer, W. B. Green, John Palmon-ter, Thomas H. Green, James Spinnings, Adrian Manley and Eli Hill. Their total valuation, personal and real, was \$12,979. The non-resident lands were valued at \$16,291.50. The total tax levy was \$449.

The valuation of the township at the assessment of 1911 was \$772,830, ranking it as ninth in point of wealth. The total tax levied for the same year, not including a small amount of school tax not reported, was \$12,690.49. The number of its inhabitants, as given by the census of 1910, was 1,037, making it the fifteenth township in point of population.

The first school in the township was taught about 1839 by Miss Woodman. In 1842, Mrs. Prudence Williamson taught a school in a house belonging to James Hill that had been previously occupied by his brother, Lyman G. She had twelve pupils in attendance. An annual report made by school inspectors, David Foster and Orendo M. Sikes, in 1845, shows that at that time there were five school districts in the township. Reports were made by only three of the five. In those three there were seventy-four children of school age. Three qualified teachers were employed and an aggregate of nineteen months school was taught. There were one hundred and twenty-nine volumes in the township library and twenty-five dollars was raised for library purposes. A list of the school books in use will be of interest, especially to the older inhabitants of the county. They were as follows: Webster's El-

ementary Spelling-book, English Reader, Hale's History of the United States, Olney's Geography, Kirkham's Grammar, Daboll's and Adams' Arithmetics. The following teachers were granted license to teach in 1846: Mary A. Bragg, Harriet McKein, and Charles A. Bush.

The official school reports for the school year of 1910-11 give the following figures: Number of persons of school age, 326; volumes in district libraries, 1,729; number of schoolhouses, ten; value of school property, \$7,900; district indebtedness, \$80; qualified teachers employed, ten; aggregate number of months taught, seventy-five; paid for teachers' salaries, \$3,538.50. The township received from the state primary school fund the sum of \$2,295.

While the township of Keeler was a great grain producing region and its citizens, at first, were largely engaged in that branch of agriculture, of late years they have turned their attention quite largely to fruit growing. Its proximity to Lake Michigan and its fertile soil make it well adapted to peach culture as well as such other fruits, as apples, pears, grapes and small fruits which are all produced abundantly.

#### KEELER AND OTHER TOWNS

Secret orders are represented in the little village of Keeler by the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, Keeler Lodge, No. 204, with a membership of sixty-five; Keeler Rebekah Lodge, No. 349, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, with some twenty-five or thirty members; Knights of Maccabees with twenty-two members; and the Modern Woodmen with a membership of fifty-two. The orders all own their own halls. There is also a Ladies' club that has twenty-eight members.

As early as 1840 a class of the Methodist Episcopal church was formed at the residence of Samuel Pletcher, on section nineteen, near the town line. The members of the class were Ira Foster, Carolina Foster, Mr. and Mrs. Adrian Manley, Thomas Conklin, Martha Conklin, Mrs. Ferdino Olds and Mr. and Mrs. ——— Griffin. The first preacher on the circuit through that region was Rev. Henry Worthington. During the earlier years meetings were held at the schoolhouses in the Haynes and Hill neighborhoods. The first meeting at Keeler Center, as the place was then called, were held in the schoolhouse, and Revs. John Hoyt, Thomas T. George and Henry M. Joy were among the ministers that served the church at such meetings. In 1860, during the pastorate of Rev. Colwell, a commodious house of worship was erected, which was dedicated in 1861. This house is yet in good condition and well adapted to religious purposes. The church now numbers

fifty-six members. The Free Methodists also have a small house of worship and a limited membership. There was formerly a Congregational church in the township, with a commodious house of worship, but the society has gone out of existence and their house has been torn down.

The business places of the village consist of three general stores carrying good assortments of goods, one feed-mill and a blacksmith-shop.

Other market towns that are more or less accessible to the inhabitants are Hartford, three miles north of the north town line; Lawrence, six miles northeast of the northeast corner of the township; Deatur, seven miles west of the west town line; Dowagiac, in the county of Cass, eight miles south of the southeast corner of the town and Benton Harbor and St. Joseph, county of Berrien, some thirteen or fourteen miles west of the west town line.

#### GENERAL VIEW

Only three-quarters of century ago, the township of Keeler was a wilderness, unknown to civilization, and its soil unpressed by the foot of the white man. Since first the continent made its appearance above the waters that enveloped the earth; during all the bygone ages that had theretofore come and gone, these lands, like the rest of the great western world, had been in the course of preparation for the dwelling place of an enlightened race of mankind. It is but as yesterday that the change from savagery to civilization began. What scenes had transpired on these fair plains in those ages of long ago, no man knoweth. But what a change a few short years have wrought! No fairer region may be found than that which is now embraced within the limits of this township. Its highly cultivated farms, its bountiful orchards, its wide spreading vineyards, its elegant farm dwellings, with all the comforts and conveniences of life in these modern days, make it indeed "beautiful for a situation."

## CHAPTER XXX

### TOWNSHIP OF LAWRENCE

STREAMS AND LAKES—EARLY PIONEERS AND SETTLEMENTS—THE BRANCH FAMILY—JUDGE JAY R. MONROE—FIRST MARRIAGE, BIRTH AND DEATH—ROADS AND MAILS—FLAT-BOAT TRAFFIC—PAPER TOWN OF VAN BUREN—CIVIL, EDUCATIONAL AND POLITICAL—LOOKING BACKWARD—VILLAGE OF LAWRENCE—CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES—BUSINESS AND GENERAL FEATURES.

The township of Lawrence was one of the original seven townships into which Van Buren county was divided at its organization. The act of the legislature by which the township was organized was approved by Governor Stevens T. Mason, the first governor of the state of Michigan, on the 11th day of March, 1837. Its territory at that date, embraced not only the present township of Lawrence, but the townships of Hartford and Arlington.

By the government survey, Lawrence is designated as township number three south, of range fifteen west. It is bounded on the north by the township of Arlington, east by Paw Paw, south by Hamilton and west by Hartford. It contains within its boundaries thirty-six full sections of land and a fractional section in the northeast corner taken from section thirty-six of the township of Arlington. This division of a section was made so that the Paw Paw river, which runs diagonally across such section in a south-westerly course, might form a part of the boundary line between the two townships.

The surface of the township is generally level, or slightly undulating, and the soil is rich and productive. It was originally covered with a heavy growth of timber, consisting of whitewood, basswood, oak, ash, elm, beech, walnut, maple and other varieties, but these have practically all disappeared and in their stead are now to be seen some of the finest farms and farm residences to be found anywhere in the county or state.

#### STREAMS AND LAKES

The township is well watered. The Paw Paw river crosses its northern portions from east to west, and Brush creek, one of the

river's principal tributaries, passes through it, near the center of the township, from south to north, emptying into the main stream at the village of Lawrence. The latter furnishes the water power for a grist mill that is one of the prominent industries of the village of Lawrence. There was formerly a water power on the Paw Paw river that furnished power for a grist mill and a saw mill, but it is unimproved at the present time. It is really a more valuable power than the one that is now in operation and will, some day without doubt, be again put into operation; for in these modern days people are but just beginning to realize the great value of the numerous water powers of the country.

In addition to these streams, there are several beautiful lakes in the township. The finest of these is Prospect lake, often spoken of as Christie's and sometimes as Crystal lake, on account of its clear waters. Reynolds' lake is called on some of the maps of the township Lake George; Taylor's lake is sometimes called Shafer's, and there are several smaller lakes, among which are Baker's, Hall's, Pitcher's and Monroe's. All of these lakes originally abounded in different varieties of fish and, although not as abundant as in pioneer days, there are enough of them left to afford fine sport for the angler.

Some of these lakes, especially Prospect, have become popular places of summer resort. On the north shore of this last mentioned lake have been built numerous cottages, which are seldom unoccupied during the summer season. This pleasant spot is designated by the *dolce far niente* name of "Sleepy Hollow."

#### EARLY PIONEERS AND SETTLEMENTS

The first settlement ever made within the boundaries of the township is said to have been made on the west shore of Prospect lake, in 1835, by one Stephen Fountain, an unmarried man. But Mr. Fountain's stay, if he ever located there, was very brief, for he soon disappeared and all further trace of him was lost; he was consigned to oblivion.

The first permanent settlements in the township were made in the summer of 1835, not long after Fountain's temporary sojourn on the banks of Prospect lake. It was in June, 1835, that John Allen founded the village of Mason, so named in honor of Governor Mason, but which was afterward platted and called Lawrence.

Among the earlier pioneers of the township were John R. Haynes, Thomas S. Camp, George Reynolds and John Reynolds. Mr. Haynes became quite prominent in the affairs of the new township, holding numerous local official positions. He was for



a time one of the associate judges of the circuit court of the county and was postmaster at the village of Lawrence for quite a number of years. He was a resident of the village until his death, which occurred in 1856. Mr. Camp, who was a Connecticut man, also lived in the township on a farm just north of the village limits until his decease. He was drowned in Monroe's lake on July 12, 1861, while engaged in fishing with one Orestes A. Brown, a lawyer, who was a resident of Lawrence for a short time.

Haynes located on section ten, just south of the present village limits, Camp on section four and the Reynolds family on section thirteen. It was from the last named that Reynolds' lake takes its name. The family consisted of the father, George Reynolds, and four sons, John, George, William and Burr. The elder Reynolds built a log tavern on the Territorial road which ran along the north shore of the lake, which for many years was known as the "Old Reynolds Tavern." His sons lived with him for some time, but all except John moved out of the township. John had been engaged in boating on the Ohio river, although he was a baker by trade. From the fact of his experience as a boatman, he was for a time engaged in flat-boating on the Paw Paw river, an occupation that did not prove very remunerative to those who undertook it. While engaged in this occupation he acquired the title of "Captain." He eventually left Lawrence and settled on a farm in the township of Paw Paw, where he remained until his decease in 1892.

In the fall of 1835, James Gray and his family located on section eleven. He came from Lenawee county, Michigan, driving two yoke of oxen hitched to a lumber wagon and bringing with him his wife and six children. It took him ten days to make the trip, a journey that might now be made in much less than ten hours. The cabin of the Grays was a log structure, in size ten by fifteen feet, and roofed over with boughs cut from the surrounding trees, which answered very well in fair weather, but was little protection from storms. Its floor was the virgin soil, good for agricultural purposes, but not especially desirable for the floor of a dwelling, especially when thoroughly drenched with the November rains. The only opening in the walls of the cabin was a doorway cut in the logs and over which was hung a blanket that served as a door, a handy, but not very substantial arrangement. Gray farmed industriously, worked at carpentry considerably, and tried flat boating on the Paw Paw river, but his ventures were not crowned with great success. He eventually disposed of his farm and removed to the village of Breedsville in the northern part of the county, but afterward returned to the village of Lawrence where he died in 1873.

## THE BRANCH FAMILY

Eaton Branch came to Lawrence from Ann Arbor the same year (1835), and was employed by John Allen in the work of making roads and clearing off the site of the village of Mason—now Lawrence—and doing such other work as came to his hands. During this time he occupied a house that had been previously built by one Ephraim Palmer and left unoccupied when he went farther west. The next year after coming to Lawrence, Mr. Branch entered one hundred and sixty acres of land on section number four, adjoining the plat of the present village of Lawrence on the northwest, where he passed the remainder of his life. His death occurred on the 7th day of January, 1891. Three of his sons, Elam, Francis and Luther, were soldiers in the Civil war.

Mr. Branch was an influential man in local affairs and served several terms as commissioner of highways and while occupying that office laid out a number of the original roads of the township. He was also prominent in religious matters, being for many years a deacon in the Congregational church, of which body he was an honored member. Many of the present and former residents of the township, of which the writer is one, have a kindly remembrance of "Deacon" Branch, as he was familiarly called by his friends and acquaintances. Others of the Branch family among the Lawrence pioneers were Israel Branch, a cooper by trade and a brother of Eaton, who came to Lawrence in 1836 and, for some time, worked at his trade, eventually settling on section four, where he died in 1873. Luther Branch, another brother, came to Lawrence in 1837 and worked at coopering for a while. He located on section fourteen, but removed to section five where he died in 1845. Vine Branch, father of the three brothers, Eaton, Israel and Luther, became a resident of the township in 1836, making his home with his son, Eaton. He died in 1852.

Orrin Sutton came to Lawrence in 1836 and located in the village of "Mason." He helped John Allen build the first saw-mill in the township, which was erected near the mouth of Brush creek in the then village of Mason. He settled on section seven and afterward removed to the village of Hartford, where he died in 1868. Mr. Sutton was the first township clerk of Lawrence and also served in several other official positions. His son, Luther Sutton, established the *Hartford Day Spring* at Hartford, the first newspaper to make its appearance in that enterprising village.

Horace Stimson, another of the early settlers of Lawrence, located on section one in 1836. He was the first postmaster, but did not long remain a resident of the township.

## JUDGE JAY R. MONROE

Judge Jay R. Monroe was for forty years closely identified not only with the interests of the township of Lawrence, but with the entire county as well. In 1826, when a young man of but twenty years, he was engaged with Messrs. Cass and Campau, in locating western lands. He was originally from the state of New York, to which he returned in 1828. In 1830 he undertook an exploration of Michigan, making his home at Prairie Ronde. In 1833 he entered the land upon which the present flourishing city of South Haven is situated and in 1835, with Charles U. Cross, laid out what was subsequently called the "Monroe road" between Prairie Ronde and South Haven. This road passed through the northeast corner of the township of Lawrence and crossed the Paw Paw river on section one. The first house in the city of South Haven was erected by Mr. Monroe. He settled in the township of Lawrence in 1836 on section two, through which the Monroe road passed. This farm was his home during nearly all the remainder of his life. He died at South Haven, October 30, 1876. He was one of the first associate judges of the circuit court of the county and occupied the judicial bench with Judge Epaphroditus Ransom at the first session of the court that was ever held in Van Buren county. He was one of the county board of superintendents of the poor for twenty-five years and was the first president of the Van Buren County Pioneer Association, which was instituted in 1872, and occupied that honorable position until his decease. His son, Hon. Charles J. Monroe, is now president of the association.

Judge Monroe became a large landholder and was a man of prominence and influence in the community. The following anecdote is related of him while he was filling the position of superintendent of the poor. One day while at work cutting a ditch on his farm he was accosted by a man who appeared to be a wandering pauper—he would be called a tramp, or a "Weary Willie" in these days—with the following inquiry: "Where is the poor-master's house?"

The Judge pointed it out without telling his querist that he was the man for whom he was looking.

"Do you work for him?" asked the weary traveler.

"Yes," replied the judge.

"What does he give you for your work?" was the next question.

"Oh," answered the Judge, "he gives me just what he has himself—pork and beans, potatoes, johnnycake and his old clothes."

"Well," replied the seeker for an easy berth, "if that's all a fellow can expect, I'll be gol-darned if I stop with the old hog!"

and he at once took up his weary, wandering way in search of a "softer snap."

In 1838 Uriel T. Barnes left his home in Calhoun county, Michigan, where he had been a resident for a number of years, and, with his family, came to Van Buren county. Arriving at Paw Paw, they stopped at the Dodge tavern and on being asked where they were going Mrs. Barnes replied "To Brush Creek." "Brush Creek!" exclaimed the interrogator, "why, you'll starve there." Mrs. Barnes replied that she had had four years' pioneer experience and that she thought they would not starve right away. It should be remembered that at that time the popular name for what is now the pleasant village of Lawrence was "Brush Creek," and that name clung to it with a considerable degree of tenacity for years afterward. Mr. Barnes moved into an abandoned log cabin on what was afterward known as the "Baker and Richards" farm, a short distance east of the village site. Shortly afterward he purchased an eighty-acre tract of land of Eaton Branch, located on section five, built a frame house thereon and occupied it with his family as soon as practicable. Branch had cut a road from the village site to his place and Barnes continued it to his new location. Mr. Barnes occupied this place until his death which occurred in 1853, after which it was owned and occupied by his son, Anson U. Barnes, who is now a resident of the village of Lawrence and who has been a man of prominence in the affairs of the township, having served as supervisor of the township for several terms and having filled other responsible positions. Harlow G. Barnes, a brother of Uriel T., for many years owned and occupied a farm just across the road from his brother's place. He was a soldier in the Civil war, a member of Birge's Western Sharpshooters. After his discharge from the army he resumed his residence on his farm, being one of the foremost farmers of the township. He died at the village of Lawrence, May 25, 1907.

Mrs. Allen (Adelia) Rice, a daughter of Uriel T. Barnes who is mentioned elsewhere in this work, says that when her people came to Lawrence there were but four families in the village—those of J. R. Haynes, Dexter Gibbs, John Allen and Israel Branch. A saw-mill had been built and also a schoolhouse. Mrs. Rice attended the school which was taught by Truman Foster of Keeler.

Mrs. McKnight, a widow lady, sister of John and Joseph Haynes, came to Lawrence in 1838, and for some time kept house for her brother Joseph. One son and two daughters, Jane and Mary Nancy, came with her. Jane became the wife of Dr. Albert S. Haskin. Both she and her husband are yet living in the village of Lawrence, and both have passed their four-score mark. Dr. Has-

kin was, for many years one of the leading physicians, not only of the township, but of the county as well. He has been a man of wide influence in the community, a Republican in politics and prominent in the counsels of the party. The other daughter married Henry Mainer, a farmer living near the village. Mrs. Mainer died on August 15, 1904.

Ephraim Taylor, a native of the state of New York, came to Lawrence in 1836 and settled on a farm on section thirty, where he died in 1877.

Alexander H. Phelps was also an early resident of the village. In company with his brother, Theodore E., he built what was known as the Chadwick mill situated on Brush creek, some distance south of the village. He subsequently engaged in milling and other business in the village, in company with Horatio N. Phelps. He was known as a fur trader and dealt very largely with the Indians. He lived in Lawrence for a period of forty years, his death occurring in 1877. The Phelps family were all influential and highly respected citizens.

Humphrey P. Barnum was one of the ablest and best of Van Buren county's surveyors. He first settled in the county in 1835 and three years later became a resident of Lawrence, locating on section eleven where he lived until his death which occurred in 1851. Mr. Barnum did a large amount of surveying not only in Lawrence, but elsewhere throughout the county.

Richard B. Danks came from Washtenaw county in 1836 and for a time worked for John Allen, but subsequently purchased a farm on section nineteen, west of Taylor's lake. He afterward removed to Hartford, where he resided during the remainder of his life. He was a very eccentric man, a firm believer in Spiritualism; delighted in controversy and debate; illiterate, but fond of speaking in public. He used to attend the lyceums of those days—debating schools, they were called—and was never "backward about coming forward" and taking a conspicuous part. On one occasion when the writer, then a youth of nineteen, was teaching—possibly it would be more correct to say attempting to teach—a school in an adjoining district—some question was being debated at an evening school, Mr. Danks being present, as usual. He took the floor and in his usual grandiloquent way began his speech. "When we look away back into the distant future," were his opening words. That is all we remember, but they were characteristic of the man. With all his crudeness and eccentricities, he was a shrewd man, a good neighbor and respected in the community where he lived.

Nelson S. Marshall was another of the early pioneers of Lawrence. He came from Oakland county, Michigan, in 1838. In

company with his brother, Harvey Marshall, he purchased a farm on section seventeen, which they managed jointly for some years. Nelson eventually removed to Hartford, where he died in 1863. One of his sons, Hannibal M. Marshall, was for many years a leading merchant in the village of Lawrence. He now resides in the city of Ludington, Michigan, where he is engaged in business. Another son, Jerome B. Marshall, was a soldier in the Civil war; a member of Company C, Third Michigan Cavalry. He afterward occupied the Marshall homestead and died at Lawrence, February 1, 1905. Harvey Marshall retained possession of the farm as long as he lived. When Nelson Marshall came to the township, there were within the boundaries of the village the Gibbs tavern, and the houses of Orrin Sutton, Joseph R. Haynes and Watson Poole. At the time when Mr. Marshall took up his residence on his farm Peter Dopp was living on section seventeen, some four miles distant. When there was need of the services of a physician in the family, Mrs. Dopp would walk through the woods to the Marshall place to get Harvey to ride to Paw Paw after a doctor. Harvey was about the only one who owned a horse and often was called upon to render this service for his neighbors. All who lived within a day's journey in those primitive days were neighbors. Amos Dopp, a son of Peter's, was another member of Company C, of the Third Michigan Cavalry. He died on February 2, 1908.

Other pioneers living in the southwest corner of the township in 1840 were David and James Dopp, brothers of Peter, Cyrus Bateman, Hosea Howard and Roderick Irish. These all came to the township in 1836.

Samuel Gunton, the first man elected to the office of sheriff of the county, settled on the Territorial road about a mile south of Prospect lake. He returned to the state of New York in 1839.

Other early settlers of the township were John Andrews, who located on section fourteen just east of Baker's lake, and who afterward removed to Hartford where he spent the remainder of his days. Thomas Price and his widowed mother came from New York in 1836, in company with David Dopp, Mrs. Price's son-in-law. In the same year John Mellen, with his wife and ten children, located on section seventeen, where both he and his wife died in 1843. Joseph Haynes, a carpenter, also came to Lawrence in 1836 and settled on section fifteen where he died in 1843.

Watson Poole, likewise a carpenter, came to the village of Mason in 1838, and besides working at his trade cultivated a few acres on what is now St. Joseph street. The old Poole place, with which all the citizens of Lawrence have been familiar since those early

days, has recently been remodeled and is now one of the finest places in the village of Lawrence.

Volney A. Moore, a nephew of Harvey Marshall, came into the township in 1838 and settled on section thirty, living there until his death. Leonard Watson, who settled in the township of Columbia in 1835, removed to Lawrence in 1838, where he married one of Judge John R. Haynes' daughters. He died in Cass county. Warren Van Fleet located on section thirteen in 1838, where he lived out the remainder of his days. One of his sons, William Norris Van Fleet, became totally blind as a result of service in the Civil war. For many years he was a familiar sight to the people of Lawton, Paw Paw and Lawrence as he went about the streets with nothing to guide him except his cane, never losing his way and seemingly never at a lost to know just where he wanted to go. He died, not very long ago, in the city of Kalamazoo, where he spent the later years of his life. Barney and Daniel Evans also came to Lawrence in 1838, and located near Prospect lake.

#### FIRST MARRIAGE, BIRTH AND DEATH

The first couple to embark on the matrimonial sea were William R. Williams and Elizabeth Gibbs, but as there was neither a minister nor a justice in the township, they went to Schoolcraft in Kalamazoo county to have the ceremony performed. The first wedding that actually occurred in the township was that of Ephraim Taylor and Emeline Gibbs. They were married at the Gibbs (log) tavern. It is said that they were married by Judge Jay R. Monroe, which may or may not be correct. There is no public record of their marriage, nor of any marriage ceremony having been performed in those early days by Judge Monroe. Indeed, it nowhere appears on the records of the county that the Judge ever occupied a position that would authorize him to solemnize marriages, but that does not signify, as the records of those early days are by no means complete.

The first white child born in the township was Sarah, daughter of John and Jane Reynolds. She died in her youth.

The first death that occurred among those early pioneers was that of Mrs. Dexter Gibbs, who died in April, 1838. Her daughter, Mrs. Ephraim Taylor, did not long survive her mother, her death occurring only three months after the latter's decease. Mr. Gibbs followed them in October of the same year, and father, mother and daughter were all buried on the banks of Brush creek, just beyond the eastern limits of the village.

## THE FOOD PROBLEM

“Going to mill” in those early days was no small undertaking, as it meant a journey to Kalamazoo, Flowerfield or Whitmanville, and sometimes to Three Rivers, places from twenty-five to forty-five miles distant. Such a trip through the woods and over the rough roads, perchance with an ox-team, was anything but a pleasure jaunt; but there was no alternative. The tree stump corn mill—which was a hollowed out stump in which the corn was pounded and ground until it would serve for the manufacture of johnnycake or mush—was a valuable adjunct to the preparation of the daily rations of a hungry family. This condition of things was, however, of short duration. In 1838 John R. Haynes put in a small run of stones in his saw-mill in the village, which superseded the holes in the stumps.

The first real grist mill was built by Marvin Hannah in 1850. This was destroyed by fire in 1862, since which time the river waterpower has remained unused.

In common with all the early settlers of Michigan, the pioneers of Lawrence were greatly annoyed by wolves and other wild animals, but they occasioned no serious trouble. The wolves, although appearing to be savage and fierce, were cowardly curs unless traveling in packs. The greatest damage suffered by the settlers was the carrying off of sheep, calves and pigs by the marauding beasts. However, there was some compensation for this. The forests abounded with various kinds of game, the waters swarmed with fish, so that to obtain a full supply of fish, flesh or fowl, one did not need a steel or split bamboo rod and a reel, nor did he require anything but a muzzle-loading rifle or shot gun to keep the larder well supplied with that for which men in these later days sometimes travel hundreds of miles to obtain, and sometimes fail even then.

## ROADS AND MAILS

The first road laid out in the township was what was then called the “Waterford” (not Watervliet) road, a thoroughfare leading west from the village of Lawrence through the township of Hartford to the village of Watervliet in Berrien county. James Gray and Eaton Branch were the highway commissioners and Humphrey P. Barnum the surveyor. The construction of highways in those primitive days was no light task and when it is considered that the township embraced not only the present territory of Lawrence, but also the townships of Hartford and Arlington, it may well be supposed that the office of commissioner of highways was no sinecure.



A road from the village of Mason toward Keeler was surveyed in 1836 by Jesse L. Church and opened the next year. About the same time another road, called No. 4, was laid out from the southeast corner of section thirty-two to the northwest corner of section sixteen.

The river (Paw Paw) road, leading north from the village, one from the south side of section four and one from the southwest corner of section nineteen to the southwest corner of section twenty, were laid out in 1837.

Other highways laid out in 1838 were called the Breedsville, Hand's, Phelps', Olds', Hammond's, Taylor's, Barnes' and Branch's roads.

In 1839 there were the town-line road between the townships of Lawrence and Alpena (now Hamilton); Heath's, Briggs', Mellen's and Clark's roads and some others.

Until 1839 Eaton Branch and James Gray were the commissioners of highways, and until 1841, Mr. Branch was actively engaged in the work of laying out and opening the highways of the township. Humphrey P. Barnum laid out a great many of these roads, although Jesse L. Church and E. H. Keeler performed a considerable share of the business.

The Territorial road, which reached across the entire state from Detroit to St. Joseph, passed through the southeastern part of the township. This was an important route of travel prior to the completion of the Michigan Central Railway, great numbers of stage coaches and freight wagons passing over it in those early days.

In 1836 John Allen, the proprietor of the village of Mason, had the government contract for transporting the mails from Kalamazoo to St. Joseph, and, being desirous of favoring his own location as far as possible, he changed his route so as to pass through his own town to Keeler, instead of following the Territorial road. The Lawrence postoffice was not established, however, until 1837, when Horace Stimson was appointed as the first postmaster. John R. Haynes succeeded him and held the office continuously until his death in 1856. His successor was John B. Potter, who held the office until 1865. He was succeeded by B. F. Chadwick, who held the office but a couple of years, when Mr. Potter was again appointed and continued to hold the office until 1873, when he was succeeded by George A. Cross. The successors of Mr. Cross have been Newell Crissey, Sylvester M. Hess, Newell Crissey (for a second time), Allie Wiggins, John F. Barrows and Byron H. Colburn (present incumbent).

There was formerly a postoffice at Prospect Lake, but since the advent of free country mail delivery this has been discontinued

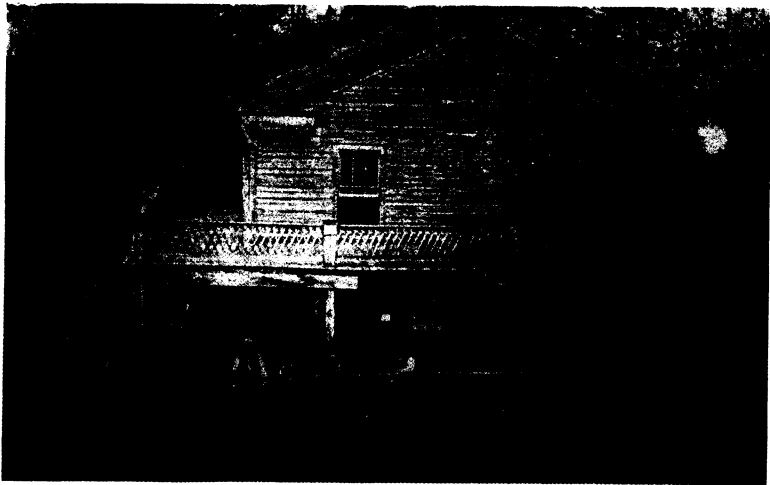
and the only postoffice in the township is at the village of Lawrence.

#### FLAT-BOAT TRAFFIC

The Paw Paw river, prior to the completion of the Michigan Central Railroad, was utilized to a considerable extent as a route of transportation between Lawrence and St. Joseph, even as far up the stream as Paw Paw; but its navigation above the mouth of Brush creek was attended with considerable difficulty and uncertainty. John R. Haynes built a warehouse for the reception of freight and the village became a place of shipment for the surrounding country. Flour and other goods were hauled from Kalamazoo and shipped down the river to St. Joseph and thence across the lake to Chicago.

This flat-boat traffic continued with more or less regularity until 1848. For a considerable number of years after that lumber manufactured at Lawrence was rafted down the river to St. Joseph, as the writer knows by experience in the business in his youthful days. The decreasing supply of timber put an end to this traffic. For many years no further attempts at converting the river into a navigable stream have been made and its waters have been permitted to flow untroubled on their way to Lake Michigan and thence, partly by way of Chicago's drainage canal, to the Mississippi river and the gulf of Mexico, and partly by way of the straits of Mackinac, the great lakes, Niagara Falls and the St. Lawrence river to the broad Atlantic.

The first public house of entertainment in Lawrence was Dexter Gibb's old log tavern.



OLD TAVERN AT LAWRENCE

The second one was built in 1849 by Horatio N. Phelps, subsequently widely known as the Mather House. This hotel occupied one corner of the principal street crossing in the village and stood for many years. It was eventually destroyed by a disastrous fire. The site is now occupied by the Farmers' and Merchants' Bank.

There were two log taverns on the line of the Territorial road within the limits of the township of Lawrence, and, as long as the stages continued to run along that route, they were features in the history of the township. The first one, near Reynolds' lake, was kept in operation for about ten years. South of that hostelry and on the banks of Prospect lake, Horatio N. Phelps opened a stage house in 1837, and as it was a place where the stages changed horses, it was, at that time, of considerable importance. But the usefulness of both these houses as places of public entertainment ceased when the Territorial road ceased to be a stage route.

#### PAPER TOWN OF VAN BUREN

During the flush times of 1837-8, caused by the reckless and practically unlimited issue of "wild cat" currency, John D. Freeman conceived the idea of having a town on the banks of Prospect lake and, having entered an eighty acre tract on section twenty-six where one Moody Emerson had previously squatted and put up a shanty against a side hill, which Freeman occupied as a stable, he proceeded to lay out a town which he named the "Village of Van Buren." Mr. Freeman even had an idea that the county seat might be located there. Those who are acquainted with the locality, and most Van Buren county people are, will admit that it was an ideal spot for a town, lacking nothing but buildings and people to make it a success. It was an ambitious village containing two hundred and thirty-eight lots. Its principal thoroughfares were named Water, Broad, Park and Forest streets. A lot for the court house was staked out and shown on the plat, which adjoined the lake and showed a fine steamer cruising thereon. Numbers of lots were actually sold to speculators, some of them for one hundred and fifty dollars apiece. Mr. Phelps, landlord of Phelps' tavern, became the purchaser of quite a number of them; Robert Christie and Charles Chadwick of others.

The assessment roll of the township for 1839 shows that the entire plat of the proposed town was assessed at the sum of \$1,190, the valuation of the assessing officers being five dollars per lot and the tax imposed for all purposes being four cents per lot. But, as the poet Burns says "The best laid plans o' mice and man gang aft agley," and Van Buren never attained to any greater

dignity than a town on paper. The plat of the proposed town was never placed on the public record.

Robert Christie and his family, on his way to Hartford, from Washtenaw county, stopped at the lake in a building that had been abandoned, proposing to remain until he could prepare a residence on his Hartford lands, of which he had purchased a considerable tract. Christie finally exchanged his Hartford property with Phelps for the tavern and Phelps' interest in the village of Van Buren. Christie took possession and converted the village lots into farm property and such it has ever since remained.

John H. Stoddard came to Lawrence the next year after Mr. Christie, who was his father-in-law, but soon afterward removed to Paw Paw, where he became a person of some prominence, being at one time sheriff of the county.

Other of the early settlers whose names should be mentioned in this connection were Oliver Witter, Rodolphus Howe, Cyrus Rathbun and Hosea Howard. The latter gentleman came from the Green Mountain state and settled on section thirty-two in 1839.

#### CIVIL, EDUCATIONAL AND POLITICAL

The first township meeting was held at the residence of Horace Stimson, on the 3d day of April, 1837, the following officers being elected: John R. Haynes, supervisor; Orrin Sutton, township clerk; Hiram Hilliard, collector; Joseph Haynes, John Reynolds, Horace Stimson, assessors; John D. Freeman, James Gray and Eaton Branch, commissioners of highways; Dexter Gibbs, Richard B. Danks and Alvinzy Harris, justices of the peace; Hiram Hilliard and William R. Williams, constables; George S. Reynolds and Dexter Gibbs, directors of the poor.

The following named gentlemen have served the township in the capacity of supervisor: John R. Haynes, John Reynolds, Benjamin F. Chadwick, John Andrews, Humphrey P. Barnum, Thomas B. Irwin, Enoch Southwell, Nelson Rowe, John B. Upton, John B. Potter, Chandler Richards, William W. Bass, Charles Rockwell, Isaac Monroe, Thomas C. Tyner, Anson U. Barnes, Francis Branch and Amos C. Benedict (present incumbent). Of the above named gentlemen, Supervisor Tyner served four years; Supervisors Barnum, Potter and Branch, each five years; Supervisor Rowe, six years; Supervisor Rockwell, eleven years, and Supervisor Benedict, although a Democrat from a Republican township, is now serving his twelfth successive year.

The population of the township is given by the census of 1910 as 1,764, being the sixth in point of numbers outside of the city of South Haven.

The assessment rolls of those earlier years, as returned to the county treasurer, contain only a list of the non-resident lands, which embraced by far the greater part of the township and which were uniformly valued at three dollars per acre and the tax assessed being at the rate of four cents and a fraction per acre. The total assessed valuation of the township in 1911 was \$950,650 and the total tax levied on the same, \$19,064.30. In point of wealth Lawrence ranks as the sixth township in the county.

The first schoolhouse erected in the township was on the east side of what is now known as Paw Paw street in the village of Lawrence and was erected by James Gray in the spring of 1837. The building was subsequently converted into a blacksmith-shop. The first school was taught by Miss Elizabeth Camp in the summer of 1837 and she was followed by Truman Foster the next winter.

There are now eight schoolhouses in the township; and the estimated value of the school property is \$11,900. There were 420 persons of school age at the last enumeration and there are 1,928 volumes in the school libraries. The amount of school district indebtedness is less than \$200. Fourteen teachers were employed during the last school year, an aggregate of one hundred and twenty-four months was taught, and \$6,320 were expended for teachers' salaries. The township received from the state during the year the sum of \$3,060 in primary school money.

At the first presidential election held after the organization of the township, in 1840, there were forty-eight votes cast, equally divided between the two political parties, Harrison, Whig, and Cass, Democrat, each receiving twenty-four votes. At the presidential election of 1908 there were 410 votes cast: 239 for Taft, Republican; 157 for Bryan, Democrat; twelve for Chafin, Prohibitionist; one each for Debs, Socialist, and Hisgen, Independent party.

With the last few years, various localities in Van Buren county have become somewhat noted as summer resorts and Lawrence, not to be left out of the procession, has put in her claim for recognition along that line. "Sleepy Hollow" has been heretofore mentioned, and on the north shore of Reynolds' lake Mrs. Ellen Vanderveer has platted an embryo resort under the somewhat ambitious name of "Ocean View." To be sure the ocean is not large, nor are its waters disturbed by any of the great steamships of the world, but nevertheless it is a pleasant spot and will doubtless come into a degree of popular favor.

## LOOKING BACKWARD

Only about three-quarters of a century has elapsed since Lawrence township was an unbroken wilderness, as it had been during all the ages that had gone before. There are yet men living who were born before its soil had ever been pressed by the foot of a civilized man; and in this comparatively short space of time it has been changed into one of the most productive townships in Van Buren county; and when we say in Van Buren county we mean in the state of Michigan as well, for as an agricultural and horticultural county Van Buren has no superior in the entire state. In place of the giant trees that constituted the forests that covered the face of the land, there are now cultivated, fertile fields, orchards and vineyards; in lieu of the trails of the aborigines there are now fine graveled highways, and instead of the howl of the wolf and the screech of the panther is heard the whistle of the locomotive and the hum of busy marts of trade. And all this wonderful change has been wrought in such brief period of time that it seems but yesterday.

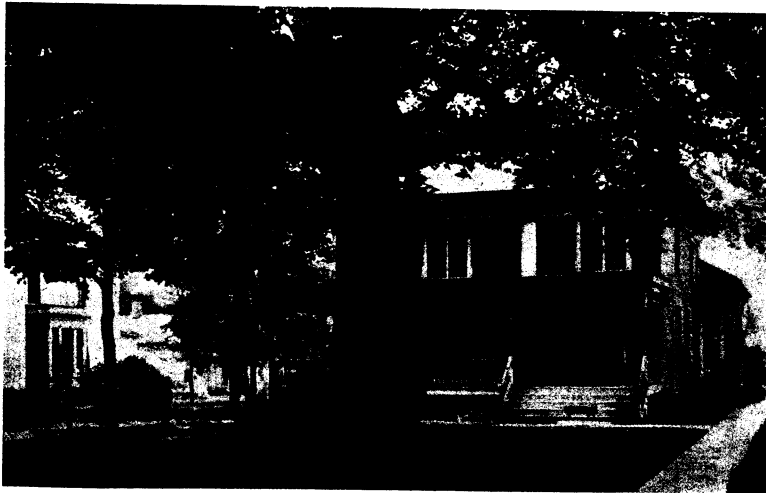
## VILLAGE OF LAWRENCE

In June, 1835, John Allen of Ann Arbor, Michigan, entered a forty acre tract of land on section ten in the township of Lawrence, upon which he laid out a village, naming it Mason in honor of the then governor of the state. Its location was on the south side of the Paw Paw river near the junction of Brush creek with the river, either of the two streams being available for a good water power. At that time, Mr. Allen entertained no idea of becoming a resident of his new paper town, the plat of which was never placed on the official records of the county. He employed one Ephraim Palmer to go to the premises and look after the improvement of the same. Palmer put up a log cabin, but did not long remain, going with his wife farther west. After Palmer's departure the cabin was next occupied by John Reynolds and his brother George. On the 15th of November, 1835, a delegation of eleven persons arrived to settle in the new location. These people were Mr. and Mrs. Eaton Branch; Mr. and Mrs. Dexter Gibbs, with five children; John Allen and William Williams. They all stopped with Mr. and Mrs. Reynolds, because there was no other place where they could stay. The room they occupied was twelve feet square, so they were somewhat crowded. The only other room was "all out doors," and that the gentlemen occupied for a dressing room.

They did not remain long without other accommodations, for Allen soon put up a double log house and called it a tavern, which



LAWRENCE TOWN HALL AND WATER WORKS



THE BIG BEECH, LAWRENCE

was afterwards known as the "Gibbs Tavern." Allen built a saw-mill on Brush creek in 1836 which was a help to the village, but the town grew so slowly that in 1843 it contained but ten families, to-wit: John Allen, its proprietor; Watson Poole, carpenter; Alexander Newton, farmer; Norman Bierce, cabinet maker; John R. Haynes, miller; Joseph Haynes, farmer; Israel Branch, cooper; Alexander H. Phelps, fur trader; John P. Fisk, blacksmith; Benjamin Dunning, blacksmith; and Rodolphus Howe, stock dealer.

At that time the village was generally known as "Brush Creek" and the name Mason was passing into oblivion. Indeed, not many of its present inhabitants are aware that it ever bore that name, but all remember Brush Creek. John R. Baker, a Paw Paw lawyer, who had come into possession of a large part of the village by foreclosing a mortgage given by Allen, replatted it in 1846 and christened it Lawrence. A characteristic anecdote is related of Lawyer Baker as follows: Being asked by a traveler for directions to find Brush Creek, he directed the inquirer to Chadwick's mill, which was located on the creek some miles south of the village. "I'll teach him," said Baker, "not to call my pretty little village by the ugly name of Brush Creek." And in this connection, it might be noticed that Chadwick used to say that people spoke of his mill indifferently as "Chad's old mill" or "old Chad's mill."

Since the original plat by Baker, there have been four additions: Phelps', in 1849; Gage's, in 1860; Phelps & Ridlon's, in 1870, and Ryan's, in 1911. These additions are all on section nine, the original plat being on section ten, the section line running north and south through the village and dividing it very nearly into two parts. When Mr. Baker made the original plat he devoted block number six to public purposes, calling it the Public Square. This was subsequently made the subject of a bitter litigation between the village and Baker, which ended in the supreme court of the state, the village retaining title to the square, which is now the beauty spot of the town and the pride of its citizens.

The village was first incorporated by act of the legislature in 1869 (Laws of 1869, vol. 3, p. 996). It was reincorporated in 1879 (Local acts of 1879, p. 31). This latter act was amended in 1887 (Local acts of 1887, p. 292).

The population of the village, as shown by the last United States census, was 663.

One of the fine high schools of the county is located in this enterprising little village, which, according to the latest school census, contained 186 persons of school age. There were fifty-three non-resident pupils in the schools during the last year and



the average daily attendance was 172. Two schoolhouses, one of them a fine brick structure, accommodate these pupils. The estimated value of the property is \$4,500. The district is entirely out of debt and has 642 volumes in its school library. Eight teachers were employed during the school year, taught an aggregate of seventy-two months, and were paid the sum of \$4,145 in salaries.

Dr. J. L. Marvin was the first physician to locate in the village. He came there in 1844. Previous to that time the nearest medical assistance that could be obtained was at Paw Paw. A few years later came Dr. Nelson Rowe, Dr. Sylvanus Rowe and Dr. Joel Camp, followed still later by Dr. Albert S. Haskin, who is the only survivor of these earlier physicians.

#### CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES

There are four churches in the village, the Congregational, Baptist, Methodist Episcopal and Free Methodist.

An old church record of August 19, 1837, recites that at a meeting duly called it was resolved "that the time has arrived when it is our duty to organize ourselves into a church." The name chosen was the First Presbyterian church of Lawrence, and it continued to be known as such for the first seven years of its existence when the name was changed to "Congregational." The original members were: John R. Haynes, Margaret Haynes, William Haynes, Vine Branch, Abigail Branch, Betsey Branch, Eaton Branch, Amanda Branch, Peter Dopp, Isabel Dopp, James Dopp, Margaret Dopp, Harriet Bateman, Thomas S. Camp, Elizabeth Camp, Horace Stimson, Cynthia M. Stimson and Anna Mellen. Rev. Luther Humphrey was the first pastor of the new church. Meetings were held in the schoolhouse and in the Baptist church until 1858, when the society built a commodious brick house of worship with a seating capacity of 300, which they still occupy. The present membership is sixty-five.

A Baptist organization was effected at Paw Paw on the 21st day of April, 1838, under the name of the First Baptist church of La Fayette. In 1841, at a meeting held near the village of Lawrence, Mr. and Mrs. Orrin Sutton, Peter Clark and Simeon Brooks, all of Lawrence, were received into membership and the name of the church was changed to "Van Buren County church, located at Paw Paw and Brush Creek." The following resolution in part, adopted at that meeting, is worthy of preservation as an expression of those early Christians on the question of the liquor traffic: "We believe it to be inconsistent with a profession of religion to vend or use any intoxicating liquors, except as a medicine or for mechanical purposes." In 1851, the name was changed

to the First Baptist Church of Lawrence. A house of worship was begun in 1853 and opened for services the next year, but it was not dedicated until 1865. It is a frame structure and has a seating capacity for 200 people.

The early records of the Methodist church are not to be found, if any were ever kept. The church was organized somewhere in the forties and its early meetings were held in the schoolhouse. When the village district built a new school building, some forty years ago, the old schoolhouse became the property of the Methodists, remodeled for religious purposes and used for such for a considerable number of years. As the society increased in membership and in financial ability, however, a new, modern brick house of worship was built with seating room for 400 people, one of the finest church structures in the county. The present membership of the church is about 150.

The Free Methodists have a church building capable of seating about 100 people. The organization has been in existence since the early seventies, but has never had a large membership. At the present time it has but ten members.

The Masonic bodies of the village are Rising Sun Lodge, No. 119, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, with about 125 members; Lawrence Chapter, No. 93, with about 100 members; Lawrence Council, No. 43, which has a membership of about 140, and Lawrence Chapter, Order of the Eastern Star, No. 256, with about 150 members.

The Independent Order of Odd Fellows have a prosperous lodge, Shady Grove, No. 499, organized in 1902, with 117 members.

Maple Grove Rebekah Lodge, No. 388, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was organized not long after the subordinate lodge, and has been prosperous from the start. It has about seventy-five members.

A lodge of Modern Woodmen was organized in 1895 and at present has eighty-two members.

Wadsworth Post, Grand Army of Republic, was organized in 1882, and has twenty-three members.

Wadsworth Women's Relief Corps was organized in 1889 and has a membership of thirty-two.

Maple Camp of Royal Neighbors, which now has fifty-four members, was instituted in 1897.

A lodge of the Knights of the Maccabees, was instituted in 1889 and has a present membership of eighty-eight.

The Ladies of the Maccabees lodge was organized in 1892; present membership eighty.

Besides the foregoing secret organizations, there should be men-

tioned the Ladies Longfellow and the Woman's Literary clubs, each of which has about forty members; not secret.

#### BUSINESS AND GENERAL FEATURES

The following is a list of the business establishments in the village: Creamery, cider and jelly factory, bakery, harness shop, garage, wagon shop, blacksmith shop, planing mill, saw and heading mill, flouring mill, pickle factory, elevator (stock company), canning factory, lumber yard, two telephone lines (the Kibbie and the Mutual), two department stores, two hardware stores, hotel (the Lawrence House), grocery and clothing store, drug store, notion store, grocery, crockery, boot and shoe store, furniture and undertaking establishments, implement store, trading company, produce and coal dealer, two cooper-shops, livery, two shoe-shops, photograph studio, two millinery establishments, meat market, candy kitchen, bank (Farmers and Merchants), two barber shops, newspaper (the *Lawrence Times*), real estate dealer, four physicians and surgeons, dentist, veterinarian and two pool rooms.

The village has a fine town hall, built of brick; an excellent system of water works installed in March, 1894, the water being supplied by wells and being pure and of excellent quality; and a system of gas lighting, both public and private, was installed at the same time. The village likewise has a base ball park and an excellent team of amateur players, the delight of the local fans. With all these modern accessories and improvements, and with her hustling business men, the village is fully abreast of the times. Indeed, the towns of its size are not numerous that can compare with it in enterprise, push and prosperity.

## CHAPTER XXXI

### TOWNSHIP OF PAW PAW

ORIGINAL TOWNSHIP OF LA FAYETTE—BECOMES PAW PAW TOWNSHIP—LAKES—THE HARDY PIONEERS—“MR. AND MRS.” PE-PE-YAH—DAVID WOODMAN’S PIONEER PICTURES—THE PAW PAW IRREVOCABLY CROOKED—STATISTICAL, POLITICAL, HORTICULTURAL—VILLAGE OF PAW PAW.

The county of Van Buren was first described and set off by its present metes and bounds by act of the legislative council of the territory of Michigan approved October 29, 1829, and it thus remained without further organization, except that by another act of the same year it was attached to and made a part of the county of Cass and as such remained until its complete organization by act of the legislature of the state approved March 18, 1837.

#### ORIGINAL TOWNSHIP OF LA FAYETTE

Two years previous to this latter act, the legislative council decreed that the entire county of Van Buren should be a township by itself and was given the name of that illustrious patriot, the Marquis de La Fayette, and that the first township meeting should be held at the schoolhouse near Paw Paw Mills. On the 4th day of April, 1836, at this, the first township meeting that was ever held in Van Buren county, Peter Gremps was chosen as supervisor, Daniel O. Dodge as township clerk, and Edward Shultz as collector.

By act of the legislature of the newly created state, approved March 11, 1837, township number three south, of range number fourteen west, was made one of the seven original townships into which the county was divided at its organization and retained the name of La Fayette. This is the same territory that is embraced within the present township of Paw Paw, except that by resolution of the board of supervisors at their October session of 1871, they detached section thirty-one and the west half of section thirty-two from the township of Waverly and attached the same to Paw Paw, thus making it the largest township in the county.

## BECOMES PAW PAW TOWNSHIP

The name La Fayette was retained until it was changed by legislative enactment in 1867, to Paw Paw, taking the name from the village, which was named from the river, and the river from the pawpaw fruit and trees that formerly grew in great abundance along the banks of the stream.

The township is watered by the Paw Paw river, the west branch of which enters the township on the south side of section thirty-three and flows in an easterly and northerly course to the village of Paw Paw where it unites with the east branch of the same river, and continues its flow northward, leaving the township near its north-east corner, whence it takes a westerly course across the township of Waverly, being joined on its course by another stream, the north branch of the river, and again entering the township of Paw Paw, it flows across that portion that was annexed from the township of Waverly, as above noted.

## LAKES

Paw Paw has a number of the handsomest of the numerous lakes in the county, the principal ones being Maple, Three Mile, Eagle and Lake Cora, or as it was originally named and is more frequently called, Four Mile lake, and Pugsley's lake.

Maple lake is an artificial lake, created by a dam across the Paw Paw river. It lies partly within the limits of the village of Paw Paw. It is irregular in shape, with hard banks all around it and is nearly two miles in length, with the Paw Paw river flowing through it. It is situated on sections twelve and one in Paw Paw and section thirty-six in Antwerp. The citizens of Paw Paw, with good reason, claim it to be the handsomest body of water in Van Buren county.

Three Mile lake is about a mile and a quarter long by a mile in width. It lies on portions of five different sections, sixteen, twenty, twenty-one, twenty-eight and twenty-nine. In recent years it has become a favorite summer resort and numerous beautiful cottages have been built along its finely shaded eastern shore.

Lake Cora covers portions of sections eighteen and nineteen and is also another highly prized place of resort. Many handsome summer cottages adorn its high wooded banks all of which are occupied in summer time, largely by people from Chicago and other cities who have purchased building lots on the margin of the lake.

Eagle lake, which covers a part of sections twenty-nine, thirty, thirty-one and thirty-two, is another pretty body of water and is also a place of summer resort.

Pugsley's lake is on the north line of the township and is situated

on portions of sections two and three. On the east side of this lake is another popular summer resort known as Lake Park, which is largely patronized by local people as well as by people from abroad.

All of these lakes are well stocked with fish of various varieties, bass, perch, pickerel and sunfish, popularly called "blue gills," being the principal kinds, and which afford fine diversion to such as take pleasure in piscatorial sports, and who does not?

#### THE HARDY PIONEERS

In 1832, Rodney Hinckley and family, from the state of New York, located on a tract of land now covered by the northern part of the village of Paw Paw. Mr. Hinckley was a kind of tinker, a handy man with tools, and he erected a slab shanty calling it a blacksmith shop. Previous to this a sawmill had been built by outside parties, which was situated near where the Briggs mill electric power is now located.

Not long afterward this mill property passed into the hands of Lyman Daniels of Schoolcraft and Peter Gremps of the state of New York. After the purchase of the mill property and a quantity of land in the vicinity, Mr. Gremps returned to the east, where he remained until 1835, when he came back to Paw Paw, bringing his family with him.

In 1833 Enosh L. Barrett located on the west side of the Paw Paw. Mr. Barrett put up a small frame dwelling—probably the first one in the county—which, in 1835, he sold to Dr. Warner, who moved it to a place adjoining the village of Paw Paw on the east, just across the line in the township of Antwerp, where it is yet standing and occupied as a dwelling house. Mr. Barrett took especial pride in oxen and one time owned a "breaking team," consisting of nine yoke of cattle with which he yearly broke a large acreage of new lands. As there were no pastures, except the wild ranges, breaking teams had to be turned loose at night that they might forage in the forest. A large bell was strapped around the neck of one of the oxen, by means of which the team could be located in the morning, possibly a couple of miles, more or less, distant. It certainly was a "man's work" to tramp miles through the wet brush in the early morning hours and get the team together for another day's plowing.

Few of the present generation have ever seen a "breaking team" of from six, eight or ten yoke of oxen, hitched to a mammoth breaking plow, one man to hold and one to drive. The motive power was slow but sure and strong. It took power to turn for the first time the virgin soil that had lain in a state of nature for untold ages,

filled as it was with the tough roots of trees and "grubs" as the young second growth oak and other young trees were called. And to hold and guide the plow was a task that tried the strength and muscle of the hardiest of the hardy among those early settlers. The breaking up of this new land was a complete and perfect exemplification of the proverb that

"He who by the plow would thrive,  
Must either hold the plow, or drive."

Captain Barrett, as he was known, drove the first team from Paw Paw to Little Prairie Ronde and while returning had the exciting experience of being chased by a panther. He also drove the first team from Paw Paw to Breedsville. After living a few years in the village, he located on his farm north of the town, subsequently settling on section thirty-six.

In 1833 John Agard located on section one east of the Paw Paw river, where he established a trading post and did a thriving business trading with the Indians for furs, maple sugar, etc. He had on his place a dozen or more log huts in which he stored his goods, and as long as he lived his post was a famous Indian resort and usually presented a busy scene. In 1835 Mr. Agard died suddenly of heart disease and was buried on his claim.

In 1833 William Gunn and William Ackley settled on section one, south of Agard's, near the brook on the Allegan road north of the village of Paw Paw, which was the outlet to a small lake on section six, in the township of Antwerp. The brook bore the name of Ackley brook and the lake the name of Ackley lake, until they were merged into Maple lake a few years ago by the erection of the dam across the river below the mouth of the brook. It was Ackley and Rodney Hinckley who dug the race for the "big mill" known as the Paw Paw Flouring Mill, in 1838, and which is still one of the thriving enterprises of the village of Paw Paw.

In 1833 or 1834 Archibald Buys settled a short distance northeast of the village on land afterward owned by the late Hon. Jonathan J. Woodman. Mr. Buys was a shoemaker by occupation and was the first of that trade to settle in the township. His son, Simeon Buys, was the first white child born in Paw Paw and is yet a resident of the township where he has resided all his life, except when a soldier in the Civil war. He is now seventy-five years of age.

In 1834 Daniel O. Dodge opened a tavern on what is now block No. 7, of the village of Paw Paw. He began business in a small, rough building, which he subsequently replaced with quite a commodious structure, which, in these modern days, would be dignified as a hotel, although in those primitive times it was simply a

tavern—"only that and nothing more." Two years later his wife died, hers being the first death in the village and the second in the township. Some years afterward the tavern was burned and Mr. Dodge went out of business.

In June, 1835, John Lyle and John K. Pugsley, who lived near Utica, New York, started together for that great unknown region known at that time as "the West," intending to look for a location in the state of Illinois. They journeyed by way of the lake to Detroit, whence they traveled on foot over the Territorial road to Paw Paw. Just before they reached Abbe's tavern east of Paw Paw, in the township of Antwerp, they overtook Edwin Barnum, who was bound for that place. They stopped at Dodge's tavern for the night. Barnum remained in Paw Paw, and after a while settled on lands a mile and a half west of the village, and opened up "bachelor's hall," while Lyle and Pugsley kept on for Illinois, skirting the lake and finally reaching Chicago. They were not pleased with the appearance of the prairie country around Chicago and came back to Paw Paw where they both took up government lands on section two.

Pugsley, who was a bachelor, proceeded at once to build a cabin, while Lyle returned to the east for his family, which he brought to Paw Paw in 1836, moving into Pugsley's cabin, where they found Hugh Jones who was in Pugsley's employ and who shortly afterward entered a tract of land just west of Pugsley's, where he lived until his death.

Pugsley's cabin consisted of but one room, but within that room Pugsley, Jones, Mr. and Mrs. Lyle and nine children, thirteen persons in all, managed to live until Lyle could put up a cabin for himself.

Both Pugsley and Lyle remained residents of Paw Paw until they died. Lyle died on the 4th day of December, 1869, aged seventy-eight years, and Pugsley passed away January 29, 1882, at the age of eighty-five years.

The Lyle children, ten in number (one having been born in Michigan), five sons and five daughters, were all among the most highly respected and influential people of the township.

Edwin Barnum, above mentioned, who married a daughter of John Lyle, became a man of prominence, not only in the town but in the county. He was a minister of the Christian church, and served the county from 1866 to 1872 as county treasurer. Politically, he was a stalwart Republican and was regarded as one of the leaders of that party in the county. He died at Paw Paw on 24th day of August, 1875, aged sixty-one years.

Anthony Labadie and his wife came to Paw Paw in 1836 and during the next year lived in a house previously occupied by



Lawson Grout, who moved to section twenty-two, where he died. Mr. Labadie and his wife settled on a farm on section twenty-two, belonging to Williamson Mason, a brother of Mrs. Labadie, where they resided until 1842, when Labadie purchased a farm of Peter Gremps, on section twenty-one, where he lived until his death in 1860.

In June, 1835, Asa G. Hinckley of New York, with his wife and five children came to the township of Paw Paw and settled on section fourteen, the land having been previously entered by his father, Elder Jonathan Hinckley, who came a few months before and settled in Breedsville. In 1846 Asa moved to a farm near Eagle Lake, where he died in 1871.

In the spring of 1835, there were seven families living in Lafayette—now Paw Paw. In 1836 eleven families settled in the township and the total number of inhabitants was between seventy and eighty.

In the summer of 1835 Richard Hutchins, with his wife and two children, located on section two, where he lived until his death which occurred in 1870. Henry W. Rhodes was also among the settlers of that same year. He located on section eight.

John Barber, a Vermonter, located on section eight in 1836, and died two years later.

Loyal Crane and family, from Cayuga, New York, settled in Paw Paw in 1837, his father having been in the town the previous year and made a location of land. Loyal settled on sections ten and eleven where he lived until 1865, when he took up his residence in the village where he spent the remainder of his life. His widow, Jane Crane, his second wife, is yet a resident of Paw Paw. Mr. Crane's father, James Crane, became a settler of the town in 1840, and kept a store in the village in 1842. He died in 1869 while on a visit to friends in the state of Pennsylvania.

Alonzo Crane located on section ten in 1840 and died there in 1847.

Oramel Butler came from western New York in 1836 and made his home on Prairie Ronde until 1843, when he removed to Paw Paw and settled on section ten. His son, William K., settled on section eight. The father died in Paw Paw on the 12th day of September, 1869, aged eighty-three years. The son died on the 4th day of June, 1893, at the age of seventy-eight.

Nathaniel M. Pugsley, under the advice of his uncle, John K., who was already located in Paw Paw, came directly from England, his native country, and located on section ten. Subsequently, he removed to the village of Paw Paw, where he lived until his death, which occurred on the 21st day of November, 1893, at the age of seventy-seven years. His brother, Henry M. Pugsley, settled on

section seven and remained a resident of the township for the remainder of his life. He died April 22, 1903.

Albert R. Wildey first came to Paw Paw in 1835 and eventually settled on section nine. He was a man of some prominence, both in business and political circles. He died on the 20th day of May, 1904, at the age of eighty-five years. Two of his sons are still residents of this vicinity—William C. Wildey, who is the manager of the Paw Paw Fruit Growers' Union, and Edwin A., who was at one time commissioner of the State Land Office.

Benjamin F. Murdock came to Kalamazoo in 1836 and to Paw Paw in 1842. Mr. Murdock was a school teacher in his youthful days. When he came to Paw Paw he worked at the carpenter's trade. He died in the village of Paw Paw, on the 29th day of November, 1895, aged eighty years. His widow still resides in the village at the advanced age of eighty-seven.

Abraham Ball came to Paw Paw in 1837 and started a brick yard on the farm of Edwin Barnum, the first attempt at the manufacture of brick in the county. He followed that business, making a most excellent article, until 1849. He died in 1855, while on a visit to Coldwater, Michigan.

Edmond Hayes, a tailor, and Rufus Currier, a carpenter, made a trip from Pennsylvania to Paw Paw in 1836, returning east the same year. They were so favorably impressed with the country that in the fall of 1838, accompanied by William H. Lee, they returned to Van Buren county. They proceeded by way of the lake to Detroit and then by the most primitive means of locomotion, their own stalwart legs, to Paw Paw. Hayes and Currier remained in the village to ply their respective trades, while Lee went to Asa G. Hinckley's place and engaged to work for him—threshing wheat and having for his remuneration every eighth bushel. Of course there were no threshing machines in those days, the usual method being to prepare a smooth place of earth, spread out the bundles of grain thereon and then use the flail and "elbow grease" to accomplish the work. Lee returned to Pennsylvania in the winter of 1839 for his family, coming back to Paw Paw in the month of February of the same year, making the entire journey by wagon and arriving at his destination with a foot and a half of snow on the ground. Mr. Lee departed this life on the 22d day of February, 1883. His father, James Lee, and his mother, and his brother, Uriel C. Lee, came to Paw Paw in 1841. The father died in 1852. The brother Uriel C., died October 28, 1894.

## "MR. AND MRS." PE-PE-YAH

Mr. Lee related the following anecdote of his early life in Paw Paw: He was accustomed to get sugar for his family use by doing plowing for Pe-pe-yah, an old Indian, who was said to have been at one time a prominent Pottawattamie chief, and who had a farm on section twenty-two, which is known to this day as the Pe-pe-yah farm. Some of the Indians owned small pieces of land, but Pe-pe-yah was about the only one that approached the dignity of being a farmer, and his operations were confined principally to making maple sugar and growing small crops of corn. Lee was accustomed to take his dinner with him when he went to work for the old chief. One day, at noon, he discovered that the dogs had got the start of him and had devoured his luncheon. Going to the "wigwam" he told Mrs. Pe-pe-yah that her dogs had stolen his dinner and that he must have some from her. Handing him a wooden ladle, she pointed to a kettle of boiled corn and told him to help himself. Pretty soon the dogs joined him in his repast. He undertook to drive them away, but they would not be driven. Lee was hungry, and the lady (?) of the house assured him that it was customary for the dogs to eat from the same dish as the family, and so he proceeded to finish his dinner, regardless of his unaccustomed and unwelcome messmates.

When the government was endeavoring to procure the removal of the Indians of this vicinity to the west, Pe-pe-yah conceived the idea that he would be compelled to remove, despite the fact that he was a landholder, and fled to Canada with his wife and child. He died there and his widow returned to the farm with her child. She afterward sold the place to John R. Baker, a Paw Paw lawyer, and moved to the township of Hartford, where there were considerable numbers of the Pottawattamies. Some of their descendants still reside in the same vicinity, but they have become thoroughly civilized and are now recognized as citizens.

David Woodman, a brother of Elder Joseph Woodman settled in Antwerp in 1838, afterward becoming a resident of Paw Paw where he resided until he was about ninety years of age and then removed to Kansas where he died, being at the time of his death within a few weeks of one hundred years of age.

## DAVID WOODMAN'S PIONEER PICTURES

David Woodman 2d, as he was called during the life of his Uncle David, came to Van Buren county in May, 1835, and was at first a resident of the township of Antwerp, where his father, Elder Joseph Woodman, had located on section 7 of that township. The young man, however, soon struck out for himself. His experience,

told in his own words, as follows, was not different from that of others of the first settlers of the township.

"I commenced," said Mr. Woodman in a paper read before the Van Buren County Pioneer Association, June 14, 1899, "on what is now my old farm on the west side of Three Mile lake, in the spring of 1839, and made the first beginning in southwest Paw Paw, and I have had some experience in keeping 'bachelor's hall.' While it was not the most desirable way of living, in some cases it became a necessity; and so the young man marches bravely into the forest where he erects his little cabin. As the sound of his axe and the crash of falling timber resounds through the forest, they seem to arouse the occupants of the wilderness, who warn him to desist from disturbing their peaceful abode. The owl wants to know 'Who, Who' this intruder is? The partridge notifies him to 'Quit.' The old moderator, Mr. Bullfrog, seems to say 'Get out, Get out.' The catbird says 'You can't stay here.' The crows says 'If you do, I'll pull your corn.' The ague promises to shake him, and the fever to roast him, and the mosquitoes are on hand to serenade him; immediately afterwards sending in their 'bills.' Finally, the jay birds call out 'Caleb, Caleb,' and the blackbirds make friends with him by calling him 'Uncle Ebert,' after which he is lulled to sleep by the sweet notes of the whippoorwill."

"The cabin of our bachelor was usually adorned with a mud chimney and furnished with a wild-cat bedstead, a rough table, a stool, perhaps a chair, a kettle, a frying pan, tea kettle, 'Dutch' oven, a few dishes and bed clothes, all of which completed his household outfit. He had his keen axe and knew how to use it. This lone man was a kind of Robinson Crusoe. He was monarch of all his surroundings; he was 'boss' and all hands. He was chief cook, housekeeper, chambermaid, wash woman, barber and cobbler. Let not the young man of today imagine there was much fun in swinging the axe all day, except while doing his housework, and I opine he would cry out 'may the good Lord deliver me.'

"There being no necessity for highways at that time, there were none laid out. The first settlers were guided to their cabins by 'blazed' trees or by following some Indian trail.

"But the glory of conquering the wilderness, belonged not to the men alone. Their wives and children stood bravely by, ready to lend a helping hand, or to submit cheerfully to the hardships they had to encounter. If it was necessary that the family should live in a little log cabin, miles from neighbors, contentment dwelt there also. If they had to climb a ladder to reach the loft in their humble dwelling, it was all the same as though they ascended by a winding stair. If they reposed on 'wildcat' bedsteads, their sleep was just as sweet as though they rested on walnut or mahogany.

If they warmed their cabins by huge fireplaces and cooked their frugal meals over a blazing fire, the food was just as tasty as if cooked on a forty dollar range. If the kitchen had to answer the purpose of a parlor and often a sleeping room, it was a necessity and was satisfactory. Our musical instruments were of God's own invention, our wives and children, and their music was the most cheering within the hearing of those early pioneers. If their children were rocked in home-made cradles, or toted about in a vehicle costing a couple of hours' labor, they were fully up to those of the present day in intelligence and far ahead in vigor. The wives of the pioneers were their own cooks, chambermaids, dress-makers and milliners; they did their own laundering, were proficient in the use of the spinning wheel, loom and other household utensils of that early day.

"If it was necessary for the wife or daughter to walk four or five miles to do shopping, visit neighbors or attend Divine worship, they were both ready and willing to perform the task. Although the pioneer schoolhouse might be a log cabin, situated in the forest or on the plain, the pupils made good progress in their studies, and, although those rude structures were used as houses of worship, no doubt the worship was just as acceptable to the Heavenly Father as that from gilded pulpits accompanied by the melodious sound of organs, horns and fiddles. It was a common practice for some Christian families in the township to go five miles or more with ox teams to attend Sunday worship.

"Previous to the completion of the Paw Paw mills in 1839, Flowerfield, Comstock and then Kalamazoo were the nearest grist mills. I often went to the old current wheel mill located on the east side of the Kalamazoo river, in the then little village of Bronson, usually making the trip with oxen in two days. The mill with its splashing wheel disappeared more than fifty years ago.

"The sickly season of 1838 was the severest ordeal the early settlers had to endure. Sickness prevailed to an alarming extent, until there were not enough well people to properly care for the suffering ones, and one after another was gathered in by the grim reaper. It was during that year that the land for the 'Old Cemetery' in the north part of the village was purchased and prepared for the reception of those who had finished their labors in this then wilderness country. I recognize a few persons in this audience who passed through that trying season. Though young then, they are old now, for that was sixty-one years ago, and the youth of that period—the few that remain—are the old pioneers of today."

Mr. Woodman was one of the most prominent farmers of Van Buren county and at one time, when the Greenback party

was in the zenith of its strength, he was chosen as its candidate for governor of the state of Michigan, but, as a matter of course, failed of an election, Michigan Republicans being too strongly entrenched to be ousted.

Jason Woodman, one of the associate editors of this work, a son of David Woodman, is prominent in the order of Patrons of Husbandry and was a member of the state senate for four years. He is a graduate of the Michigan Agricultural College and is a scientific and successful agriculturist. His elder brother, Edson Woodman, is a Civil war veteran, and has been a noted breeder of Percheron horses.

Others who were not among the earliest settlers, but yet came early enough to be called pioneers were John Sherrod, Jonas Harrison, Henry Wilson, Philip Sherrod, and probably others whose names are not now recalled.

#### THE PAW PAW IRREVOCABLY CROOKED

Before the days of railroads the subject of water transportation between Paw Paw and Lake Michigan was a matter of importance. The Paw Paw river was utilized for this purpose after a fashion and different plans and schemes were devised to make that stream a navigable river. Early settlers eventually went so far as to dream of some day seeing the river made a highway for steamboats. The legislative council of 1833 for the purpose of promoting access to the "forks of the river" between the villages of Paw Paw and Lawrence, which was then supposed to be the head of navigation, authorized the construction of roads from that point to different places in Van Buren, Cass, Kalamazoo and Barry counties. The "landing" in the township of Lawrence afterward became a place from which considerable freight was shipped down the river to St. Joseph. Probably there is not a more crooked stream in the state of Michigan than the Paw Paw river, and while it is but thirty-five miles by rail to that city from Paw Paw, it is probably more than three times that distance by way of the river. Feeble efforts were at one time made to straighten the stream, but nothing was of importance accomplished except to use up the appropriation of public lands made for that purpose.

In 1840 Isaac W. Willard built two large flatboats and loaded them with flour at Paw Paw and sent them down the river. One of these boats was named the "Daniel Buckley" and was commanded by Capt. A. R. Wildey, the other was called the "Wave" and was placed in charge of William H. Hurlbut. They succeeded in making the trip, but the difficulties encountered and the time occupied made the venture an unremunerative one. Other sim-

ilar attempts were made from time to time, but the traffic was eventually abandoned as being unprofitable. It may well be imagined that the journey down the stream when there was a fair stage of water could be made with comparative ease, but the labor of poling the heavy boats back to Paw Paw against the swift current must have been exceedingly tedious and severe. And so the crooked Paw Paw remains and is likely to remain, a beautiful, meandering stream bordered with forests and fertile fields, with vineyards and orchards and an occasional water power. The writer speaks with knowledge of its beauties, as he has traversed it from Paw Paw to its mouth, where it empties into the St. Joe river, almost at the shore of Michigan's great lake.

#### STATISTICAL, POLITICAL, HORTICULTURAL

The amount of taxes spread upon the roll of the township in 1839 was \$530.98. The entire valuation of the township, including the village, was the sum of \$53,540.

This valuation was divided as follows: Resident farm and personal, \$15,091; village property, \$9,914; non-resident realty, \$27,725.

In 1911 the assessed valuation of the township, including the village, was \$1,555,800. Paw Paw stands at the head of the list of townships in the county, not including the city of South Haven, in point of wealth, being assessed at \$358,000 more than the township of Hartford which ranks as second. The taxes spread on the roll for the same year were \$32,793.81. These figures show that while the valuation of the township has increased almost thirty-fold in the last seventy-two years, the taxes have increased sixty-fold. In other words, the tax rate, in proportion to valuation, has doubled. This is accounted for in some degree by reason of the liberal sums voted by the people for public improvements for which they are now paying.

According to the census of 1910, the township also stands at the head of the list as to population, the number of its inhabitants being given as 2,779; Bangor being second with 2,424.

Since its organization the following named gentlemen have served the township in the capacity of supervisor: D. O. Dodge, Peter Gremps, Joshua Bangs, J. H. Simmons, S. J. Foote, J. B. Barnes, J. K. Pugsley, I. W. Willard, Loren Darling, Benoni Hall, F. H. Stevens, G. B. Sherrod, Elisha Durkee, Edwin Barnum, R. Avery, Charles Selleck, L. B. Sheldon, G. J. Hudson, Loyal Crane, E. M. Glidden, O. D. Glidden, Thomas L. Ross, E. O. Briggs, John W. Free, David Woodman, Chas. W. Young, E. A. Wildey, William Killefer, J. C. Warner, W. C. Wildey, L. E. Shepard and Merle H.

Young. Of the foregoing those who officiated for more than two years were Selleck, Free and Killefer, each four years; Barnum and C. W. Young, each five years; W. C. Wildey, six years; Briggs, seven years, and Warner, nine years. Merle H. Young, the present incumbent of the office, is now serving his third consecutive year.

At the first general election, held in the county after the admission of the state into the Union, there were 181 votes polled, of which thirty-three were polled in the township of La Fayette (Paw Paw). The returns on governor for that year are missing from the official files, but the congressional return is still preserved. That shows that the vote was practically all Democratic. At the presidential election of 1840, seventy-one voters cast their ballots, forty-three being for Van Buren, Democrat, and twenty-eight for Harrison, Whig.

At the last presidential election 689 electors registered their choice at the ballot box, as follows: 450 for Taft, Republican; 215 for Bryan, Democrat; twelve for Chafin, Prohibitionist; nine for Debs, Socialist; and three for Hisgen, Independent.

Formerly the citizens of the township were very largely engaged in the raising of grain, hay and stock, but in recent years the fruit industry, especially the culture of the grape, largely predominates. There are few places in the township, outside the limits of the village, where one can travel along any highway and be out of sight of a vineyard. There are thousands of acres of that delectable fruit and the quality produced is unsurpassed. The principal varieties grown are the Concord, Delaware, Worden, Moore's Early and Niagara, but the Concord largely exceeds all other varieties combined.

Other fruits, such as cherries, apples, pears, plums, peaches and small fruits are cultivated, some of them being produced in great abundance.

Some of the more progressive farmers have made a specialty of growing potatoes for a few years past and have met with good success. Indications are that the cultivation of this tuber will assume a prominent place in the agriculture of the township in the near future.

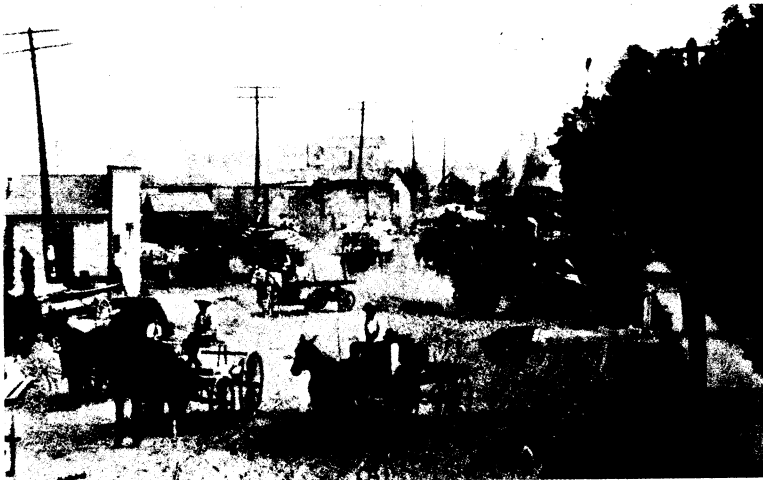
#### VILLAGE OF PAW PAW

The village of Paw Paw, the county seat of Van Buren and the only village within the limits of the township, is situated on the "Fruit Belt line," four miles from the Michigan Central. It was first surveyed and platted by Peter Gremps, Isaac W. Willard and Lyman I. Daniels, in the spring of 1838. This plat was located on sections twelve and thirteen, on the east side of the





NORTH KALAMAZOO STREET, PAW PAW



GRAPE SHIPPERS OF PAW PAW

Paw Paw river just below the confluence of the east and west branches of that stream. It was quite an ambitious village in its inception and contained fifty-one blocks.

In 1846 Judge Evert B. Dyckman and Rev. Joseph Woodman platted an addition of sixteen blocks adjoining this original plat on the east. In the spring of 1848, the village was resurveyed with some additions to the original plat, the principal one of which was Willard's addition on section eleven on the west side of the river. Other minor additions have since been platted and the village is now a mile and a half in extent from east to west and a mile in width from north to south.

The village was first incorporated by act of the legislature of the state in 1859 (S. L. 1859, p. 292). This act of incorporation was repealed in 1863 (S. L. 1863, p. 65). Another act of incorporation was enacted by the legislature of 1867 (S. L. 1867, Vol 2, p. 1115). This act was amended in 1869; also in 1873.

The first settlement in the township of Paw Paw was made within the limits of the present village in 1832, when Rodney Hinckley located on a piece of land that is within the northern part of the town. In that same year Pierce Barber of Prairie Ronde began the erection of a saw mill on the river in what is now the western part of the village. In 1833 this property passed into the possession of Peter Gremps and Lyman I. Daniels. These gentlemen, who had come to Paw Paw on a prospecting tour, bought the mill and a considerable tract of land adjoining, upon which, in conjunction with Isaac W. Willard, they platted the village as above noted. Daniels never became a resident of Paw Paw. Gremps, who came from the Mohawk valley, returned east, but came back in 1835, became a permanent settler on his Paw Paw property, and lived the remainder of his life in the village, dying at his home in 1874 at the age of seventy-three years.

Shortly after his return from the east in 1835, he sent to Stone Arabia, in the state of New York, and induced Dr. Barrett to come west and settle in Paw Paw. He was the first physician in the place. He remained about four years and then removed to Kalamazoo, where he ended his days not long afterward.

It was early evident to Mr. Gremps that the Territorial road would pass through Paw Paw, and, recognizing that that route would become a great thoroughfare across the state, he wanted a public house—a tavern—established in his new village. Meeting Daniel O. Dodge at Schoolcraft one day in 1834, prior to his return east, he offered to give him an entire block and build a board house upon it if he would come and "keep tavern" in the place. Dodge accepted the offer and opened an inn which became one of the most noted public houses in southwest Michigan. "Dodge's

Tavern" was known far and wide, it being one of the principal stopping places along the whole line of that famous thoroughfare, which is known to this day as the "Territorial road." This tavern was a board shanty containing four rooms and measured about sixteen by twenty-four feet. It was enlarged in 1835 and rebuilt in 1836. Travel by stage along the route was very brisk. It is said that sometimes Dodge had as many as a hundred people to entertain and Mrs. Dodge did the cooking for all of them. The tavern stood on what is now the south side of Main street and was nearly hidden by trees. Indeed, trees were so abundant in Paw Paw, that even after the village was platted travelers often passed through it without knowing there was any village there, and frequently inquired at the tavern for the location of the town.

During Dodge's career as a landlord, Dr. Warner opened another public house in the village, but it had only a brief existence. James Crane put up the Exchange Hotel on the site of the present Dyckman House, which latter was built by Judge E. B. Dyckman and John Smolk, after the destruction of the Exchange by a disastrous conflagration that burned a number of the business places of the village.

Judge Evert Brown Dyckman, from whom the hotel, the principal public house in the village, takes its name, who was of the old Knickerbocker stock, was born on the 25th day of September, 1799. He assisted in the construction of the Erie canal, and when that work was completed he established a boat yard and carried on the business of boating and an extensive coopering establishment for a number of years. He came to Detroit in 1836, where he purchased a pony and rode across the state on the Territorial road to St. Joseph. Receiving discouraging reports of the country beyond the lake, he concluded to settle in Michigan, buying about a thousand acres of land in Van Buren county. His wife died in 1838, and the following autumn, with his seven children, his father and mother, two nephews and two nieces, he settled on lands near Paw Paw, where he began farming operations. He was elected an associate judge of the circuit court in 1841. He married his second wife in 1839, who lived less than a year. In 1841 he was again married, and changed his residence to Schoolcraft, in the county of Kalamazoo, where he died at a ripe old age. Judge Dyckman was the grandfather of Evert S. Dyckman, who was the first mayor of the city of South Haven and who is one of the leading citizens of that prosperous "City by the Lake."

Another improvement that Mr. Gremps desired to have was a store, and so he procured the services of Williamson Mason, a young man from Wayne county, New York, who had been working in

the west at his trade as a carpenter, to build him a store. Mason at once proceeded to erect a substantial building, which stood just west of Dodge's tavern on the corner of what is now Main and Gremps streets. Mr. Gremps occupied a part of the building as a residence and opened a store, the first one in the place, and began business with Edward Shultz as his clerk.

Mason took up his residence in the village where he became one of its business men. He died at his Paw Paw home on the 18th day of September, 1890. Rodney Hinckley had built a blacksmith shop, but there was little work done in it and so Gremps got Craig Buys, a brother-in-law of Hinckley's, to come and open a shop. Buys occupied a shop which Gremps had Mason build for him. He plied his trade there for about six years and then moved to Ohio.

The first shoeshop was opened in 1836 by Charles G. Harrington, who subsequently removed to Lawton where he followed his trade for many years.

Madison Eastman, a carpenter, came to the village in 1835. He afterward removed to Decatur, but returned to Paw Paw, where he died.

Myron Hoskins came to Paw Paw in 1836. He afterward became a resident of the northern part of the county, but returned to Paw Paw where he died, November 7, 1900, aged eighty-nine years.

The second store in the village was opened by Nathan Mears, who afterward became a merchant in Chicago. Edwin Mears and James Crane were also among the earlier ones to engage in the mercantile business.

Mr. Gremps, in company with Isaac W. Willard, opened a store in 1838 on Main street. Willard afterward bought out Gremps' interest and took in Edward Shultz as a partner. Later the firm was Willard & Moffat. Willard was one of the founders of the village of Paw Paw, and was a man of note, not only in the immediate community, but had a wide reputation both in the county and state. He was chosen as a member of the second "convention of assent" which met at Ann Arbor in December, 1836, to take action on the admission of Michigan into the Union. He was also a member of the constitutional convention of 1850. Mr. Willard was a very peculiar man and many anecdotes are related of his eccentricities. He was a friend to a man whom he liked, but wanted nothing to do with a person to whom he took a dislike. The writer is glad that he bore very friendly relations with Mr. Willard after forming his acquaintance several years prior to his death. Mr. Willard was a bachelor, which may, to some extent, account for his personal peculiarities. He was closely identified with the interests of Paw Paw up to the time of his death. He was the

moving spirit in the organization of the Prospect Hill Cemetery Association and was its first president. This cemetery is located about a half mile south of the village and is one of the finest cemeteries to be found in the state of Michigan, consisting of a series of hills rising one above another. A fine view of the town can be obtained from the summit of some of these hills. During the latter years of Mr. Willard's life this cemetery was his especial care and pride. He erected a wooden tower on its topmost pinnacle, one hundred and twenty-five feet in height, which was visible for many miles around. This tower was christened by some irreverent ones as "Willard's folly." It stood as a landmark for several years, and until its builder was laid to rest almost at its foot, when one morning, the elements having weakened its foundation, it fell to the ground with a mighty crash.

Other early business men of the village were Alonzo Sherman, E. J. House, H. L. Dickinson, F. H. Stevens, Loren Darling, Capt. Edmund Smith and William R. Hawkins. Mr. Hawkins was another somewhat eccentric man. He was for a time engaged in the mercantile business, but eventually became a broker and built up a very successful and profitable business in that line. He was familiarly known as Colonel Hawkins. He died at his Paw Paw home on the 21st day of February, 1895, aged eighty-seven years.

Captain Smith, who came to the village in 1843, built one of the most successful mercantile establishments in Van Buren county. Starting a general store, he converted it into a gentlemen's furnishing establishment, and E. Smith & Company's "Long Brick Store" was well known throughout the county. It is still conducted under the same firm name, although its founder has been dead for nearly eighteen years.

Peter Gremps was the first postmaster of Paw Paw, his appointment dating from 1835. He was succeeded in 1842 by George L. Gale, who was followed successively by John McKinney, John Smolk, A. J. Goodrich, F. H. Stevens, James M. Longwell, Joseph W. Huston, E. J. House, A. J. Sortore, O. F. Parker, Thomas B. Irwin, George W. Matthews, Dr. L. K. Woodman, Robert O. Beebe, Peter Mackellar, Kirk W. Noyes, William Killefer and Bangs F. Warner, who is now rounding out his third consecutive four years term.

It is usually considered that the postoffice receipts are a fair indication of the prosperity of the community. Judging by this standard, the residents of Paw Paw have little reason for complaint. A communication received by the compiler from the auditor of the postoffice department at Washington says: "The earliest record of business transacted at Paw Paw is that of the quarter ending September 30, 1836, in which the gross postal receipts were

\$31.21. The gross receipts of each decennial year from 1840 to 1910 are as follows: 1840, \$261.28; 1850, \$807.42; 1860, \$1,131.60; 1870, \$2,504.05; 1880, \$3,219.96; 1890, \$3,502.37; 1900, \$4,068.70; 1910, \$8,647.64." The receipts of the office for the fiscal year ending June 30, 1911, amounted to \$9,256.

The lawyers and doctors of the village are mentioned in the chapters of this work devoted to the Bench and Bar and the Medical Profession. The various newspapers that have been published in the town and that are now in existence will be found in their appropriate place in the chapter dedicated to the Press.

The first flouring mill of the town was built for Willard & Gremps in 1838, and called the Paw Paw Mills, which are still doing business, having been thoroughly remodeled and converted into a modern plant in all respects. It was built by Stafford Godfrey, a millwright, together with R. E. Churchill, the same parties who built Van Buren county's first courthouse. Mr. Godfrey continued to make Paw Paw his home until his decease which occurred November 2, 1889, at the age of eighty-two years.

The first wedding in Paw Paw was that of Miss Hannah Mead and one Bellfontaine, in 1833. The bride was a "hired girl" in the employ of John Thomas and the groom was one of the sawmill "hands," an employe at Job Davis' sawmill. There was neither minister nor civil magistrate to be had to perform the marriage ceremony, but Davis declared that he had once been a justice of the peace and thought it would be all right if he married them, and, as they agreed with him, he married them. They afterward removed to Indiana, and for aught that is known, they lived as happily, or unhappily, as the case may be, as though there had been pronounced over them a legalized ministerial or judicial ceremony.

The first death was that of the wife of Daniel O. Dodge who died in 1837. She was buried in the tavern garden, but her body was afterward removed to the cemetery in the north part of the village.

On the last day of December, 1835, Peter Gremps moved into his new house, which is still known as the Gremps house. That evening he was informed by his clerk, Shultz, who had learned something of Indian customs, that the red men would make him and his family a New Year's call the next day, and, somewhat to the trepidation of the ladies, a delegation of some twenty-five Indians, decked out in paint and feathers, made the promised call. It was their manner of ratifying friendship with the whites for another year. The braves insisted on kissing the women, despite the violent protests they made. It was rather a jolly affair, notwithstanding the kissing; but Mrs. Dodge donned her war paint when

the visitors called on her and offered to kiss her, and drove them from the house at the point of the rolling pin.

The first fourth of July celebration was held in 1836. The ceremonies of the day included a patriotic oration by Hon. F. C. Annable, of Almena; a written address to the three veterans of the War of 1812 who were present, which was presented by a daughter of Peter Gremps, afterward Mrs. Alonzo Shultz; anvil salutes fired by Rodney Hinckley, and a banquet to everybody. The affair took place in an open space in the woods just west of the old courthouse grounds, which was then dignified with the name of "Public square."

Paw Paw has an up-to-date system of electric lights, and modern water works and sewers. The first attempt at lighting the town was made a number of years ago by a private company. This did not prove to be entirely satisfactory and so the municipality purchased one of the water powers (of which there are three inside the corporation limits and two more just outside), and proceeded to construct an electric plant of its own. This was first put in operation in 1903 and was continued for five years. As the demands for domestic lights increased, the power proved inadequate and it was found necessary to devise some other means of furnishing the needed lights, both public and private. While there were, at the time, five good water powers accessible, they were all of them located on a single branch of the river, no attempt ever having been made to build a dam across the stream below their junction. A survey was made and it was found that at a place about half a mile beyond the corporation line a dam could be constructed that would not only afford ample power for lighting the town, but also for operating the water works, which latter had theretofore been operated by steam power. And not only this, but at the same time a handsome lake would be created, which would extend between high banks through the center of the village; and this was the origin of beautiful Maple lake, which is one of the most attractive features of the town. After a full investigation of the matter, the citizens of the place appropriated the sum of \$50,000 for the purpose of putting this plan into operation. The work was completed in the summer of 1908 and has proved to be all that was hoped and expected. Not only has the power been ample, but the lake has become so attractive that cottages have been constructed on its banks, and resort grounds bordering on the lake have been platted around it. Water of the purest quality is piped to all parts of the town. It is pumped from wells that, before so large a demand was made upon them, were natural springs or flowing wells.

The public buildings of the town are the fine courthouse and jail,

a fine and commodious schoolhouse, churches, Opera House and corporation hall.

The schools rank among the very best in the state. The official figures for the last school year are as follows: Number of persons of school age in the district, 335; number of non-resident pupils in attendance, seventy-three; average daily attendance, 309; number of volumes in school library, 2,000; value of school property, \$25,000; indebtedness, none; teachers employed, thirteen; amount paid for teachers' salaries, \$5,427.25. Since the filing of the above report, the district has purchased the Free Baptist church building and converted it into a gymnasium for the use of the school.

Paw Paw is fairly well supplied with churches for a town of its size, in fact it might well be claimed that it is over-churched.

The first preaching of the Gospel in the town was by Rev. Junia Warner, in 1835. Services were held in Hinckley's blacksmith shop. In the fall of that year a Methodist class was organized. David Thorp was the first class leader and for a time services were held in his log chair-shop, afterward in a house belonging to Myron Hoskins, and then the village schoolhouse. In 1844 a house of worship was erected, which was occupied until 1876, when it was sold to George W. Longwell, removed to another site and converted into an opera house, for which purpose it is yet used. A new and commodious building was erected on the site of the old one and dedicated on the 16th day of December, 1876. The church now has about 200 members and is in charge of Rev. Alex. Luther.

The First Baptist church was organized on the 8th day of August, 1844, with eight members. Meetings were held rather irregularly for a number of years thereafter. The corner stone of the present church building was laid in September, 1857, and the building was completed in due time thereafter. A couple of years ago the Free Will Baptists, who had had an organization in the town since 1841, transferred their membership to the First Baptist, increasing its numbers until the present membership of the church is 130. At one time the Free Will Baptists were among the most prosperous of any of the churches in the town, but removals, deaths and changes of population had weakened the organization until it was thought wise to consolidate the two churches into one strong organization.

The Christian church, sometimes called the Disciple church, was first organized about the year 1842. The present house of worship of the society was erected in 1861. The frame of the building was raised by the help of the La Fayette Light Guard, the first company from Van Buren county to enter the military service in the



Civil war and which was subsequently known as Company C, of the Seventieth New York, one of the regiments of the famous Sickles brigade. The church record at the close of 1861 states that the membership was 234; that 101 had been received during the year, and that eleven had "gone to war." The church now has about 150 members.

The Presbyterian church was organized in the fall of 1843 at the residence of Capt. Edmund Smith. For a time after its organization worship was held in dancing room of the Exchange hotel. In 1845 a house of worship was erected near the courthouse. This building was burned in 1856 and a couple of years afterward the present church building was built. A few years ago this building was remodeled and is now the finest arranged church building in the town. The society at the present time is under the pastoral charge of Rev. M. L. Marshall and has a membership of about 125.

St. Mark's Protestant Episcopal church was organized in 1851. Its house of worship was erected in 1876. The membership of the church is small and services are held only occasionally.

St. Mary's Church of the Immaculate Conception (Catholic) has a commodious house of worship, which was completed in 1872. As early as 1848 Father Barron, of South Bend, Indiana, used occasionally to visit Paw Paw for the benefit of Pe-pe-yah and other Indians and their families. In 1855, there being several Catholic families in the village, Father La Belle, of Kalamazoo, held occasional services, generally at the residence of James Bennett. The church now has a membership of about 125 and is under the pastoral care of Rev. Father George Clarson.

There is also a Second Adventists' church in the town. They have a small church building and a limited membership. Regular services are not held at the present time.

The Christian Scientists also hold meetings in one of the public halls of the place, having no house of worship.

Of secret orders, Paw Paw has its full complement Paw Paw Lodge, No. 18, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted November 19, 1846, with the following charter members: John McKinney, Emory O. Briggs, Frank Taylor, C. R. Moffit and John Smolk. It has had its times of prosperity and of adversity, but is now in a very flourishing condition having 160 members.

Paw Paw Encampment, No. 30, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, was instituted March 26, 1868. The following named gentlemen were the charter members: C. M. O'Dell, B. O'Dell, C. Lich, S. H. Blackman, T. W. Melchor, E. Martin and J. M. Brown. Of these only B. O'Dell survives. He still belongs to the institution, which now numbers forty-four members.

Fidelity Rebekah Lodge, No. 70, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, is also a prosperous branch of the order and has a membership of 113 at the present time.

The Odd Fellows own their own hall, which is commodious and well equipped with all the furniture and paraphernalia required for successful work.

Paw Paw Lodge, No. 25, Ancient Free and Accepted Masons, was instituted under dispensation on the 6th day of May, 1848. On the first day of the next year a charter was issued A. W. Broughton, B. F. Chadwick, D. O. Dodge, Peter Gremps, Hubbell Warner, Oliver Warner and John McKinney. The lodge has its own finely equipped lodge room and has a membership of 172.

Paw Paw Chapter, No. 34, Royal Arch Masons, was instituted on the 19th day of January, 1865. It has a membership of 129 at the present time.

Paw Paw Chapter, No. 257, Eastern Star, is also a prosperous factor in the order and has a present membership of about 180.

Paw Paw Grange, No. 10, Patrons of Husbandry, was organized on the 31st day of December, 1872, with a membership of about twenty. It has been in continuous operation ever since its organization and has had, at some periods in its history, a large membership, but at present it is no greater, numerically, than when it was first instituted.

Of the more modern societies, combining insurance features with the fraternal, there are the Knights and the Ladies of Maccabees, Modern Woodmen and the Royal Neighbors, Mystic Workers, Modern Romans, Fraternal Brotherhood, and possibly some others; if not there probably will be as soon as some promoter can formulate plans.

The principal club in the village is a ladies' club, called the "Coterie." This is a literary club and has been in existence for several years. The ladies have a convenient club house of their own which is situated on Kalamazoo street near the center of the town. This club is not a secret society in the usual acceptance of the term, yet its meetings are only for its members and invited guests, except when public entertainments may be given. The programs are devoted to literature, music, art, science, education, etc. The club, like other similar clubs in different localities of the county, is a member of the State Federation of Women's Clubs and derives, as well as confers, benefits from this membership.

The Maple City Club is a gentlemen's club and was organized and exists mainly for amusement. The club meets in its own room in the postoffice block.

The Fellowship Club is also a gentlemen's club, organized and carried on not only for entertainment, but for instruction and study as well. Its programs are literary, historical, musical, scientific, etc. This club holds its meetings at the residence of some one of its members.

The manufactories of the village, all of which are doing a successful business, are as follows: The Paw Paw Grape Juice Factory, an institution that crushed 800 tons of grapes during the past season and made 100,000 gallons of grape juice; two large pickle processing establishments; one basket and fruit package factory, manufacturing fruit baskets by the hundreds of thousands; two flouring mills, one operated by water power, the other by electric power; one saw and planing mill, one fruit and vegetable cannery; one steam power heading mill; one cigar factory; one steam laundry; and one artificial bait factory, called the Moonlight Bait Company. This company makes various kinds of artificial lures for the enticement of the finny tribe, but its specialty is a luminous bait to be used in the night, a patented article invented by the promoter of the company.\*

There are four warehouses in the town, principally used for the storage of fruit baskets and other fruit packages. Some idea of the demand for fruit baskets may be formed when it is known that there were shipped from Paw Paw during the fruit season of 1911, 1,122 carloads of grapes, the equivalent of 3,366,000 eight-pound baskets, which is the ordinary size, although some are shipped in larger baskets called "jumbos" and some in four-pound baskets called "ponies." Besides this, there were large quantities of berries of various kinds, cherries, peaches, pears, etc., some of these being packed in crates, some in small baskets and much of the tree fruit in bushel baskets. There are also two very large ice houses containing many hundred of tons of ice used for refrigerating purposes in the shipment of fruit.

The Paw Paw Fruit Growers Union is one of the incorporated companies that handle the immense fruit crop that is grown in Paw Paw, Antwerp and some of the adjoining towns. During the past fruit season this company shipped a thousand cars of grapes and other fruit; 479 carloads of grapes were shipped by the manager from the station at Paw Paw, and the balance from Lawton, Mattawan, Decatur, Lawrence, Hartford, Kendall and a few cars from other places. W. C. Wildey has been manager since the company was organized.

Many car loads of potatoes and other produce were also shipped

---

\*Since the above was written and put into type, and on Sunday, February 11, 1912, at two o'clock a. m., the cannery mentioned was totally destroyed by fire. It will probably be rebuilt.



VIEW ON MAPLE LAKE, PAW PAW



LOG CABIN, MAPLE LAKE, PAW PAW

from this place. It has not been practicable to ascertain the number of cars that have been loaded at the station during the past year, but there are very few towns of its size in the state that have done as great business along this line as has Paw Paw.

There are upwards of thirty mercantile establishments in the village, including general stores, furnishing stores, furniture and undertaking; hardware and drug stores; wholesale and retail bakery, merchant tailoring establishment, cigar and tobacco stores, markets, millinery store, feed store, fruit and notion stores, etc. There are two newspapers, two banks, two hotels, two garages, three barbershops, five liveries, one of them an auto livery, an opera house, two restaurants, a moving picture theater, a telephone exchange—local and long distance—a photograph studio, three physicians, three dental surgeons, one osteopathic practitioner and one chiropractic. Besides these there are the usual number of shops of various kinds, soda fountains and soft drink establishments in their season—no intoxicating beverages are dispensed, as Van Buren county has been prohibition territory for more than twenty-one years. Another unique industry has recently been established—the manufacture of “stickum,” a preparation intended to put around the bodies of trees and grape vines to prevent cut-worms and other crawling enemies from reaching the buds or fruit. It is a newly invented preparation and is manufactured in large quantities and meets a ready sale among the fruit-growers.

Paw Paw was the first village founded in the county, and with the exception of the city of South Haven that had the advantage of being a lake port within less than eighty miles from the great city of Chicago, it has always remained at the head of the list of Van Buren county towns, both in wealth and in population. The census of 1910 gave it 1,643 inhabitants, Decatur being the second in size with 1,268.

It is no exaggeration to say that there is no handsomer town, great or small, in the entire state of Michigan. Lying as it does on either side of beautiful Maple Lake, its highways all bordered on each side with rows of magnificent maples, planted by the first settlers of the place, and which have grown to such size that, in the summer time, they completely arch the streets, so that a birds-eye view of the town, which may be had from the pinnacle of the courthouse, is like looking down upon a forest, with the clear water of the lake sparkling in the rays of sunlight. It has miles of graveled streets and cement walks, a drive around the lake, fine public buildings, modern residences and all the up-to-date conveniences of twentieth century life. One over-enthusiastic visitor, on viewing the beauties of the place, exclaimed “Paw Paw! Paw

Paw! You ought to change the name. You should call it Paradise!"

And yet there are persons still living who were born years before a white man ever saw the place, before there was any such place as Paw Paw, before there was any Van Buren county; yes, before the soil of the county was ever trod by the foot of a white man, when the Indian and the wild beasts of the primeval forest that covered the land were its only inhabitants. The changes that have been wrought are simply wonderful. And it is all owing to those indomitable old pioneers whose labors insured to us, their descendants, this beautiful heritage.

“Brave men of old, we’ll surely own  
The greatness of your fame,  
We know, to you and you alone,  
We owe the joys we claim.”

## CHAPTER XXXII

### TOWNSHIP OF PINE GROVE

TOWNSHIP ORGANIZED—SHINGLES AS LEGAL TENDERS—MARITAL AND LEGAL—KALAMAZOO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD—GENERAL PROGRESS—GOBLEVILLE—PINE GROVE—KENDALL—MENTHA.

When the ancient township of Clinch was first organized, seventy-five years ago, the territory embraced by the present township of Pine Grove was an unbroken wilderness without a single civilized inhabitant. At that time Van Buren county consisted of but seven townships, Clinch, situated in the northwest corner of the county, being twelve miles square and embracing the present townships of Pine Grove, Alma, Bloomingdale and Waverly. In 1842 the township was divided, the name "Clinch" passing into oblivion. The west half, after such division, was called Alma and the east half Waverly. These two newly formed townships were each six miles in width and twelve miles in length. There was quite a number of settlers in the south end of these two townships at the time of such division, and the non-resident owners of lands in the north part were taxed to help build schoolhouses and cut out roads in the south-end settlements. This matter of taxation came near leading to serious difficulty a few years later, when people began rapidly to settle in the territory that now comprises the township of Pine Grove. In 1849 the land owners and pioneer settlers of the "north woods," as the country was then designated, came to the conclusion that it would be preferable for them to have a township of their own so that the taxes paid by them might be expended in their own vicinity. The feeling over this question of taxation was very bitter and became so intense, just after the township of Pine Grove was organized, that a suit was threatened to be instituted against the township of Alma to recover a pro rata portion of the taxes that had been previously paid. This litigation was averted only because the township records of Alma mysteriously disappeared, leaving no basis upon which such action might be founded.

## TOWNSHIP ORGANIZED

By act of the legislature of 1849 township number one south of range number thirteen west was set off from Almena and organized into the township of Pine Grove. The first town-meeting was directed to be held at the house of Henry F. Bowen, in said township, at which election the following named officers were chosen; Supervisor, Charles M. Morrill; township treasurer, Aaron S. Dyckman; township clerk, DeWitt C. Lockman; justices of the peace, Henry F. Bowen, DeWitt C. Lockman, Thomas Southard and Horace H. Hadley; highway commissioners, Evart B. D. Hicks, Peter Valleau and Uriah Stevens; school inspectors, Chauncey B. Palmer and Ephraim Taylor; constables, John Pettibone, Benjamin P. Walcott, Robert Love and James Clark. The voters evinced their public spirit by making an appropriation of \$400, one half for general purposes and the other half for the improvement of the highways. This was a very generous provision for the few voters embraced within the township at that time.

## SHINGLES AS LEGAL TENDER

The first settlement within the limits of the township was made in 1836 by William Stone, the first white man who ever lived within its boundaries. Harrison Stevens visited the locality in 1837 and found Mr. Stone with his wife occupying a log house in the center of a little clearing where the village of Pine Grove is now situated. At that date there were several shingle camps in the vicinity, the manufacture of shingles being one of the industries of that day. These so-called "shaved shingles" were made in the most primitive manner, the pine timber that abounded in the vicinity being split into bolts which were again split into the proper thickness with a frow and afterwards shaved to an edge with a drawing knife; a saw, an axe, a frow, a drawing knife and a shaving bench being all the tools or implements required by these "shingle weavers" as they were called. The manufacture was not quite as rapid a process as by modern methods, but the finished product was of much better quality than could be turned out in any other way.

A road had been "blazed" through from Paw Paw to Allegan and each year a portion was being chopped out on the Paw Paw end of it, so that by 1844 a considerable part was cut out for the first seven miles; and that year there was a strip chopped and logged from Brandywine corners to within a mile south of the present village of Gobleville. At that time there were not more than a half a dozen clearings from Paw Paw along the entire route.



As an illustration of the manner of life in those pioneer days, there was not a stove in the township previous to 1844 and some of the early settlers occupied their cabins for years without other floor than the surface of "mother earth."

Several families having come into the township during the year 1844, it was decided that a schoolhouse had become a necessity. Schoolhouses were about the first things considered by the pioneers after they had secured shelter for themselves and cleared a little spot of ground sufficient to produce bread and vegetables for family use. A site was selected within the boundaries of what is now the village of Gobleville, a well was dug by Henry Whelpley and Daniel G. Robinson; the next year a "bee" was made and a log schoolhouse, sixteen by twenty feet, was built near the well, and that year a two months' term of school was taught in the new house, by Miss Elizabeth Hoffman, who was paid the sum of one dollar and twenty-five cents per week for "teaching the young idea how to shoot." She also taught the winter term of 1846-7, her immediate pedagogical successors being Hiram Houghton and Julia Barber. The residents of the school district when the first school was opened were Peter T. Valleau, William Story, John Coffinger, Henry Moore, Samuel Robinson and Al. Greaves.

The first writing-school ever held in the township was held in this schoolhouse and was taught by Mr. Gale of Paw Paw. His charge was half a thousand shingles per pupil for the term, shingles at that time being practically a legal tender.

The first Sunday school was held in this same schoolhouse in 1854. It was called the "North Woods Sunday School" and was instituted by Elder Barney of Kalamazoo. Mr. Barber was the superintendent.

A saw mill was started in 1848 by Messrs. Morrill & Dyckman on section thirty-two, since known as "Old Pine Grove," and a store was opened at the same time, the first store in the township. The settlers had been doing their trading at different places, and although they needed but comparatively few supplies, it was not easy to obtain them, as shingles were practically the only circulating medium. On occasion the whole neighborhood would unite in the purchase of a barrel of salt, which they could buy at St. Joseph at that time for six dollars, and a barrel of pork for forty dollars, and it required a week to drive to that town and return.

A second schoolhouse was built at "Old Pine Grove," the first school being taught there in 1849, with Miss Selina Downing as the teacher.

## MARITAL AND LEGAL

The first marriage in the township was on the 29th day of July, 1849, the contracting parties being David Barrington and Emily Gray. The ceremony was performed by Thomas Southard, justice of the peace. The boys from far and near gathered and, as was the custom of those days, gave the newly wedded pair a rousing charivari, or as it was then popularly called, a "horning." The occasion was marred by a most unfortunate accident, James Clark being wounded in the breast by a shot from a gun in the hands of Bob Ivey. The gun was heavily loaded with powder and wad and the matter was very serious. Mr. Clark, however, recovered from his wound, which was probably a good thing for the boys, as well as a great satisfaction to them. They were so frightened over the matter that they omitted the customary ceremony when DeWitt C. Lockman and Miss Jane Y. Stevens were married only four days afterward.

The first law suit in the township was when Jim Hall was arrested on a charge of misusing his wife. He had pulled her bonnet off her head and added insult to injury by actually kicking it. Just think of a man daring to kick a woman's head gear! The case was tried before Justice Newel Nash, A. P. Conant and G. R. Palmer acted as prosecuting attorneys, while Mr. Conklin appeared for the defense. This matter was the occasion of a good deal of excitement and a large part of the community were sworn as witnesses on the trial. The magistrate found the respondent guilty and imposed a fine of ten dollars, but as he did not know what disposition to make of the money, he gave it to the woman in the case thus keeping the cash in the family.

A saw-mill was built by the Clements in 1852, located about a mile and a half east of the present village of Gobleville, and a schoolhouse was built in the same neighborhood the next year, Miss Mary E. Murray being the first teacher at a salary of \$1.50 per week. It will be noticed that teachers' wages were advancing.

In 1854 Levi Thayer, Henry Whelpley and Philip Strong took the job of cutting out the Paw Paw and Allegan road for a further distance of three miles north and also a similar job on the road running east through what is now the village of Pine Grove. Seth Munn was killed by a falling tree while working on that job, about a mile north of what was known as Camfield's corners.

In 1864, Messrs. Kendall, Thistle and Arms bought a tract of pine land three and one half miles west of Gobleville and built a saw mill and stave mill and opened a store and the surrounding country began a rapid development. This enterprise was the beginning of the present flourishing village of Kendall, which has

grown up around the site first occupied by these improvements of the above named firm.

#### KALAMAZOO AND SOUTH HAVEN RAILROAD

The Kalamazoo and South Haven Railroad, a branch of the Michigan Central, passing through the township from east to west, was completed in 1870 and has been a large factor in the prosperity and development of the township. The taxpayers contributed liberally to this enterprise, voting to bond the township in the sum of \$12,000 to aid in the construction of the road. These bonds were issued in 1869, bearing interest at the rate of ten per cent, payable annually. One half that rate is now the legal rate in Michigan, although as high as seven per cent may be taken by special contract.

Some of these bonds becoming overdue and remaining unpaid, suit was brought in the Federal court for the western district of Michigan to recover the sum due and unpaid on certain of the bonds. The supreme court of the state had held and still holds the doctrine that statutes authorizing such aid are unconstitutional and it was thought that any tax levied for the payment of such bonds would be invalid. The court rendered judgment in favor of the bondholders and the case was appealed to the supreme court of the United States where the judgment of the lower court was affirmed, the federal courts holding exactly the opposite doctrine from that enunciated by the state court. And so the bonds were eventually all paid, together with the costs assessed against the township a tax levied to satisfy the judgment rendered by the highest court in America was entirely legal, even if a tax to pay the bonds were invalid. It was rather a costly way to "whip the devil around the stump," so to speak, but it probably could not have been avoided. The same course was adopted afterward by the township of Paw Paw, which had issued similar bonds in aid of another railroad enterprise, except that the township made no defense and permitted judgment to be rendered against it.

There are no important streams in Pine Grove, but it contains numerous small lakes, the principal ones being, Clear, Long, Muskrat, Brandywine, Pond Lily, Story, Duck, Twin and North, the latter being partly in the township of Almena. Some of these are beautiful sheets of water, pure and clear, and are well stocked with fish of various species.

#### GENERAL PROGRESS

The citizens of the township have given much attention to the matter of good roads and claim to have more miles of graveled high-

ways than any other township in the county and propose to continue the good work.

As an exemplification of the great progress that has been made along educational lines, as well as in other directions, since the primitive days when teachers' salary was a dollar a week, board around, take shingles for pay and collect wages by rate bill, the following educational statistics are interesting: At the enumeration of pupils in 1911, there were found to be in the township 343 persons between the ages of five and twenty; 993 volumes in the district libraries; ten school houses; school property valued at \$8,900; no district indebtedness; twelve teachers employed, who taught an aggregate of 102 months and received in salaries the sum of \$4,821. There was paid to the township from the primary school fund of the state during the current year the sum of \$2,580.

The first general election in the township was held November 6, 1849, at which sixteen votes were polled. At the presidential election of 1852, twenty-seven freemen registered their will at the ballot box, nineteen of them voting for Pierce, Democrat, and eight of them for Scott, Whig. At the last presidential election held after a lapse of fifty-six years, 330 votes were cast, 211 of them for Taft, Republican; 104 for Bryan, Democrat; thirteen for Chafin, Prohibitionist, and two for Debs, Socialist.

The majestic forests, the beautiful "pine groves" from which the township derives its name, have all disappeared, and in their stead are now to be seen highly cultivated farms, fields and orchards, modern residences and all that pertains to the comforts and luxuries of life in this twentieth century—a period that bids fair to mark the most wonderful epoch since the fiat of the Almighty spoke this world of ours into existence.

The township divides honors with Covert for the eighth place among the townships of the county, each having at the last census, 1,522 inhabitants. At the assessment of 1849, the first taken after the township was organized, the valuation of the town was \$16,222 and the taxes spread on the roll were \$443.82. In 1911 the assessment was \$606,635, and the township taxes were \$10,512.60. The township takes rank as 12th in point of wealth.

#### GOBLEVILLE

The village of Gobleville, which is situated partly within the township of Pine Grove and partly within the township of Bloomingdale, is mentioned more particularly in the history of the latter township. The Methodist church there spoken of is on the Pine Grove side of the line, as are one of the telephone exchanges, the flouring mill, printing office, quite a number of the business

places, etc. The principal street of the village runs through the business portion of the town, on the line between the two townships, dividing it into two nearly equal parts.

#### PINE GROVE

Pine Grove is a small hamlet (unincorporated) on the line of the railroad, one mile east of Gobleville. It contains a couple of stores and a blacksmith-shop.

#### KENDALL

Kendall is another station on the line of the South Haven division of the Michigan Central Railroad, about three miles east of Gobleville. It was platted in the winter of 1870, by Lucius B. Kendall (from whom it takes its name) and others. When the town was founded the railroad had just reached that point from Kalamazoo, and for some time thereafter it was a place of considerable importance. At the present time it contains about 200 inhabitants. It has a fine brick town hall, and one church, the Congregational, with a membership of about thirty. The house of worship is built of brick and will seat about 200 people. There are also several secret societies—the Knights and Ladies of Maccabees, the Gleaners and Yeomen. The Maccabees have a hall, but the Ladies meet in the town hall. The principal business places consist of two general stores, a postoffice, a feed-mill and two blacksmith shops. The town has never been incorporated.

#### MENTHA

Mentha, two miles east of Kendall and on the same line of railroad, is a place of recent origin. Perhaps, as yet, it can hardly be classed as a village, although it is a regular station on the line of the road. It owes its existence, as well as its name, to the fact that it is situated in one of the greatest peppermint producing regions of the world.

The country 'round about was originally a swamp, and remained for many years wholly unimproved. The situation attracted the attention of Hon. A. M. Todd, of Kalamazoo, who has acquired the well deserved title of the world's "Peppermint King." The swamp has been ditched and drained and is now one of the greatest peppermint-producing sections in existence. The oil is distilled on the premises and brings very remunerative prices. There are also raised on portions of this same swamp land immense quantities of onions. Once considered practically worthless, these lands are now among the most valuable in the county.

## CHAPTER XXXIII

### TOWNSHIP OF PORTER

FIRST SETTLEMENTS AND SETTLERS—THE KINNEY SETTLEMENT—  
THE ADAMS FAMILY—TOWNSHIP NAMED AND ORGANIZED—EDUCA-  
TIONAL AND POLITICAL—A RETROSPECT.

The township of Porter is situated in the southeastern corner of Van Buren county and is officially known as township number four south, of range number fifteen west. Its boundaries are the township of Antwerp on the north, Kalamazoo county on the east, Cass county on the south and the township of Decatur on the west. The township boasts of no postoffice; it has no village within its boundaries, but has one flourishing general store and two churches, both of the Protestant Methodist denomination. Its enterprising citizens are practically all engaged in agriculture and horticulture, raising hay and grain and growing large quantities of fruit of the finest quality. In these respects it is unexcelled by any town in the entire county. It is watered almost wholly by numerous small lakes, which in the spring and summer are like gems of crystal set in frames of emerald. The largest and more important of these beautiful sheets of sparkling water are Bankson's, Huzzy, Grass, Cedar and Gravel lakes.

#### FIRST SETTLEMENT AND SETTLERS

The first settlement within the boundaries of Porter township was made in 1833 when Abner Mack located a portion of section 13 and built himself a cabin upon it. Mr. Mack did not long remain a resident of the township, but made an exchange with Jonas Barber for land in the county of Kalamazoo and moved away. In 1835 James Young, his half-sister, Elizabeth Gibson, and her sons, Washington and Robert, moved from Prairie Ronde and settled on section fourteen, bordering on Bankson's lake.

#### THE KINNEY SETTLEMENT

The founder of that portion of the township, for many years known as the "Kinney settlement," was Elijah Kinney, who came

from Ohio in 1835 with a large family. Nelson and Sanford Corey came in 1836 and were employed by others until 1840, when each purchased land on section twenty-six. Among the pioneers at the Kinney settlement in 1836 were George Wilson and Matthew Lewis. Stephen Kinney, brother of Elijah, came from Ohio in 1838 with a family of eight children. Another of the settlers at that time was Moses Monroe, who was considered to be the most useful man in the settlement. He was the only mechanic among them and would turn his hand to anything from carpentry to shoe-making, being exceedingly clever at any kind of mechanical work. Luke Munger came to the township in 1840 and James Maxam in 1844. Menasseh Kern located on section thirteen, in 1846. His neighbors at that time were the Wilsons, Longcors, Harpers and Lockes. S. V. T. Bradt came in 1848 and the same year Jacob Markle settled on section three. In 1852 William H. McLain came from St. Joseph county and located on section fifteen.

Settlements in the central part of the township were made as early as 1835, when Benjamin Reynolds came from Ohio with a large family and located one hundred and sixty acres on section fifteen. Daniel Alexander, also from Ohio, bought two hundred acres of government land in 1836, on sections twenty, twenty-nine and thirty. In the summer of 1836 Roderick Bell settled near Gravel lake, whither also came the next year Nathan Cook, George Freese and John B. Compton. About 1840 came Thomas Alexander and the Nelsons, the latter of whom sold out to Silas Gould and moved away. In January, 1840, John Van Sickle, Elias Harmon and Jacob Stilwell came into the town and settled there, and in the spring of 1840 L. H. Weldin located on section twenty-eight.

John Nesbitt, originally one of the pioneers of the township of Keeler where he and his brother turned the first furrow in 1834, came to Porter in 1837 and bought land on section five. In 1846 Mr. Nesbitt changed his location to section nine where he spent the remainder of his life.

As an indication of the newness of the country, even at that date, it might be noted that when Mr. Nesbitt moved to his new farm in 1846, he was compelled to make his own road, while his wife drove the ox team that was hauling his worldly goods and chattels. Isaac Hall, father of James H. Hall, came to Porter in 1842, and his brother Amos in 1846. They located near Grass and Cedar lakes. The other settlers in that neighborhood at that time were Silas Gould, L. H. Weldin and David Gilson. Thomas Fletcher, a Virginian, came into the township soon afterward. Samuel D. Harper came in 1843, and Jeremiah Barker, a New

Yorker, came in 1845, with his family, and settled on section nine. In 1848 Mr. A. H. Hathaway settled in the township.

#### THE ADAMS FAMILY

Horace H. Adams and family were likewise among the earlier settlers of the township, locating on section thirteen about the year 1837. He lived but few years after coming to Porter, but during his life he took a prominent part in the affairs of the new township, being one of the first justices of the peace elected and afterwards serving as supervisor. He was the father of the late Franklin B. Adams, one of the prominent business men of Lawton and who was at one time president of The Toledo and South Haven Railroad Company. At the time of his death in 1910, in his eighty-fourth year, he was Porter's oldest pioneer.

Mr. Adams would occasionally relate to his intimate friends incidents of those early days that were of great interest. Among them is the following, which is worthy of preservation: Some time about the year 1840, in pursuance with treaty stipulations the government began to gather the Indians, preparatory to removing them to then far west; that is, beyond the Mississippi River. Mr. Adams related that a stockade or corral had been constructed near his father's place in which the Indians of the region were gathered together, under the direction and charge of a young officer of the United States Army named Rosecrans. This same young officer afterward became known to the world as General W. S. Rosecrans of Civil war fame.

Harvey Barker, one of the pioneer preachers of the county, settled in the township in 1839, erected a cabin and at once began improvements on the land he had entered. His place became the head-quarters for the circuit riders of those early days. His son, Wesley T. Barker, himself a pioneer, a lad of about four years at the time he came to Michigan, is yet a resident of the township.

#### TOWNSHIP NAMED AND ORGANIZED

For a number of years Porter formed a part of the township of Decatur, from which it was set off in 1845. To Mrs. Harriet (Cook) Van Antwerp belongs the honor of naming the new township. After it had been decided to divide the township of Decatur, a consultation was held at the residence of her father, Nathan Cook, to decide upon a name. At that time Miss Cook was very much interested in reading Cooper's "Naval Heroes" and, impressed by the career of Commodore Porter, she suggested that as Decatur had been named in honor of one naval hero, the new township should likewise honor Commodore Porter. This sug-



gestion on the part of the young lady commended itself to those who had the matter in charge and was immediately adopted. Admiral Porter, who rendered such distinguished service in the Civil war, was a son of Commodore Porter from whom the township takes its name.

The first township meeting held in the newly organized township was held on the first Monday of April, 1845, at the schoolhouse near the residence of Benjamin Reynolds, at which the following named officers were chosen: Supervisor, Harvey Barker; township clerk, Isaac Hall; school inspectors, Warren S. Corey and Harvey Barker; commissioners of highways, William L. Barker, John Nesbitt and William J. Finch; justices of the peace, Harvey Barker, Samuel D. Harper and H. H. Adams; directors of the poor, Ira Harman and Benjamin Reynolds; constables, Miles Van Sickle, John Bennett and Richard Wilson.

Porter is situated in the midst of the celebrated fruit belt of western Michigan and produces large quantities of the finest quality of fruit of various kinds. It might be said that it was one of the pioneer townships in the development of grape culture, a business that has grown into enormous magnitude in Van Buren county. At present there are several thousand acres of vineyard in the township, and the production of that delectable fruit amounts annually to several hundred thousand baskets.

#### EDUCATIONAL AND POLITICAL

The first school teacher that anybody seems to remember was Warren S. Corey, a brother of Nelson Corey, who taught a school in the Kinney settlement.

The official returns of educational matters for the school year of 1910-11 shows the following facts relative to the township: Total number of persons of school age (between five and twenty), 171; number of schoolhouses, nine; estimated value of school property, \$6,100; indebtedness, none; number of teachers employed during the year, eleven; aggregate number of months of school, seventy-four; sum paid for teachers' salaries, \$2,318.

The first general election was held in the township on the fourth day of November, 1845, at which thirty votes were cast for the office of governor of the state; nineteen Democratic, ten Whig and one Free-Soil.

At the presidential election of 1908, 219 votes were cast: 157 for Taft, Republican; fifty-nine for Bryan, Democrat; two for Chafin, Prohibitionist, and one for Debs, Socialist.

The federal census of 1910 gives the population of Porter as

994, being the sixteenth township in point of numbers, Almena and Hamilton only having a less number of inhabitants.

The assessment of 1846, the next year after the organization of the township, gives the township a valuation of \$28,600 and the total tax for that year amounted to \$335.92.

For the current year the valuation of the township was \$762,950 and the total tax spread upon the roll was the sum of \$12,752.79. In point of wealth Porter takes rank as the tenth township of the county.

The following named gentlemen have served the township in the capacity of supervisor: Harvey Barker, Uri Kinney, John McKinney, Orrin Sisson, Menasseh Kern, Luther Kinney, W. S. Corey, Asahel Bryant, Sanford Corey, John Barker, Chauncey Hollister, William Anderson, Franklin B. Adams, Orsimus Williams, Charles A. Van Riper, John C. McLain, Elijah Warner, George D. Boyce, John Marshall, John H. Cornish, and Elver E. Waldron (present incumbent). Supervisors J. Barker, S. Corey and Warner, each served three years; Supervisors McKinney, Boyce and McLain, each four years; Supervisor Williams, five years; Supervisor Cornish, eight years; Supervisor Marshall, nine years, and the present supervisor, Waldron, is now serving his sixth successive year.

#### A RETROSPECT

We can scarcely realize the changes that time has wrought since the formation of this township. It seems hardly possible when we see the fine modern residences and magnificent farms, the beautiful orchards and the splendid vineyards which now cover the landscape, that there are yet living people who knew the township when it was practically an unbroken wilderness; people who toiled and endured privation in order to make possible the comforts and luxuries enjoyed by the present generation. We can hardly realize that when the first settlements were made in Porter, Chicago existed only in name; railroads were wholly unknown, except a few short experimental lines near the eastern seaboard; telegraphs were undreamed of; Michigan was yet a territory, and all the inventions that have been brought forth during the past seventy-five years—inventions that contribute so much to the convenience and comfort of modern life—had remained undiscovered since the world began. It scarcely seems possible that those hardy pioneers who made the wilderness blossom as the rose had to come with teams from their eastern homes, weeks being required for the journey that can now be made in palatial cars in a few hours! When we think of the indomitable courage displayed and the hardships endured by these early settlers of our beautiful county we cannot but exclaim, "All honor to the old pioneers!"

## CHAPTER XXXIV

### TOWNSHIP OF SOUTH HAVEN

EARLY ELECTIONS AND OFFICIALS—PROPERTY AND POPULATION—JAY R. MONROE, FIRST WHITE SETTLER—CLARK AND DANIEL PIERCE—A. S. DYCKMAN'S STORY—PIONEER STEAM SAWMILLS—FIRST INSTITUTIONS AND PIONEERS—VILLAGE (NOW CITY) OF SOUTH HAVEN—THE SUMMER RESORT BUSINESS—SCHOOLS, CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES—MUNICIPAL AND BUSINESS MATTERS—POMOLOGICAL SOCIETY AND BOARD OF TRADE.

The township of South Haven, as originally organized in 1837 by an act of the first legislature after the admission of Michigan into the Union, comprised the present townships of South Haven, Geneva, Columbia, Covert and Bangor and it was not until October, 1855, when the board of supervisors adopted a resolution setting off and organizing the township of Deerfield, now Covert, that the township was made to consist only of its present territory, township number one south, of range number seventeen west.

It contains eighteen full sections and seven fractional sections along the shore of the lake. It is bounded on the north by Allegan county, on the east by the township of Geneva, on the south by Covert and on the west by Lake Michigan. Along the shore of the lake are bluffs from thirty to fifty feet in height, which were originally crowned with forests of hemlock and pine. Its principal stream is Black river, which flows across the northern part of the township and empties into the lake at the city of South Haven.

#### EARLY ELECTIONS AND OFFICIALS

At the first town meeting held in the township as first organized, the records show that Charles U. Cross was elected clerk, Silas Breed, supervisor, and Amos S. Brown, Charles U. Cross, Jay R. Monroe and Silas Breed, justices of the peace. If any other officers were chosen, the record does not disclose their names, notwithstanding the fact that the statute in existence at that time provided for assessors, highway commissioners, etc.

The names of the supervisors of the township for the years 1837



TYPICAL SOUTH HAVEN ORCHARDS

and 1838, are not to be found on the official records of the county. With the exception of those two years the following is the list of the names of the gentlemen who have served in that capacity: Silas Breed, William H. Hurlbut, Jesse Ball, Mansel M. Briggs, William B. Hathaway, Randolph Densmore, Aaron S. Dyckman, Barney H. Dyckman, Stephen B. Morehouse, Kirk W. Noyes, George B. Pomeroy, John Andrews, Charles J. Monroe, Albert Thompson, Samuel P. Wilson, David F. Moore, Benjamin F. Hunt, Henry E. Dewey, James H. Johnson, John S. Malbone, Milford T. French, Clarence E. Place and Orlo Westgate. Those who filled the office for more than two years were Malbone, three years; Hunt, Wilson and Dewey, each four years; Northrup, Hurlbut, Noyes and Johnson, each five years, and Westgate, the present incumbent, who is now serving his fifth consecutive year.

At the first election for county officers, which was held in April, 1837, there were ten votes cast in the township. The poll list of the township at the next general election, held on Monday and Tuesday, November 5 and 6, 1837 (elections were held on two successive days at that early date), was as follows: John Smith, William Taylor, James T. Hard, Russell Gillman, Silas Breed, Amos S. Brown, Jonathan N. Howard, Charles U. Cross, Reuben L. Ackley, Cornelius Osterhout, Myron Hoskins and William N. Babbitt. The vote for governor at that election was Stevens T. Mason 4, Charles C. Trowbridge 7.

At the first presidential election, held in 1840, twenty-nine ballots were polled, twenty Democratic and nineteen Whig. At the general election of 1908, there were cast, including both township and city, 1,006 votes. The vote of the township was as follows: Taft, Republican, 148; Bryan, Democrat, forty-six; Chafin, Prohibitionist, six; Debs, Socialist, six. In the city, which is located wholly within the boundaries of the township, the vote was as follows: Taft, 512; Bryan, 211; Chafin, twenty-eight; Debs, forty-six; Hisgen, Independent, three.

#### PROPERTY AND POPULATION

The assessed valuation of the township in 1856, the first assessment taken after it was organized as at present, was \$100,558, and the taxes spread on the roll for that year were \$1,941.14. The assessed valuation for 1911, including the same territory (both city and township), was \$2,429,359; that is, the wealth of the people has been multiplied twenty-four and one-half times in fifty-five years.

The total of taxes spread on the roll in 1856 was the sum of \$1,941.14. In 1911 the tax, including town and city, was \$44,-

956.19. In point of wealth, the township of South Haven, exclusive of the city, ranks as fourteenth among the townships of the county; including the city, it stands at the head of the list by more than \$800,000.

The population of the township, outside the city, as given in the census of 1910, was 1,218, the thirteenth township of the county in point of numbers.

#### JAY R. MONROE, FIRST WHITE SETTLER

For many of the facts given in the following sketch of the pioneer history of the township the writer desires to acknowledge his obligation to Hon. A. S. Dyckman, who embodied them in a paper read before the Van Buren County Pioneer Association in 1894.

Father Marquette and other adventurous missionaries had coasted the eastern shore of Lake Michigan; United States surveyors had meandered every navigable stream, cut the land into squares and driven sectional stakes, witnessed by letters and figures inscribed upon living tree bodies. Otherwise there was an unbroken forest, occupied by the red man and by wild beasts and fowls.

Into this vast wilderness came a young man, a "land looker" from the White mountains of New Hampshire, following an Indian trail, through gulches, across fords, over the hills and through the valleys, alone, perhaps repeating to himself the words of the poet

"Oh, for a lodge in some vast wilderness,  
Some boundless contiguity of space;"

and, having reached his destination, looking for one inspiring moment out upon the waters of the grand old lake, and then going down to the beach—the sandy, gravelly beach—to pick up specimens of coral, agate and shell; and then, mayhap, while the last rays of the setting sun, which was sinking to rest in the blue waves beyond, were glimmering and glancing through the leaves of the forest that bordered the beach, standing, perhaps, on the river bluff, watching the waters that eddied and foamed and swirled about the boughs of the giant hemlocks that drooped into the rippling waters beneath:—Possibly his attention was arrested by the shrill cry of the whip-poor-will, the lonesome "too-who" of the owl, or the dismal howl of the prowling wolf, coming to his listening ears from out of the shadowy, darkening forests through which his course had led him. Possibly he exclaimed "Here, right here, is the fair site of a future city. I will enter into this, the promised land, and on this bluff overlooking the great waters, now kissed by the glory of the good-night sun, will I build my cabin."

And so it was fulfilled, for this young explorer was the pioneer white settler of South Haven, afterward prominent in the history of the county and known to the people as Judge Jay R. Monroe, whose name is closely linked with the development of this part of the state and whose honored descendants yet occupy prominent positions among their fellow citizens of this great county—a county which, in many respects, is second to none in the Peninsular state.

It was in 1831, six years before the state of Michigan was born, that young Monroe arrived at the present site of the flourishing city of South Haven, now the metropolis of Van Buren county. Four years later, the "Monroe" road was located by him, in conjunction with Charles U. Cross and Rodney Hinckley. This road ran direct from South Haven to Big Prairie Ronde, the shortest thoroughfare from the fertile grain fields of the interior to the prospective South Haven harbor.

#### CLARK AND DANIEL PIERCE

But the advent of the Michigan Central Railroad, sweeping around the southern extremity of Lake Michigan opened up a new and more speedy line of traffic and destroyed the prospective benefit and importance of the Monroe road, a great portion of which has been taken up and relaid on the section lines.

Clark Pierce, one of the first to permanently settle in this part of Van Buren county, located on this road some seven miles out from the lake. He came in 1838, his brother Daniel, accompanying him. He built his cabin on section number fourteen of this township and began to clear up a farm. Daniel was a mighty hunter and coined money by shooting wolves and disposing of their scalps for the bounty of thirteen dollars each. But the wolves also hunted Daniel and would, no doubt have eaten him, but for the batten door of "shakes" securely barred. As evidence of this, it is reported that one night they devoured his boots which he had inadvertently left outside the cabin door. After this experience Daniel left Michigan, tested his luck on the golden shores of the Pacific, on the rich grain lands of Kalamazoo county and on the no less fertile prairies of Wisconsin, but eventually returned to the old South Haven homestead where he spent his declining years until the final summons came for him to "go up higher." He died February 24, 1882, aged seventy-four years.

In the fall of 1838, a vessel, the "La Porte" commanded by Captain Webster, was wrecked at the South Haven harbor. Clark Pierce transported their baggage to Paw Paw, while the sailors themselves, made the journey on foot.

On the 18th day of November, 1840, the two masted schooner,

"Florida," hailing from Buffalo and bound for Milwaukee, went on the beach just north of the mouth of the river. A terrible snow storm was raging and the crew nearly perished in finding their way to Bangor. The vessel was laden with apples and hardware. W. H. Hurlbut, who lived at Bangor at that time, afterward planted an orchard of seedlings from the apples procured from this vessel. One of the trees proved to be very valuable, producing a large, yellow, fall apple, with a slight blush on the sunny side and having a pleasant, sub-acid flavor. Mr. Hurlbut named the apple the "Florida," in commemoration of the wrecked vessel.

About 1841 an attempt was made to establish a postoffice at South Haven. Mr. Harrison of Gourdneck Prairie was to bring the mail weekly and Daniel Pierce was appointed as postmaster, but refused to act in that capacity. In those early days it would seem the office sought the man instead of the man the office as is the method pursued in these modern times.

In 1845 Louis A. Booth and Clark Pierce, with his wife and two sons, A. J. and Irving, became possessed of the Monroe cabin and proceeded to erect the first frame house ever built in the township. They brought the necessary lumber from Uncle Jimmie Hale's, fifteen miles down the lake and from Breedsville, and on the 18th day of July in that year, the new residence was occupied by Mr. Pierce and his family.

In the winter of 1845, Dr. Abbott, of the city of New York, visited the place and made preparation for building a mill near the mouth of the river, but for some unexplained reason the enterprise was a failure and the material was shipped away.

#### A. S. DYCKMAN'S STORY

Several different parties occupied this house for brief periods, subsequent to its occupation by Mr. Pierce. In 1847 a Holländer by the name of Shawfinch lived in it, but left at the end of the season. Mr. Dyckman says that he first visited South Haven in the month of March, 1848, in company with Frank Bowen and Evart B. D. Hicks, and found shelter in this same house, which was then vacant, for two stormy days. A yawl was driven ashore containing two passengers, so that they had a party of five weather-bound adventurers. "We found," says Mr. Dyckman, "evidence of recent occupation in the hole of potatoes in the garden, the store of unshelled beans in the chamber, the culinary utensils, including a very useful dish kettle and numerous wooden shoes scattered about. On the first morning, which I think quite remarkable, two prairie chickens seemed to fly out of the stormy lake and light on a large whitewood tree standing near. Evart Hicks' rifle shot,



as he stood by the door of the house, which brought down one of the birds, was equally remarkable. Our marine companions had salt pork, which, with the prairie chicken, the potatoes and the beans which Providence seemed to bestow (our manna in the wilderness) furnished an elegant stew, and a bunch of shaved shingles, for which we could see no other use, was drawn upon for plates and spoons.

“My cousin, since known as Capt. B. H. Dyckman, had written me from Cascade, Iowa, requesting an investigation of the probable profits if two young men should come here to engage in the wood trade between this port and Chicago. When you know that after the storm was over we could walk across the channel dry-shod, I need not tell you what my report recommended. As seemed likely, from the personal property remaining, the Holland families (I think there were two of them) returned here for another season’s residence. During the summer of 1848 they had severe sickness and lost two of their children, who rest in unknown graves near the lake and river bluffs. This gave occasion for the exercise of the highest Christian charity. Mrs. Charles Hamlin, who had no horse, would walk four miles to McDowell’s; thence she would ride McDowell’s horse, while he walked the remaining six miles, and they returned home in the same manner. This they did every day for two weeks, to wait upon the two sick families. They were certainly neighbors to the sick in the highest and most practical Christian sense.”

The year 1849 was notable for the first Fourth of July celebration ever held in the township. Clark Pierce and his family, Mr. Wood and his wife and Mr. and Mrs. C. U. Cross, on an ox sled drawn by a team of horses came to this same vacant house, and there on the shady bluff overlooking the blue waters of Lake Michigan they dedicated the land to American Independence.

#### PIONEER STEAM SAWMILLS

In August, 1850, Joseph Sturgis, foreman for Marvin Hannahs, of Albion, Michigan, in company with Ai Blood, Joseph Dow and Horace Thomas, came down Black river from Jericho (a locality so called, in the present township of Geneva) cutting out the numerous obstructions in the stream until they emerged into the open meadow at the forks. Thence they floated along leisurely between the flower-crowned, forest-lined banks, describing Hogarth’s “line of beauty” until they reached their destination on the river banks near the center of the present city of South Haven. Here they erected the first steam sawmill in the township, which afterward passed into the hands of Dyckman, Sturgis & Company, and which

was eventually town down to give place to the (Quaker) Halleck mill, which never materialized. The story of how Mr. Halleck built a firm foundation for the proposed structure, how he shipped his machinery and merchandise from New York, all the way by water, through the St. Lawrence river and around the lakes, only to have it go to wreck and ruin on the beach south of St. Joseph, is a sad reminiscence in the history of South Haven. The name of Halleck should be remembered for what he attempted to do for the place. His failure was his misfortune and not his fault.

In 1852 Messrs, Alpha and Nelson Tubbs built another steam sawmill which was located on the north side of the river. The next winter, in February, 1853, A. S. Dyckman, Joseph S. Wagner and Warren Pratt arrived in South Haven laden with supplies for building another and larger mill on the south bank of the river on the point of land near where the river bridge now rests, and which was formerly used by the Indians as a landing place, convenient for reaching the sugar bushes and pure spring water to the south-east. The first partnership name was Dyckman, Sturgis & Company, afterward changed to Dyckman, Hale & Company and finally to Hale, Conger & Company.

The author has a vivid recollection of the time when he was employed in this mill in the spring of 1857, beginning his labor at midnight, ending the day at noon (the mill was kept running night and day), and receiving for his work one dollar per day and paying three dollars per week for his board at the old "Pacific House;" there were no eight-hour days at that time; even the ten-hour day had scarcely been heard of, and yet there was no thought of hardship in-so-far as the hours were concerned. No "walking delegates" ever came around to tell the laboring man how badly he was treated and to order a strike if conditions were not changed, and no such order would have been obeyed by the sturdy young Americans who operated the mills of those primitive days. At the time of which the writer is speaking, "Pete" Davis and "Bill" Plummer were the expert "head sawyers," and they thoroughly understood their business, they had no superiors.

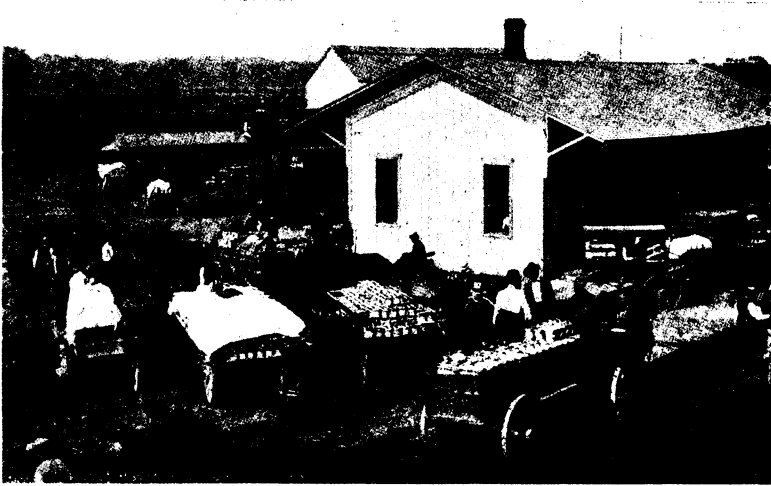
#### FIRST INSTITUTIONS AND PIONEERS

The first boat trading regularly with the port of South Haven was the "Lapwing," in 1853, the capacity of which was a dozen or so cords of wood or of hemlock bark for the Chicago market, or its equivalent in lumber. Captain Mitchell, a rugged and kindly old Norwegian, was her master and himself and one small boy comprised the entire crew.

The first merchant was S. B. Morehouse; the first physician was Dr. William B. Hathaway; the first lawyer was A. H. Chandler; the first settled minister was Rev. Nathaniel Grover, who was ordained here and whose signature graces the marriage certificate of the compiler of this work, given to him fifty years ago.

The first schoolhouse was on the donated Monroe plat and the first teacher was Ella Barnes.

Outside the city, the school population, according to the school census of 1911, is 354; volumes in district libraries, 868; school-houses, six; value of school property, \$9,700; number of teachers employed, eight; aggregate number of months school taught, sixty-two; sum paid for teachers' wages, \$3,042; apportioned from the primary school fund of the state, \$2,812.50.



SOUTH HAVEN'S BUSY FRUIT MERCHANT

The first peaches brought to the South Haven market were small seedlings from Clark Pierce's place in Geneva. Since that date many thousands of bushels of as luscious peaches as were even grown have been shipped from this place, both by steamer and by rail.

The first bank was organized May 1, 1867, by S. R. Boardman and C. J. Monroe. In July, 1871, this bank was reorganized as a National Bank; Silas R. Boardman being its president; George Hannahs, vice president, and Charles J. Monroe, cashier. Since that date the bank has again been reorganized as a state bank, under the general banking law of the state of Michigan, and is one of the solid financial institutions, not only of the county, but of the state as well.

The first literary society was organized in the winter of 1856-7.

at the house of Joseph S. Wagner, (afterward, and until it was destroyed by fire, the residence of D. B. Williams), organized, not by the glare of gas light or the glow of an electrolier, but by the dim rays of a single tallow candle, the "light of other days." This society was christened the South Haven Literary Club and was the rallying point for the literati of the place for many years thereafter.

John Williams owned the first livery equipment and used to make himself solid with the lads and lasses by driving them to spelling schools and lyceums on his "bobs" drawn by a yoke of fast trotting Devonshire cattle.

Rodney Hinckley, one of the first white settlers in the county, here-in-before mentioned in connection with the laying out of the Monroe road, had been stricken with the gold fever that was so prevalent in 1849, and a few subsequent years had been to the Golden State in search of his fortune, returned here in 1853 and located on land just south of the then village of South Haven. Everybody spoke of him familiarly as "Uncle Rodney" and of his wife as "Aunt Rodney." Mrs. Hinckley was a great lover of flowers and had wonderful knowledge of the native flora. She knew the Indians, too, almost as well as she did her "posies" and could speak the Pottawattamie dialect as though she were a born aborigine. Uncle Rodney meandered the first lake shore road south, over and around the hills as far as to what was afterward called St. Paul, subsequently known as Paulville, in which vicinity Attorney John R. Baker of Paw Paw, once owned a considerable tract of hemlock land, afterward sold to R. P. Toms & Company and which was converted into lumber by a steam sawmill erected by the firm at that place. These Baker lands were formerly in the township of South Haven, but when the organization of the county was complete, in 1855, they became a part of the township of Deerfield (now Covert).

Uncle Rodney's son, Isaac, who came within six weeks of being the first white child born in the county north of Decatur, was a fur trader and a mighty "Nimrod" and used to supply the "Forest House" and other boarding houses, with game. The "boys" finally got tired of venison at two cents a pound, and so when Isaac came in with his trophies of the chase, they clubbed together and bought him out and dumped his meat into the river. This worked very well until the landlady found out the cause of the interrupted supplies. Venison at two cents per pound, just think of it!

And now, after all the labor clearing, grubbing, firing, snagging, planting, pruning and tilling, we, at the present day, are reaping the reward. The city of South Haven facing the grand old lake on the west, and surrounded on the north, west and south by

magnificent orchards of peaches, plums, apples, cherries and pears, by vineyards and small fruits of all kinds that are indigenous to this latitude, situated in the very heart of the celebrated Michigan Fruit Belt, known from one end of the land to the other—South Haven is indeed “beautiful for a situation,” a veritable reminder of that wonderful garden planted by the Lord Himself and where “He made to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight and good for food.”

#### VILLAGE (NOW CITY) OF SOUTH HAVEN

The village of South Haven was first platted on the 15th day of November, 1851, by Thomas C. Sheldon and his wife Eleanor, of Detroit, Michigan, and William A. Booth and his wife, Louisa, of the city of New York. As originally laid out, the village was located entirely on the northwest fractional quarter of section ten. There have since been placed on record twenty-three additions and subdivisions and the city now covers the major part of section ten and also a part of section three. It is a mile and three quarters in length, from north to south, and about a mile in width.

The village was incorporated by an act passed in January, 1869, and an organization was effected, but it was found so imperfect that it was reincorporated in 1871, under the name of the “village of South Haven,” with a president, treasurer, three trustees and an assessor. Later the clerk was also made an elective officer.

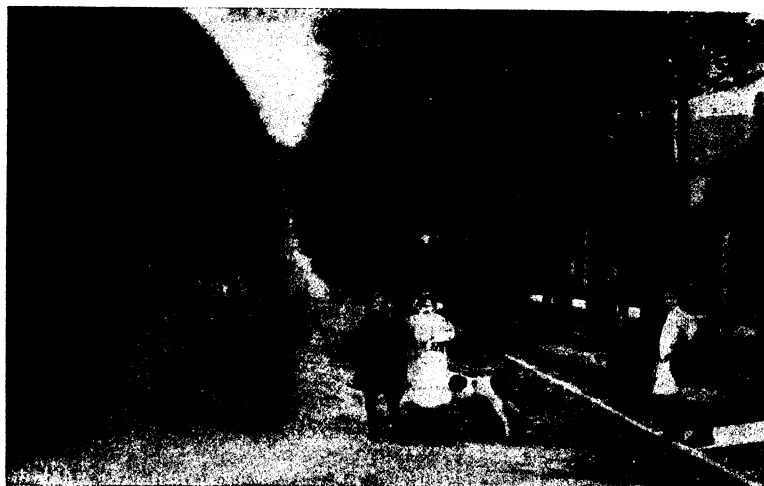
The first officers were: President, George Hannahs; clerk, Alonzo M. Haynes; treasurer, William H. Andrews; trustees, Daniel Howard, Albert Thompson, Levi R. Brown, George L. Seaver, William P. Bryan and Barney H. Dyckman.

South Haven was incorporated as a city of the fourth class, under the general laws of the state, in 1902. The first mayor was Evert S. Dyckman, elder son of A. S. Dyckman, who was so actively associated in the development of the fruit industry and the general upbuilding of the community in every way for betterment.

South Haven is the western terminal of two railroads; one, the South Haven division of the Michigan Central Railroad, runs from Kalamazoo through the northern part of Van Buren county; the other, the Kalamazoo, Lake Shore and Chicago, runs from Kalamazoo through the central part of the county. At the time of writing, the latter system is operated as a steam road under lease by the Michigan United Railways, owning and operating electric lines, throughout central Michigan, and the expectation is that it will soon be converted into an electric railway. By the census of 1910, the city is given a population of 3,767, which is materially augmented during the resort season.



LIBRARY, SOUTH HAVEN

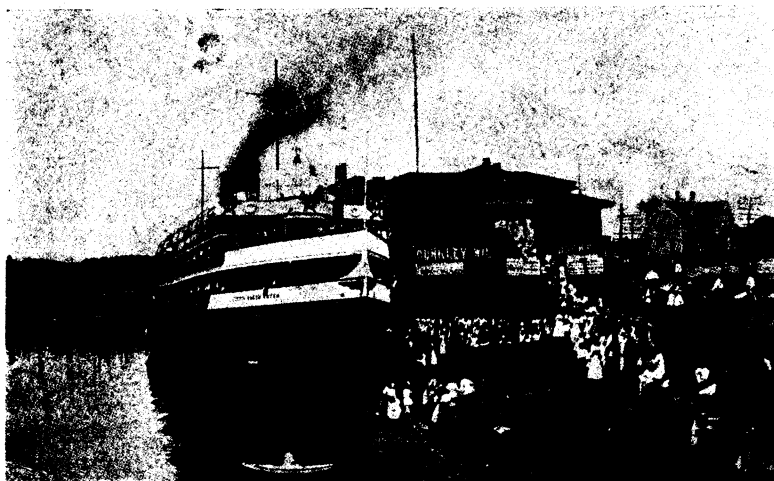


MICHIGAN AVENUE, SOUTH HAVEN

Chicago, only seventy-six miles to the southwest, is reached by a fleet of steamers throughout the season of navigation. This readiness of access from the great metropolis of the middle west, together with the delightful climate of South Haven and vicinity in summer, resulted in the remarkable development of the summer resort business in this territory, that business ranking second only to the fruit industry in importance.

#### THE SUMMER RESORT BUSINESS

Mrs. H. M. Avery was the pioneer of the summer resort business, and the little group of guests that enjoyed her hospitality a generation ago has expanded into a crowd numbering into the hun-



AT THE SOUTH HAVEN DOCKS IN SUMMER

dreds of thousands that annually sweeps into the city and overflows into the surrounding country for a radius of twenty or thirty miles.

Black River, with its branches, furnishes miles of attractive scenery and cozy resorts easily reached either by row boats or launches, and during the resort season, large numbers of people spend their summer vacations in boating, fishing, bathing and other recreation along this stream and on the beach of the lake at the mouth of the river. These visitors come from the middle west, south and southwest, for sojourns from a single day to many months. Many of them have purchased homes in the city or surrounding country, and have become valued residents for a substantial part of each year.

The earlier growth of the summer resort business was through

boarding houses and hotels, the first of the latter having been the "Avery Beach," built by Mr. and Mrs. H. M. Avery. This was gradually enlarged so that it retained the position of the largest and best-known of the summer hotels of South Haven until its destruction by fire shortly after the close of the summer season a few years ago.

The next stage in the development was by means of cottages, the pioneer in which branch was Lyman S. Monroe who built nearly thirty cottages in "Monroe Park," which is still the most important center of cottages used for summer residences.

#### SCHOOLS, CHURCHES AND SOCIETIES

The first school was taught by Miss Ella Barnes, an adopted daughter of Mr. and Mrs. S. B. Morehouse, in a frame schoolhouse, about 18 by 24 feet, built near the lake in the summer of 1852. There were seven pupils,—Joseph Sturgis, Jr., Julia and Harriet Morehouse, three children of Nelson Tubbs, and "Tip" Ormsby.

The schools were graded in 1879, under Professor Burkett, and the first graduates, Miss Maud Loveday and Edward E. Cain, received their diplomas in 1881. The schools now comprise twelve grades, in which are taught all the usual studies, besides manual training, domestic science and agriculture. Graduates are admitted without examination to the colleges and universities of eighteen states.

The school buildings now comprise a Central building, in which are quarters for the high school and lower grades, and three ward buildings, accommodating grades up to the eighth. Work is soon to commence on a modern high school building to cost about \$45,000 and to accommodate three hundred students. Bonds to pay for this building were authorized by the taxpayers of the district by overwhelming majority at a special election held in November, 1911. The schools of the city were apportioned the sum of \$6,930 from the primary school fund of the state for the school year of 1910-11, on a basis of 924 persons of school age.

Religious services were first held in April, 1852, by a Baptist minister at the home of Joseph Sturgis, and a few weeks later the Rev. Mr. Doughty, a Methodist clergyman, preached at the Morehouse home. Notices had been given of these services which were well attended.

Now the following religious organizations hold regular services in their own houses of worship: Baptist, Congregational, Methodist Episcopal, Free Methodist, Episcopalian, Roman Catholic, Dutch Reformed, German Lutheran and German-English Lutheran. The Christian Scientists hold regular services in rented



quarters, and there are Watch-Tower and Spiritualist societies that meet at irregular intervals.

There is also a hospital supported by the people that renders excellent service. The Masonic fraternity is represented in four of its departments, viz: The Blue Lodge, the Chapter, the Council and the Eastern Star, all prosperous; the Odd Fellows by Neptune Lodge, No. 297, with a membership in the neighborhood of 150, and Jewel Rebekah Lodge, No. 127, with about the same number of members. There is also a prosperous lodge of Knights of Pythias, the largest in the county, numerous other more modern fraternal organizations, and other social, literary and musical societies. Troop "A," a cavalry company of the Michigan National Guard, is also an organization in which the citizens take a just degree of pride.



SCOTT CLUB BUILDING, SOUTH HAVEN

The South Haven Scott Club was organized in April, 1884, when its meetings were held in the parlors of a few progressive ladies. The reading of Scott's works was the first effort of the organization, thereby suggesting the name of Scott Club which it bears. It was incorporated in April, 1894. Its fine stone building was then in progress.

The object of the club has been a progressive one from its inception, and it is now the nucleus of all literary work in the village. Its programs have included literature, art, science and education, music and miscellaneous topics, with current events and questions of the day. Its social days and annual banquets are memorable events. Its membership is now over one hundred and

includes the best of talent. The club has united with the State Federation of Women's Clubs and derives much benefit from its connection with this organization.

The Scott Club has nearly succeeded in paying off the old debt and is justly proud of the beautiful stone building on the corner of Phoenix and Pearl streets. The interior, on the second floor, is furnished with oak with two fine mantels in the parlors. The building is heated with a furnace and lighted with electricity. Two beautiful windows, containing Sir Walter Scott's and Henry Longfellow's portraits, cost nearly \$200.00 each, one being a gift from Mr. Bates of New York and the other from the members of the old literary society. The regular meetings are held on Tuesday afternoon from 2 to 4 P. M., opening the first Tuesday of October and closing the last Tuesday of May.

#### MUNICIPAL AND BUSINESS MATTERS

Following two fires that swept considerable portions of the business district in the early nineties, was a period of building activity that resulted in the erection of a number of modern buildings in the business section, and many residences in all parts of the city. Despite the prevailing depression in business over so much of the nation in the early part of that decade, this period was one of the most prosperous in the history of this city and community.

The city is now served by municipal electric lighting and water plants, with ample equipment for producing the current and pumping the water located in a power house on the beach. There are more than twelve and one-half miles of water mains, nearly ten miles of sewers, cement walks over the greater part of the city, brick pavements in the business district and macadam pavements on the avenues leading into the city.

A large sum of money has been expended on the South Haven harbor within the last year or two and it is expected that the government will make further appropriations and continue the work until the harbor shall be what its importance warrants, one of the best on the east side of Lake Michigan.

Among the private industries are a gas company, two piano factories, a pipe organ factory, wood-carving factory, two planing mills, foundry, canning and preserving factory, plant for preparing spraying materials, two machine shops, one of them also making spraying machinery, and other manufacturing establishments and shops, besides two state banks and a loan and trust company, and the mercantile establishments needed to serve a community of the population and resources that centers in and about South Haven.

## POMOLOGICAL SOCIETY AND BOARD OF TRADE

The Pomological Society, which was organized in 1870, is another institution that has been of invaluable service to the people. Perhaps this ought not to be classed as a city society, although many of its members are residents of the municipality. It reaches out, however, into the adjoining country and embraces in its membership, the fruit growers, not only of South Haven, but of adjoining townships, both in Van Buren and Allegan counties.

The South Haven Board of Trade is another organization that has been and still is of great service to the place. It has a large membership and includes practically all the business and professional men of the city. It has done a good deal of very important and efficient work in securing manufacturing plants for the town and in advertising it as a place of summer resort.

## CHAPTER XXXV

### TOWNSHIP OF WAVERLY

PHYSICAL FEATURES—TOWNSHIP NAMED—THE MYERS FAMILY—  
FIRST WEDDING BETWEEN PIONEERS—COVEY HILL—JOHN SCOTT  
—OTHER EARLY SETTLERS—FROM THE OFFICIAL RECORDS—VIL-  
LAGE OF GLENDALE.

Waverly was originally of the ancient township of Clinch, which contained four of the present townships of the county—Waverly, Almema, Pine Grove and Bloomingdale. In 1842, by act of the legislature of the state, Clinch was divided into two equal parts, the eastern half being called Almema and the western half Waverly, thus constituting two townships of seventy-two sections each; and this arrangement continued until 1845, when the legislature made another division, setting off the north half of the township under the name of Bloomingdale. As left after this legislation, the township comprised thirty-six sections of land, but by action of the board of supervisors of the county at their October session of 1871, section thirty-one and the west half of section thirty-two were set off and attached to the township of Paw Paw.

#### PHYSICAL FEATURES

Waverly is officially designated as township number two south, of range number fourteen west. Its boundaries are Bloomingdale on the north, Almema on the east, Paw Paw on the south and Arlington on the west. Like the township of Almema, Waverly formerly contained a large tract of swamp lands, but this has been practically all drained and brought under cultivation, so that at the present time there is little waste land in the township. It was originally covered with very dense, heavy forests, but comparatively little timber remains at the present time. The soil is generally a heavy clay loam, very rich and productive, and some of the finest farms in the county are to be found within its limits. It is especially adapted to the growing of hay and grain. Fruit culture also obtains to a considerable extent. The surface of the town-

ship is generally level, or gently undulating, although there are here and there a few rather deep valleys and abrupt hills.

#### TOWNSHIP NAMED

The honor of naming the township belongs to the Hon. Fernando C. C. Annable, who at the time it was christened was a member of the lower house of the Michigan legislature. He was an admirer of the writings of Sir Walter Scott, author of the Waverly novels, and it was in his honor that the name was bestowed upon the newly organized township.

The Paw Paw river flows from east to west across the southern part of the town, the two main branches of the river coming together on section twenty-seven. There are also several small lakes, the principal one being School Section lake, which, as its name indicates is situated near the center of the township, on section sixteen. This lake is about three-fourths of a mile in length and has always largely been a fisherman's paradise, abounding in many varieties of the finny tribe, such as pickerel, bass, perch, etc. The other lakes that have been deemed of sufficient importance to be distinguished by name are Simmons, Round, Shaw, Allen, McFarlin and Scott. The latter is much larger than any of those mentioned, but it lies almost wholly in the township of Arlington.

Waverly is one of the three townships of the county that is not touched by a railroad; neither is there a postoffice or an incorporated village within its limits. The only approach to a village is the little hamlet of Glendale on section sixteen.

#### THE MYERS FAMILY

Settlements were made within the present boundaries of Waverly at about the time the county of Van Buren was organized. In the fall of 1836 four brothers, Mallory H., Merlin M., Reuben J. and William H. H. Myers, with their mother and two sisters, came from Genesee county, New York, to White Pigeon, Michigan. The next spring three of the brothers came to Van Buren county on a prospecting tour. They found lands in the township of Clinch that suited them and determined to make that their future home. Reuben selected a tract on section two in the present township of Waverly, while the other brothers located north of him in what subsequently became the township of Bloomingdale. The entire family came on from White Pigeon and for a time lived together in a cabin erected by Mallory on his new location. Reuben immediately began clearing up his place, and in 1838 built a substantial log house and moved into it with Ruth Ann, one of his sisters, as his house keeper. This arrangement,

however, was short lived, for Miss Myers, in 1839, married James Scott, a "shingle weaver" who had been employed in the vicinity.

This marriage, which was solemnized by Ashbel Herron, a justice of the peace, was the first marriage of a resident of the township, and in this case, only the bride lived in Waverly, the groom being a resident of Decatur. While Reuben and his sister were living together, they were the only white persons in the township, and when Miss Myers became Mrs. Scott and removed into another locality, Reuben was left solitary and alone, although he had neighbors in the adjoining townships of Almena and Bloomingdale, both being at that time part of the township of Clinch.

Soon afterward, Merlin Myers changed his residence from Bloomingdale to Waverly. He located on section one, not far from Reuben, where he lived until 1857, when he removed to Illinois. Reuben remained an inhabitant of Waverly until his death, which occurred November 14, 1890, in his seventy-second year.

In the same year settlements were made in the southern part of the township by Loring Hurlbut and Jacob Finch, both of whom selected locations on section thirty-five. Hurlbut died in Paw Paw in 1877 and Finch removed to the far west after a limited stay in Michigan.

Isaac Brown settled on section thirteen, in 1839. He came from Washtenaw county, Michigan, and at the time of his settlement his nearest neighbor was two and a half miles distant. In the early sixties Mr. Brown removed to Paw Paw, where he died in 1865. His son, John D. Brown, was the first white child born in Waverly.

In the same year Zell Taylor located on the same section with Brown, so that he was not long entirely neighborless. Taylor did not remain a resident of the township for any great length of time.

Rezin Bell was another of the early settlers. He first came to Michigan in 1833, and was a resident of Adrian until 1837, when he came to Van Buren county and selected a location on section two in the township of Waverly, but he did not immediately occupy the premises, being a resident of the adjoining township of Almena for two years before he took up his residence in Waverly. He removed to the township of Bloomingdale in 1854, where he died in 1865.

#### FIRST WEDDING BETWEEN PIONEERS

Another of the early settlers was William Murch, a young man who came from the Empire state. He made an entry on section two in 1839, but did not become a resident of Waverly until the following year, when he married Miss Sarah, the other of the Myers

sisters. This was the first wedding in which the contracting parties were both numbered among the pioneers of the township. It took place at the residence of Mallory H. Myers in the adjoining township of Bloomingdale (although it was all Clinch at the time) and Elder Junia Warner was the officiating clergyman.

The first death in the township was that of Josiah, a six years old son of Rezin Bell. He died in 1840 and, there being no public place of burial at that time, the child was buried in Almena, near the residence of Elder Warner.

Philo Herron, a New Yorker, settled on section three in 1841, but afterward removed to Pine Grove and died there. Two brothers, Almon and Amon Covey, first coming to Almena, located in Waverly in 1841 on section twelve.

#### COVEY HILL

“Covey Hill,” on the line between these two townships, which is now occupied by a Free Baptist church building and a grange hall, both on the Almena side, takes its name from the Covey family. Amon married and removed to Almena; Almon became a resident of Arlington where he died in 1878.

Jonah Austin, who had been a resident of Oakland county, Michigan, had purchased one hundred and sixty acres of land on section twenty-four and became a resident of Waverly about 1842. He resided there until his death in 1869, when the place passed into the possession of his two sons, Alexander and Jasper. The latter died in 1904. Alexander is still in the occupancy of a portion of the old homestead.

#### JOHN SCOTT

John Scott came from New York in 1843 and settled on section six. He became a man of prominence and of wide acquaintance. While getting his own place ready for a habitation, he and his family made their home at Ashbel Herron's. Mr. Scott soon had a substantial log cabin, eighteen by twenty-four feet, into which he moved as soon as it was ready. His pioneer experience is interesting, but not materially different from that of all the early settlers of the county. He said that when he had his primitive cabin completed he had just eighteen cents in ready cash left at his command. “But,” said he, “I never borrowed any trouble, never went hungry, and had no complaint to make. I always kept up a stout heart and so prospered.” His nearest neighbor was Philo Herron, three and a half miles away.

In that heavily timbered region roads were not easily made. Journeys on foot, through the unbroken forests, with nothing to

guide the pedestrian except the woodman's sense of direction, or perhaps following some Indian trail, was the ordinary means of travel, and if it became indispensable that a wagon should be used a road must be cut out, which was a slow and tedious operation.

At that time Paw Paw, nearly ten miles distant, was the market place and milling point—as it is yet for a large proportion of the inhabitants of the township—and it was no unusual thing for Mr. Scott, who was a very athletic, muscular man, to take his grist on his back, tramp to the mill and return with his flour, meal or other supplies in the same manner. The Paw Paw river had to be crossed and the only bridge was a fallen tree, so great caution had to be exercised to save his supplies and himself from an untimely dip in the stream.

#### OTHER EARLY SETTLERS

Joseph Cox, of Monroe county, New York, came to Waverly the same year as Mr. Scott, settling on section twenty-two. He was taken with the California gold fever in 1849 and undertook the journey to the then new El Dorado, but died en route leaving his bones to bleach on the western plains.

Isaac Spaulding became a settler of the town in 1844. The deer were so plenty at that time that they did grievous injury to the growing crops and so Mr. Spaulding built a rail fence around his wheat field, eight feet in height. Tradition is silent as to whether or not it served the purpose for which it was designed.

Peter T. Valleau, a kindly old gentleman, as is evidenced by the fact that people usually called him "Uncle Peter," settled on section twenty-two in 1844. He passed the later years of his life with his son, Theodore, who located in Waverly in 1858 and who now resides on section thirty-one, township of Pine Grove, and whom his numerous friends and acquaintances familiarly call "Dora."

Hubbard Westcott and T. W. Thayer came to the township in 1845 and Reuben Mather a few years later. During the fifties there was a considerable increase in the number of the inhabitants; among whom were George Carr, Orson A. Breck, O. M. Alger, Joseph and William Rogers, Benjamin Smith, Zeri Skinner, B. G. Stanley and John McKnight.

The first township officers elected after the township of Bloomingdale had been set off in 1845 were as follows: Supervisor, Reuben J. Myers; township clerk, Elisha Marble; township treasurer, Rezin Bell; assessors, William Murch and Joseph Cox; commissioners of highways, William Murch, Loring Hurlbut and Joseph



Cox; school inspectors, Isaac R. Brown and Joseph Cox; justices of the peace, Isaac Brown, Loring Hurlbut and Philo Herron; constables, Ebenezer Armstrong and Henry Whelpley; overseers of the poor, William Murch and Almon B. Covey.

FROM THE OFFICIAL RECORDS

The following is a list of the names of the several gentlemen who have served the township in the capacity of supervisor: Mallory H. Myers, William H. H. Myers, Rezin Bell, Joseph Cox, Reuben J. Myers, Isaac Brown, William Murch, E. Armstrong, George P. Smith, H. Caldwell, David H. Smith, Chauncey W. Butterfield, Prenett T. Streater, M. J. Blakeman, Luther C. Balch, William H. Adriance, William R. Serrine, Edwin A. Chase, Reuben E. Allen, David E. Rich and John Gault. Those of the above named supervisors who served more than two years are: George P. Smith, three years; William Murch, four; M. J. Blakeman, six; Reuben J. Myers, nine; Edwin A. Chase, eleven; Prenett T. Streater, fifteen, and John Gault (present incumbent), now serving his fifth year.

At the general election, held on the fourth day of November, 1845, twelve votes were cast—three Democratic, three Whig and six for the Liberty party.

The first presidential election thereafter was held on the seventh day of November, 1848. At this election there were twenty-five votes polled, eleven for Zachary Taylor, Whig; nine for Lewis Cass, Democrat, and five for Martin Van Buren, Free Soil.

At the presidential election held on the third day of November, 1908, 224 electors registered their choice at the ballot box, as follows: 140 for Taft, Republican; eighty for Bryan, Democrat; three for Chafin, Prohibitionist, and one for Debs, Socialist.

The assessed valuation of the township in 1845 was \$33,109, the resident real estate being valued at \$2,846 and the non-resident realty at \$29,520. Personal estate was assessed at \$743. Philo Herron was assessed \$105 on his personal estate, being the only person who reached the hundred-dollar mark, which clearly indicates that the pioneers were not rolling in wealth. Practically all the land in the township was assessed at \$1.50 per acre. The amount of taxes levied for all purposes was \$598.

The names of the resident tax-payers appearing on the roll were as follows: Loring Hurlbut, Jacob Young, Joseph Cox, Jr., E. Graves, Jonah Austin, William Markillie, Isaac Brown, E. Armstrong, Almon B. Covey, E. Marble, Merlin M. Myers, William Murch, Reuben J. Myers, Rezin Bell, Henry Whelpley, Philo Herron and John Scott.

At the last assessment, made in the spring of 1911, the valuation of the township was \$649,250, showing that the township ranks twelfth among the eighteen townships of the county in point of wealth. The taxes levied for the current year were \$10,716.

In point of numbers, Waverly ranks fourteenth among her sister townships, the census of 1910 giving the population as 1,095.

The first school accessible to the inhabitants of Waverly was taught in the town line schoolhouse, located in the present township of Bloomingdale just north of the dividing line between the two towns. This was in 1838 and the first school was taught by William H. H. Myers, who had an enrollment of eight pupils. The second teacher was his sister, Miss Sarah Myers.

From the official educational reports of the township for the school year of 1910-11, we find that there were at the last enumeration 322 pupils of school age; 640 volumes in the school libraries; nine schoolhouses, no district indebtedness; value of school property \$7,000; nine teachers employed during the school year; seventy-three and one-half months of school taught; and \$2,905 paid for teachers' salaries. During the current year the sum of \$2,520 was apportioned to the several districts of the township from the primary school fund of the state, very nearly sufficient to meet the entire expenditure for teachers' wages.

#### VILLAGE OF GLENDALE

Glendale is a thriving, unincorporated little village situated near the center of the township. It was originally called Lemont and that was the name of the postoffice first established there, which was subsequently changed to Glendale. Rural free delivery did away with the office several years ago.

There is one house of worship in the village, the Methodist Episcopal, which is the only church building in the township. This church has a membership of about seventy-five and is presided over by Rev. Kitzmiller.

The following secret societies are represented: The Independent Order of Odd Fellows has a prosperous lodge of sixty-five members; the Modern Woodmen, with a membership of one hundred; have paid for a hall, lodge room above and an opera house below, with a seating capacity of 350; the Mystic Workers are also represented with a lodge of forty members.

There is one mercantile establishment in the village, the general store of Allen Brothers. There is also a blacksmith and wood repairing shop; the Smith crate factory which manufactures about 10,000 potato crates per year, and the Glendale Creamery which

makes about 177,000 pounds of choice butter per year, its output selling for about \$52,000.

The public buildings of the place consist of a modern school-house, a town hall, the church and Woodmen's building above mentioned.

Glendale is surrounded by as fine an agricultural region as there is in the county; the farmers around the little town are progressive; the farm buildings are up-to-date and clearly show the prosperity of their occupants.

A drive through the township of Waverly in the season of growing crops forcibly reminds one of the changes that time and the hand of man have wrought since Reuben Myers, its first settler, selected his wilderness home therein seventy-five years ago.







